

# THE ROTCHES

**HUTCHINSON'S  
BOOKSTORE**  
222-226 Union St.  
New Bedford, Mass.





# THE ROTCHES

*John M. Bullard*



# THE ROTCHES

*by*

JOHN M. BULLARD

NEW BEDFORD  
1947

SMU LIBRARY

*Printed in U. S. A.*  
by  
W. B. and A. B. Rotch  
THE CABINET PRESS  
Milford, New Hampshire





Sarah Bullard  
(1924-1942)

*This Book is dedicated to the memory of Sarah Bullard, daughter of John Morgan and Catherine Crapo Bullard, who was born in New Bedford, Massachusetts, July 28, 1924. She was named for her mother's grandmother, Sarah Tappan Crapo, and her father's aunt, Sarah Bullard Delano. She spent her life in Dartmouth, Massachusetts, with frequent trips to her grandmother Crapo's winter home in Tryon, North Carolina, and one summer trip in 1940 to a ranch in Wyoming with her Uncle William Bullard and his family. She went to Friends Academy in New Bedford from 1930 to 1938, to Chatham Hall in Chatham, Virginia, for two years, and to Holmquist School in New Hope, Pennsylvania, in 1940-41. In the summer of 1941, she drove some girls to the Northfield Conference in her car. She was a devout member of the Unitarian Church in New Bedford, but when that church was closed for two months in summer, she attended churches of other denominations in New Bedford or the Unitarian Church in Fairhaven almost every Sunday. She was a beautiful girl in person as well as in character, tall, slim and dark. She loved dancing and parties and sailing. She sailed well and won many races in her Herreshoff Twelve Footer, but most of all she loved horses. She was fatally injured when riding in a charity horse show September 6, 1941, and remained unconscious until she died May 4, 1942.*



## Contents

### PART ONE

Who Was Joseph Rotch ? . . . . .	3
The New Bedford Rotches . . . . .	25
William Rotch (1734-1828) . . . . .	29
Joseph Rotch, Junior (1743-1773) . . . . .	41
Francis Rotch (1750-1822) . . . . .	45
William Rotch, Junior (1759-1850) . . . . .	71
Thomas and Charity Rodman Rotch . . . . .	84
“Aunt Mary” Rotch (1777-1848) By William M. Emery . . . . .	92
Joseph Rotch (1790-1839) . . . . .	98
William J. Rotch (1819-1893) . . . . .	105
The English Rotches . . . . .	111
Benjamin and Elizabeth Barker Rotch . . . . .	112
Francis Rotch (1788-1874) . . . . .	124
Eliza Rotch Farrar (1791-1870) . . . . .	126
Benjamin Rotch, Junior (1793-1854) . . . . .	131
William Barker Rotch (1802-1826) . . . . .	138
Elizabeth Barker Rotch, By A. R. Hussey . . . . .	140
The West Coast Rotches . . . . .	151
The Great Rotch Scandal . . . . .	159
New Bedford Fifty Years Ago . . . . .	166
Sarah Bullard (1924-1942) . . . . .	168

### PART TWO

Memorandum by William Rotch . . . . .	175
Petition by Quakers . . . . .	201
Thomas Jenkins’ Complaint . . . . .	206
Letters of William Rotch, Senior . . . . .	209
Letters of William Rotch, Junior . . . . .	255
Extracts from Anne Waln Rotch’s Journal . . . . .	264
The Young Lady’s Friend . . . . .	287
Recollections of 70 Years . . . . .	314
A Daughter’s Recollections . . . . .	329
Letters from Benjamin Rotch . . . . .	352
Letter from Francis Rotch . . . . .	355
Letter from Mary Rotch . . . . .	360
Letters to Anna S. Rotch . . . . .	362

Letter from Anna Rodman Robeson	.	.	.	.	373
Letter from Sarah Rotch Arnold	.	.	.	.	376
Letters from William J. Rotch	.	.	.	.	379
Letter from Anne S. Rotch to Son	.	.	.	.	385
Letter from Anne W. Rotch	.	.	.	.	387
Wreck and Rescue	.	.	.	.	390

### PART THREE

Rotch Ancestry	.	.	.	.	407
Descendants of William Rotch, Junior	.	.	.	.	409
The Morgan Family	.	.	.	.	414
The Bullard Family	.	.	.	.	421
Descendants of Benjamin Rotch of England	.	.	.	.	443
Thomas Rotch	.	.	.	.	450
Lydia (Rotch) Dean	.	.	.	.	450
Elizabeth (Rotch) Rodman and Descendants	.	.	.	.	451
Descendants of Mary (Rodman) Fisher	.	.	.	.	453
Descendants of William Logan Fisher	.	.	.	.	469
Descendants of William Rotch Rodman	.	.	.	.	472
Descendants of Anna (Rodman) Robeson	.	.	.	.	493
Descendants of Lydia (Rodman) Ruggles	.	.	.	.	508
Descendants of Samuel Rodman, Junior	.	.	.	.	523
Descendants of Sarah (Rodman) Morgan	.	.	.	.	531
Descendants of Benjamin Rodman	.	.	.	.	539
Early Generations of the Rotch Family	.	.	.	.	546
Descendants of William Rotch of Martha's Vineyard	.	.	.	.	547
Captain Joseph Rotch of New Bedford and Boston	.	.	.	.	550
Descendants of Samuel <sup>a</sup> Rotch of Boston	.	.	.	.	551
Index of Names	.	.	.	.	555

## Illustrations

	Frontispiece <i>Facing Page</i>
Sarah Bullard . . . . .	. . . . .
The Ship <i>Maria</i> . . . . .	. . . . .
William Rotch . . . . .	. . . . .
Rotch Counting House at Nantucket, Built in 1772 . . . . .	. . . . .
Francis Rotch (1750-1822) . . . . .	. . . . .
New Bedford Wharf Scene . . . . .	. . . . .
Ships Off Coast of Hawaii . . . . .	. . . . .
William Rotch, Junior . . . . .	. . . . .
Early Home of William Rotch, Junior . . . . .	. . . . .
Last Home of William Rotch, Junior . . . . .	. . . . .
Home of Andrew Robeson . . . . .	. . . . .
Joseph Rotch . . . . .	. . . . .
Anne Smith . . . . .	. . . . .
Home and Family of William J. Rotch . . . . .	. . . . .
Benjamin Rotch . . . . .	. . . . .
Elizabeth Barker . . . . .	. . . . .
Benjamin Rotch, Junior . . . . .	. . . . .
Ship <i>James Arnold</i> . . . . .	. . . . .
Whaleships at Rotch's Wharf . . . . .	. . . . .
Emily Morgan Rotch . . . . .	. . . . .
Wall's Painting of New Bedford . . . . .	. . . . .
Street in New Bedford, 1860 . . . . .	. . . . .
Francis Rotch (1788-1874) . . . . .	. . . . .
Ann Waln Morgan . . . . .	. . . . .
Francis Morgan Rotch . . . . .	. . . . .
Oil Works in New Bedford Harbor . . . . .	. . . . .
Home of Joseph Rotch . . . . .	. . . . .
Thomas Rotch . . . . .	. . . . .
William J. Rotch . . . . .	. . . . .
Emily Morgan . . . . .	. . . . .
Residence of James Arnold . . . . .	. . . . .
Residence of Samuel Rodman, Junior . . . . .	. . . . .
Home of Charles W. Morgan . . . . .	. . . . .
Ship <i>Charles W. Morgan</i> . . . . .	. . . . .
Captain Garland Rotch . . . . .	. . . . .
Dr. and Mrs. John T. Bullard . . . . .	. . . . .
Catherine C. and John M. Bullard . . . . .	. . . . .
Dr. and Mrs. John Crapo Bullard . . . . .	. . . . .



## INTRODUCTION

THIS IS being written in 1946. About twenty years ago I decided I would try to write a story of the Rotch family and to compile a genealogy thereof. Some four years later, during a long illness, I wrote what I expected to be the first chapter, a story of the original Joseph Rotch and what little I could learn of his father William. Slightly changed, this chapter was delivered as an address before the Old Dartmouth Historical Society in New Bedford on December 12, 1931. During my illness I also wrote the stories of the original Francis, and of Benjamin and his descendants who lived in England.

Fortunately for myself, but unfortunately for the Rotch history, my illness departed. I found that I became much too busy again with my profession and with various civic matters to give much time to writing, or to keeping up with the ever changing list of individuals who compose the family. I made sundry attempts to get back at the work, but finally came to the conclusion that, if I ever were to get anything published, I should both have to cut down somewhat on the scope of my original plan, and get outside assistance. I was fortunate in obtaining the services of Mr. William M. Emery, a professional genealogist, who did much work collecting family facts until the outbreak of the Second World War called a halt to our undertaking. After the War, which had, of course, accelerated marriages, births, and deaths, we started again. Once more Mr. Emery contacted members of the family with forms and letters seeking information on family changes. The data published in this book is not, of course, entirely complete, but we feel it better to publish what we have than to delay while we seek further information.

I have decided to publish what I wrote so long ago, certain writings of and about other members of the family, a few brief sketches as the names appear in the genealogy, and have now written the chapter on the New Bedford Rotches, with stories of some of them, a chapter on the West Coast Rotches, and a tale or two which I hope will be of interest to the family. Many I had hoped to write about will have to be forgotten. Probably this is just as well as the book has unexpectedly stretched to a frightening length as it is.

J. M. B.



## PART ONE

Stories of members of the  
Rotch Family, written by  
John M. Bullard unless at-  
tributed to someone else.



## Who Was Joseph Rotch?

An address delivered before the members of the Old Dartmouth Historical Society at the Friends Meeting House in New Bedford by John M. Bullard, December 12, 1931.

A CENTURY is nothing, as our scientists record time; it is barely more than the lifetime of many men. Yet it would have been hard, in 1830, for any adult in Nantucket or New Bedford to have believed an answer to this question necessary. It would, to be sure, have been an apt question when Joseph first stepped on Nantucket's shore, just as he was reaching manhood. Perhaps he could have answered it then. Evidently he did not care to.

Old Family Tradition has his place in any genealogical story, but he cannot always be relied on. For the last hundred years, at least, all of the Rotch family, so far as I know, have believed that Joseph was the immigrant, or at least one of the immigrants, and that he came from Salisbury in England. Salisbury is a good place for Tradition to favor. What in England is older than Stonehenge? Unfortunately I do not believe that Joseph Rotch came from Salisbury. I do not believe he came from England at all. Old Family Tradition says that, being penniless, he paid for his passage to America with a silk Spanish handkerchief. Old Family Tradition says he had a father, as have most men, and that his father's name was William, and that William too, was an immigrant, and lived in Provincetown on Cape Cod. He does not say whether this father William was smuggled in by the enterprising son in the Spanish handkerchief, or what happened to him afterwards, or little else about him except that he had a wife, and that her name was Hannah.

Now far be it from me to say that Old Family Tradition is all wrong. He isn't all wrong. In fact he isn't even very much wrong, except for this business of Joseph's coming from Salisbury. And perhaps some day we shall find just where this Salisbury story fits in.

It was only recently that Miss Elizabeth Watson mentioned by chance in my presence the "History of Martha's Vineyard," by Charles Edward Banks, M. D., and that an examination of this book

showed me that there was considerable trouble with Old Family Tradition.

He could not stand up against the records that Dr. Banks had unearthed. Joseph's father was named William. Score one for Old Family Tradition. But he married, raised his children, or rather started to raise them, and died in Salem, Massachusetts, and not in Salisbury, England, or even Provincetown. He was a weaver by trade, he left a little property, and he had a wife named Hannah. Score two for Old Family Tradition. But the records are much kinder to Hannah than is Tradition, who presupposes that her name was once Rotch, but neglects to tell us that her name was first Potter, that her father's name was Nicholas Potter, that her mother's name was Mary Gedney, and that, after she had been Hannah Rotch for some years, she decided to become Hannah Darling. Perhaps this change of name was because no one seemed to know how to spell Rotch. They could, of course, pronounce it, for they usually spelled it R-o-a-c-h, or R-o-a-c-h-e, though sometimes R-o-c-h, and very occasionally R-o-t-c-h. Probably Hannah felt she would be much safer with a name like Darling, which would have a definite meaning, even two hundred years later. But her contemporaries spelled her new name as badly as her old, leaving the "g" off when hard pressed. And the pity of it all was that, so far as the records show, Hannah couldn't spell any of her names, or write them, so she couldn't keep her neighbors straight in this little matter, which probably seems more important now than it did then.

Old Family Tradition scores three when the records show William Rotch in Provincetown after all. But the records show that this was Joseph's older brother, and not his father. And I think Old Family Tradition is entitled to score four on that Spanish handkerchief. The records do not help here, but Old Family Tradition's brother, Other Family Tradition, says Joseph was taken from Cape Cod to Nantucket in a "Wood Sloop" and not having any money, paid for his passage with a black silk handkerchief. This may well have been so.

Now when Joseph R-o-t-c-h, for so he and his brothers spelled their names, landed on Nantucket he didn't even have that handkerchief any more. He was only a boy, but he was endowed with foresight if not with pennies. He was a pioneer, with no Old Family Tradition to confuse him, and he probably decided that the people of Nantucket, good Quakers all, would be just as well satisfied if he didn't come from Salem, where a very short time before the worthy Puritans had been hanging Quakers. And perhaps he

calmed his conscience for not mentioning those other Rotches in Salem by resolving that he would see to it that it would be a good two centuries before any one had to ask any questions about himself and his sons.

Joseph Rotch was a cordwainer, when he first speaks of himself in a deed to his brother William on July 16, 1725. Tradition says he was born March 6, 1704, and this deed would seem to prove this a fact, for brother William, who was considerably older, had started acquiring his late father's Salem land in 1718. In that year he received a deed from his mother, Hannah, and her husband Daniel Darlin, which he supplemented in 1723 by deeds from his sisters Elizabeth Webb and Mary Symonds. It was not until two years later that he took a deed from Joseph, though the 1718 deed refers to a payment made to the latter and Benjamin, whose deed remains unrecorded, if it was ever executed. Undoubtedly William was taking no chances and waited for his youngest brother to come of age. So four months and ten days after he had reached his majority Joseph first has an opportunity to tell us of himself. And in this deed he tells us a good deal; first that he is a cordwainer, second, that he was late of Boston, third, that he could spell his name R-o-t-c-h, and saw to it that the scrivener of the deed maintained that spelling throughout, fourth, that he was the son of William and Hannah Rotch, late of Salem in the County of Essex, fifth, that "William Rotch of Cape Cod in the Constableweick of Treuwro in Ye County of Barnstable, Fisherman," was his brother, and sixth, that on the sixteenth day of July, 1725, when he described himself as late of Boston, he was actually present in Barnstable County.

Tradition says that Joseph had gone to Nantucket in 1720, very early in life, and that he came from Braintree. Perhaps so, but I doubt it. Inferentially he grew up in Salem. No record of his birth exists anywhere, as far as I can learn. His oldest brother and his sisters appear on the records as having been born in Salem. His father's estate was administered there in 1705, the year after Joseph's birth. Joseph was himself, when he gave the deed, a cordwainer, and so were his step-father, Daniel Darling and his brother-in-law, Samuel Symonds, both of whom were residents of Salem. Perhaps you do not know what a cordwainer was. He was a worker in cordwain, or cordovan leather, and would be called today a shoemaker or cobbler.\* What is more probable than that Joseph learned

\* Ebenezer Lowel, the father of Rev. John, who was born the same year as Joseph Rotch, was also a cordwainer. Ferris Greenslet in "The Lowells and Their Seven Worlds," Boston, 1946, says: "A cordwainer, that is to say, a dealer and worker in cordovan leather, not a cobbler or mere journeyman shoemaker but a manufacturer of shoes in an age when sole leather was worn out fast, a pioneer in one of New England's important industries."

his trade from his family in Salem? But, as he later proved, he was a rover. Evidently he had settled in Boston long enough to consider himself a resident of that town before he became of age. And evidently he was not intending to return there, or to stay in Barnstable, when he made the deed. So probably he was on his way to Nantucket in 1725. In the deed he says he received fifteen pounds, but his mother's deed says he got that money seven years before, so perhaps, after all, he was honest when he paid for his trip with a black silk handkerchief.

I am sorry that I know so little of Joseph's father, that old weaver, William the first. He may, to be sure, have had the ability and indomitable will that characterized his son and his grandson. He probably did if he was the immigrant. But though I know he was married in Salem about 1690 or 1691, I do not know how he got there or where he came from. But in a story connected with Nantucket and New Bedford, he would hardly have a place at any rate. Joseph was the founder of the local branch of the Rotch family and to me the most interesting of them all. Though he did not hob-nob with the great as much as did his forceful son, he gave the latter a start which he had never been given himself, and amassed a fortune which made the subsequent history of the family possible. He deserves to be considered as its head. We know so little of him as compared with his descendants that it seems important to set down all that is known.

What then do we know of this young man who landed on Nantucket, such a stranger that none could contradict him when he claimed to come from Salisbury, England? Such queer things are preserved by word of mouth, and somewhere along the line someone has seen fit to record, "I have heard that his sneeze was remarkable—so loud that it could be heard across the water."

As I have said, as far as I know no record of Joseph's birth exists. Tradition says it occurred on third month, sixth, 1704. And I think there can be no doubt that this event took place in Salem, Massachusetts, and not in Salisbury, England. His father was a weaver, not a mariner, and we have him and his family definitely located in Salem for some years before and immediately after Joseph's birth. I had some hope of finding a birth record in Salisbury, Massachusetts, which is located reasonably near Salem and might have been even closer in the old days of fewer and larger towns. But I was doomed to disappointment. There was no record there.

We can imagine that life was hard for young Joseph, who was only about a year old when his father died, leaving an estate amounting to 153 pounds, 12 shillings, including the building which

served as home and workshop combined, valued at 75 pounds. nine acres of other land valued at 35 pounds, a horse, cow, and sow at 15 pounds and 10 shillings, two weaver's looms and tackling, 5 pounds, 10 shillings. He also left books, a Gunters scale, two guns, a "sword, Baggonet belt and cartouche." Joseph's oldest brother William was thirteen at this time, his sisters Hannah, eleven, Elizabeth eight, and Mary six, all of record, while his brother Benjamin, if Tradition speaks correctly, was only three. Hannah Rotch, Sr., did not marry again for many years, not until just after Joseph's thirteenth birthday, at which time she chose a man who speaks with affection of his step-sons. We do not know what drove the Rotches from Salem to the Cape. It may have been this second marriage. It may have been religion, or perhaps just wanderlust. At any rate, all three of the sons reached that part of Massachusetts early in life, and after sojourns in Boston and perhaps Braintree, it was from Falmouth that our young shoemaker sailed in the Wood Sloop to make his fortune. Tradition has placed this Falmouth in England, but I am sure that it was right here on Buzzards Bay.

We know a little of his personality. He, we are told, "was a man of great activity and shrewdness in business, his manner quick and vivacious. He was determined, and at the same time had a pleasing address, consequently he generally had his own way in everything. He was full of unostentatious benevolence, and preferred the recipient of his bounty should remain in ignorance of the hand that gave. He delighted in a joke, and was singularly ready in repartee." This jokester with a loud sneeze seems to have left an impression very different from that left by his eldest son, who clothed himself in solemn dignity. But both were extraordinarily able and courageous men.

When Joseph Rotch reached Nantucket about 1725 he started in to work at his trade, and to earn and save money. He was then, we are told, located on Main Street. Later he bought a schooner, probably not such a boat as we now identify by that name. Whether he had given up his trade of cobbler and became a merchant before his marriage, I do not know. On the second of the twelfth month called February, according to the Nantucket records, in the year 1733, (what would now be the second of the second month, 1734) he had stepped up in the world by marrying Love Macy, daughter of Thomas and Deborah Coffin Macy, a descendant of Nantucket's oldest families. She was, of course, a Quaker and so, by this time at any rate, was Joseph. I do not think he was ever so devout a Quaker as was his son William. He never used Quaker terminology in his deeds nor did he in his will. Probably he did not draw these

instruments himself but he must have read them. And he never bothered to change January to First month, or July to Seventh. In fact I do not believe he had been a Quaker before he went to Nantucket. The descendants of the first Benjamin Rotch can tell me of no Quaker tradition in their family, and among the muster rolls of Dartmouth is one of a Fairhaven company up to August 1, 1775, which includes the name of Benjamin Rotch, undoubtedly the son of William Rotch of Rochester. This minute man, Benjamin, was a great-nephew of Joseph and was born October 20, 1755. There are few, if any, Quakers among the soldiers of the Revolution.

Though the date of Joseph's change of occupation is unascertainable, it appears that he boarded his own boat and sailed her, or had her sailed, to the coast of Spain. Was he searching for more of those silk handkerchiefs which had given him such an auspicious start in life? Apparently not, for we are told he took out cargoes of oil, bone, fish, etc., and went to the West Indies and came back with new sugar, molasses, rum, brandy and wines. Some reports say Joseph Rotch later commanded his own vessel, but all agree he started by hiring a sailing master, a "Superior sailor found among his own townsmen." Certainly his nephew, who bore his exact name, was a sea captain, and sailed for him in later years, but this young Joseph was only twenty-one in 1754 when apparently our Joseph was in command of his own vessel in the Bay of Biscay, and lost overboard Abraham Macy of Nantucket, probably a relative of his wife. After this unhappy event Joseph Rotch, Sr., we are told, "remained on shore and sent his then numerous ships in charge of other Commanders of his own making." We are also told that he became very opulent for those times. Certainly the Nantucket land records show that he acquired much of the island, there being fifty-three grants of land to him there between 1735 and 1769.

The first deed, dated the twenty-seventh day of August in the ninth year of the reign of George the Second of Great Britain, Anno Domini 1735, was from William Worth, cooper, to Joseph Rotch of Sherborn on Nantucket, mariner. It conveyed only eight rods in Sherborn, to the northward of the first lot at Wesco, and bounded on the east by the land of Solomon Gardner, on the north by the highway, on the west by the land of Nathaniel Worth, measuring forty-one feet on the northern and thirty-nine feet on the southern end. Joseph paid eighty pounds in good bills of credit for it. Evidently the young mariner, already married for three years, had progressed considerably in his first ten years in the village then known as Sherborn, but now called simply Nantucket. It was seventeen years later, in 1752, that he is first described in a deed as a mer-

chant, and this was two years before he actually quit the sea.

Probably when Joseph retired from active participation in the navigation of his own ships, at the age of fifty, he expected to spend the rest of his life in Sherborn. We know little of his life at this time and nothing of his reason for acquiring extensive holdings on the mainland. Perhaps eleven years of life in the quiet and prosperous island community palled on one who had seen so many foreign coasts. At any rate, in 1765 he took the step that was destined to make such a difference to the whaling industry of Nantucket and New Bedford, for in that year he purchased a large part of what is now the center of the latter city, and also a great piece of the present town of Fairhaven.

It has been said in early histories of New Bedford that Joseph Rotch wished to settle in Fairhaven, but as he was unable to purchase land on the water, chose New Bedford. This does not seem to be so. Of course, in those days there was no Fairhaven and no New Bedford, just the town of Dartmouth. The story of Old Dartmouth, as it is now known, has been told many times. The land, which was named for one of the ports in England at which the Pilgrims had stopped when starting their epochal voyage, had been purchased from the Indians in 1652, for "thirty yards of cloth, eight mooseskins, fifteen axes, fifteen hoes, fifteen pair of breeches, two settles, one cloak, two pounds of wampum, eight pair stockings, eight pair of shoes, one iron pot, and ten shillings in another comodite," commonly supposed to be rum, by John Cooke and others of the original Pilgrims and their associates. The deed was signed by Wamsutta, son of Massasoit and brother of Philip. Very few of the purchasers came to live in this new territory, but among those who did was John Cooke, who became the patriarch of the region, dying in what is now Oxford, or North Fairhaven, in 1695. The Town of Dartmouth extended from a point three miles east of the Cushenagg River to the west bound of the Coaxet River. No north bound was given, but the town came to include what is now Fairhaven, Acushnet, New Bedford, Dartmouth and most of Westport. It seems to have included three territories, named for three of its so-called rivers, the Acushnet, the Apponegansett, and the Acoaxet, though the Pascamansett, more of a river than the first two, and the seat of one of the earliest settlements, seems seldom to have been mentioned. The town was very sparsely settled. There was a village at what is now known as Russells Mills and another at that part of New Bedford and Acushnet known as "The Head of the River," the latter of which was situated on the road from Plymouth to Newport. The settlers of Dartmouth lived mostly

on scattered farms. They were dissenters from the established church of Plymouth, and it was probably because of their religious beliefs that they left the comparative security of the original town to settle in the western wilds. They were mostly Quakers or Baptists, those in the southern part of the town belonging to the former faith, and those in the northern part to the latter. John Cooke was a Baptist preacher. He was also evidently a fighter, for he maintained a garrison on the eastern shore of the Acushnet, while Joseph Russell maintained one, the foundations of which can still be seen, near the head of the Apponegansett, just off what is now Elm Street in Padanaram. It was to these garrisons that the farmers and their families fled when King Philip's braves laid waste to the countryside in one of the first of their terrible raids. The Pilgrim fathers, though differing from their aristocratic Puritan neighbors in Boston, were nearly as intolerant, and smugly explained the raid as a punishment inflicted by God because the citizens of Dartmouth had refused to have an established church. The impression gained from reading early documents is that there was no church at all in Dartmouth, for the Quaker and Baptist meetings were not so regarded by the Pilgrim fathers. King Philip's war in this locality terminated in the betrayal of the Indians, who, contrary to the word given them, were marched off to Plymouth and slavery over what is now County Street. If my readers are interested in these early days, they should turn to Daniel Ricketson's "History of New Bedford," "Certain Come-overers" by Henry H. Crapo, the records of the First Congregational Society in New Bedford, and to many other works, for it is not my purpose here to retell what has often been told.

After King Philip's war the settlement flourished for nearly a hundred years. About 1760 a descendant of Joseph Russell, of garrison fame, also named Joseph, was occupying a large farm on the west side of the Acushnet River. His rambling farm house stood on the west side of the old Indian trail now known as County Street, on a spot later occupied by the mansion of Charles W. Morgan, now the site of the New Bedford High School. What later became Union Street was Joseph Russell's cart path to the shore, and it is said that a red gate shut off this cart path from the old road. Little villages had recently sprung up on the easterly side of the river or harbor, one on the shore near what is now Washington Street in Fairhaven and one in that part of the last-mentioned town now known as Oxford. Joseph Russell, besides his farm, owned some small vessels which he sent whaling. Evidently he was an enterprising man, and decided to plot his own farm land and see if

he could not have a village like the one across the harbor. He laid out Union Street and Water Street, the former known then as "the main street" and the latter as "the first street from the water," and divided the land into house lots. In 1760 the first of these, an acre in size, located just south of the "Four Corners" (the intersection of Union and Water Streets) was sold to John Lowden, a caulk by trade. He built on this, in 1761, a house which was burned by the British seventeen years later. The water reached to this lot and Lowden intended to build ships there. Three or four other houses were erected in the neighborhood in the next three or four years. There was one wharf and a try-house.

Into this peaceful scene came Joseph Rotch. I quote from "History of New Bedford" by L. B. Ellis:

"Under the mighty impetus given by this energetic business man, with his abundant means and skillful methods, the wheels of industry began to move. Houses and shops multiplied, highways were opened, wharves were built, the population increased, and the river front became the center of an active business. . . . Under a grove of buttonwood trees that stood by the river bank near the spot where now is Hazard's Wharf (Front Street, end of Hazard's Lane) the keel of the first ship was laid."

This was in 1767 and the ship was the famous *Dartmouth*.

Joseph Rotch made two large purchases almost simultaneously. He bought from Joseph Russell on "May 28th in the fifth year of the Reign of King George the Third, Anno Domini one thousand, seven hundred and sixty-five" the Ten Acre Lot, which extended from a point just east of the present Pleasant Street, down both sides of what is now William Street to the water. Two days later he bought from Elnathan Pope an eighty-six acre tract in Fairhaven, starting on the water just north of what is now Spring Street (extended west) and running up this street to the neighborhood of what is now Summer Street, and then southward to about the present railroad location, thence eastward to a point about a hundred and thirty feet east of Main Street, northward on this line to a point just south of Spring Street, and then westward into the water. The water frontage was no more than a hundred feet, if that, but this great farm effectually hemmed in the little village of Fairhaven and prevented it from developing until about 1830 when the Rotch heirs began for the first time to sell. In August, 1765, Joseph Rotch bought of Joseph Russell nineteen other lots in what is now New Bedford, six of which were "water lots", and in the following October he acquired nine more "water lots" from Reuben Delano, formerly belonging to Elnathan Pope. Thereafter

during the next two or three years he acquired many other parcels.

When Joseph Rotch first bought in Dartmouth he may or may not have intended to settle there. He was well along in years, sixty-one, and he was leaving a thriving and presumably congenial community to take up his abode on an almost deserted hillside. Others from Nantucket owned land on the mainland. The large tract just south of the Rotch farm in Fairhaven belonged to the Macys, undoubtedly relatives of Love Rotch. There was little wood on Nantucket and much of the land was owned in common, "sheep commons" as it was known. Perhaps the desire to own woodland and extensive acreage drove the Islanders to Dartmouth. Undoubtedly Joseph Rotch wished to be on a good harbor, for it is said he was very insistent on having deep water at his lots. His plan may have been to own where he could build ships, or perhaps he was just entering into a land speculation, with no intention of actually leaving his island home. He was not the first Rotch in the vicinity of the Acushnet River, though this fact will probably be news to most of my readers. His nephew William Rotch, born in 1729, oldest son of his brother Benjamin, had settled in Mattapoisett, or Rochester, as it was then called, and was married there to Anne Barlow on November 17, 1754. He was a shipwright by trade, and was undoubtedly friendly with his uncle. He is said to have moved to Tisbury on Martha's Vineyard two years after Joseph bought in Dartmouth, settling at Lambert's Cove in 1767, though I find evidences of him and his family on the mainland later than that. It was from him that the Vineyard Rotches descend.

In Joseph's earliest deeds of Dartmouth land he is always described as "Joseph Rotch of Sherborn in the island of Nantucket, merchant" (usually spelled "marchant"). It was not until November 29, 1769, that he first describes himself as being "of Dartmouth." And tradition tells us that Love Rotch never came to Dartmouth to live. She died November 14, 1767, and is buried in Nantucket in the Friends Burying ground at the head of Main Street. Five days after her death he still referred to himself as a resident of Sherborn. So probably it was 1768 before Joseph Rotch actually settled in the little village just springing up in Dartmouth, to which he had already given the name of "Bedford." The family name of the Duke of Bedford in England was Russell, and Joseph Rotch suggested this name for the new settlement growing up at the foot of the farm of Joseph Russell. The name soon came into general use. In Rotch deeds as early as 1767 we find land described as being "situate in Bedford so-called" or "at a place called Bedford." It was first mentioned in the Dartmouth town records in connection with

the building of a workhouse in 1773. Later it became known that a town in Middlesex County already bore the name of Bedford, so the village, when separated from Dartmouth in 1787, was incorporated under the name of New Bedford. But in the correspondence of the early Rotches, the prefix "New" was never used except in the address, and as "Bedford" the village settlement was known colloquially for nearly half a century.

It was on Rotch's Hill, so-called, in Bedford, long since nearly leveled, that Joseph Rotch made his home. The house stood on the west side of Water Street just south of William, and from its windows Joseph could look down what is now Hamilton Street to his wharves. Two of Joseph's children settled in Bedford with him, Joseph Rotch, Jr., and Francis Rotch. Joseph and Love are said to have had thirteen children, of whom William, born December 4, 1734, (great confusion is caused because December was the 10th month, old style, and the Quaker method of numbers is confusing) was the eldest and Francis, born September 30, 1750, was the youngest. Joseph, Jr., born December 7, 1743, was the only other to live. Ten died, probably in infancy, and though I have searched the Nantucket birth records I cannot find their names. William had married Elizabeth Barney December 31, 1754, and was the father of three or four children before his adventurous parent set out for the mainland. He was already well established in the whale fishery on the island, and was not able to come to Bedford for many years. Joseph Rotch, Jr., was between twenty-two and twenty-five and Francis Rotch between fifteen and eighteen at the time of the removal.

Their whaling firm in Bedford was known as Joseph Rotch and Sons, though probably at first only Joseph and Joseph, Jr., were its members. In 1769 these two obtained an execution against Jonathan Smith, Blacksmith, in the sum of 75 pounds, sixteen shillings, five pence, for which they were given a lot "a little to ye west of Bedford, a place so called in Dartmouth, with part of a dwelling house standing thereon." The ownership in parts of houses was constantly being dealt in in those days. It was not until March 30, 1772, that Francis first appears in the records. He was twenty-one by that time and is described as a "marchant" in a deed by which he, Joseph his brother, and his father received the strip of land on which they built a rope-walk which was later to be burned by the British. It was only a year later that young Francis, having already been to England, and then living in Boston, had the trying experience of acting as managing owner of the ship *Dartmouth* when she arrived in Boston conveying the famous tea.

The building of the *Dartmouth*, already referred to, was one of Joseph Rotch's first acts after purchasing his Bedford land. She was built in 1767, the first ship to be launched in Bedford. Both Daniel Ricketson in his "History of New Bedford" and the tablet recently erected on the building at 152 Front Street to mark the spot where she was launched, refer to Francis Rotch as being her owner. His widow, a hundred years after the event, used to insist the ship was the property of Francis, and Francis alone. Undoubtedly in 1772 he had become a member of the Rotch firm in Bedford, and as a member was the managing owner resident in Boston two years later. But is it likely that the ship was built by him at the age of sixteen or seventeen? I feel certain that Joseph Rotch was the builder of the *Dartmouth*, probably sharing her ownership at first with his son Joseph, Junior.

A Dartmouth tax list of 1771 throws some light on Joseph Rotch's importance in Dartmouth a few years after his arrival. I will give extracts from the *Morning Mercury* of September 18, 1924, being a reprint of a paper prepared for the Roundabout Club of Fairhaven by Marion H. Campbell, concerning the rate bill or tax list of 1771. This is labelled "The Fairhaven Taxes, 1771" and is in the library in Fairhaven, but covers the whole Town of Dartmouth and not just the village of Fairhaven:

"We are talking now of the region bordering the Acushnet River in 1771. Please sit up and be surprised.

"In this community then there were 321 dwelling houses, 123 barns, 71 corn houses, 184 horse kind, 318 oxen, 1243 cows, 2947 sheep (of these 42 were labelled sheep and goats), 473 swine, 2484 A. of pasturage, 815½ A. of tilled land and 9217 bushels of corn raised, 337 prospective barrels of cider, 583½ A. of salt marsh that cut 40¼ tons of salt hay, 148½ A. of fresh marsh cutting 98¾ T. and 2026 A. sown with English or upland grass cutting 1079½ T. There were 119 shops, warehouses, etc., 8 servants or slaves, 3059¼ T. of shipping owned here and 30,684 ft. of wharfage. The list shows that there were three grist mills, about 50 men who had shops, and a few who had two shops.

"Seth Mason, J. Rotch, Hix Jenne, Seth Jenne and Zevoiah Wood had shed houses assessed. Jonathan Taber and J. Rotch had lumber houses. John Louden and Frederick French, bake houses.

"Joseph Rotch is taxed for a rope walk, Jonathan Hathaway, Jonathan Taylor, and James Smith for cooper shops. Wesson Tallman and William Tallman each for a 'Taylor' shop and the last named also for a 'merchant shop.' Hannah West, widow, had a shoemaker

shop as did Isaac Weston, and Thomas Wrightenton had a 'hatter' shop.

"Isaac Howland owned  $\frac{1}{2}$  a candle works and Joseph Russell is taxed for  $\frac{1}{4}$  a spermacetti works. Richard Delano owned  $\frac{1}{3}$  a ware house, Zarah Eldredge  $\frac{1}{3}$ ; and Zeviah Wood  $\frac{1}{3}$ ; John Peckens and Thos. Hathaway each  $\frac{1}{4}$ . John McPherson, Joseph Russell, Isaac Howland and John Lowden each owned a whole warehouse and Joseph Rotch three.

"Another sign of prosperity is shown in the number of feet of wharfage owned here, 30,684 feet, and still another in the number of tons of vessels owned, 3059 $\frac{1}{4}$ . Joseph or J. Rotch owned by far the most of each. He was assessed for 14,944 feet of wharf and 673 T. of vessel. In one entry in the rate bills it says John Peckens owned  $\frac{1}{16}$  of the sloop Ranger or  $4\frac{1}{2}$  T., and  $\frac{1}{7}$  of a wharf or 500 feet. Of course wharves and ships varied in size in those days but still it gives us some idea, and on that basis J. Rotch at that date owned the equivalent of four large wharves and ten ships.

"Seventy-one men are assessed as owners of shipping, and 20 of these and one other owned the wharfage. All but about 74 of the inhabitants of the town tilled their land and cared for their live-stock in addition to their trade. They were farmers and land owners first—carpenters, chair makers, boat builders, merchants, weavers, tanners, tailors, blacksmiths, bakers, seamen, shoemakers—everything besides. They appear practically independent but no great fortunes in money had yet been gained by them. Forty-three of them at least, though, had sums of money from £4 to £4000 in trading stock or at interest. Of course the wealthiest man of the times was J. Rotch who had the larger above-named sum invested in stock and £1500 at interest besides. Barnabas and Joseph Russell were the next largest money holders at this date, each having £750 at interest. Timothy Ingraham had £65 in factorage and David Spencer had £150 invested in part of a West India cargo."

Though the village of Bedford, included above in "Cusnet," was destined to be almost completely destroyed by the British seven years later, it soon recovered and today the territory included in the above enumeration has more than 125,000 inhabitants, very few of whom, I am afraid, have ever heard of Joseph Rotch. Most of you who are here have, of course, some idea who he was, but you probably do not realize that in the year 1771 there were three men by that name living in Bedford, Old Joseph, his son, Joseph Rotch, Jr., mentioned above, and his nephew, Captain Joseph Rotch, who had come to the village from Boston in 1767 and built a house on Water

Street just south of the Ten Acre lot. This last Joseph, son of Benjamin, sailed as master of one of his uncle's ships for many years. The arrival of these three Josephs and young Francis comprised what has since been referred to as "the first coming of the Rotches."

Joseph Rotch was not long a widower. In fact his remarriage may have had something to do with his permanent removal from Sherborn to Bedford. On December 29, 1768, he married Rebecca, the widow of Gideon Cornell. She had evidently been living in Philadelphia, as can be seen from Joseph's will, and there her daughter had married Clement Biddle. She, with Jane Rotch, the wife of Captain Joseph, the latter's infant daughters, Mary and Nancy, and the four mentioned above apparently made up the whole family of pre-Revolutionary Rotches permanently in Bedford, although one of the William Rotches signed as witness to a document attesting that a man-slave named Venter, aged about 46, had purchased his freedom from his owners Elnathan Samson and John Chaffee in Dartmouth on July 9, 1770, for twenty-one pounds six shillings five pence.

(Here is omitted a short part of the address dealing with the will of Joseph Rotch, Jr., and with William Rotch, Sr., going to meeting, as depicted by Daniel Ricketson, which can be found elsewhere in this book.)

Many chapters have been written of Dartmouth's part in the Revolution. I will tell only enough here to complete my story. The first naval exploit and capture recorded in the Revolutionary Annals was made by Fairhaven men off Bedford harbor May 13, 1775. Captain Nathaniel Pope re-captured two provincial sloops that had been taken by the British sloop-of-war *Falcon*, one of the vessels that was to attack Bunker Hill just a month later. Fifteen British marines were taken prisoners and brought to land.

It was in this connection that I find the only reference to Joseph Rotch's acts during the Revolution that has come to my notice. I quote from Ricketson's "History of New Bedford:"

"Joseph Rotch, Edward Pope, and many others came from Bedford on Monday morning, and held counsel with some of the timid at the house of Esquire Williams, and concluded to send the prisoners and captured sloop, with an apology, back to the *Falcon*; but the captors were on the qui vive, and marched off the prisoners for Taunton."

Insofar as Bedford was Quaker, it did not approve of war and bloodshed, no matter what the consequences. The trouble this conscientious objecting made for Joseph's son William, is a story in itself. Of Joseph's feeling we know less. His ownership of the tea

ship *Dartmouth* was chance, and did not indicate Tory leanings. But though he was a less strict Quaker than his eldest son, he was a ship owner and probably had much the same feeling as to the sea fighting. His commerce was ruined. The people in Fairhaven at that time, as later, were zealous patriots and very warlike, a characteristic so different from their neighbors in Bedford that the two towns separated during the War of 1812; and the passage quoted above shows that Joseph's sympathies were entirely with his Bedford neighbors. At any rate, whatever his actions during the Revolution may have been, he seems to have been singled out for considerable punishment when the British decided to retaliate for Dartmouth's harboring of the privateers that swarmed in the Acushnet.

John Paul Jones was a frequent visitor to these waters, and while in command of the *Providence* brought her into Bedford with her sides running blood after a victory over a superior British vessel. The *Mercury*, years ago, stated: "The wounded of the crew who died were brought on shore and interred in a small hillock that rose near the shore a short distance north of the spot once occupied by the wheel house of William Rotch's ropewalk." This was the rope-walk of Joseph Rotch and his sons Joseph and Francis, above referred to. The sailors' bones have since been moved to Oak Grove Cemetery,

In August 1778, it was rumored that the enemy were coming. Eleven cannon were mounted at or near Fort Phoenix in Fairhaven and two on Clark's Point. But these poor defenses were entirely inadequate. A battle of the British and French fleets off Point Judith had been interrupted by a fearful storm. The French had sailed to Boston for repairs and the British had gathered at New London. Sir Henry Clinton in a dispatch dated September 15 said:

"I left the fleet, directing Major General Grey to proceed to Bedford, a noted rendezvous for privateers, etc., and in which there were a number of captured ships at the time."

Grey, an ancestor of Sir Edward Grey of World War I fame, brought with him a formidable part of the fleet; two frigates, one of them with forty guns, an eighteen-gun brig, and thirty-six transports, loaded with 4,000 British regulars. Into Clark's Cove they sailed on the morning of September 5, 1778. It was near nightfall before the host was all landed. With General Grey was a young dispatch bearer, Captain John Andre, later to pay with his life for Arnold's treachery. Up County Street marched the British army, meeting no resistance, as the artillery company of 80 men stationed in Bedford had gone that day to get a new gun at Stone Bridge.

The occupants of the farm houses fled precipitously to the dense woods that bounded County Street on the west, taking what household goods they could with them. Many amusing and tragic anecdotes are told of the events of this day. They can be found in all the histories of New Bedford. It is not my plan to tell them here, but some of the records of eye-witnesses preserved in "History of New Bedford" edited by Mr. Pease give me an opportunity to digress again for a moment and to call attention to a parallel which has especial interest for me.

These records were carefully collected sixty years or so after the event by a young man recently come from Dartmouth to New Bedford, whose career bore such resemblance to that of Joseph Rotch that I think it worth mentioning: Henry H. Crapo, later Governor of Michigan. There were two preeminent Rotches who moulded the early history of New Bedford, Joseph and his eldest son, William; and exactly a hundred years later there were two preeminent Crapos, who took a firm hand on the reins that guided the growing city just as the grip of the Rotches was beginning to weaken. Henry Howland Crapo, born in 1804, came to New Bedford about 1830, a young man, just as Joseph Rotch had gone to Nantucket. He had scant means and little influence on his arrival, but was willing to turn his hand to any useful task and his name is writ deep in the city's history as surveyor, auctioneer and city officer. Steadily his influence grew. He had a son, William W. Crapo, who like Joseph's son William, began to make a place for himself early in life. In the late 1850's James Arnold, who had married Sarah Rotch, became interested in a mortgage on some woodland in Michigan. He wished Henry Crapo to examine it for him, but the elder Crapo could not spare the time. His son William, just out of Yale and Harvard Law School, was sent instead, and returned with a favorable report. Mr. Arnold made his investment, sharing it with the Hathaways and Henry Crapo; and William Crapo started the practice of law in New Bedford. But things did not go well with the mortgage. It was obvious that it must be foreclosed and that someone must go to the wilds of Michigan to preserve the holdings. The Rotches were no longer pioneers, nor were the Hathaways. Henry Crapo, however, was not daunted. He was nearly sixty, much the same age as had been Joseph Rotch when he came to the wilds of Dartmouth. Henry Crapo left his son, already established in business, at home, and departed with his younger children to start an entirely new life, just as had the first of the Rotches. And in those Michigan woods he succeeded and prospered amazingly, as had Joseph in Dartmouth's woods a century earlier. And a war came

to plague him, too; but not as it did poor Joseph. For the Civil War added to the fame of the Governor of Michigan.

And my parallel continues, for the younger Crapo went forward steadily through his long life. In Congress, in the high circles of the Republican party, in finance, and positions of trust, he was always a leader. As whale ships brought William Rotch into conflicts and conferences with those in power in Great Britain, so whale ships brought William Crapo into conflict and conference with those in power in Great Britain nearly a century later, for if the young congressman from New Bedford had not fought a seemingly impossible fight through Congress there probably would have been no tribunal meeting at Geneva to make Great Britain pay the Alabama Claims. Joseph Rotch and his sons made New Bedford the foremost whaling port in the world. William Crapo, a hundred and fifty years later, gave to the city the impressive statue to commemorate the dead industry.

Guided by Governor Crapo's accurate records, we were following the British troops up County Street, when we left them for a moment. At the corner of Union, then the main street, just at dusk, the force divided. Some wheeled to the eastward down the hill, and the rest continued on up County Street. These latter were fired upon from the woods, to the west, and lost two men. They retaliated by killing three armed Americans at or near the corner of North and County, proceeded around the head of the river and blew up the fort on the Fairhaven side. The first party marched into the heart of Bedford village and freely applied the torch. It is said that it was the intention to burn only shipping, wharves, and commercial houses, but no effort was made to save the ten or eleven houses that happened to catch. Among these were those of Joseph Rotch and his nephew Captain Joseph, situated close together on Water Street. Joseph Rotch, the elder, also lost a barn, a chaise house and a ropewalk, and the firm of Rotch and Jarvis a shop and two warehouses. It was a gorgeous night, with a full moon. By nine o'clock the village and the shipping were in flames. It must have been an awe-inspiring sight. The property destroyed was valued at one hundred and five thousand pounds.

The little fire engine, Independence No. 1, which had been built in 1772 in London and purchased by Joseph Rotch, must have been helpless. It is said there were only fifteen men in the village capable of bearing arms at the time of the attack, for the Dartmouth men were away in their companies, some at Stone Bridge and others further off. Probably this number did not include the many Quakers, who would not bear arms, but who undoubtedly would have

manned the engine, if we can judge by the actions of Benjamin Rotch at the siege of Dunkirk a few years later. Undoubtedly no one even attempted to use Independence No. 1 that awful night, however, for the buckets hung in the houses and almost every house had been deserted.

We know little of Joseph Rotch's shipping during the war. It would seem that the old firm of Joseph Rotch and Sons had been dissolved and that perhaps the senior partner had retired, for Francis Rotch and Leonard Jarvis of Dartmouth had formed a partnership. Between August, 1775, and January, 1776, this new firm filed bonds with the State treasurer for six brigantines and one brig. None of these vessels, however, was among the seventy burned by the British. No vessel is recorded as having gone whaling from New Bedford from January, 1776, until 1785. Joseph Rotch was not living in his old house on Rotch's Hill at the time it was burned. It was occupied by Joseph Austin, the father-in-law of Cornelius Grinnell. But I doubt if he had already left the town. Tradition says the Rotches did not go back to Nantucket until after the burning of Bedford, and I find that the house in which Joseph Rotch later lived on the west side of Bethel Hill at the corner of Union Street had been built before the Revolution. This house was torn down to make room for the Thornton block in the eighteen-fifties. I know little of it, but it may have been built by Joseph as a more permanent home after his first few years in Bedford. However, there is one account in Henry B. Worth's book on old houses that says this Union Street house which appears to have been smaller, was Joseph's first house, and that he moved from it to the big one on Water Street. This would seem probable if it were not for this story about Joseph Austin. And I have always heard from my old friend Tradition that the Water Street house was the first. It was on the foundations of the Water Street house that William Rotch, Jr., built what is now the Mariner's Home in 1790, twelve years after the fire.

There is little more to tell. I know nothing of Joseph's life for the next five years in Nantucket. On March 25, 1782, he returned to Bedford. He was then seventy-eight, and probably alone except for his wife. Joseph, Jr., had died. Francis had been living abroad, though he was back in Boston soon after his father's death, perhaps called back to look after his interests in the estate. This second sojourn was to last but a little over two and half years, for on November 24, 1784, Joseph Rotch died, in his eighty-first year. He had made his will three months earlier being "Weak of Body" and so perhaps in his last sickness. I give it here, just as it was written:

I Joseph Rotch of Dartmouth in the County of Bristol & Commonwealth of Massachusetts Mercht. Being weak of Body but of sound Mind Memory & Understanding; do make publish & declare this my last Will & Testament in manner & form following viz,

Imprimis My Will is that all my just Debts and Funeral charges be paid & discharged by my Executor hereafter named.

Item Whereas there was a Covenant or agreement entered into & made by & between my present wife Rebecca Rotch & myself before our Marriage by which (if she survives me) she is to receive one hundred pounds out of my Estate & twenty pounds a Year during the time she remains my Widow & she in consideration thereof relinquishes her right of Dower & Power of thirds in whatever Estate I shall leave at my decease. Now my Will is that my two Sons William and Francis pay to my said Wife Ten pounds yearly & every year she remains my Widow in addition to the above said Twenty pounds & likewise that my Executor hereafter named at my decease supply & provide her with a suitable Room to live in either in Bedford or Nantucket & that he furnish the same in a suitable manner for her in her Station & the expense thereof to be equally born by my said Two Sons & on her ceasing, by Death or otherwise, to be my Widow the furniture to revert back to my sd. two Sons. But if it should be my Wife's choice to remove to Philadelphia it is my Will that my Executor be exempted from supplying her with a Room or Furniture excepting a Bed & furniture suitable for a Bed.

Item I give and bequeath to my two Sons William & Francis their Heirs & Assigns forever all my Estate real personal and mixed or of any other sort or kind whatever & wherever to be found to be equally divided between them, particular referance being had to what each one has or shall receive of me before my decease.

And I hereby nominate and appoint my Son William Sole Executor of this my last Will & Testament hereby revoking & making void all former Will or Wills by me heretofore made.

In Witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand & Seal this thirteenth day of August in the Year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred & Eighty-four.

Signed Sealed published and delivered by  
the aforesigned Joseph Rotch as & for his  
last Will and Testament in the presence of  
us who have hereunto subscribed our names  
as Witness thereto in presence of the  
Testator and in the presence of each other--  
Paul Ingraham  
William Gordon  
Edw. Pope

Joseph Rotch Seal

Bristol, ss.

January 4th, 1785

Then before the Honble George Leonard Esqr. Judge of the Probate of Wills for the County of Bristol came Paul Ingraham and Edward Pope two of the Witnesses to the before written Instrument and made Oath that they were present and saw Joseph Rotch the subscriber thereto who is since deceas'd sign seal and heard him publish & declare the same to be his last Will & Testament; and that he was of a sound disposing Mind & Memory when he

so did. And that they with William Gordon sign'd as Witnesses at the same time and all in the presence of the Testator

Geo. Leonard.

The first impression given is that Joseph was treating his second wife rather shabbily. Five hundred dollars down and a hundred and fifty a year seems almost nothing today, not to mention the quaint provisions as to a room, furniture and a bed, a bed, remember, even if it is "my Wife's choice to remove to Philadelphia." On second thought it was not so bad. Perhaps the Revolution had made Old Joseph land poor, for whatever his losses may have been, he still owned many acres in the center of Bedford, most of Fairhaven, and a large area in Nantucket. But Rebecca was given more than she had contracted for sixteen years before at a time when Joseph's wealth was unquestioned. She was then a Vaughan of Newport and the mother of a Biddle of Philadelphia, and undoubtedly had property of her own. A hundred pounds would purchase much in those days, too, and there was little to buy if a room were provided. At first I thought that Joseph was trying to prevent her return to her former home, but there is record that on learning of Joseph Rotch's failing health, Clement Biddle, who was a Commissary in the American Army, and who had married Rebecca's daughter, wrote to William Rotch that it was the wish of himself "and sister, in the event of the death of father, that Mother should go to Philadelphia to live with" them. Therefore, only a bed was to be needed in Philadelphia. Presumably Rebecca went, for, after assenting to the allowance of the will, she disappears from the records. (Clement Biddle was an ancestor of Francis Biddle, Attorney General in F. D. Roosevelt's administration.)

During the early Bedford days, Joseph had been more closely associated with the youthful Francis than with the elder William. But, though the estate was divided between the two, "reference being had to what each one has or shall receive of me before my decease," William was named sole executor. Perhaps this was because of the better business judgment of the elder son, who died a rich man while his brother died extremely poor, but probably it was because Francis had taken up his residence in Europe, and was to be found little in America for many years.

It is interesting to note that the first of the Rotches had made his sons' lots in life easier even before his own death. This was a practice which many of his descendants followed, and of which William Rotch, Sr., approves highly in one of his letters from France in 1792.

There is only one contemporary reference to Joseph's death that I find, and that seemed to me at first rather hard to explain. Elizabeth Rodman of Newport and Leicester had married Joseph's grandson, William, in 1782. On the tenth of December, 1784, sixteen days after her grandfather-in-law's death, she was writing from Newport to her husband's sister, Elizabeth Rotch Rodman, in Nantucket. After a chatty page telling of her experiences on a rough voyage from Nantucket and mentioning a wedding she had attended in Providence, she signs herself "With endeared love to you all I remain thy affectionate E. Rotch Junr." At the top of the next page she adds, very casually, "We heard of Grandfather's decease the evening we arrived at Providence. Mama has heard from N. Easton who has an excellent creature for Sammy & Wm.—will attend to it being killed in order to send by Oliver. Our dear little S. sends a kiss to her dear cousins & wants much to see them. please to excuse me to Cousin Lydia as I do not feel composed enough to write more at present—adieu—Mama desires her love to you all likewise S. & Charity."

Here is Joseph's death all mixed up with that of some unfortunate steer. It seemed hard to explain, because the fashion of the times tended to wordiness on such subjects. But probably Elizabeth hardly knew her husband's grandfather. Nantucket can be reached from New Bedford now by airplane in an hour or less, and last summer planes left several times a day. But in Revolutionary times it often necessitated a long and dangerous sail. Joseph was old and feeble and young Elizabeth was invariably seasick. Joseph had left for Bedford for the last time three months before Elizabeth had married his grandson and she was in her early twenties when she wrote, an age when death is impersonal and causes few comments. Certainly there was no rift in the family, and Joseph's death was very vitally to affect Elizabeth's life, shortly, though she may not have realized it then. A few years later she and William, Jr., were to build a house, as I have said before, on the ruins of the one burned on Rotch's Hill in Bedford and to take up the active leadership which Joseph had laid down only with his death.

Joseph Rotch is said to lie in an unmarked grave at the Apponagansett Meeting House. His sect considered a gravestone ostentatious in those days, so his descendants are denied the privilege of placing a wreath upon his last resting place. He did not tell from whence he came; perhaps he would prefer it as it is.

I close this reading with the opening paragraph of Ellis' "History of New Bedford:"

"The history of New Bedford as a definite part of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts and of the old town of Dartmouth, would properly begin with the record that, in the year 1765, Joseph Rotch, who had previously settled on the Island of Nantucket, came here with his capital, energy, and enterprise to establish himself in the whaling business. He found here upon his arrival a little hamlet, comprising among its inhabitants Joseph Russell, John Lowden, shipbuilders; Benjamin Taber, blockmaker and boat builder; Gideon Mosher, mechanic; Elnathan Sampson, blacksmith. Under the impulse of these sturdy pioneers, Bedford village was founded and grew."

## The New Bedford Rotches

FROM 1765, when Joseph Rotch and his two younger sons, Joseph, Jr., and Francis, came to the shores of the Acushnet River as it flowed into Buzzards Bay in what was then the old town of Dartmouth, later New Bedford, until 1910, when Morgan Rotch died, the Rotch family was an extremely important part of the community.

Insofar as I know, the male Rotches who lived at least part of their lives here were:

Joseph (1704-1784), who was the first to come, went back to Nantucket during the Revolution, and then came back to Bedford again in 1782, two years before his death.

Joseph, Jr. (1743-1773), his son.

Francis (1750-1822), his son.

Captain Joseph (1733-1809), son of Joseph's brother Benjamin, who was a landowner in New Bedford, commanded his Uncle Joseph's vessels and other Rotch ships, later becoming a merchant, who was the father of Nancy who married Francis. He and his wife Jane, Francis and Nancy were buried in the Quaker Cemetery on Water Street in New Bedford, their graves being transferred when the cemetery was moved to a lot just south of Rural Cemetery, of which it now seems to form a part. Their gravestones can there be seen today.

William Rotch, Jr. (1759-1850), grandson of Joseph, who came from Nantucket in 1787.

William Rotch, Sr. (1734-1828), son of Joseph, who came from Dunkirk after a short return visit to Nantucket, in 1795. He is rightly considered as the most prominent member of the family.

Thomas Rotch (1767-1823), son of William, Sr., who came to New Bedford in 1791, spent but a short time here before moving on to Hartford and then to Kendal (now Massillon) Ohio, where he and his wife, Charity Rodman, were Quaker Missionaries.

Francis (1788-1874), son of Benjamin, grandson of William, Sr., who came from England, settled in English Prairie, Illinois, and when he married Ann Morgan of Philadelphia settled in New Bedford for a number of years before moving to Morris, New York State. His last male descendants have died on the Pacific Coast

within the last three years, Garland (1888-1943), whose letter, "Wreck and Rescue," appears herein, and Francis (1885-1945), known as Frank who was most helpful to me in the preparation of this book and whose will provided that his interesting Rotch manuscripts and beautiful miniatures and paintings, should go to the Old Dartmouth Historical Society, where they can now be seen.

William Barker Rotch (1802-1826), younger brother of Francis, who came from England to English Prairie, and then lived with his grandfather in New Bedford and died when employed in a mill belonging to the family in Fall River.

William Rodman Rotch (1788-1860), the first male Rotch to be born in New Bedford, son of William, Jr., who lived all his life in New Bedford.

Joseph Rotch (1790-1839), son of William, Jr., who also lived most of his life in New Bedford.

Thomas (1792-1840), son of William, Jr. He grew up in New Bedford, married in 1816 Susan Ridgway of Philadelphia, and built a mansion in 1821 on the southwest corner of Eighth and William Streets in New Bedford. He was as handsome as his brother Joseph. He had business interests in Kentucky. In 1839 his brother William, his sister-in-law and wife accompanied him to the West Indies in search of health. The trip ended at Charleston, South Carolina, where he underwent a very painful operation for cancer of the neck. This was shortly before the use of ether was known. William and Caroline returned to New Bedford and both were considerably injured when the stage in which they were riding overturned. Thomas stayed on at Charleston and seemed to be recovering. He died, however, from his cancer in about two years. His widow later married Dr. John Rhea Barton.

Horatio Stockton Rotch (1822-1850), son of William Rodman Rotch. He never married and died when still a young man.

Benjamin S. Rotch (1817-1882), son of the last Joseph, who spent his boyhood in New Bedford but lived most of his life in Boston.

William J. Rotch (1819-1893), son of the last Joseph, the second Mayor of New Bedford.

Rodman Rotch (1820-1854), son of the last Joseph, who married Helen Morgan. I am sorry I can find out so little about him. He died before my mother and my cousin Annie Lamb, his only surviving nieces, were born. His wife and daughter they knew well, but not where they lived. It may have been near Philadelphia, but he was buried in New Bedford in an iron coffin. I have heard he died in Kentucky and was shipped to his boyhood home in this formidable

container. His son, the eminent Boston pediatrician, Thomas M. Rotch, had the heavy iron coffin moved, with much difficulty, to Mount Auburn Cemetery, Cambridge, where this branch of the family are buried.

William Rotch (1844-1925), son of William J., who moved to Boston soon after he married but continued to spend his summers in Nonquitt, in Dartmouth, all his life.

Morgan Rotch (1848-1910), son of William J. and, like his father, Mayor of New Bedford.

Arthur Grinnell Rotch (1880- ), son of Morgan, who lived in New Bedford until he moved to Boston in 1920. He was the last of the descendants of Joseph who bore the name of Rotch to make his home here.

There were, of course, many Rotch women who lived their lives, or part of them, here, but I will mention only two.

Mary Rotch (1777-1848), the unmarried daughter of William, Sr., who came from Dunkirk with her father, lived with him till he died, and built for herself the house on the northwest corner of South Sixth Street and Cherry, which is now the Unitarian Parsonage.

Eliza Rotch (1791-1870), daughter of Benjamin, who came from England to live with her grandfather William, Sr., at the "Mansion", married Professor John Farrar of Harvard, and wrote many interesting books, among them "Recollections of Seventy Years" and "A Young Lady's Friend", one of the first books on etiquette, a charming volume containing a great deal of common sense advice. The delightful letter written just before her marriage asks questions which it is unfortunate she never answered in her advice to other young girls written many years later.

The only Rotch now living in New Bedford is a member of the family, but not descended from the early New Bedford Rotches. He is Russell Rotch, son of Captain Francis O. Rotch, a resident of Martha's Vineyard. He descends from the original William through Benjamin, and through Benjamin's son William of Rochester who was occasionally in Bedford.

There are, however, under different names, twenty-two descendants of Joseph Rotch making their homes in New Bedford or Dartmouth. Two of these were originally Rotches, Emily Morgan Rotch, daughter of William J. and the widow of Dr. John T. Bullard, who has lived for fifty years on the northeast corner of County and Spring Streets, and her niece, Emily Morgan Rotch, daughter of Morgan, and wife of Thomas C. Knowles. Then there are the latter's children, Louise Knowles Holcomb and Josephine Knowles Brayton. Also

Emily Severance Grinnell, her daughter Sylvia Grinnell Almy, and her two granddaughters, Audrey and Susan Almy; Sarah Scudder Ashley and her daughters, Polly, Phoebe and Jane, and Emily Bullard's son, your author, and his son, Dr. John Crapo Bullard; and Dr. Joseph Rotch Frothingham, who grew up in Boston but has just come to New Bedford to practice, and his two children, Joseph R., Jr., and Martha.

All of the above are descendants of William J. Rotch. Then there is Horatio Hathaway Brewster, who comes down through the Rodmans, and his three children, Marion, Horatio Jr. and James H., and Morgan Hussey Plummer, through the Morgans and the Rodmans. These are the all-the-year-around residents.

There are also many others who come back to Dartmouth in the summer, forty of them in 1946, five of them named Rotch. Through all of these the family tradition lives on in these parts, though the name itself is almost gone.

Sketches of most of the New Bedford Rotches follow or can be found elsewhere in this book.

WILLIAM ROTCH  
(1734-1828)

WILLIAM ROTCH, commonly known in later years as William Rotch Senior, is by far the best known of all the early Rotches. He is the ancestor of all of us who descend from the original Joseph, for Joseph's other children who grew to manhood both died without issue. He was a man of considerable standing in his time, and his activities were well known to all his descendants for many generations. Probably now, however, there are a great many members of the sixth, seventh and eighth generations of his descendants who have never even heard of William Rotch.

Daniel Ricketson in "New Bedford of The Past" has this to say:

"New Bedford fifty years ago was only a small place of perhaps some six or eight thousand inhabitants, and like Nantucket had a character of its own that marked it from other towns of New England, owing in a good degree to the influence of the Friends, who in the foundation of our place and up to this period included most of our wealthy families. Leaving the wharves, the old warehouses, sail lofts, and shops, let us wend our way up the street — old Main Street, now Union. Here we see a fine mansion overlooking its humbler neighbors, with its handsome row of the then favorite Lombardy poplars, with its front yard and ample entrance, a stately mansion with broad grounds, stables and outbuildings, with all the appointments and appliances of wealth and comfort. It is a meeting day of the Friends. In front of the house is seen a plain but handsome coach, with a sleek and fine looking pair of bay horses, a colored driver of respectable appearance, and another servant at the open carriage door. The door of the mansion opens, and a courtly, venerable looking gentleman appears, an advanced octogenarian, tall, and with long silvery locks, his dress of the true William Penn order — a drab beaver, drab suit, the long coat and waistcoat, knee-breeches with silver buckles, and shoes also with silver buckles — his step a little faltering but still graceful, and becoming one who had stood before ministers and kings in the Old World — a meek and truly devout disciple, nevertheless, of the Saviour of men, a genuine philanthropist. Let us see him in his carriage, sitting with patriarchal dignity, and follow him to the old Friends Meeting House of wood, on Spring Street, the predecessor of the present one of brick. Seated in the 'gallery,' or high seat, at 'the head of the meeting,' his very presence seems calculated to inspire a respect for the principles of peace he so truly inculcated both by precept and

example. My older readers will recognize this as a portraiture of William Rotch, Sr."

Ricketson says he is writing of the year 1822, but his memory is a little faulty as the present brick Meeting House on Spring Street was completed towards the end of that year.

If you can judge from his letters, William Rotch considered that he was not a topnotch man of religion. He often bewailed the fact that he was no better. But it is hard for anyone living today who reads his writings and follows his life not to consider him among the strictest and most devout of a very strict and devout sect at a very strict and devout period.

He was, of course, a most successful business man, but in everything he did, he acted as he thought his duty to his God, as seen through the eyes of the Society of Friends, demanded. He points out to his son Thomas, who later became a Quaker minister, that his children, with the exception of William, Jr., had only enough business to keep them reasonably busy, thus giving them time to improve their religious thoughts and life, "a privilege which I did not enjoy; (though my own fault)." He was undoubtedly a hard working man, a man who busied himself actively on two continents, while thinking all the time about the life hereafter. His letters show great affection for the members of his family and great solicitude for their health. He is always delighted to hear that one of his daughters or daughters-in-law "is safe in bed" with a new baby. And when the baby died, as it often did in those days, he rejoices that it has been released from its suffering and gone to a better world.

I do not happen to know much about William's youth or young manhood, except that at the age of only nineteen years and ten and a half months he married Elizabeth Barney, who was four months younger than himself and who, like himself, was destined to live to a very old age. William gives her great credit for being a most worthy helpmate. She was from pioneer Nantucket stock, the daughter of Benjamin Barney and Lydia Starbuck, the latter the great granddaughter of the famous Tristram Coffin.

William and Elizabeth named their first child William, but he died when only eighteen months old. Then came Elizabeth, always called Eliza, who married Samuel Rodman, then a second William, always known as William, Jr., then Susanna who lived only five months, then Benjamin, Thomas, Lydia and Mary.

Eliza has left a host of descendants, William, Jr. a good many, and Benjamin a number, some of whom live in England and some of whom live, or did live a very short time ago, in the United States. Perhaps the last of these latter has just died. Thomas had only one

child, a son, who died in infancy. Lydia married William Dean of Salem and died in her early fifties without issue. Mary never married but made quite a name for herself and a place in this story.

William, Sr., was forty when the American Revolution broke. He was already wealthy, by far the richest man on Nantucket. Though I know very little about him before that date, I know a lot about him since. In the Old Dartmouth Historical Society in New Bedford are many letters written by him from England and France in 1785 and 1786 and in 1790, 1791 and 1792 to his sons Samuel and William, and preserved by the Rodman family until my cousin Julia Rodman, the last of the Rodman name in New Bedford, gave them to me twenty years or so ago. There are also a number of letters written to his son Thomas and lately given to the Old Dartmouth by Mrs. Horatio Wales of Massillon, Ohio, formerly known as Kendal, the last home of Thomas and Charity. Then there is William's own "Memorandum," written when he was eighty, and there are the various histories and stories of early New Bedford, all of which give him a prominent place.

If I had the time to look as carefully at old records now as I did when I wrote of William's father, Joseph, in 1931, and of his brother, Francis, shortly thereafter, I should, of course, come upon many interesting things. Unfortunately, I have not the time, and must be satisfied with putting down just what I happen to remember.

William Rotch's first famous ship was the *Beaver*, which was one of the three ships from which the tea was tossed into Boston harbor, as I have told in considerable detail in my story of the first Francis. Another William Rotch ship of that era was the *Bedford*, obviously a fairly new ship in pre-Revolutionary days, as she could not have received her name before Joseph Rotch selected the name "Bedford" for his new place of abode about 1765 or 1766. There still stands at the foot of the square in Nantucket a brick building which was formerly the Counting House of William Rotch and Sons, and later the home of the Pacific Club, an organization formed originally by whaling captains, and perhaps other seamen, who had sailed the waters of the Pacific Ocean. Over the door of this building have been painted in recent years the names of three ships, the *Dartmouth*, the *Beaver*, and the *Eleanor*. These were the tea ships all right, but why are they painted here? The *Eleanor* had no Rotch connection that I know of, except that Francis spoke for all the ships in their trouble. The *Dartmouth* was built by Joseph Rotch and Sons in Bedford, and had little connection with William Rotch's firm. The *Beaver*, of course, belonged to William Rotch and was a tea ship. I believe that until recently the sign read *Dart-*

*mouth, Beaver, and Bedford.* That made more sense. The *Bedford* was definitely connected with that building, though not a tea ship. After the tea was thrown into Boston Harbor the *Dartmouth* and the *Beaver* went to Nantucket, and there joined the *Bedford*. Then the *Beaver* and the *Bedford* sailed together for the Brazil banks.

The *Bedford*, though not a tea ship, is entitled to fame in her own right. She, still under the house flag of William Rotch, was the first ship to fly the stars and stripes in England, when she sailed up the Thames to London and reported at the custom-house with a cargo of oil on February 6, 1783. There is a story that one of her crew, a hunchback, while on shore one day, was clapped on the back by a British sailor, who said, "Hello, Jack, what have you got here?" to which the Yankee replied, "Bunker Hill, and be d---d to you!"

I am going to let William Rotch speak mostly for himself in this book, where the reader can find extracts from his letters, and his "Memorandum." But I will add what little I know and let others speak briefly for him. It is obvious that his Quaker pacifism made him unpopular with many on his native island. It must have been very difficult for him to throw his bayonets into the sea. He was constantly doing unpopular acts because his conscience so demanded. He was many times in danger during two Revolutions, one in America, and one in France, because he would not do the thing, often a very small thing, that popular clamor demanded. Though he thought of himself as a man of peace, he went out of his way to stir up trouble if his conscience so demanded, and it all too often did. He was a strong man, and strong men usually make enemies. Most of us who have gone through two wars would have had little sympathy with much that he did when the freedom of his country was being threatened. Of course, he did not consider it "his country." He disapproved of much that "The Massachusetts" did both before and after the Revolution. He did not feel that Nantucket owed any allegiance to "The Massachusetts" and he tried to get it declared neutral. Failing this, he did his best to protect it, in its very exposed position, from the English raiders, and he did this actively at great personal danger, though racked at the time by rheumatism, the curse of many of the early Rotches. He was indicted for treason, he stood trial, and he was not convicted. He was a Quaker, probably a great Quaker, certainly a leading Quaker, and the conscientious objections of the Quakers to this day are respected. The Quakers always have been, and still are, ready to subject themselves to personal danger even if they will not fight. Personally, I agree

with the Answer of Mirabeau, then President of the French Assembly, to William Rotch's Petition:

"You also say that one of your religious Tenets forbids you to take up arms, or to kill, on any pretense whatsoever. It is certainly a noble philosophical principle, which thus does a kind of homage to humanity. But consider well, whether the defense of yourselves, and your equals be not also a religious duty? You would otherwise be overpowered by Tyrants! — Since we have procured Liberty for you, and for ourselves, why should you refuse to preserve it? Had your brethren in Pennsylvania been less remote from the savages, would they have suffered their wives, their children, their parents to be massacred rather than resist, and are not stupid tyrants and ferocious conquerors also savages?"

Nevertheless, I, and I think most of us, respect the Quakers. I have often thought of William's son Benjamin and his fire engine rushing to put out the fires caused by British hot shot during the siege of Dunkirk a hundred and fifty or so years ago — that Dunkirk that was to take such a toll of the descendants of those British in the darkest days of World War II.

If you read William Rotch's letters, you will find that he was terribly disturbed by the French Revolution. I have written in my account of his son Benjamin about the progress of that Revolution in connection with the Rotches' stay in Dunkirk. It went from bad to worse while they were there. William was no monarchist. His sympathies were with the people, and with the Constitution. But he had no faith in mob rule, he abhorred violence, and he foresaw that the people of France would lose their rights through their excesses.

There is no question that there was great feeling against William Rotch by a portion of the populace of Nantucket. Some of this was caused by his acts during our Revolution, and some of it was the result of bitterness on the part of Josiah Barker and his son, who had consented to Benjamin's marrying Elizabeth Barker on the understanding that he would not take her abroad. Of course, Benjamin never planned to stay permanently in Europe, and he did not realize that Elizabeth's seasickness would prevent her from making trips back and forth, as he himself did. But I cannot help sympathizing to some extent with the Barkers, who lost a very exceptional member of their family permanently. Probably the ill feeling in the Island was increased by the fact that William withdrew his fleet to foreign shores. William was still in love with Nantucket, and all during his stay in France hoped to come back. During that stay he subscribed

to the building of a new Meeting House at Nantucket. I do not know if his subscription was accepted.

In 1794 he did return to stay only about a year. During part of that year his "Mansion" in New Bedford on the northeast corner of what is now Union and Second Streets, was being built. He thought of hiring a house to live in until it was completed, but I do not know that he actually did. He moved into the "Mansion" in 1795 and lived there, retired from business, until his death thirty three years later. Many of his descendants have a print of William Wall's painting of "New Bedford Fifty Years Ago," representing an imaginary scene in 1807. It is painted from the southeast corner of Union and Water Streets. The "Mansion" can be seen behind a row of poplars; William Rotch sits in his chaise, his son William is the large man behind the group of colored people and his son-in-law Samuel Rodman is the taller man under the barber pole. One of my distant cousins told me that the woman was Mary Rotch, another that she was William Rotch's laundress. All I know is that the artist said she was Patty Hussey.

To this house came many prominent people, both Quakers and people of the world. In 1796 the Duke de la Rochefoucauld visited one of the William Rotches in New Bedford. In his volume "Travels" London, 1799, Page 493 he says, speaking of the Whale Fishery:

"Wm. Rush (Rotch) is the proprietor of six vessels. His father is one of those inhabitants of Nantucket invited by M. De Calonne in 1786 to Dunkirk to introduce the Whale Fishery into France. R. began the business of the Whale Fishery with two ships in Dunkirk. In 1793 no less than 40 ships sailed from Dunkirk for the Fishery."

Augustine Jones, a prominent Quaker of a period about a hundred years later than that of William Rotch, published in "The American Friend" of Fifth Month 2 and 9, 1901, an account of William Rotch, whom he greatly admired. It begins:

"The career of a man who was possessed of strong, individual character, tempered by sincere and deep religious convictions, with tender conscience, who, with master-strokes, established and built up great industries and influenced from his center the business of the world, ought never to be lost sight of. His worthy example is the heritage of mankind, to be cherished in the perpetual annals of the race. We owe vastly more to the heroes of invention and of enterprise, who have clothed and fed the multitude and spread before the entire world the light of modern civilization, than to the whole race of violent men who have changed again and again the map of

the world, whose vain-glorious chronicles are the staple of history, far beyond their merit or usefulness."

Later, after quoting from the "Memorandum" he says:

"The population of Nantucket in 1775 was 4,500; it was in 1890, 3,268. The people of the earlier date were mostly Friends, as appears in the court record of that period . . . There were then one hundred and fifty vessels from that place employed in the whale fishery, which in number then led the world.

"There was a civil embargo in 1777 which prevented vessels from leaving Nantucket, which was raised by an order of Council of Massachusetts upon petition, and upon condition of 'being wholly manned by Quakers'."

And still later:

"William Rotch was a representative to New England Yearly Meeting in 1782, at Newport. He signed as clerk, on behalf of a committee of great importance in the organization and government of the Yearly Meeting in 1783, a report of the dignity almost of discipline, indicating his personal weight in the meeting.

"William Rotch was the owner of the famous ship *Bedford* of Nantucket, which had the honor of first displaying the American flag in British waters. There is a certain rich and racy relish to the following narration of an English historian of the period, who seemed to chronicle with some disdain:

"The ship *Bedford*, Captain Mooers, belonging to the Massachusetts, arrived in the Downes on the 3d of February, 1783, and was reported at the custom house on the 6th instant. She was not allowed regular entry until some consultation had taken place between the commissioners of the customs and the Lords of Council, on account of the many acts of Parliament in force against the rebels of America. She was loaded with four hundred and eighty-seven butts of whale oil, is American-built, manned wholly by American seamen and belongs to the island of Nantucket, in Massachusetts. This is the first vessel which has displayed the thirteen rebellious stripes of America in any British port.' — Barnard's 'History of England,' 'Cyclopoedia of United States History,' Vol. I., p. 493.

No doubt the trouble at the customs house arose from the fact that the definitive treaty of peace between the two countries was not signed at Paris until Ninth month 3d, 1783, seven months after this event, but provisional articles of peace were signed at Paris Eleventh month 30th, 1782, so that the energetic merchant had reasonable ground for his adventure. It is a notable fact that the *Dartmouth*,

which lost the tea, was owned by Francis, and that the *Bedford* was owned by his brother.

"He was prominent in 1784 in New England Yearly Meeting, being on the Executive Committee which directed its business, and also on the committee to consider the state of the Society and devise measures for improvement. This was the first year of the Providence Friends School, which began at Portsmouth, R. I. He was a strong patron of it.

"Great Britain was in 1785 'the only market of any consequence for sperm oil.' . . . The heavy 'alien duties' against American oil ruined the business in America. It now sold at 17 pounds to the ton, which had previously been sold at 30 pounds. It cost 25 pounds to produce it. Nothing remained to a practical, thrifty man but to follow the market into England, and that he tried to do. He therefore, with his son Benjamin, who was destined to remain abroad permanently, sailed from Nantucket Seventh month 4th, 1785, in his own ship, *Maria*, William Mooers, master, who, I suppose, commanded the *Bedford* two years before.

After trying to settle in England and finally establishing his business in Dunkirk, France, William Rotch arrived back in America on 1st month 1st, 1787, and sailed again for Dunkirk with his wife, daughters, and Benjamin's wife and son on the *Maria & Eliza*, 7th month 29, 1790, for a much longer stay.

To quote from Augustine Jones again:

"The little colony of Friends at Dunkirk were constantly exposed to peril, suffering and abuse as the storm of revolution in France hourly became more furious, culminating, in 1793, in the hideous Reign of Terror. War with England seemed to be the inevitable destiny of France early in 1793, and William Rotch and his associates in part made their escape to England. He left France First month 19th, and Louis XVI, the first sovereign in the world to acknowledge the independence of the United States, was guillotined two days afterwards. William Rotch sojourned in London until Seventh month, 1794; then he returned to his home in Nantucket, where he remained until 1795, and then removed to New Bedford, where he resided ever after."

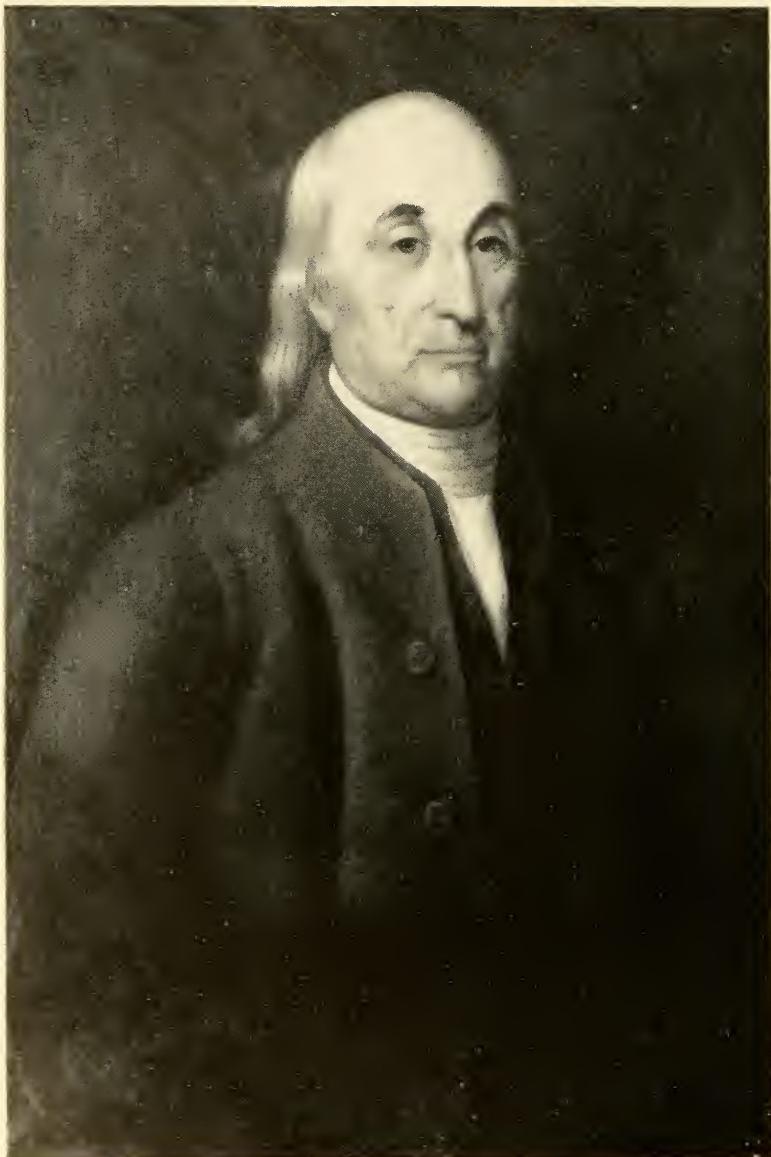
And then Jones pays this final tribute:

"Hero worship would have been very distasteful to that group of noble men, which included the Hazards, the Browns, the Rotches and many others; but we cannot forget the worth lost in them; we may well seek with all our hearts to emulate their careers in following the Lord Jesus Christ in the obedience of faith. The last appear-



SHIP MARIA, OF NEW BEDFORD, THE ELDEST SHIP IN THE UNITED STATES.

The ship *Maria* on which William Rotch sailed to England in 1788.



William Rotch  
(1734-1828)

Painted in 1825 by E. D. Marchant.  
Now in possession of Miss Caroline Snelling, South Lincoln, Mass.

ance of William Rotch, Sr., on Yearly Meeting records was on a committee to set off Vassalboro Quarterly Meeting, Me., in 1813.

"The most effective way to portray the character of a man is by presenting him in action when he himself is unaware and unsuspecting. The exalted manhood and true grandeur of soul of William Rotch, full of the tender compassion of our divine Master, 'Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these my brethren ye have done it unto me,' will appear in the following narration:

"Captain Paul Cuffee, born near New Bedford, in 1759, whose father was a slave born in Africa, and his mother an Indian, became by his own energy the owner of vessels. He was an influential member of the Society of Friends, and one of its ministers. He was a philanthropist, deeply interested in the colonization of American freedmen on the west coast of Africa. He acquired quite a fortune. He lived and died at Westport, Mass.

"New Bedford made an enviable record in the anti-slavery struggle. She first offered to Frederick Douglass a sympathetic, helping hand into place and power.

"Paul Cuffee was at a public house in New Bedford warming himself by the fire in the travelers' room, when the landlady came to him and told him that she had prepared a separate table for him. He politely thanked her for the attention, but informed her that he had previously accepted an invitation to dine with William Rotch.

"William Rotch, with some English Friends, visited Westport Meeting and accepted an invitation, extended to them all, to dine at Paul Cuffee's. They soon discovered that their host and hostess, overawed by the dignity from abroad and at home, had placed no chairs for themselves at the table.

"William Rotch said that he 'would not take his seat at the table unless Paul and his wife presided.' He had his own gentle but unflinching way. 'The company was soon seated, and an agreeable as well as bountiful dinner partaken of.' ('History of New Bedford,' by Daniel Ricketson, p. 255.)"

I have a copy of a letter which gives another point of view. This letter was written by Anna Shoemaker of Philadelphia, who, in the following September, married Nathaniel Hathaway. She was the mother of Francis and Horatio Hathaway, Mrs. Joshua C. Stone and Mrs. Griffitts Morgan. At the time the letter was written, she was visiting her aunt, Mrs. Abraham Russell, whose portrait is at the Old Dartmouth Historical Society:  
December 14th, 1818.

"I dined last Fourth Day at William Rotch's — in company with S.

Rodman, Ben, James Arnold, Tom Rotch, John Smith (Anne Rotch's Brother — also Philadelphians, who expects to come here this week to board to go to the Academy). I felt rather embarrassed for Eliza (Russell) only was with me and being to all the rest rather strange and among the thick bloods too: but I soon endeavored to shake off unpleasant feelings. Mary (Rotch's) mother treated me with great cordiality, and Mary, herself, paid me the most grateful attention. She is a lovely girl and dresses as plain as Anne Paxson but on her it looks very well, her figure is so large and majestic. We had a dinner not better, my dearest Richard, than many I've eat at thy hospitable board, not any better served or cook'd and I began to think there is something in having a *name* as well as being wealthy; for everyone here looks up to them as if they were the princes of the land and, even if it were so, surely no one could select finer figures, countenances, or more agreeable manners. I spent a very pleasant day and, in the evening, we had some amusement in guessing charades and enigmas and, at ten o'clock, Ned came up for us in the sleigh. *William the Third* handed me in and insisted on my wearing home his plaid, which caused us some diversion. My being so lucky in always getting provided with them; for almost every visit I've paid, I've come home in one of them."

William Rotch was eighty-seven in 1821, the year his grandson Samuel Rodman began to write his diary. Samuel made countless references to visits to his grandfather and grandmother at the "Mansion." I quote from May 14, 1824:

"Called at Grandfather's after dinner and spent  $\frac{1}{2}$  or  $\frac{3}{4}$  of an hour with him and dear Grandmother, both of whom seemed cheerful and better of the colds which had of late oppressed them; little thinking that it was the last time I should see my Grandmother. But such was the fact, for about  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 4 o'clock she had a severe coughing turn, was assisted to room and bed by grandfather, from which she sank in death in the course of a few minutes without any indication of extreme suffering. She seemed to pass suddenly and quietly away. I believe she was in her 90th year. This is one of those events which though solemn and impressive is cause of gratulation with a view to herself instead of regret. Full of years and wholly prepared in a moral point of view for the great and momentous change in the mode of existence, who would detain her amid the infirmities of protracted years? Yet in consideration of my dear grandfather it is an event which must give to life an aspect of peculiar desolation, and make him desire the time when release and entrance into the unchanging abodes of the virtuous, the abodes of

the blest, may be permitted to him also. Called and spent part of the evening at the Mansion, where were many relatives and friends."

May 18, 1824. "I sat up last night with the earthly remains of my dear deceased grandmother, in company with my cousin Charles Fleeming. The day has been almost wholly taken up with attentions connected with the interment. Took tea at grandfather's with his children & gr. ch. and several of the children of these. Conformably with a design long entertained by my gr. fr. a piece of ground was designated on this occasion for a family burying ground for himself and his descendants. The dear old man derived sensible comfort from the company and sympathy of his offspring, and there is much satisfaction resulting from the thought that we can contribute something to lighten the sorrows of one so truly venerable from the unblemished character and very advanced age. He is now in his 90th year."

Just four years later, to the day, May 18, 1828, William Rotch, Sr. was buried beside his wife. Samuel Rodman was sick and did not attend the funeral. On May 4th he had

"Called at Grandfather's. He seems to be stealing out his time."

On the 16th William Rotch died. Samuel writes:

"On sixth day morning the 16th, at 6 o'clock, my grandfather, William Rotch, expired — He had been in a state of great physical and mental exhaustion for several months, which had latterly so increased, that his mind only appeared to take cognizance of the wants of the body. For a week or two before his death, he took little or nothing except lemonade, and water, and on the 5th day he declined that also. — He had only been taken from his bed (with the 'Alleviator') for the time required in arranging it — for several weeks past, and was unable to do anything, in assisting to the changes of position which he desired. His constitution, once so strong and vigorous, was entirely overcome by the infirmities of age, and his release is only an occasion of congratulation. Thus has terminated a long life (for he was 93 years and 5 mos old) marked by a vigor of intellect and energy of character, which gained him a high consideration with his contemporaries, and an integrity and firmness which commanded the respect and esteem of his numerous associates in the scenes of active business, or in those more peculiarly appropriate to the exercise of the benevolently social feelings. The inflexible adherence which he always evinced under circumstances of unusual delicacy to the ministry of his religious tenets, marked an erect and noble spirit, and the peculiar and native urbanity of his character and feelings seemed to make full amends in his inter-

course with individuals of exalted rank or different religious views, for the angular aspect — when contrasted with the current of the world — of the language and manners of the Society of Friends, and won him the cordial esteem and respect of all of those with whom he was thrown in contact, who were capable of estimating the superior traits of human nature. Some of the events of his long life brought him in connection with men high in Office and of commanding talents in England and France, together with a very numerous class of those not officially distinguished, with whom it is believed he uniformly made and left a strong impression for strength of intellect and moral worth.

"The last 35 years of his life have been passed in retirement from the extensive engagements and operations in which he acquired his ample fortune. They have been devoted with characteristic activity to his social duties and the well ordering of the numerous appendages of his simple and hospitable establishment, which the village character of this place for the period specified, rendered convenient — And to improvement of his property for the encouragement and advancement of the interests of enterprising industry in the place where his family was settled, and which had, as to its commercial importance, been founded by his father. His character for a long course of years has had a celebrity which has made his unostentatious and prosperous course like a beacon light to direct and encourage the sincerest aspirant after moral worth and the cheering rewards of a persevering and honorable industry.

"He sleeps in peace and has had a large share of the applause which excites not the spleen of the envious. May his Descendants imitate his numerous virtues, and some of them, leave, if not as bright, as spotless a character in conclusion of a shorter career."

**JOSEPH ROTCH, JR.**  
(1743-1773)

Joseph Rotch, Jr., son of Joseph Rotch, Sr., was born in Nantucket, December 7, 1743. He was nine years younger than William and seven years older than Francis. These were the only three of many born to Joseph and Love Macy to survive. He was twenty-two when his father started acquiring land and doing business in Bedford, probably about twenty-five when he actually came there to live. He was his father's active partner at that time. He owned land in New Bedford with his father, and also owned land in Boston, where he did business with Leonard Jarvis who also was a landowner in Dartmouth. He did not live in Dartmouth very long. In 1772 he went to England in search of health which he did not find.

He was evidently, like his brother William, an ardent Friend. Both his will, made just before he sailed, and the recommendation he received from the Dartmouth Monthly Meeting, show this.

This was his will:

In the Name of God, Amen

I, Joseph Rotch junr. of Dartmouth in the County of Bristol, in the Province of the Massachusetts Bay in New England, Merchant, being (God be praised) of sound mind and memory, Do make my last Will & Testament as follows, that is to say

I Will that all my just Debts be paid

Item. I Give and Devise unto my Brother Francis Rotch My Brick Warehouse & Land in Boston which formerly belonged to Leonard Jarvis, Esq, To Hold to my said Brother Francis & his heirs and assigns forever

Item. I Give the sum of One hundred Pounds lawful money, to be paid and applied towards building a Friends Meeting house, at or near Bedford in Dartmouth, said Meeting house to be erected in such place as shall be approved of by my Father, & my said Brother

Item. I Give and Bequeath unto my Sister in Law Rebecca Cornel the sum of Two hundred pounds lawful money to be paid her at her Marriage.

Item. All the Residue and Remainder of my Estate, Real Personal & Mixt of every sort and Kind & wheresoever the same is situated, lying and being, I Give, Devise, and Bequeath unto my two Brothers, William Rotch, and Francis Rotch. To hold to them & their heirs & assigns forever in equal Moiety, and half parts without Benefit of Survivorship.

The Reason I have in this my Will given to my Brother Francis more than to my Brother William is that my Brother Francis might thereby be nearer on an equality with him as to Worldly Estate. My Brother William has a full share of my Love, Esteem and Fraternal Regard.

Lastly I do hereby Nominate and Appoint my said Brothers William Rotch and Francis Rotch to be the Executors of this my last Will and Testament, hereby revoking all former Wills by me at any time heretofore made. In Witness Whereof I hereto set my hand & seal this eighth day of May, A. D. One thousand seven hundred and seventy-two.

Jos. Rotch Junr.

Signed, sealed, published &  
declared by the said Joseph

Rotch Junr. to be his last Will  
& Testament in presence of us.

Leod. Jarvis  
Sam Gardner Jarvis  
Charles Jarvis

Suffolk, ss. By the Honble. Foster Hutchinson, N. J.  
Judge of Probate D.C.

The aforewritten Will, being presented for Probate by Francis Rotch, one of ye. Executors therein named, Leonard Jarvis, & Charles Jarvis made Oath that they saw Joseph Rotch Junr. Subscribe to this Instrument, Sign Seal it, and heard him publish and declare it to be his last Will & Testament, & that when he so did, he was of sound disposing Mind & Memory, according to these Deponents best discerning, & that they (together with Saml. Gardner Jarvis now absent) set their hands as Witnesses thereof, in the said testator's presence.

J. Hutchinson

Boston 3, April 1773.

The New Bedford *Sunday Standard* on April 8, 1923, stated, "Though Dartmouth had a Meeting House as early as 1669 (on the site of the present Apponegansett Meeting House), no meetings were held in the neighborhood where the center of New Bedford now stands until 1772, when the Friends began to congregate for worship in various houses."

The original Meeting House on Spring Street was built in 1785. It may have been started and certainly was planned before the death of Joseph, Sr., at the end of 1784. I have not seen the record, but Joseph, Jr., had long been dead and it is probable his hundred pounds went into its construction, and I have no doubt but that other Rotch money also helped, though it was actually built during the two years that no Rotch except Captain Joseph was living in Bedford.

The first Meeting House, which now stands on the southwest corner of Spring and Seventh Streets, was replaced by the present brick structure, and the first service was held in the new building in December, 1822.

The recommendation above mentioned is as follows:

"From our Monthly Meeting of Friends held in Dartmouth in New England of 29th of the 1th month 1772

"To Friends in the City of London and Elsewhere unto whom these Presents may come — Dear Friends:

"In a degree of the love of the Gospel do we salute you and hereby Recommend unto you Joseph Rotch, Junr the bairer hereof, he being under a declined State of health hath signified to us his Intention of Visiting your parts again with our Concurrance and Certificate—

"These Therefore may signify on his account that he hath had his Education among friends, and is under the care of this Meeting, and upon Inquiry we do not find but his deportment is honest and sober amongst men and that he is Clear in respect to marriage thus we recommend him to your Notice and Regard while among you desiring

his Preservation and growth in the way of well-doing and if it be the Divine Will to Restore him to his health again so as to Return home that he may be preserved in Safety and Peace

"Signed In and by Order of our said Meeting by  
William Anthony, Jr.  
Abraham Howland  
Philip Allen  
Benj. Smith, Jr.  
Job Russell  
Barnabas Mosher  
Jos. Rotch  
Joseph Tucker  
Abraham Tucker  
William Anthony  
William Sanford  
Caleb Russell  
Nicolas Howland  
Jonathan Hussey  
Daniel Cornell  
William Barker  
Samuel Smith  
Prince Allen  
Benjamin Howland  
Daniel Russell"

When Joseph left for England a poem was written in his honor by Phyllis Wheatley, one of the earliest and most remarkable Negro poets. It has been written of her:

"She was a marvel, one of the most astonishing figures in the annals of American Literature, a slave girl from Africa, who at the height of her career had the intellectual and wealthy circles of two countries at her feet. She flourished in Boston at the time of the Revolution, and as late as 1838 her book of poems had gone into a seventh edition.

"Educated by her mistress, Mrs. John Wheatley, of Boston, she early began to write poetry that astonished the literary men of New England. She was received into exclusive homes in Boston, where she met Joseph Rotch, Jr. When he sailed for England for his health in 1772 Phyllis wrote a poem addressed to him on the subject. The following year, probably after his death, she went to England for her own health, where she met some of the nobility, Rev. George Whitefield and others. Returning to America she met Washington at Cambridge. After Mrs. Wheatley's death, Phyllis made an unfortunate marriage, and finally died in poverty and obscurity."

The poem was entitled

"To a Gentleman, on his Voyage to Great Britain for the Recovery of His Health."

and its closing lines were:

"May R—— return to view his native shore  
Replete with vigor not his own before:  
Then shall we see with pleasure and surprise,  
And own thy work, great Ruler of the skies."

Unfortunately, Joseph's health did not improve and he died in England late in 1772 or early in 1773. William Rotch's letters to his son, William, Jr., and Samuel Rodman, tell of a trip to the various ports of England in the latter part of 1785. Bristol is mentioned. In his "Memorandum" written when he was eighty, William says:

"After viewing the Coast, and spending several days at Plymouth we took a circuitous route and returned to London. — At Bristol I visited the grave of my brother Joseph, who died there eighteen years before."

At least that is what my printed copy of the "Memorandum" says. Obviously Joseph had been dead not more than thirteen years in the fall of 1785. I find that records kept by earlier Rotches give his death as 1767, presumably relying on his older brother's statement, but the will and the recommendation to the English Friends show he was alive long after this.

FRANCIS ROTCH  
(1750-1822)

There has never been a time since 1750 that there has not been at least one man alive bearing the name Francis Rotch. There have been seven of them that I know of, all descended from William the weaver, and five of these have descended from Joseph. None of the others, however, was the offspring of the first Francis, of whom I now write. One was his first cousin once removed, another the son of this latter. The third was his great-nephew and the other four are descended directly from this last. There is no question that Francis Rotch, the son of Benjamin, was named for his great-uncle, so it can actually be said that the name, if not the blood, of this old man has survived.

Francis Rotch was born in Nantucket on September 30, 1750, the youngest of the many children of Joseph and Love Macy Rotch. His eldest brother, William, was sixteen years his senior, and the only other to live. Joseph, Junior, was seven years old when Francis was born. Francis came to Bedford in the town of Dartmouth with his father and brother Joseph, shortly after his mother's death, probably in 1768. He was not a member of the firm of Joseph Rotch and Sons as it first opened in Bedford, but joined that firm later, probably on reaching his majority.

Francis was twenty-two when his brother Joseph died in England, leaving him by his will a brick warehouse and land in Boston and one-half of the residue of the estate. Joseph had given away three hundred pounds in other specific bequests, but I have no way of estimating the amount of the residue. Francis has often been mentioned as the owner of the *Dartmouth*, but the ship, as I pointed out in my chapter about Joseph, Senior, had been built in 1767 when Francis was too young to have owned her outright. There is a story that he was in England at the time in 1773 when the *Dartmouth* was unloading whale oil and that he was responsible for obtaining the famous tea as part of her cargo. I doubt it. He had proved his brother's will in Boston on April 3rd of that year, and he was back in Boston for some time before the tea ships arrived. Probably he was looking after his new warehouse. He may very likely have gone to England in 1772 with his brother Joseph, or may have gone over at the time of Joseph's death, but he must have left many months before the tea was loaded. He was not the sole owner of the *Dartmouth* even then, as is proved by the protest filed at the time of the Tea Party. But as the member of the firm of Joseph Rotch and

Sons resident in Boston, he naturally took charge of the *Dartmouth* when she came in, and also of the *Beaver*, which belonged to William Rotch of Nantucket, his older brother.

“Tea Leaves of 1773,” a book by Francis S. Drake, published in Boston in 1884, throws considerable light on the connections of Francis Rotch with the Boston Tea Party. This book contains a silhouette of Francis and refers to him as a “Quaker merchant,” part owners of the *Dartmouth*, and the *Beaver*. The *Dartmouth*, first of the tea ships to arrive in Boston, reached there on Sunday, November 28, 1773, with one hundred fourteen chests of tea aboard. Another ship, the *Eleanor*, arrived sometime later and the other Rotch vessel, the brig *Beaver*, not until the date of the Tea Party or the day before. There was a fourth ship loaded with tea for Boston, but she was wrecked on Cape Cod and never arrived.

The patriots of Boston were in a turmoil long before the arrival of the *Dartmouth*. They were threatening Governor Hutchinson and the consignees of the tea. On the arrival of the *Dartmouth* feeling ran so high that the consignees and the British Governor found it necessary to retire to the fortifications known as “The Castle.” It fell to the lot of Francis Rotch to go back and forth between the two factions, in neither of which he was particularly interested. His entire energy was devoted to endeavoring to save his vessels, a far from easy task. To quote from the introduction to “Tea Leaves:”

“Francis was in England for a short time in 1773, but had returned home before his tea ships arrived. This affair was a very troublesome one for a young man of twenty-three to manage, as there was a tremendous pressure brought to bear upon him by Samuel Adams, and other influential patriots, to return the teas to England. He yielded temporarily to this pressure, promising the meeting of November 30th, that the tea should go back; but, probably after consultation with his counsel, Sampson Salter Blowers and John Adams, decided to withdraw his promise. Rotch pleaded that a compliance would ruin him, and as he could not obtain a pass for his ships, they would either have been sunk by the British batteries, or captured and confiscated under the revenue laws. He succeeded eventually in escaping loss in the affair, as the East India Company paid him the freight due on the cargoes of tea”.

An editorial of the *Gazette* of December 13 says: “The minds of the public are greatly irritated at the delay of Mr. Rotch to take the necessary steps towards complying with their peremptory requisition.” On December 14, handbills called a meeting of the townspeople in the old South Meeting House “at ten o’clock this day, at

which time the bells will ring." At this meeting the master of the *Eleanor*, Captain Bruce, promised to ask for a clearance when all his goods were landed except the tea, but said that if refused he was loath to stand the shock of thirty-two pounders. This is almost the only place where anyone but Francis Rotch appears to have done any mediating.

That same day the unfortunate owner of the *Dartmouth*, accompanied by Samuel Adams and nine others, applied to the Collector of the port for a clearance, but could get no answer until the following morning, so the meeting adjourned until Thursday. That day Francis stated that he was required and compelled, at his peril, by the meeting to make demand for clearance of his vessel for London with the tea on board, the committee being present only as witnesses. The clearance was unequivocally refused until the tea should be discharged. To quote further from "Tea Leaves:"

"The eventful Thursday, December 16, 1773, a day ever memorable in the annals of the town, witnessed the largest gathering yet seen at the Old South Meeting House. Nearly seven thousand persons constituted the assembly. Business was laid aside, and notwithstanding the rain, at least two thousand people flocked in from the country for twenty miles around. This time there was no need of handbills — there were none. No effort was required to bring together the multitude that quietly but anxiously awaited the outcome of the meeting. The gravity of the situation was universally felt. Immediate action was necessary, as the twenty days allowed for clearance terminated that night. Then the revenue officials could take possession, and under cover of the naval force land the tea, and opposition to this would have caused bloody work. The patriots would gladly have avoided the issue, but it was forced upon them, and they could not recede with honor.

"The committee having reported the failure of its application for a clearance, Rotch was directed to enter a protest at the Custom House, and to apply to the governor for a pass to proceed on this day with his vessel on his voyage for London. He replied that it was impracticable to comply with this requirement. He was then reminded of his promise, and on being asked if he would now direct the *Dartmouth* to sail, replied that he would not. The meeting, after directing him to use all possible dispatch in making his protest and procuring his pass, adjourned until three o'clock . . . . At half past four it was unanimously voted that the tea should not be landed. An effort was now made to dissolve the meeting, but it was continued at the request of some of those present from the

country, who wished to hear the result of Rotch's application to the governor.

"It was an unusual time of the year to be at a country seat, but Governor Hutchinson was found at his Milton residence by Rotch, who renewed his request for a pass. Questioned by the governor as to the intentions of the people, Rotch replied that they only intended to force the tea back to England, but that there might be some who desired that the vessel might go down the harbor and be brought to by a shot from the castle, that it might be said that the people had done everything in their power to send the tea back. 'Catching at this straw, with the instinct of a drowning man,' Hutchinson offered Rotch a letter to Admiral Montagu, commanding ship and goods to his protection, if Rotch would agree to have his ship haul out into the stream, but he replied that none were willing to assist him in doing this, and that the attempt would subject him to the ill will of the people. Hutchinson then sternly repeated his refusal of a pass, as it would have been 'a direct countenancing and encouraging the violation of the acts of trade.' Thus closed the last opportunity for concession.

"It is only fair to say that the performance of what he honestly believed to be his duty was as vital a consideration with Thomas Hutchinson, the royal governor, as opposition to measures which he believed to be hostile to the liberties of his country was to Samuel Adams, the popular leader. We can at this day well afford to mete out this tardy justice to a man whose motives and conduct have been so bitterly and unscrupulously vilified and maligned as have been those of Thomas Hutchinson."

In these days feeling ran high. Undoubtedly William Rotch's Quaker principles had much to do with his troubles during the two revolutions, both in America and France. Undoubtedly he was sincere in his abhorrence of war, but of course there was a material side also. To have taken an active side either for or against England would have ruined his business. I believe that this latter was the sole consideration which moved Francis Rotch at this time. He had no more interest in either of the contending parties, both of whom were sincere, than did his brother some years later. He was not even much of a Quaker, at least later in life, although he is referred to as being one in "Tea Leaves". His niece Mary Rotch in a letter to Samuel Rodman, Junior, in 1809 says of him just before his final return to New Bedford: "We anticipate with satisfaction the moment we may welcome this long-absent relative to his native country, and though the path of life he has chosen from early years has led

him from the religious profession in which he was educated, we feel that affectionate interest in his welfare that leads to the hope he may feel a disposition for more retired scenes than those in which he has long moved, and eventually return. He has never united himself to any other profession, and I have heard him observe that he had neither sought nor expected to find a better one."

However, apparently Francis Rotch conducted himself during that difficult twenty days with the same dignity and ability which later characterized his older brother, and was able to escape from an almost impossible situation, not only with his vessels, but with very little criticism, a difficult feat considering the temper of the times, and the extreme youth of the ship owner. To quote further from "Tea Leaves:"

"When Rotch returned and told the result of his application, it was nearly six o'clock. Darkness had set in, and the Old South, dimly lighted with candles, was still filled with an anxious and impatient multitude. 'Who knows,' said John Rowe, 'how tea will mingle with salt water?' The people hurrahed vehemently, and the cry arose, 'A mob! A mob!' A call to order restored quiet. Dr. Young then addressed the meeting, saying that Rotch was a good man, who had done all in his power to gratify the people, and charged them to do no hurt to his person or property.

"To the final question then put to him, whether he would send his vessel back with the tea in her, under the present circumstances, he replied, that he could not, as he 'apprehended that a compliance would prove his ruin.' He also admitted that if called upon by the proper persons he should attempt to land the tea for his own security.

"Adams then arose and uttered the fateful words, 'This meeting can do nothing more to save the country.' This was doubtless the preconcerted signal for action, and it was answered by the men who sounded the war-whoop at the church door. The cry was reechoed from the gallery where a voice cried out, 'Boston harbor, a tea-pot tonight; hurrah for Griffins wharf!' and the 'Mohawks' passed out to cut the Gordian knot with their hatchets."

The tea was first thrown from the *Dartmouth* and the *Eleanor*, which had nothing else aboard, but more difficulty was encountered aboard the *Beaver*, as she had just arrived and discharged little, if any, of her cargo. Nothing else was harmed, however, and it is reported that a small lock that was broken was replaced.

So ended the first encounter between a Rotch and Revolution, many of which were to follow in the next twenty years or so. Francis

had others, William had many, and they ended only when Benjamin sailed away from Dunkirk in the days when the guillotine was busy at its bloody work. It is interesting to note the bill submitted by Francis Rotch to the unfortunate consignees of the tea. It amounted in all to £289-19-6½ although the actual freight was only £91-17-7. Damage amounted to £132 and damage to the sloop *Triton* from 9 to 20 December was £28-16-0. This *Triton* incident is interesting. She brought a cargo of oil from the town of Dartmouth to load on the ship of the same name, but could not do so as long as the tea remained aboard. Francis Rotch, as appears by the protest, was one of her owners, so undoubtedly she, as well as the *Dartmouth*, belonged to the firm of Joseph Rotch and Sons. It has often been said Francis Rotch eventually lost not one cent, the Honorable East India Company paying the bill. I wonder if it really paid all the incidentals as well as the actual freight.

After the Tea Party, the *Dartmouth* and the *Beaver* both went to Nantucket. The *Beaver* then sailed for the Brazil Banks, accompanied by the *Bedford*, also owned by William Rotch, and destined in 1783 to be the first ship to fly the Stars and Stripes in the Thames at London. The *Dartmouth* was loaded with sperm oil, William Rotch, shipper, and sailed for London April 4, 1774, consigned to Champion and Dickason. Thomas Dickason, for whom a younger Rotch was later named, was long the family agent in England. It is curious if the original plan was to send the *Dartmouth* to Nantucket, that the *Triton* took her oil all the way to Boston. Probably the tea difficulty caused a change in plans.

When the *Beaver* had filled with oil on the Brazil Banks, she took her cargo to London where Francis Rotch received it in 1776. It is easy to see that Francis and William Rotch, though in separate firms, were working very closely together in the early days of the Revolution.

It is interesting to note why Francis was in England in 1776. The firm of Joseph Rotch and Sons appears to have dissolved about the time of the Tea Party. The tax list of that part of Dartmouth called Acushnet in 1773 shows the firm assessed for three "poles," for £570 in real estate and £630 in personal. The third "pole" must have been Joseph, Junior, who died early that year. Joseph, Senior, then nearly seventy, must have retired shortly thereafter, for Francis cast his lot with Aaron Lopez, a very prominent Portuguese Jew in Newport, Rhode Island. On August 16, 1775, a Federal Court of Massachusetts passed a resolve that from and after the 15th day of August instant, no ship or vessel should sail out of any port of the Colony

on any whaling Voyage whatsoever without leave first had and obtained from said court. On the thirtieth of that month, the court gave permission to Francis Rotch, of Dartmouth, and Aaron Lopez, of Rhode Island, "to put to sea the Vessels in which they are Interested, on a Whaling Voyage," provided all "the Oyl and Bone by them taken" be landed in any port of the Colony "except the Porte of Boston and Nantucket," Boston then being in British hands and Nantucket controlled by Quaker neutrals.

It would seem there might have been some duplicity in the obtaining of the special dispensation from the Massachusetts Legislature. The oil was to be landed in the Colony, and the Colony was, of course, in the midst of the Revolutionary War. Let us see what actually happened to it. In the notes of James B. Congdon at the New Bedford Library, where I get much of my information about Francis Rotch, there is a copy of a letter written May 22, 1826, by Thomas Rotch to Colonel Samuel Swift of Boston, telling of the Falkland Island expedition.

This shows that in 1774 and 1775 Francis Rotch and Aaron Lopez formed a plan and a company to equip a fleet of vessels for the South Sea fisheries, which after filling, were to go to the Falkland Islands, located off the southeastern coast of South America and destined to be the scene of an important sea battle in the early days of the World War a hundred and forty years later. There the ships were to deliver their oil and refit for the South Seas grounds again. Apparently fifteen ships and brigs were equipped in New Bedford and Newport, two of them new ships which were bought in Newburyport.

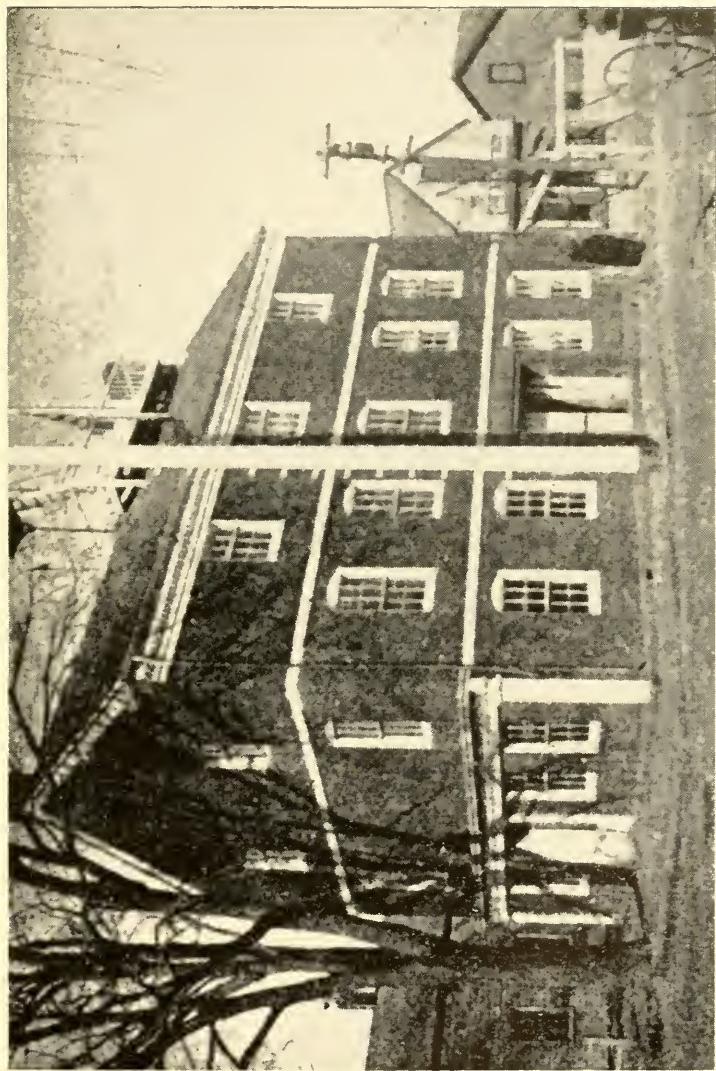
Francis Rotch loaded two ships for London and sailed on one of them about the first of September, 1775. That would be just after he had obtained the permit to go whaling. Instead he went to the capital of the enemy. When he got to England he was much disappointed to find some of his vessels already there, prizes of war taken shortly after the start of the Revolution. The venture, of course, had commenced in 1774, some time before the battle of Lexington. Francis succeeded in getting them cleared in England, and sent them off on their voyages again. He then prepared two store ships and went with them to the Falkland Islands, one under command of Captain Scott. He had with him Captain Benjamin Busney, Benjamin Jenkins and Robert Long of Nantucket to fill any vacancies that might arise.

Unfortunately news of the war spread through the fleet, according to Thomas Rotch's account, (which does not seem strange, as some of

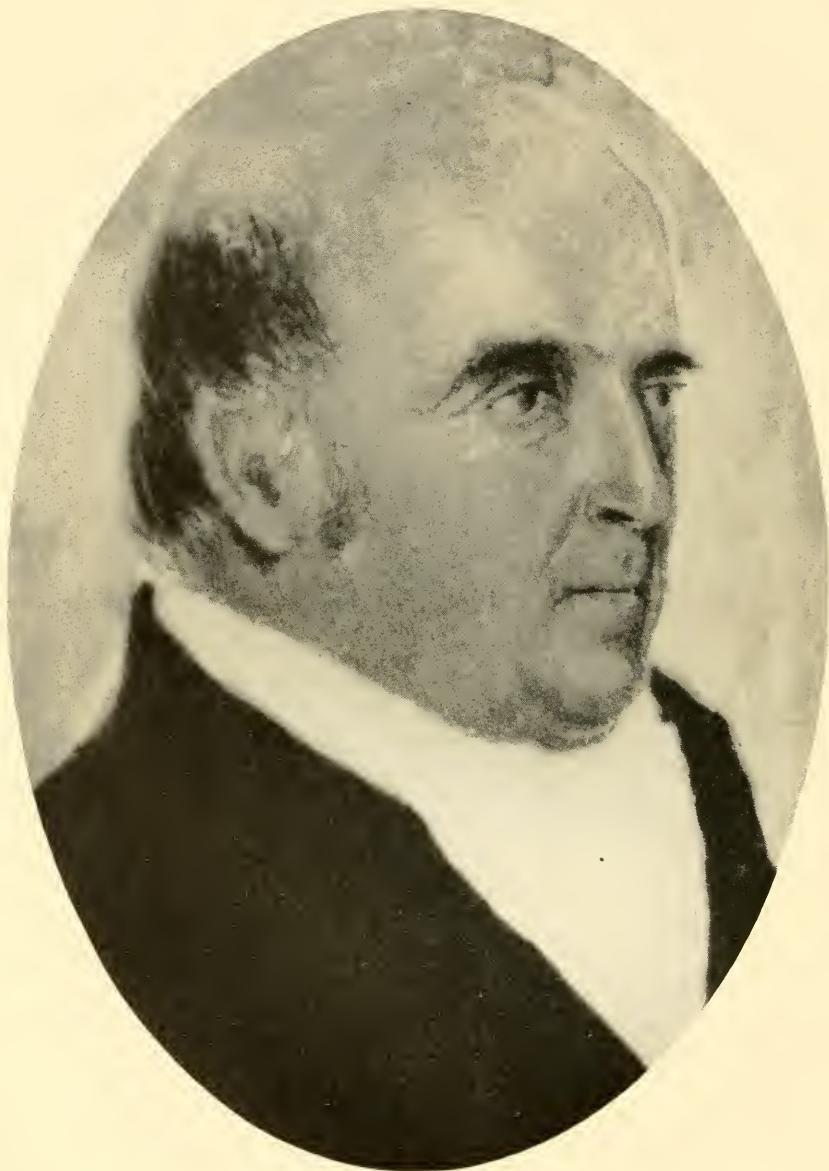
them had already been captured), and the voyages were interrupted some more being captured, some returning to America, and a few going to the Falkland Islands and then to England. The notes say: "Mr. Rotch, after spending many months at the Islands without the least prospect of succeeding in the enterprise, abandoned his object and returned to England with his two ships and wound up the concern with almost total loss of the capital invested in it." There was the first of Francis' failures which in the end ate up the considerable fortune that he had at one time. I have read, however, that as an old man he considered the days at Falkland as the happiest of his life.

It was because of this that Francis Rotch was in England in 1776 when his brother's brig *Beaver* arrived with her oil from the Brazil Banks. In reading some of James B. Congdon's notes, I was led to believe that this English visit was a short one. Congdon tells of the tax list of "Acushnet" village (Dartmouth) in 1778. He says: "Rotch and Jarvis are taxed for R. E. £4100, Personal £13,000. There were taxed in addition to the above, Joseph Rotch, Junior, and William Rotch, Carpenter, for small amounts. Joseph Rotch and his son Joseph had returned to Nantucket. Francis Rotch was the Rotch of the firm of Rotch and Jarvis. It would appear that he had become opulent. No valuation in Bedford was anything like so high as that of Rotch and Jarvis. Jarvis seems to have disappeared from our local history."

Unfortunately Mr. Congdon's conclusions cannot be correct. This period of opulence ascribed to young Francis was just after the Falkland Island failure, and just before the burning of Bedford by the British in 1778. That Joseph, Senior, had returned to Nantucket about 1774 seems highly probable to me, as Joseph Austin was living in his big house in Bedford when it was burned. But if Francis Rotch was the Rotch of Rotch and Jarvis, why was no real estate assessed to Joseph, Senior, who owned much of Bedford and even more of Fairhaven at his death six years later? It is easy to find errors in other parts of Congdon's statement. The Joseph Rotch whom he calls Junior, who was assessed for a small amount, is Captain Joseph, for Joseph, Junior, had died five years earlier and could neither have been assessed or returned to Nantucket with his father as stated in this account. I believe his statement that Francis was the Rotch of Rotch and Jarvis is incorrect. I believe Joseph, Senior, was the Rotch in question, probably a silent and retired partner. To comment further on Mr. Congdon's statement, there were three Jarvises who witnessed the will of Joseph Rotch, Junior: Leonard



The counting house of William Rotch & Sons, Nantucket.  
Later the Pacific Club.



Francis Rotch  
(1750-1822)

Jarvis, Samuel Gardner Jarvis and Charles Jarvis. Leonard was the former owner of the Boston warehouse, and Charles was to write Francis a disturbing piece of news, as will appear later. All of them were evidently closely associated with the several members of the firm of Joseph Rotch and Sons. I do not know which was the member of the Rotch and Jarvis firm, but I think I have read that it was Leonard. The William Rotch referred to as a carpenter is usually called a shipwright. He was the first of the Rotches in the vicinity of Bedford, the older brother of Captain Joseph, and the founder of the Vineyard line.

But though the membership of the firm is conjecture, I have Francis' own word that he was not in Bedford at that time, and that he was not opulent, at least from the point of view of one residing in England in those days. He writes in a copy of an account with Mme. Haley: "In the lifetime of M. Haley I was one of his correspondents in Trade, on whom he placed some value . . . In May, 1777, upon invitation I went to reside in his family, where during his life, and since his death, I have constantly remained, from that period until the latter end of 1785, which makes a space of eight years and a half. My supplies of money to support a style of living ill suited to the uncertain state of my own fortune during the war in America were at all times well known to M. Haley to come from Mr. Page, under the protection and approbation of both Mr. and Mrs." Here, I am sorry to say ends the quotation, and I don't know at present what Mr. Page had to do with it or who he was or who Mr. and Mrs. were. But I do, however, know a lot about Francis Rotch and the Haleys and it is an interesting story as will shortly appear. But there is another little story to tell before I start on the Haleys, the story of Francis' marriage in England to Deborah Fleeming, and of her death shortly thereafter.

We have Francis in Boston at twenty-three in 1773 with his *Dartmouth* and his tea. We have him and Lopez planning their adventure the next year and sailing for London in 1775. We have the trip to the Falklands in 1776, and the long Haley residence starting in 1777. And yet somewhere in those years Francis had found time to become a bridegroom and a widower. And here is where Francis first appears to divert sharply from the ways of his Quaker forbears. I know little of this first marriage. In one place I read that the girl's name was Deborah, in another that it was Fleeming. To one F. C. Stanford is attributed the following: "Mr. Francis Rotch purchased his first wife in England, buying a man off from his engagement. She did not live long, however." Then Mr. Stanford goes

on to tell of the Haley episode. There are various errors in his account of this affair, so perhaps the wife purchase is just a myth. I wish I knew more of Deborah Fleeming. I do know that John Henry Charles Fleeming, an Englishman, appeared in New Bedford soon after the return to that town of Francis Rotch in 1809, and that Francis refers to him in his will as his son-in-law. I understand that in those days a step-son was often called a son-in-law, and as Francis had no daughter he could have had no son-in-law in our sense.

Someone, annotating Mr. Congdon's account of Francis Rotch, says of Mr. Congdon, "His recollections of Francis Rotch are very distinct. He was a man of courtly manners and his conversation was loud, clear, and somewhat pompous, but little is known of his European life. Charles Fleeming who came to New Bedford from France and who married Mary Rotch was supposed to be his son." Though this tradition has persisted among certain members of the Rodman family until this day, I doubt if it has any real foundation.

The fact that Fleeming, who was not a Quaker, was allowed to marry Mary Rotch, the daughter of Francis, nephew William Rotch, Junior, without adverse comment from Samuel Rodman, who was the Puritan of the family and who did not hesitate to criticize the shortcomings of his wilder cousins, leads me to believe that the family, at least, accepted Fleeming as the son-in-law of Francis and nothing more. Presumably he was Deborah's son by a former marriage.

Now to go on with the story of Francis Rotch and Madame Wilkes Stork Haley Jaffrey, whose Christian name I have not yet found. I am about to quote from the *Boston Intelligencer* of February 7, 1818, and will make a few explanatory comments. The remarkable lady was first married to Samuel Stork, Esquire, of London, a West Indian merchant. Her second husband is described as John Haley, Alderman of London, an American merchant, and one of the representatives of the City, by whom she had a daughter, who later married Sir Robert Baker, Bart. By "American merchant" I imagine is meant one who traded with America. As we read we will find Mme. Haley had a constant companion, a Mr. R. Thus thinly disguised, Francis Rotch, born under the sombre frown of provincial Quakerism, treads a very foreign soil between the ages of twenty-seven and thirty-five. With this introduction let us read from that old *Intelligencer*:

"The Rev. Mr. Belve in his posthumous work 'The Sexagenarian,' gives the following account of the late Mrs. Jaffrey of Bath, who formerly shone in the most distinguished circles of the metropolis

as the wife of Alderman Hayley:

"She was sister of John Wilkes, of famous memory, had a large portion of his intellectual endowments, and was very little his inferior in vivacity, humor and wit. She was married to an opulent merchant, who was succeeded in his business by his head clerk, Mr. Hayley, whose fortune was made by his obtaining the hand of the widow. He was afterwards Alderman Hayley, and near relation of Hayley the Poet. He was a plain, sensible, good sort of a man, wholly absorbed in commercial pursuit, and soon found it expedient for the sake of a quiet life to suffer his *cara sposa* to do as she liked.

"She was exceedingly well informed, had read a great deal, possessed a fine taste, and with respect to literary merit, considerable judgment. She accordingly sought with much avidity the society of those who were distinguished in the world by their talents and writings. When the expression "*of those*" is used, it must be understood to apply to men only; for on all occasions she was at no pains to conceal her contempt of the society of her own sex, and was frequently observed in company with ten or twelve eminent men, without a single female. She had great conversational talents; and unfortunately like her brother, she never permitted any ideas of Religion, or even of delicacy, to impose a restraint upon her observations.

"Her disregard of propriety was also conspicuously manifested on these occasions. She invariably attended the more remarkable trials at the *Old Bailey*, where she regularly had a certain place reserved for her. When the discussion of the trial was of such a nature that decorum, and indeed the judges themselves desired women to withdraw, she never stirred from her place, but persisted in remaining to hear the whole with the most unmoved and unblushing earnestness of attention. She every summer made an excursion to such parts of the Kingdom as she had not before visited, and was always accompanied by a single male friend, who for a great number of years was an American gentleman connected with the house of Hayley, by the ties of mercantile interest. Upon one occasion she visited the Highlands with this gentleman, and though accustomed to a very luxurious style of living, she submitted to the greatest privations and hardships, in the indulgence of her curiosity. This indeed was unbounded: it extended to the manufactories, manners, high and low, and more than low, in whatever place she visited; her professed object was to see every thing and every body which deserved or excited attention. The season in which she visited the Highlands proved moreover to be very wet and tempestuous, and

the character of her mind cannot, perhaps, be more accurately delineated, than by an extract of a letter which she wrote to her brother John Wilkes, from Scotland: it began:

“ Dear Brother — The rain has been and still is so incessant, that I have serious intentions of constructing another ark, into which, however, I shall be exceedingly scrupulous whom I admit. As I know your particular taste, I shall have a cabin for your use fitted up and adorned with Scripture, and other prints. But I will on no account suffer any unclean animals to enter; for example nothing shall prevail upon me to admit either Scotchmen or Scotchwomen.” etc. etc.

“ The whole of the epistle was of the same strain and character, full of wit, humor, and ingenious (however unjust) raillery.

“ She had a house after her husband’s death, and perhaps before at Bromley; the measured distance of which from her town residence in Crent Alie Street, Goodman’s Fields was precisely ten miles. She had four beautiful horses, and on entering her carriage she never failed to take her watch in her hand, and her coachman was sure to have a sorry bout of it if he exceeded the space of an hour, either going or coming.

“ She had also a strong predilection for the drama, had a box at both theatres, and generally went from one to the other. She was most particularly fond of Shakespeare and never failed to be present when any of his plays were presented. She allowed her coachman but half an hour to drive from Goodman’s Fields to either theatre. Her remarks on the performances and performers were ingenious, lively, pertinent, and just.

“ She was particularly nice in her carriage, which was always built in the highest and most expensive style of fashion, and kept with particular neatness. She had one day a rich [friend] with her on one of these excursions from Bromley, who did not perceive that the glass near which he sat was drawn up, and he was so thoughtless as to spit upon it. She indulged in much laughter and remarked that her coachman could not possibly have had a greater compliment paid to his care of the glasses.

“ She had a daughter, who did not appear to be exempted from the general, indeed universal dislike, or rather contempt, which she avowed for all her sex. They were on the very worst terms possible, and so reluctant was she on her daughter’s marriage to perform the stipulations required by old Hayley’s will, that the most harsh and rigorous proceedings were unavoidably necessary; and she was arrested on Saturday night, on coming from the play, when

she had thousands at her command, and detained with her male friend, who always accompanied her in a spunging-house until Monday morning.

"In the end she served this same gentleman a most slippery trick. He was a native of Nantucket, and, as Mr. Hayley's commercial connections were principally in America, he was one of his most intimate and valuable correspondents. On coming to England he took up his residence in Hayley's house and on his death, undertook the conduct of the great and extensive concern for his widow. He was her most intimate counsellor, confidant, and friend, embarked his fortune with hers, attended her everywhere and on every occasion, and was in all respects the master of her house, and director of her family. At conclusion of the American War, it was found expedient that some confidential person should go over to America, to see after the property still remaining in that country, and which was not much less than one hundred thousand pounds. Mr. R. offered himself for the purpose. Before they embarked, it was determined, on consultation, that they should be married and the Arch-bishop's license was accordingly obtained. From some cause or other, the solemnization was deferred, and they mutually covenanted that it should take place on their arrival in America. They accordingly set sail very lovingly together. When they got to America, they were much noticed and feasted, and were hospitably received, even by General Washington himself, and the most considerable persons of the country. Still the marriage was not solemnized. Almost the first letters which came out from England brought out the unwelcome information that the presence of Mrs. Hayley or her agent and representative, was indispensably necessary, to secure the property which was left behind, no less considerable than that after which they went in search. The gentleman of whom we speak voluntarily undertook this mission also; and leaving his friend and mistress with the promise and indeed the determination to return immediately and perform his contract, he appointed a young mercantile man to transact his business in his absence and departed for England.

"But mark the waywardness and inconsistency of some females. He had hardly set foot on British ground, when a packet arrived from a correspondent in America with the information that the lady had found solitude in that distant part of the world so irksome and indeed so intolerable, that in one short week after his departure, she had united herself in indissoluble bonds with the young man whom he had left as his mercantile representative. There were no writings,

settlements or contracts; but one simple deed, stating that the longest liver should have all the property.

"But before the narrative of Mrs. Hayley is resumed, the sequel of the fortune of this disappointed gentleman shall be added. His grief was probably neither very acute, nor very permanent; indeed he was already beginning to feel his situation a sort of unmanly thraldom; and there can be very little doubt, that had he been either pressing or importunate, he might, *mutatis mutandis*, have been the happy bridegroom in America, rather than the forsaken lover in England. But he was a man with great spirit of enterprise, had seen much of the world and was anxious to see more. He had also some very lofty schemes of mercantile aggrandisement, particularly with respect to the South Sea whale fishery. He was an exceedingly ingenious mechanic, and had invented a machine for the more certain destruction of whales, which had the approbation of some of our most accomplished mechanics. With this view, not meeting in this country, or from our government, the encouragement he wanted, and the assistance he asked, he removed to France. Whether he yet survives, or if he does, in what situation he remains, was unknown when this was written.

"Now to return to Mrs. Hayley. The hours of rapture with younger subjects (votaries at the hymeneal shrine) do not always extend beyond the honeymoon. When a female approaching to seventy leads to the altar a bridegroom who has not seen thirty, these hours of Elysium seldom continue quite so long. In a very short interval a separation was mutually thought expedient. The lady, as before observed, confided everything to the generosity of her husband, and with such an allowance as he thought proper to make her, she took a very early opportunity of recrossing the Atlantic, and after a short residence in London, fixed herself at Bath, where she passed — "An old age of cards." "

One of the things pointed out as extraordinary about Mrs. Jaffrey was:

"She retired to bed early in a room whose window was raised up night and day, winter and summer, without regard to the blast or the tempest, the rain or the snow, the furniture consisting mostly of ten or a dozen German wooden clocks chiming and coo-cooing in a delightful discord whenever they struck the passing hour. No fire was ever kindled in this temple of the wind. At daybreak, Mrs. Jaffrey rose from her all but comfortable bed, ate a sparing breakfast, a dishful of chocolate, and a few toasts." This at the age of seventy-five.

Joseph Rotch, Senior, had died on November 24, 1784, and I believe it was to claim his half of the estate that Francis came back to America at just this time. Evidently his departure for Europe was hastened, and part of the evidence I have of his short visit here is a deed from him to his brother William, dated June 1, 1785, which reads as follows:

"Whereas Joseph Rotch, late of Bedford in ye County of Bristol, Merchant, Dec'd, by his last will & Testament, did give, and bequeath to his two sons, William & Francis, their heirs and assigns forever, All his Estate, Real, Personal & mixed, to be equally divided between them, Particular reference being had to what Each of said Sons had received during the Lifetime of said Testator and by sd. Will constituted his son William Rotch Sole Executor of ye same, and whereas a Settlement and Agreement have Since ye Decease of said Testator been made & entered into, by Francis Rotch of Boston in the County of Suffolk, Merchant, one of said Sons, & residuary Legatee, and the sd. William Rotch, the other Son, Executor, as aforesd. Now know all Men by these Presents that I, ye said Francis Rotch have received from the sd. William, a full Consideration for my moiety of the whole of the Real Estate of said Testator, as well as my full part and Proportion of all ye personal estate (Excepting the outstanding Debts due to said Estate, and which when paid in are to be equally Divided Between myself and the said William) and therefore I do by these presents Acquit, Release & discharge the sd. William Rotch in his capacity as Executor as aforesd. from all Legacies, Dues, Duties and demands whatsoever, excepting only my moiety of the outstanding Debts as aforesaid, which I, my executors or Administrators may Have, Claim, Challinge or demand, of or against him by virtue of ye last will & Testiment of ye said Joseph Rotch, and Further I do hereby assign over and quit-claim to ye said William Rotch all my Right, Estate, Title, & demand to all & every part & parcel of the Houses, Lands, Tenements, Wharves, and other Real Estate of what kind so ever and where so ever lying and being, late belonging to said Testator."

Probably Francis was not responsible for the extraordinary use of capitals in this deed. As he is referred to as of Boston, it would appear that at that time he may have intended to continue to reside there, but I think it is possible that it just meant he came down from Boston to settle up the estate, and William Rotch's letters which refer to Francis' plans would seem to prove this to be the case,

unless the plans were changed very suddenly. The deed was acknowledged in Bristol County, June 6 and was recorded June 16.

There should be inserted here an interesting communication from Charles Jarvis to Francis Rotch in Europe. I am sorry to say that in the copy I have seen many words are missing, probably because they were illegible in the original. The letter:

Boston, July 10th, 1786.

My dear Sir;

A friendship which never had a single interested sentiment either for its motive or object, but has originated in — I — and above all in those qualities in you for which I am highly indebted; and the enumeration of which would rather give you pain than pleasure; will always be the same in every situation. This has been co— the case that I know not a moment since I had the pleasure of your acquaintance that I ever had the least reason to be dissatisfied with any part of your conduct as it respected me or any of my friends. I can't help expressing my solicitude lest a certain event of which I was not informed but with the utmost astonishment, should affect them disagreeably.

The circumstances you may perhaps long since been acquainted (with?). For fear you should not, I will just mention that it is *reported*, as I know nothing certain, that Mrs. H—y was married to Mr. Jaffrey in February last, though the marriage was concealed, until about a month ago. The reason assigned by *rumour*, I mean for the concealment, is that you had gone to transact some business of importance, and that it was not likely you would have done it so well, if you were earlier informed. I heard, too, some letters she had received in the pacquet from you informing of this business being finished was the cause of its being then divulged. Whether this is true or not, I know not, I only know it as report. I frequently recalled our conversations, just before you left Boston, and I wish, if you wish so, that my advice to you not to go, had produced a greater effect. It is said that Gore, the lawyer, married them.

If you wish any advice from me, rely on my disposition and fidelity. It is said that Mrs. H—y had made no reserves of property, but has given the whole to Mr. Jaffrey.

I have heard it whispered among the circle of Kilbourn, Breck and Co., at least as coming from the female part of it, that you are indebted to her considerably, and that the remission of that debt has been made you, a return for your services. I have never seen Mrs. H—y since, so as to speak to her, I mean since the matter was announced, though, about a week before, she told me, when I asked after you, that you were going to Falkland again, which, she said, you had declared had been the happiest period of your life. Guess the tattle and believe me

Yours sincerely  
C. Jarvis

Directed to Francis Rotch, Esq.,  
London

Enclosed

Boston, 10th of July '86  
Charles Jarvis

Received at Dunkirk, France, 31st of August, '86 with other letters.

So passed an extraordinary woman out of Francis' life, and so commenced a period of twenty-three years about which I know and can find very little. Certainly most of it was spent in France, much of it, I believe, in Bordeaux; perhaps some in Dunkirk, for I find

evidence that in the earlier days of William Rotch's venture in France he was having business relations with his younger brother.

William and his son Benjamin had gone to England in the old *Maria* almost immediately after the recording of Francis' deed, sailing from Nantucket the first of the seventh month, 1785, and reaching London twenty-three days later. William was expecting Francis to join him shortly and was corresponding with him. William writes on November 2, 1785, to his son William and Samuel Rodman, "I entirely forgot to leave any directions for the payment of my mother-in-law (step-mother) her annuity of £30 Stg. which was due the 24th of last month. I hope you or brother Francis has thought of it. If not, pray do it as soon as possible with interest, and as Francis will be come away please to write to Hervey and Anthony to enquire whether he has remitted it, and if not for them to pay it." This was the annuity for Rebecca, second wife of Joseph, given her by his will. In this same letter William writes, "The *Ceres* from Boston, which brother Francis intended to have taken passage in is cast in Boulogne Bay on the French Coast, pretty well up channel. After getting ashore, they put out in a boat in which was one man. After putting in their money, about £6000 Stg., and the letters, the boat overset, the man was drowned, the money and letters lost, since which the letters are found. I had two by her, one from brother Fran. the other from Jos. Hussey. The money was not found by the last account."

Francis finally came over in the packet, arriving in England towards the end of February, 1786, after a stormy winter passage in which head gales made them lay to ten or twelve times. He was waiting in Dunkirk for William in May of that year, and the two brothers and young Benjamin proceeded thence to Paris, where the French King, through his ministers, granted the bounties to the Rotch ships that caused William and Benjamin to settle in Dunkirk a few years later, and which may have caused Francis to continue his residence in France for so many years, though I have no evidence as to this. Francis was still in Dunkirk on August 31, 1786, when he received Charles Jarvis' letter telling him of Mrs. Haley's marriage. I hear of Francis only once more in these many years. William writes from Dunkirk to William, Junior, in New Bedford on January 25, 1792, "Brother Francis has lately ordered 10,000 Livres" (French pounds) "into my hands, if we understood his letter right, which is not quite so intelligible as we wish. If it is so, shall balance our comp. account first, stake the rest to my account." Evi-

dently by this time Francis was in debt to both his brother and his brother's firm.

At the age of fifty-nine, probably with most of his fortune gone, Francis came back to New Bedford to make his home for a time at least with William, who was then seventy-three, and had been for nearly fifteen years living in his Mansion, retired from the worries of the business he had left to his sons.

It is hard to picture these two brothers together. William, the unbending Quaker, who had weathered the storm of revolution and unpopularity without the slightest wavering, who had lived in dissolute royal France without succumbing to its enervating influences, whose only pleasures were the contemplation of his God and the love of his wife, his many children and grandchildren; and Francis, the European, the dreamer, whose dreams but seldom came true, whose thirty-four years in England and France had caused him to forget his Quaker God, and kept him from acquiring a family.

I have before me two pictures of Francis in his later New Bedford days, one drawn by the sympathetic pen of his niece Mary, and the other by the rather hostile pen of Congdon. The latter I have already quoted. It is more pleasant to read of him in the letters written to Samuel Rodman, Jr., at New Garden School in Pennsylvania by the later's Aunt Mary Rotch — Mary Rotch, the friend of Emerson and the only woman among the early Rotches except Eliza Rotch Farrar who has left much of a story of her own. On 8 mo. 13th, 1809, she writes:

"Thou hast probably been informed of the arrival of our Uncle Francis Rotch, in New York, from which place he informs us by letter of his intention to settle a piece of business in Philadelphia previous to his meeting his relatives here, a circumstance he appears to contemplate with real pleasure. We anticipate with satisfaction the moment when we may welcome this long absent relative to his native country, and tho' the path of Life he has chosen from early years has led him *from* the religious profession in which he was educated, we feel that affectionate interest in his welfare that leads to the hope he may feel a disposition for more retired scenes than those in which he has long moved, and eventually return. He has never united himself to any other profession, and I have heard him observe that he had neither sought nor expected to find a better one — he is about 59, sixteen years younger than thy grandfather."

It appeared to be a whole year before Francis really appeared

in New Bedford, for her next letter mentioning him appears to be dated 8 mo. 21st, 1810:

"Thou seems to have sympathies with us on the subjects of our guests at the time my dear uncle F. Rotch was expected — very fortunately Cousin L. took it in her head suddenly to depart, and I arose at four in the morning to accomodate her wise resolution, and bid her a cordial farewell — on the afternoon of the same day he arrived, and continues our very interesting inmate — he devotes much time to reading aloud which is to us a very agreeable way for passing the hours. Uncle is also very fond of walking, and whenever the weather is suitable I generally accompany him in a long morning ramble — 4 miles is a distance not unusual for us. Thou wilt readily believe we highly appreciate the society of a beloved relative from whom during thus far on the journey of life we have been so entirely separated, it seems indeed like a *new* acquisition, for where there has never been scarcely any personal acquaintance, even the ties of relationship are felt on the heart but by a feeble pressure. He desires his love to thee and wishes much to see you, all which pleasure he will probably have at the time of our dear Anna's marriage if not before."

And again, 11 mo. 9, 1810:

"Uncle F. R. continues to devote the evenings to reading; the Life of Fenelon, translated by Butler, memoir of Elizabeth Smith, Espriella's Letters, and Stillman's Travels have been our amusing and instructive companions since thy departure. We are now reading the life of Cumberland written by himself. Uncle has been made a candidate for a seat in Congress; he was not consulted on the occasion, or he would have refused, if the time had been sufficient to admit of choosing another. There is no probability of his having the Majority of votes and I believe he will be glad when it is fairly decided without placing him under that kind of public responsibility which he seems not at all to covet. I think him a very suitable person and am rather pleased that such a testimony of respect has been shown him by the inhabitants of this town. The federal votes here exceeded I believe by 150 but if there was a probability of his going to Washington I am not patriotic enough to be easily reconciled to such separation, even though it might be for the good of my country. The longer he is with us the more essential is his society to our domestic comfort."

How long this visit with his elder brother and his niece lasted I do not know, but on December 21, 1815, he married his first cousin once removed, Anne or Nancy Rotch, the daughter of Captain

Joseph Rotch. Three years later he purchased from Andrew Robeson the house still standing at the northeast corner of Walnut and Sixth Streets, where he passed the last seven years of his life and where his widow lived on until April 23, 1867, to startle the little Rotch girls of the seventh generation by constantly taking snuff.

He was still busy at his invention, the whaling gun already mentioned in the Hayley story, and the famous Hornbug, *Roderick Dhue*, a strange ship which Daniel Ricketson in his "New Bedford of the Past" describes as a "curious sort of vessel with paddle wheels, intended to be propelled by horse-power." Let us listen to Mr. Congdon, who will tell us of this ship and of the start of the whaling gun, a weapon that has long since forced the harpoon and New Bedford's square riggers into permanent retirement:

"R. was full of all manners of schemes, fly-traps, etc., etc. He had contrived a model of a vessel that was to bring about a revolution in navigation. William Coffin (my brother-in-law) built number one. She was just large enough to fill his shop. When she was launched, they had to take off the whole east end which stood close to the water. This boat cost quite a sum of money, but nothing was done with her after she was launched. He was now fully wrapped up in the second work. This was an out-of-door work. Abraham Gifford was master workman. The strange craft was built at a north end shipyard just east of A. G.'s house. Nearly the whole time of the War was the work carried on, giving employ to many workmen, who would have been idle and suffering.

"A. G. was no party to the scheme. So clearly convinced was he of the utter futility of the whole undertaking and told R. that he thought he could not conscientiously handle any more of his money, but it was not very hard work for R. to convince friend G. that the money would not do him any harm.

"The work went on and the strange craft, called the Horn-Bug, because of two projecting timbers from the bow, was launched. I have a model here before me as I write. And now comes the preparation for moving the craft:

"Such strange and unheard devices for propelling as were put into and attached to the double ship were the astonishment as they were the laughing stock of the people.

"It would take a volume to describe the various wheels, gearings, outriggers, inriggers, that were found on this *Roderick Dhue*.

"And now that it was ready, the first trip was to be to N. Y. Passengers were engaged and provisions were placed on board, but there was to be a trial trip. A large party was invited to take an

excursion on this wonderful ship. The village nobility and gentry were early on hand. The wind was fair and toward sunset the new machine for navigating the ocean had reached a little below the south end of Palmer's Island. It was time to return. The bow must be headed to the north. In vain was the helm put hard down, she would not come round. Here was a fix. Boats were finally procured filled with strong oarsmen, a line was fastened to the bow and to the end of the line of boats, and in the evening by dint of sturdy tugging, the wonderful craft got back to the wharf. This was her first and last voyage. A considerable fortune for those days was wasted in this ridiculous adventure. At last the *R. D.* was taken in hand by the carpenter. The separating timber was removed and the two sides brought together. When all was ready for the operation Citizen Haskell was sent for and the marriage ceremony performed. The union was made and the *Roderick Dhuc* became a respectable fishing schooner.

"The whaling gun was a favorite notion with Mr. Rotch. He was long occupied with it and finally when he supposed he had perfected it, he undertook to make a formal trial of it. A large schooner was purchased and fitted out as a whaler. Mr. Rotch took charge of the enterprise in person, exactly in what capacity I know not. After several months, he returned with a single whale. The gun was not fired, and I think never was in the form constructed by him. I was on the wharf when he landed. He looked weary and worn. This was about the wind-up. His property was now nearly expended as was his hopefulness and thought. He married his cousin, Nancy Rotch, and died at the home now occupied by Mrs. Russell at the corner of Walnut and Sixth Streets."

Mr. Congdon thus paints the picture of a discouraged old man. Five years after his marriage he wrote his will. It is an interesting document, partly because of what it says, and partly because of the unusual place where it was executed. I will give it in full:

I Francis Rotch of New Bedford County of Bristol State of Massachusetts hereby revoking all former wills do hereby make this my last Will and testament as follows. I give and bequeath unto my son in law John William Charles Fleeming, all my patent rights, drawings, models, sketches, writings and implements relating thereto, on condition that during his exercise of such rights or parts thereof, he shall allow and pay to my Wife Ann Rotch one third part of the benefit or profits arising therefrom, or One thousand dollars per annum at his option; or if my said Son in law John William Charles Fleeming should at any time dispose of or sell said patent rights or any part thereof, he shall allow and pay to my said wife, one third part of the sum received for the sale of such patent right, and this sum so paid shall be reckoned and set off by anticipation against the annual provision hereby made for the use and benefit of my said wife.

All the rest and residue of my property both real and personal I give and bequeath to my said wife Ann Rotch for her own use and benefit forever; and I do appoint Samuel Rodman Junr. Francis Rotch Junr. my nephews and Lemuel Williams Junr. Esqr. all of New Bedford to be my executors to this my last will and testament, authorizing in all cases a majority to act,—for their services in the execution of this my will I give to my said nephews Samuel Rodman Junr. and Francis Rotch Junr. the free and full exercise of any unexpired patent right, which I may die possessed of so far as regards whale fishery, or rather so far as regards their personal interest therein, whether jointly or separately, to their own use and benefit. To my other executor Lemuel Williams Junr. Esqr. I desire ample remuneration may be made for all his services in the execution of this my will. In testimony whereof I have hereunto set my hand and seal this twenty ninth day of the seventh month in the year of our Lord One thousand eight hundred and twenty, on board of the Schooner Elizabeth in the Harbor of New Bedford, having before this date ceded to my son in law John William Charles Fleeming a full right in common with me to the use of any or all my patent rights at his own discretion and exclusively to his own benefit, which paper is in the hands of Francis Rotch Junr. one of my executors.

F. Rotch

Seal

Signed Sealed and declared by  
the Testator to be his last will  
and testament, in presence of us,  
who in the presence of each other  
have hereto subscribed our names  
as witnesses.

Jabez Emery  
William Grinnell  
Sylvester R. Bumpus

Francis had nearly two more years to live, but was evidently even then suffering from the disease which caused his death, cancer, I imagine. I will let his nephew Samuel speak of his death through entries in his diary: "May 15 (1822) Sat up last night with Uncle Francis." . . . "May 16. Principally engaged in bottling my cider. Called at Uncle Francis' in the evening. Found him very feeble and evincing very little notice of anything about him, evidently sinking under the influence of his disease." . . . "May 20. This day has been principally spent in attending upon the last hours of my Uncle Francis, he gradually sunk from the state in which I left him yesterday evening through the intermediate stages of bodily debility until 6 o'clock P.M. when the vital functions were totally suspended. He was unable to speak through the day or to take anything into his stomach, but his intelligent eye indicated a sensibility to what was passing around him, and hence we may judge that he was aware of the solemnity of his own situation. Through his long and painful indisposition of the two years continuance, besides having the asthma to a great degree for the last five years, he evinced a degree of patience of which there are few examples. It may perhaps be said that any discontent whether of expression or manner was never observed by his most constant and

intimate attendants and friends. It is believed that he was often thoughtful on the important subjects which relate to another life and that, without making it a topic of conversaion, his reflection led him to the spiritual communion with our beneficent Creator which in good degree prepared him for the change which has now taken place. In his general intercourse with those with whom his duties and pursuits brought him in contact, he was remarkable as much for uniform mildness and unforgetting urbanity of manner as for his enlarged and well informed mind. His general tone of feeling and disposition was perfectly accordent with superiority of intellect. He was always open, always generous. I never knew of his making an unkind remark of another, or of his acting from a low or sordid motive."

Let those who think young Samuel may have lauded his Uncle too highly because of their family relationship read his thoughts on the death of some of his other relations and they will find that he wrote in his diary just what was actually in his mind.

The estate was pitifully small, the personal property amounting only to seven hundred and eighty-nine dollars and forty-five cents; and as the debts, expenses of last sickness and administration expense amounted to five hundred and two dollars and eighty-four cents, the executors, Francis Rotch the second and Samuel Rodman, Junior, had to get three hundred and five dollars and fifty-four cents from the widow so that the household furniture need not be sold to pay them. And as I see no funeral expenses in the account, I suppose Nancy also paid for this out of her own pocket. J. W. C. Fleeming wrote on May 4th, 1824:

"I hereby acknowledge that I am perfectly satisfied and contented with the disposition which has been made of the Patent Rights and Specifications mentioned in the Will of my late father in law Francis Rotch and that I hereby exhort the executors of said will from all further responsibility in relation to the same."

And Nancy wrote:

"I hereby certify that I have examined the annexed account of the Executors of the last Will & Testament of my late husband Francis Rotch, and am satisfied with the same. I also acknowledge myself satisfied with the disposition which has been made of the Patent Rights & Specifications mentioned in said Will and I hereby exhort the Executors from any further responsibility in relation to the same."

I wonder what happened to the patent rights.

Francis Rotch was buried on May 22, 1822, in the old Quaker

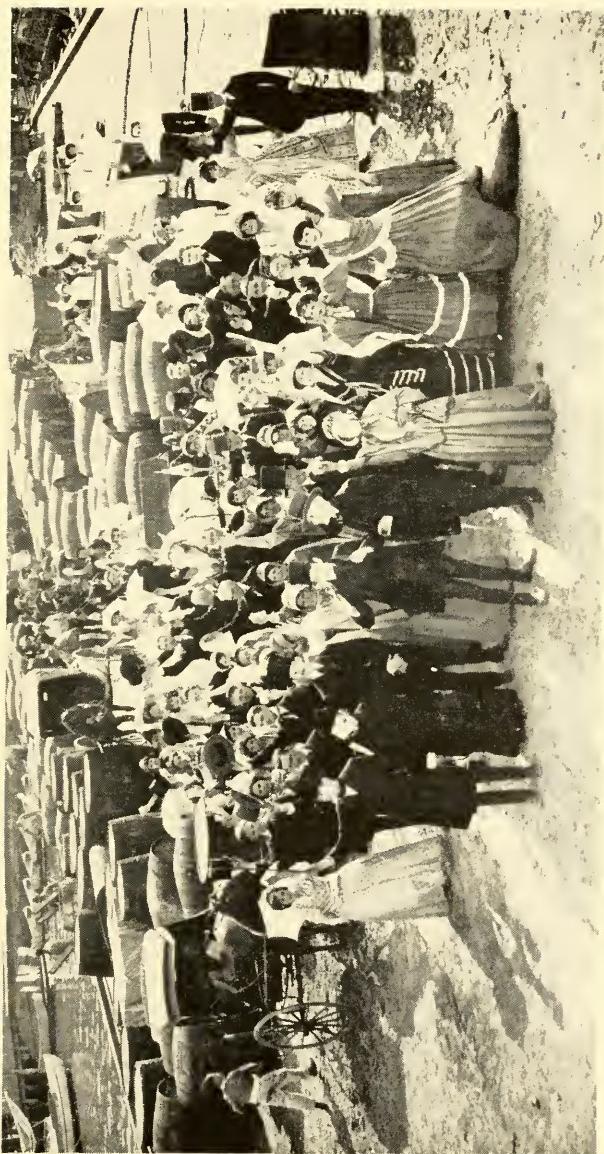
burial ground near the foot of Griffin Street in New Bedford. It is noted that "Benjamin Percival from Hanover, being in town attended" (the funeral) "and delivered an excellent and uncommonly impressive and appropriate, though short, sermon on the occasion."

About 1882, Greene and Wood acquired this burial ground for part of their lumber plant, and moved all the graves to the Quaker cemetery just south of Rural Cemetery in New Bedford. Here Francis Rotch lies beside his wife and her father, Captain Joseph Rotch and her mother Jane, their graves marked with simple undated stones, a peaceful and thoroughly domestic ending to a life which during much of its span was far from being either.

Nancy Rotch was supposed to have had very little money when Francis Rotch married her, but she seems to have succeeded in living for a great many years and coming out quite well, as her inventory shows \$4,000 in real estate and \$6,917.97 in personal property. The house was left to Caroline Hare, who was descended from Charles Fleeming and Mary Rotch, and the rest of the property almost entirely to members of the Rotch and Rodman families and their connections. The New Bedford Orphans' Home received \$500, and by the sixth paragraph of the will she gave four shares of the Bedford Commercial Bank stock to Susan E. Rodman in trust to pay out the income and dividends from time to time among the deserving poor of the City of New Bedford with the right to terminate the trust at any time. After Susan Rodman's death, Maria E. Williams acted as trustee although apparently neither was officially appointed. On Maria E. Williams' death, the writer took over the trust and received under it \$513.09, which he promptly distributed with the aid of the Family Welfare Society among the worthy poor of New Bedford, closing out the trust.

Additional Notes on Francis Rotch by John M. Bullard added later:

The preceding account of Francis Rotch was written in 1932 and 1933. On page 60 is the statement that in 1786 commences a period of twenty-three years of which I know or can find very little. In 1939 Major Horace Forster was going over the old papers in the possession of his ancestors' whaling firm in New Bedford, the firm of Swift & Allen. He found a great quantity of original material dealing with the sundry Rotch patents and gave it all to me. This material shows that Francis first conceived of his two-hulled boats with a canal in the middle when he was living in France, and there is a picture of the schooner so constructed which he says was actually tried out at Havre. He applied for a number of patents for boats to be used for the whale fishery, those dated in the tenth year of the



Reproduction of Wharf Scene in New Bedford at sailing of a whaler.  
Taken in 1921 for the moving picture "Down to the Sea in Ships."



The ship *William Rotch* with others off the coast of Hawaii  
(A print often called, erroneously, "The Rotch Fleet")

French Republic referring to him as Citizen Francois Rotch and those dated in 1806 referring to him as Monsieur Francois Rotch. He makes the statement in 1806 that he came to France twenty years ago at the request of the French Government to be of service in connection with the whale fishery. This is just the time that his brother William first went to France. He states that he has lived in France ever since. Evidently his home at the time that these patents were applied for was in Bordeaux, although he is often reached at the Hotel Boston in Paris. Later there is a mass of patent material applied for in New Bedford about 1815. By this time, his two-hulled boat is worked by ropes, wheels, pulleys and extraordinary propellers, and from the very artistic paintings of little men at work, it would seem as if it would take more sailors to drive the boat this way than would be necessary to man a Roman galley. He does say that he is patenting a method of making a boat go against the current and the wind.

He, or someone acting for him, is certainly an excellent artist because the specifications and plans are beautifully done in paints of various colors and much of the work is really very artistic. Besides the patents for the two-hulled boats, patents are also applied for for sundry kinds of fly traps, sundry methods for keeping chimneys from smoking, a new kind of gun powder, sundry peculiarly constructed wheels and remarkable apparatus for pushing a boat along by mechanically arranged stakes like huge grasshopper legs overhanging the stern, with a heavy weight in the middle joint which drops when released. Also there is a pump which is supposed to be worked by the motion of the boat and which is said to have been tried out successfully by a New Bedford captain. Most of the members of the Rotch and Rodman families then living in New Bedford attest to the trustworthiness of the captain as do many others of New Bedford's leading citizens.

These pictures and specifications are now in the museum of the Old Dartmouth Historical Society, and when I was president of that organization I found in the attic a wooden model of the Hornbug, probably the one Mr. Congdon had on his desk.

William and Francis are extraordinary brothers, the older one a very practical and very successful business man who greatly increased the wealth he had inherited, the other an artist, a dreamer and thoroughly impractical in the world of business, which was his inherited environment.

**ROTCHE AND LOPEZ DIRECTIONS TO THEIR  
FALKLAND CAPTAINS**

(The following is from Library of Congress, C.O.65 V122 #38d)

Newport Sept. 4, 1775

Capt. John Locke

Brig't Minerva under your command fitted for a whaling voyage — stores for 18 mos. St. Jago (de Verdes) Brazil, whaling thence to Falkland Isls. Forbidden to touch at any port or Harbour within 4 leagues of the Brazil barring extreme emergency. L or D

When you approach any vessel we would have you hoist your white signal at your fore-top-gallant masthead & in a few minutes haul it down & after the same space of time hoist it up again & if you are answer'd in the same manner you may be assur'd it is one of our vessels —

You are then for many reasons particularly that of Insurance at all events to proceed for Port Egmont in the Falkland Islands where you are with all the rest of our vessels to rendezvous & recruit & where, if no unforeseen accident prevents you may be assured you will find our Francis Rotch etc. — You shall be at liberty either to winter with our Francis Rotch there or to return home again etc.

Expected to stay the winter & experiment with Sealing — Stop at St. Eustatia on return, for orders. Keep a particular Journal of the Winds, Weather & Soundings etc. Report any vessels coming this way to Aaron Lopez in Newport, Leonard Jarvis in Dartmouth or William Rotch in Nantucket. Vessels bound for Eng. write to Geo. Hayley.

With these orders we give you a Draft of the Falkland Islands upon a large Scale with courses & soundings laid down in an explicit manner etc.

We are your Friends & Owners

Francis Rotch

Aaron Lopez

P. S. In event of difficulty going or coming proceed as convenient to	
St. Eustatia	Sampson Mears
Lisbon	Mayne & Co.
Madeira	Blackburne Sanchez Burrows & Co.
Gibraltar	Livinston & Turnbull
Teneriffe	Mahoney & Woulfe
Cadiz	Duff & Welch
Barbadoes	John Thompson & Co.

WILLIAM ROTCH, JUNIOR  
(1759-1850)

ORDINARILY, a man who was one of the leading citizens, if not the leading citizen, of his community for upwards of sixty years would go down in the history of that community and of his family without the need of an explanatory adjective being attached to his name. But such was not to be the fate of William Rotch of the fourth generation, grandson of Joseph. Invariably, not only during the life of his father, but until his own death, twenty-two years later, and even today, this William is spoken of with the word Junior following his name.

William Rotch, Jr., wrote on 1 month 15, 1791, from New Bedford to his Uncle Francis Rotch a business letter on international affairs. He then turns to more personal matters:

"Thou has doubtless heard Thos' marriage with my wife's youngest sister Charity, he expects to settle here in the Spring & will perhaps join me in business. And so long as the sperm fishery lasts we have a prospect of doing well. In the course of the last year was brought into our port about 600 Tons spermaceti oil and head matter, much of which was taken in the bay of Mexico where our small vessels have been remarkably fortunate. I have been settled here between two and three years and find the conveniences for conducting my business very great. My father has rebuilt the Rope Walk and upon the cellar of the former upper stores I have built a ware house and spermaceti Manufactory adjoining only instead of 20 feet wide I have built them 30 and have added in width to the long part of the wharf 20 feet. I have also a House covered and now finishing upon the spot my grandfather's stood 15 feet back from the street, 46 feet front & 40 feet back that in a few years I hope the dessolation occasioned by the fire will be no more traced. The Town grows very fast, but being entirely dependent upon the spermaceti fishery, it is precarious. But I hope it will always find a support we find no lack of whales in the atlantic north of the line, but being mostly small make less voyages than formerly upon the Bank fish . . . We have three promising children Sarah 4½ years, William 2, & Joseph the Infant."

We must remember that Uncle Francis had known New Bedford well from 1765 until the British had burned it in the Revolution and had lived in Europe most of the time since. This letter is definite proof that the present "Mariners' Home" now located on Johnny Cake Hill, was built on the west side of Water Street just south of William in the latter part of 1790. It was moved one block

west when Sarah Arnold (the Sarah above referred to) gave it to the New Bedford Port Society after her father's death.

William Rotch, Jr.'s letter book from 1788 to 1792 is in my possession and shows what an active business man he was. Most of the business had some connection with whaling or with whale ships, with much commerce and international trade on the side, including a large business in candles. William Rotch, Sr., and Benjamin were then in Dunkirk, with their partner Samuel Rodman in Nantucket, and naturally William, Jr., traded much with this firm, of which he had been a member or, as he refers to his relationship with it, "a branch," until the spring of 1788. He wrote many letters to Thomas Dickason, the Rotch agent in England, and to the "Brothers de Bauque" their international bankers in France. We find him ordering "20 doz. blue and white china cups & saucers, large" and many other similar articles from China. He was, like his father and grandfather, an international business man, a merchant, a manufacturer and finally a banker, being one of the founders of the New Bedford Institution for Savings in 1825 and serving as its first President from 1825 until his death in 1850. He was a devout Quaker serving as Clerk of the Yearly meeting most of the time from 1788 to 1818. He was, with Moses Brown, an original trustee of the Friends School in Providence, which is now known as "Moses Brown School." He was also one of the founders in 1811 of Friends' Academy in New Bedford, a school that still survives after a hundred and thirty-five years, and which, after many vicissitudes, is now flourishing again. He was the largest original subscriber to this school and also its first Treasurer. William Rotch, Jr., was successful. He was the third generation of success, not softened by early wealth in his family. He seems somewhat colorless to me compared to the less successful members of the family, before, contemporary with, and later than him. But he certainly was one of New Bedford's leading citizens for a very long time, from 1787 until his death in 1850, a much longer period than either his grandfather or his father had lived in the town which the successive successes of the three made the greatest whaling port in the world.

Born on the island of Nantucket November 29, 1759, he was the third child and second son of William Rotch and Elizabeth Barney. His older brother, also named William, had died in infancy. I know nothing of his boyhood. He was only fifteen and a half when the British marched on Concord. His father's "Memorandum" tells of the hardships on "neutral" Nantucket during his young manhood. Most of his descendants are probably qualified to be Sons or

Daughters of the American Revolution, but not through the Quaker Rotches.

I do not know how the Rotch and Rodman families became so closely associated in the troublous early days of the Revolution. I have an original letter written by William, Jr., at the age of twenty to his future brother-in-law and partner, Samuel Rodman. According to the Rodman book, Samuel had taken his mother's family to Leicester, Massachusetts, in 1777, where he purchased and carried on a farm and also taught school. But in 1779 he seems to have been, at least temporarily, back in Newport, his boyhood home, which had just been captured by the Americans and French from the British forces.

William writes as follows:

"Dear Samuel:—

"Nantucket, 12 mo. 29th, 1779.

"The satisfaction I felt at receiving thine of the 17th ultimo was increased by its containing those Testimonies of regard from one, to be placed in whose esteem I have ever acknowledged a happiness, and which I hope will ever influence an exertion of my endearment to contribute towards its continuance & discharge of the obligation. By thy account (as also from other quarters) the situation of our Newport Friends appears very dolorous, & their Fate much to be deplored; I expect it is not in my power to imagine the different countenance that once delightfull place now wears. How much more apparent it must be to an old inhabitant. I do not wonder thy spirits were depress'd at the conduct of their *New Masters*; I conclude it was a great Alloy to the flattering prospects, the evacuation of the Island presented thee, as doubtless thou had formed many agreeable Ideas from the occasion, and it would not be strange if too sanguine expectations were to succeed so many scenes of adversity, in which thyself & family have been large sharers; perhaps if nothing disagreeable had opposed the pleasing Scale it might have prepared thee for greater disappointments. . . . My Father has been absent four weeks, being gone to Boston accompanied by uncle S. Starbuck & T. Folger to answer to their late impeachment, during part of the time he has pass a trying dispensation, expecting nothing but imprisonment — but now they expect to be liberated to appear again at next Sessions in the 3d month. Jenkins accusations were very high & if proved would convict them of high Treason, (but that his malice is not able to do — after he presented his memorial, a committee of the House was appointed 'to examine the parties, they had been before them twice & were by

the last account to meet again before the Comm. reported, which they thot would be for further enquiry.' Jenkins is now desirous to withdraw his memorial in his own way, if he could do it without the loss of what he calls his honor. . . . This goes in the vessell that is intended to Woods Hole to wait for them, hope they'll be home this week, when thou may expect to hear from me with the particulars of the matter, Interim I am with respect to self and Family thy Assured Friend."

Evidently William and Samuel, who was then twenty-six, were already good friends, and the youthful William was already looking longingly in the direction of Samuel's younger sister Elizabeth, while Samuel was to marry William's older sister Elizabeth within six months. Two years later, on July 17, 1782, William Rotch and Elizabeth Rodman were married at Leicester. The bride was six months older than the groom, having been born at Newport March 3, 1759, the daughter of Thomas Rodman and Mary Borden. Later William's brother Thomas, as we saw above, married Elizabeth's sister Charity. Thus three Rotches married three Rodmans, and in the next generation three Rodmans, William R., Sarah and Benjamin, married three Morgans, Rebecca W., Charles W. and Susan W., all brothers and sisters, and in the next, three Rodmans, Samuel, Alfred and Ellen, married three Motleys, Emma, Anna and Edward, all brothers and sisters. The Rotch and Morgan families had many other intermarriages too.

Presumably William and Elizabeth went at once to Nantucket and there certainly they made their home during the first few years while William's father and younger brother, Benjamin, were voyaging to England and France in search of a place to establish their whale fishery anew.

To them on Nantucket was born in 1786 a daughter, Sarah, later to be the wife of James Arnold, but it was a death and not a birth in the family, apparently, that was to change the course of their lives. In 1784 William's grandfather Joseph, the pioneer, had died in his little house at the foot of Johnny Cake Hill in New Bedford. The young Nantucket bride wrote soon thereafter to her double sister-in-law, Elizabeth Rotch Rodman, as follows:

"Newport, 12 mo. 10, 1784.

"My dear Sister:-

"Freely do I devote part of this evening to acquaint thee of our safe arrival from Providence this afternoon after a tolerable pleasant

passage of 6 hours found my dear Maria & Sisters pretty well. Molly seems quite rational and clearer this evening. She looks better than I expected to see her. I will now endeavor as far as my ability will admit to give thee a sketch of our proceedings since we parted; the evening after we left Nantucket anchored off Fogland Ferry [Note, near the present Stone Bridge from Tiverton to Portsmouth] where I had as comfortable a night as could be expected considering the violence of the Storm. I must confess I was alarmed several times but my confidence in the skill and care of our Captain prevented many fears I should otherwise have had & we were favored to reach Providence the next day. I was not so seasick as usual. On seventh day went to Cranston found Nancy & family well. She intends writing by Oliver. Have had a clearer visit with my Sister. Likewise at Providence had the pleasure of seeing S.C. and S.O. perform the marriage ceremony to satisfaction. Have not time or would give thee the particulars of the wedding etc., but believe a verbal account if my memory will admit will be more suitable. James Robinson is present & so much chat circulating that I am rather fearful I shall have a very incorrect letter. The Speedwell expects to sail in the Morning which will render my copying this or writing anybody else impracticable. Please tell Benny our trunks are not yet fetched from the vessel, consequently his letter is not delivered.

"With endeared love to you all I remain thy affectionate

"E. Rotch Junr.

"We heard of Grandfather's decease the evening we arrived at Providence. Mama has heard from N. Easton who has an excellent creature for Sammy and Wm. will attend to its being killed in order to send by Oliver. Our dear little S. sends a kiss to her dear cousins & wants much to see them. Please to excuse me to Cousin Lydia as I do not feel composed enough to write more at present. Adieu. Mama desires her love to you all. Likewise S. and Charity."

I commented on this extraordinary postscript in my chapter on Joseph Rotch, Sr. Joseph had died leaving much property in New Bedford. William Senior and Francis settled his estate quickly and both left at once for Europe. Evidently a resident agent was needed in New Bedford, so, with Samuel Rodman, now a Rotch by marriage, staying on in Nantucket, William, Junior, and his young wife moved to the shores of the Acushnet. There for many years, until Elizabeth's death, they were to make their home in the stately square house built on the foundation of Grandfather Joseph's house at the southwest Corner of what were to become Water and William

Streets, the building of which was described in William's letter to his Uncle Francis.

Before finding the letter to Uncle Francis, I had imagined it was from this house that Elizabeth Rodman Rotch wrote again to her sister-in-law, Elizabeth Rotch Rodman as follows:

"Nantucket, 4th mo. 4-1788

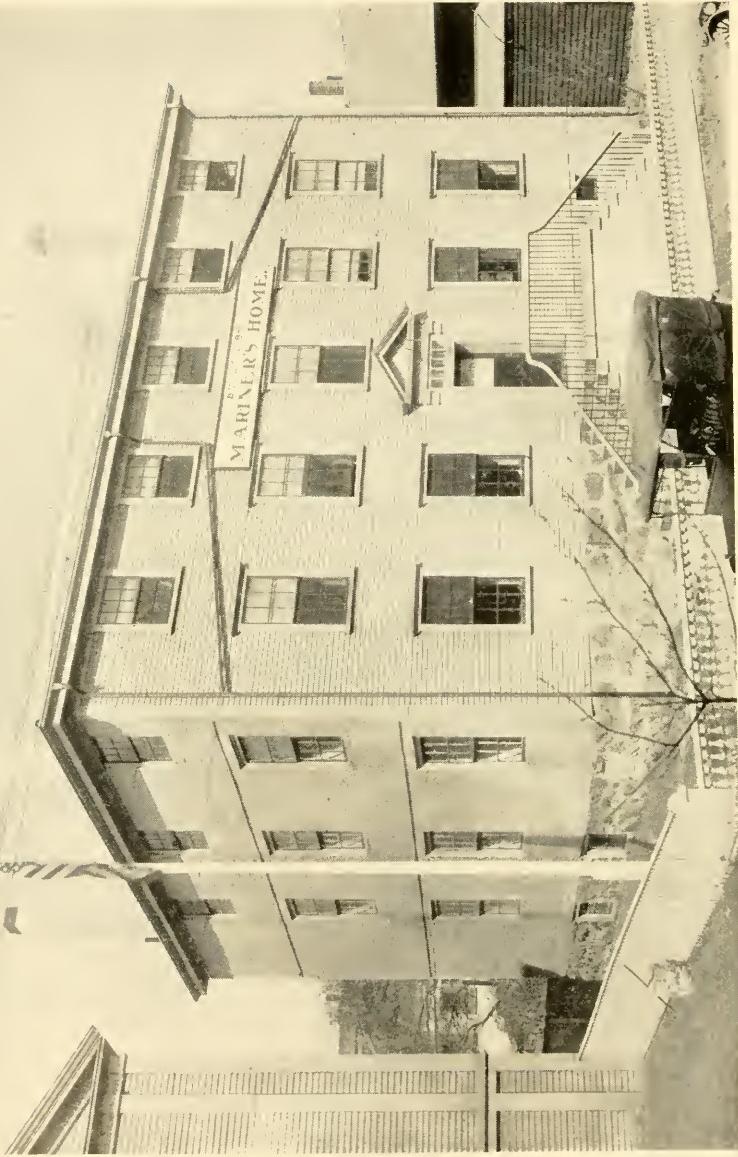
"Dear Sister

"Not feeling dispos'd for Meeting this afternoon, & M. Coffin expecting to leave us in the morning, tho' I could not improve the time better than in giving a little detail of our situation, which I doubt not will be agreeable, suppose J. Barker gave you the particulars of the voyage. We were all extremely Seasick, dear little Sally wanted to go to Aunt Lydia's; but we were soon releaved by being set on shore & welcom'd by our kind frds who seem'd pleas'd to see us particularly J. & Patience. The rain, & our indisposition prevented doing any thing that afternoon. The next morning Elly & me came to our new home & was busily employ'd untill Noon din'd with Patience. After which we made out to provide for ourselves tho' we found a little dificulty in finding the Tea aparatus that afternoon — I think we have quite a pleasant situation; the house has many inconveniences that I think may be mended by a few alterations which I hope to have done soon — We are at present tolerably well settled, untill the White washing & general cleaning commences, found the house in as good order as I expected; the Cellar much inferior to yours, but not remarkably bad — that upon the whole believe we shall make out very well, especially if favor'd with contented minds; as yet we have not had much time for reflection that the time has past very speedily with me — Elly has been extremely usefull & kind, esteem her coming with us a great favor as I have past thro' the fatigues of moving with much less dificulty than I otherways should, hope it may be of service to her & no disadvantage to Mother, for whose kindness I feel much indebted please to present my love to her, Father & the Children, tell Lydia I shall expect to hear from her by a line often as she has leisure to improve in that way. It is very uncertain whether I write any other person by this conveyance expecting company after meeting, have not had much yet except Jenny Rotch & daughters, Doctor Perry's wife sat an hour with us last evening appears sociable & clever — Hope my minute detail will not prove tedious & I am the more induc'd to think it will not from a consideration that the near



William Rotch, Junior  
(1759-1850)

From a portrait by Rembrandt Peale belonging to John M. Bullard



The original New Bedford home of William Rotch, Junior.  
Built in 1791 on Water Street on the foundations of Joseph's original house  
which the British burned. Now moved to Johnny Cake Hill.

affection we feel for each other teaches us to cast an eye of friendship over every imperfection.

"Wishing my dear Sister to hear from thee soon with my other dear connexions, who may think me worth noticing conclude thy

"E Rotch 2nd

"Please to remember me to my kind friends who retain (& justly merit) great share in my affection — Cousin Lydia will be a little disappointed at my not writing her but cant help it now, my engagements I think must excuse me to all. Micajah is now waiting for this as he intends going very early in the morning. Sally has her Bonnet on every day to go & see Aunt Mary cousin M. & E. for whom she discovers great fondness, is now asleep or I doubt not would send her love to them; mine is very tenderly to them all — hope we may see some of the family soon, have not heard anything our family at Newport yet intend sending for M soon —

"Farewell"

Although this letter is headed Nantucket, it is obviously written from New Bedford. Elizabeth had been living in Nantucket and had not accustomed herself to the change.

The Jenny Rotch referred to in the letter was the wife of Captain Joseph Rotch, a nephew of Joseph Rotch, Sr., and first cousin once removed of William Rotch, Jr. Captain Rotch had come to New Bedford with his Uncle Joseph about 1767 and continued to live in New Bedford until his death.

It seems probable that the J. & Patience were Joseph and Patience Austin. Patience Austin was a sister of Captain Cornelius Grinnell. Joseph Austin was living in the big house belonging to Joseph Rotch at the time it was burnt down by the British in 1778.

William was twenty-eight when he came to New Bedford, to settle in the house not quite completed described in Elizabeth's letter. I do not know where this first house was located. It was three years later that he built the present Mariners Home. There were six children, two of whom died in infancy. Sarah, the oldest, was born in Nantucket, but the others were the first Rotches born in New Bedford, with the probable exception of Captain Joseph's daughters, Mary and Nancy.

Elizabeth Rodman Rotch died January 30, 1828. The four remaining children were all married and William was alone. His nephew Samuel Rodman, Jr., on April 5, 1829, wrote in his famous diary, "The intentions of marriage of my uncle, William Rotch, and Lydia Scott was this day announced by Mr. Dewey to his congre-

gation, to their great surprise." Mr. Dewey was the minister of the Unitarian Church in New Bedford. I have told in my story of Joseph Rotch a little of the troubles of the religiously liberal Rotches with the Quaker Meeting, which finally expelled them. I have always understood William continued in his Quaker faith, though he could not worship in the Meeting House he and his family had been so interested in erecting. Perhaps Lydia Scott was a Unitarian by this time. At any rate, the Rotches, Arnolds and Morgans of the next generation all became Unitarians. Joseph Rotch owned a pew in the present Unitarian Church when it was built in 1838, which pew is now occupied by his descendants. The Samuel Rodman family, under the influence of Hannah Prior Rodman, became Episcopalians, but sometimes attended "the Unitarian meeting to hear our friend Mr. Dewey" as they did on Thanksgiving Day, 1839.

On April 25, 1829, when William married Lydia in North Providence, her home, Samuel Rodman made no mention of it. He may not have known of the marriage till later.

Lydia had been William's housekeeper since Elizabeth Rodman Rotch's death. Before that she had been housekeeper for the Micah Ruggles in Fall River. Although Lydia Scott was ten years older than Lydia Ruggles, they had long been friends. Elizabeth Rotch Rodman writing to her son Samuel in May, 1809, twenty years before her brother's second marriage, says:

"Lydia Scott has returned from Sandwich. Her brother came with her to spend part of the vacation. She came down the same evening and spent a silent hour to mingle grief with ours. She possesses a tender feeling mind."

Samuel's brother, Thomas Rodman, had died in Havana in March of that year, having come down with a fever when living on a ship. His companion Felix Fileul, a French friend of the Rotch-Rodman family had cared for him and had just written the harrowing details. Hence the grief. Lydia Scott was the daughter of Job Scott, a Quaker Minister of North Providence. On May 10 Samuel says:

"Made an unsuccessful attempt to call on Uncle Rotch and his bride," and on May 20:

"Evening made my first visit to Uncle Wm. Rotch Jr. and his young wife".

He was sixty-nine, she forty-six, an entirely fitting age, I should say. She died in Waltham in 1863 and is not buried with her husband.

At this time large houses were going up on County Street. James Arnold and William's daughter Sarah had built theirs in 1821 (now

the first two floors of the central part of the Wamsutta Club), Samuel Rodman, Jr., had built his, still standing on the south-east corner of Spring and County. Charles W. Morgan had erected one of the most beautiful at the head of William Street, Joseph and Thomas Rotch, both in 1821, had built theirs just across the street, on either side of William Street (William Street was named for William Rotch). William Rotch Rodman had built, or was about to build, his great house of stone with Greek pillars, still standing at the foot of Hawthorn. And outside the family, Joseph Grinnell was building his impressive mansion at the head of Russell Street. It is said that "young" Lydia wished to join the throng. It is also said that William was reluctant to move. He did build on the south-east corner of Madison (then Bush) and County, but stood out for a house of wood, less pretentious than the others I have mentioned. The houses of William W. Swain and Cornelius Grinnell, later of Horatio Hathaway, were also of wood, just to the southwest. All of this latter group still stand. The Swain School is much the same and honors its builder, but Joseph Grinnell's house, considerably changed in appearance, is a Portuguese Catholic School, the Hathaway house, almost unrecognizable, is a Jewish synagogue, and William R. Rodman's mansion is a Jewish community house, not much changed in appearance except for a new fire escape and for a stone wall which replaced the iron picket fence during an interim ownership.

Only the stately mansion of William Rotch, Jr., is much as it was, with its beautiful gardens taking up a whole city block. On William's death it was bought by Edward C. Jones and was lived in by him and his daughter Amelia until her death in 1935, when it was taken over by Mark M. Duff. It is too bad that most of the big houses which Herman Melville described as having been "harpooned and dragged up hither from the bottom of the sea" have had to go. But times have changed and it is fitting that that of William Rotch, Jr., who himself came so much earlier than the builders of all the others, should still be a charming private home.

I am fortunate enough to own a beautiful portrait of William Rotch, Jr., painted on wood by Rembrandt Peale. It was given me by my cousin Emily Rotch Knowles. It hangs over the fireplace in the library of my home in New Bedford, and is a joy to behold. This is fitting because the house was built by my grandfather, William J. Rotch, just after he was married, on land given him by his grandfather, William Rotch, Jr. The land originally reached from Orchard Street to Cottage Street, and the house fronted on Orchard

Street, well back. There my mother was born. Morgan Rotch moved the house, minus an ell which now stands on Cottage Street, back when the City cut Irving Street and Maple Street through his grounds, so that now it is numbered 19 Irving Street. A similar piece of land just to the north was given by William to his grandson Benjamin S. Rotch, but Benjamin moved to Boston and sold the land before building.

There was published in Massachusetts two years after William Rotch, Jr.'s death a most interesting book, "Names and Sketches of the Richest Men of Massachusetts." Twenty eight were listed as having a million dollars or more. Four of these Millionaires were in New Bedford, two in Roxbury, one in Waltham, one in Watertown, and all the other twenty in Boston proper. You qualified for the book if you were reputed to have as much as \$50,000. The comments were often kindly, often caustic, frequently very witty. James Arnold was in for a million "partly received by marriage." New Bedford Millionaires, besides Arnold, were George Howland's heirs (he having just died) a million, John Avery Parker \$1,300,000, "who has devoted eighty long years to money getting, with the above noble result — His heirs anxiously expect his death, but for their sake he had better live twenty years longer," and Edward Mott Robinson \$1,500,000, "affable, colloquial and unassuming. . . . In business matters he is strictly honorable, but does not claim to be anything more. If his life and faculties are spared him to an old age, he will be one of the richest men in New England, and his daughter — he has only one — will be heiress of immense wealth, both from her father's and the Howland side." His daughter was Hetty Green, than whom no man was more successful at money getting, and whose fortune was by no means all inherited.

Then we have William R. Rotch \$100,000:

"One of the children and heirs of the late William Rotch, Jr., who left nearly a million. The other heirs were Mrs. Emerson, the lady of George B. Emerson, of Boston, Mrs. James Arnold, and the children of the late Joseph Rotch, Esq., being Benjamin S. Rotch, who married a daughter of the Hon. Abbott Lawrence, William J. Rotch of New Bedford, Rodman Rotch of Philadelphia, Mr. [Note: it should be Mrs.] Joseph Angier of Milton, and Miss Joanna Rotch. Of Mr. William R. Rotch it can hardly be said, that he has lived a righteous, sober and godly life, but he is a kindhearted and gentlemanly man."

Had William Rotch, Jr., been living the book would have undoubtedly said "He has lived a righteous, sober and godly life."

As it may be of interest, I quote from "Richest Men" as to the members of the Rotch family then qualified and living in New Bedford.

James Arnold \$1,000,000.

"Partly received by marriage. Native of Rhode Island, and now the owner of very large estates in Providence. At times very benevolently disposed. He gives to the public free entrance to the tastefully cultivated grounds around his mansion. He has just given to the Port Society, for a Sailors' Home, the old mansion-house of his father-in-law, the said Port Society being a pet association with the merchants of New Bedford."

Charles W. Morgan \$200,000.

"Married a daughter of old Samuel Rodman. He is very well known as a merchant, both at home and in Pennsylvania, where he has extensive iron works. Some time ago he had the reputation of being 'hard up,' but he is now easy and flourishing."

Andrew Robeson \$100,000.

"This is but the wreck of what was once an immense fortune, being Mr. Robeson's private wealth remaining after paying the great liabilities of Andrew Robeson & Sons, the calico-printers. He is a great Abolitionist, Peace-man, Parkerite, and Democrat, and yet, which is remarkable, very quiet and gentlemanly. He is still engaged in business."

William R. Rodman \$500,000.

"A son of old Samuel, and a go-ahead, gain-or-lose sort of man. He owns in everything, from a sheep-farm in Australia to a part of the St. Charles Hotel in New Orleans; has whalers out of Havre, and business everywhere in the world. Many think he will 'make a spoon,' and many that he will 'spoil a horn;' these things lie in the womb of time. Meanwhile he is affable when he pleases, pays his bills when he pleases, and does as he pleases generally."

Samuel W. Rodman \$100,000.

"A son of William R. Rodman. Having amassed the above snug sum, he sagely devotes himself to his dogs, horses, guns, and beard, being a great sportsman, and hairy like Esau of old."

Micah H. Ruggles \$75,000. [Fall River].

"Agent of the Pocasset Manufacturing Company. He married a daughter of Samuel Rodman, of New Bedford, by whom he obtained his property. At the time of the great Anti-Masonic excitement he was a candidate of the party for Member of Congress, and afterwards became a member of the Legislature and held other minor offices. He finally became Agent of the Pocasset Company,

through the influence of his wife's relations, who were large stock-holders. He possesses good natural abilities."

EXTRACTS FROM A LETTER FROM ANNA MOTT (BORN 1768), A DESCENDANT OF WILLIAM CODDINGTON, FIRST GOVERNOR OF RHODE ISLAND. WRITTEN IN 1794 DESCRIBING A VISIT TO THE ROTCHES IN NEW BEDFORD.

"Left our friend J. M. this morning for Bedford and rode to Howland's Ferry five miles, were obliged to wait a little as the boat was on the other side.

"It is proposed to build a bridge at this place, which, it is thought will be a great advantage to Newport. From this ferry to N. Bedford is 18 miles, of as bad a road as ever I went over in a carriage.

"We left the ferry a little after eight, and did not reach Bedford until half past one. We were affectionately welcomed by Charity Rotch and her mother, Mary Rodman.

"Went to dinner at Thomas Hazard's, again accompanied by M. Rodman, and her daughter Molly. We met with a kind reception from another amiable branch of this extraordinary family.

"In the afternoon Anna Hazard and her sister went to a considerable collection of Natural Curiosities belonging to W. and T. Rotch.

"This town appears to be very different from Newport. It is small but thriving."

"T. Rotch is not at home, being gone to accompany Joshua E. on a religious visit. His brother William Rotch came in soon after we got there, went with us to meeting, and returned to spend the rest of the day with us. The meeting passed in an agreeable and I hope, instructive manner in having read the little journal kept by dear Sally Rodman when she accompanied her sister Fisher to Philadelphia; it evinces the improvement this beloved young woman made of the talents committed to her, such sweetness and innocence joined with such real and unaffected piety, and as much filial tenderness as breathes through every part, as must, I think, make lasting impressions on those that were favored by a perusal of it.

"The widow Rodman and her daughter Molly accompanied us to W. Rotch's to dinner; his name is too well known to receive any addition from my poor praise, although his kindness and attention will be gratefully remembered by me. Eliza Rotch is a lovely, amiable woman, has fine sweet children.

"In the afternoon Charity Rotch and her sister Molly went with

me to drink tea with Sally Hammond. She is a sweet, pretty woman. Her husband is an agreeable man although he is of a profession that does not prepossess in his favor, being a lawyer. Tommy Hazard rode in the chaise with me, and Charity in their chaise. T. Hazard is an agreeable man and the ride would have been pleasant notwithstanding the rough roads, had it not been detained by Wm. Rotch's chaise breaking down twice."

THOMAS ROTCH  
(1767-1823)  
AND  
CHARITY RODMAN ROTCH  
(1766-1824)

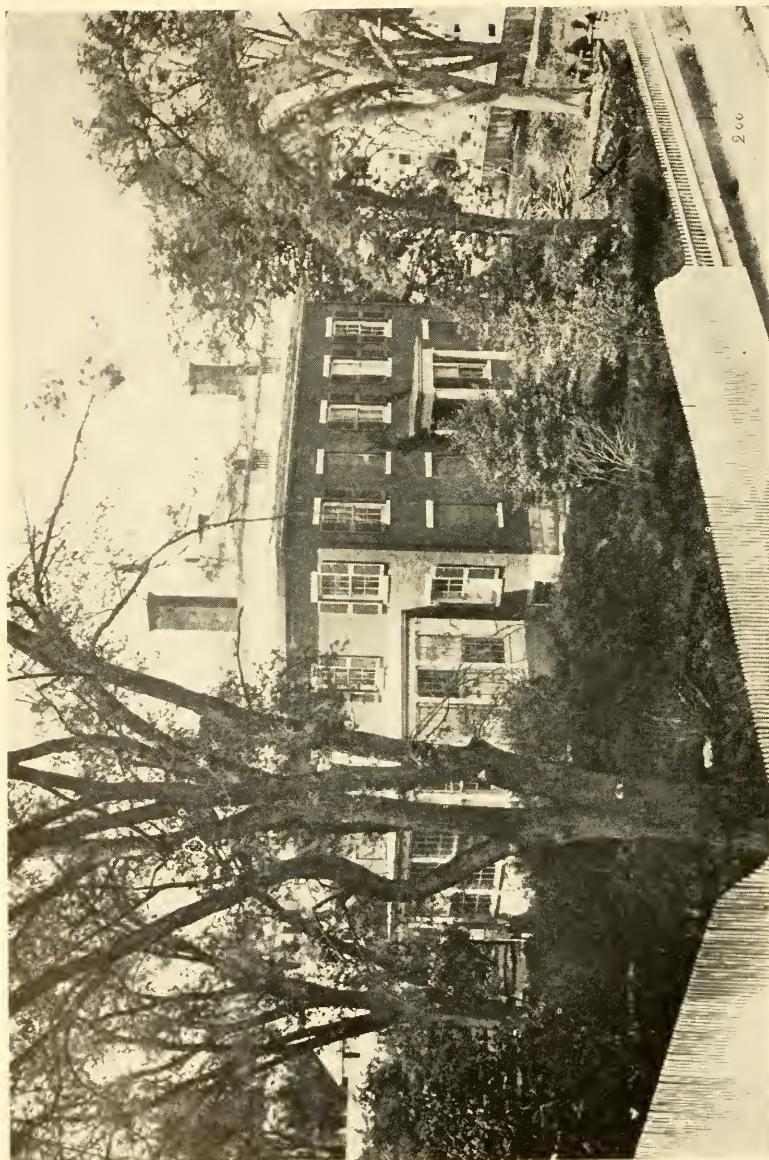
MANY of the Rotches who have died without leaving any descendants have also left so little in the way of a story, so little, that is, available to me, that I have been able to write no account of them. These two, however, though living for only a short time in any one place and though Thomas was but fifty-six and Charity but fifty-seven when they died, have left behind a very real story. Mrs. Horatio Wales has at Spring Hill Farm, Massillon, Ohio, a collection of letters written to Thomas and Charity by many of their contemporaries, both members of the family, and prominent Quakers. It would seem as if all the letters ever written them by anyone had been preserved.

Thomas was the youngest son of William Rotch, Sr., and Elizabeth Barney; Charity, nine months older than her husband, the youngest child of Thomas Rodman and Mary Borden. He was born and grew up in Nantucket, she in Newport. On 5th month 6th, 1790, they were married, following in the footsteps of their older brothers and sisters. When they were married, William Rotch, Jr., and Elizabeth Rodman Rotch were living in Bedford. Benjamin Rotch was in Dunkirk, but the rest of the Rotches and Samuel Rodman were all in Nantucket, and it was to Nantucket that Thomas took his bride. The big family was together for a very short time, however, for in July William, Sr., sailed with his wife, his two youngest daughters and Benjamin's wife and child, for Dunkirk. That left only Samuel and Elizabeth Rotch Rodman and their first five children, the eldest of whom was just nine, to keep the newlyweds company on the island.

In 1791 Thomas and Charity had a son, Thomas, Jr., who lived only a few months. Perhaps sadness caused them to want to move away. At any rate, later in 1791 or in 1792 they joined his brother William and her sister Elizabeth in New Bedford, where the two brothers formed a firm. William Rotch, Sr., was at the time of Thomas' marriage comparatively hard up. The Revolution had cost him heavily and his new venture in Europe had absorbed all his ready cash. He was able finally to provide for Thomas by the time this new firm was established. Apparently Thomas, although much concerned with religious matters, had a keen sense of business and



The last home of William Rotch, Junior.  
County Street corner of Madison Street, New Bedford.  
Built in 1834. In the background is the mansion built by William Rotch Rodman.



The Home of Andrew Robeson.

Second and William Streets, New Bedford.

William Rotch, Junior, writes on 11th mo. 19, 1821, "A. Robeson's house is nearly plastered. It is of brick in father's meadow."

prospered throughout the rest of his life. He was involved in the same diversity of business activities as was his brother William. He was also the Treasurer of the Proprietors of the New Bedford Bridge.

Thomas and Charity lived only about eight years in New Bedford, to which town during that period Samuel Rodman and his family, now consisting of nine children, all of whom, strange to say, lived to maturity, a very rare occurrence in those days, and William Rotch, Sr., with his wife and daughters, had moved. Charity's mother, Mary Borden Rodman, had made her home with Thomas and Charity in New Bedford. Her will dated in 1798 gave many specific legacies to her many descendants and ended "I give all the residue of my estate . . . to my beloved children Thomas & Charity Rotch in consideration of their attention, kindness and expense in caring for me in my natural decay." Mary Rodman died nine days after making her will.

New Bedford should have been a congenial community, and certainly the Rotch business was flourishing. But Thomas and Charity considered themselves missionaries, and were evidently looking for new fields. At any rate they moved on to Hartford. Thomas writes "10 mo. 23rd, 1800, left our beloved friends and relatives at N. Bedford in order to reside in Hartford, Conn. 27th of the mo. we reached the place but our furniture not getting up the River, we did not get to housekeeping till the 11th of the 11th mo."

Thomas said that he went to Hartford primarily as a missionary, but his address was Thomas Rotch, Merchant, Hartford. Besides being a merchant and a missionary, he had a woolen factory, a slitting mill, an oil mill and a farm with pure bred sheep. Robert Folger, an early historian of Massillon in "Stark County History" says "The village of Kendal (now part of Massillon) was laid out in 1811 by Thomas Rotch and a party of men and their families. They were natives of New Bedford, Mass., and moved from there to Hartford, Conn., later coming to Kendal, Ohio, founding the town." That is the only authority I have that others besides the Rotches went from New Bedford to Hartford. Thomas was certainly accompanied to Kendal from Hartford by Arvine Wales and undoubtedly by others. He was obviously very active in Hartford, where, besides the occupations described above, he was trying to hire teachers, so must have been connected with some school. He made a long religious journey into Nova Scotia.

His stay in Hartford was little longer than his stay in New Bedford had been. He writes "Set out in the 1st mo. 1811, passed the

Allegheny Mts. to the Ohio at Pittsburg, through the little towns to Cincinnati, to the northward between the 2 Miami Rivers to the headwaters, returning by the Pickaway planes and homeward the 5th mo. following." I have read that he covered half the State of Ohio on horseback, but I am also told that Charity went with him on this long exploratory trip, and her health being much improved as a result they "left Hartford 1st of 10 mo. 1811, to move west." If her health was improved it must have been not too good to start with; and a five months' trip on horseback at the age of forty-five when in poor health seems pretty strenuous.

Massillon is about thirty miles south of Akron, perhaps sixty or so south of Cleveland. It is nowhere near Cincinnati, and if Thomas saw it on his long trip it was probably on his way home. The first Kendal date in his account book is 3 month 14th day, 1812. The Stark County history says, "Mr. Rotch succeeded in having a post office established in the village, and was the first postmaster. He also built a woolen factory and saw-mill, utilizing the water power of Sippo Creek (which now runs through one of the city parks). He brought with him to Kendal a flock of Merino sheep, and the manufacturing of woolen clothes was one of the first industries established west of Canton, Ohio."

In 1817 Thomas petitioned Congress to increase the duty on foreign woolen goods. His factory was then making 30 yards a day of superior cloth.

Thomas and Charity, like the other Rotches, "were opposed to slavery and were frequently called upon to protect the fugitive slave on his way to Canada. They were never known to leave a call unheeded." Thomas was continually attending the various meetings of the Society of Friends. The Monthly Meeting was at Marlborough, the Quarterly at Salem, and the yearly at Mt. Pleasant. It was while attending this latter meeting in September, 1823, that Thomas died suddenly. He is said to be buried there, but Mrs. Wales says no trace of his grave can be found.

The Rotches had made but one trip east during their residence in Ohio. This lasted from 10th mo. 22nd 1820 to 4th mo. 10th day, 1821. They went by coach, averaging 19 miles a day, and visited their relatives in New Bedford.

After Thomas' death the family urged Charity to come back to New Bedford, but she chose to stay on in Kendal. She was destined, however, to outlive her husband by less than a year. Just before her death she made a new will leaving, as was natural considering she had no descendants, most of her material possessions to her and her

late husband's brothers, sisters, nephews, and nieces, and debts and woolens to sundry Coffins and Macys, who apparently lived in Ohio; which is additional evidence that her group stemmed partly from Nantucket, whether or not by way of New Bedford. Then she says:

"Having for many years past been very desirous of promoting the establishment of a benevolent institution for the education of destitute orphan and indigent children, more particularly those whose parents are of depraved morals, that they may be trained up in the habits of industry and economy, it is my will that my executors convert the remainder of my property, both real and personal, into money, as soon as possible, and place the same in permanent funds, the interest of which to be solely applied to said institution. Should the amount be sufficient to attach a farm thereto, so that a portion of the boys' time may be devoted to the laudable pursuits of agriculture and a part of the girls' time be devoted to the duties of housewifery whereby they may support themselves and become useful members of society, & where also a sufficient portion of their time may be devoted to acquiring a common English education, it would more fully comport with my views."

She then appointed Arvine Wales and Matthew Macy her executors. The next month she died at Spring Hill, and is buried in the Quaker Cemetery cared for by the "Charity School Trustees."

The Charity School came into being and was so efficiently run that its funds mounted from about \$20,000 to something over \$150,000, where they now stand. Harlow Lindley, Editor of the Ohio State Archaeological and Historical Quarterly, wrote in the April, 1946, number:

"The discovery of an 'Agreement between Adam W. Heldenbrand and the Charity School of Kendal,' dated Nov. 27, 1863, has aroused interest to learn more about this Ohio educational institution and the unique contract enacted there.

"In the winter of 1810-11, one Thomas Rotch left Hartford, Conn., and explored Ohio as far south and west as Cincinnati, Springfield and Urbana. On this trip Rotch made notes about the physical features of the state and devoted considerable attention to the mounds which he visited, recording valuable notations on these. The families of both Thomas Rotch and Charity Rodman Rotch were prominent in financial and business interests in New England, and the trip was undertaken on the advice of Mrs. Rotch's physician, who thought a change of climate necessary for her.

"In making this move, Rotch was interested in finding a suitable place for the raising of sheep and the building of mills. In Sep-

tember, 1811, he and his wife moved to Ohio, bringing with him 100 Merino sheep. He settled in Stark county after buying 2,500 acres of land and in 1812 laid out the town of Kendal which is now included in the city of Massillon.

"Charity Rotch, who had traveled in the east, was much interested in the improvement of mankind, especially in the welfare of children. In the laying out of Kendal she obtained five lots in the village for the location of a school in which she expected to develop her ideas. Thomas Rotch died in 1823 and Mrs. Rotch the following year. By his will, Thomas gave his wife all his personal property and the use and income of his real estate during her life. He also willed \$5,000 to the Ohio Yearly Meeting of the Society of Friends to be used in the establishment of a Yearly Meeting Friends school. This school was finally opened at Mount Pleasant as the Friends Boarding School in 1837 and was later moved to Barnesville, Ohio, where it is still in operation. By her will, Mrs. Rotch gave \$6,000 to different individuals and the remainder of her estate to the founding of her favorite institution.

"Because of the name 'Charity' many people thought the school was a charitable institution and thought the pupils objects of charity, but this was not true.

"When the corporation was formed for the purpose of carrying out the design of the founder, the name 'Charity' was adopted in honor of the everlasting remembrance of the benevolent Quaker, Charity Rotch, whose donation laid the foundation of the school. In no sense did the word 'charity' apply in its common definition.

"The bequest of Mrs. Rotch amounted to about \$20,000. In 1826 by special act of the Ohio legislature, 'The Charity School of Kendal' was incorporated and Arvine Wales, Mayhew Folger, Isaac Bowman, William Henry and James W. Lathrop were appointed trustees. Two years later, Nov. 7, 1828, they entered into a contract for the opening of the school on Jan. 1, 1829.

"The rules for the management of the school were most liberal for since its inception the board of trustees was composed of men and women noted for their love of learning and broad ideas of the training of the young. A supposition prevailed that the scholarships were limited to Stark County, but this was not true. Children possessing the qualifications required by the rules were admitted from any state in the Union. No preference was given to locality, nationality or religion, and as vacancies occurred applicants were immediately admitted in the order of their priority, it being the desire of the trustees to keep the membership full at all times in order to

extend the benefits of the school to the utmost. Owing to the small amount of funds at their command, the enrollment was limited to twenty-eight and was equally divided between the sexes. It was designed to admit only children who were orphans, half orphans, or whose parents were poor, irresponsible or infirm. It was not supposed that it was the intention of Mrs. Rotch to make the school either a reformatory for criminals or a hospital for the sick; hence children of depraved morals or diseased bodies were not admitted.

"The conditions required for admission to the school were that the applicant must be between ten and sixteen years of age, sound in body and in mind, of fair moral character and destitute of means for maintenance and education elsewhere. The parents, guardians, or other persons claiming any right of control over the child were required to sign an agreement waiving all such rights, and consenting that the trustees and teachers have exclusive control, management and education of the pupils until he or she reached the age of eighteen.

"The trustees on their part agreed to feed, clothe, and care properly for the children during the term of the indenture, free of expense, and at its conclusion to furnish the pupil with plain but sufficient clothing so that he or she might go out into the world and earn a living. The trustees reserved the right to terminate the agreement or dismiss the child at any time.

"The boys were required to assist in the work of the farm, and the girls with the housework, devoting an average of six hours a day to such work except on Sundays. Eight hours every night were allowed for sleep. An average of six hours a day was devoted to study and the remainder of the time to recreation. The superintendent and the matron had to regard these rules closely for the trustees required rigid enforcement. The children were free at all times to approach the trustees with complaints of either real or fancied wrongs. It was the chief desire of the trustees to bring up the children as brothers and sisters of one big, happy family, and to put into their unfortunate lives the bright sunshine of love.

"The school opened with 15 pupils and was kept going for four years after which it was found that the income from the endowment was insufficient to continue longer so the school was forced to close. In 1834, the trustees purchased a farm just north of Kendal. A brick schoolhouse was built there and in June, 1844, the school was reopened. For forty-four years the school remained in continuous operation although during that time it passed through many vicissitudes and in 1888 it had to close for a period of three years.

In 1891 it was opened again and continued until 1910. Then for a period of eight or ten years, the school and farm were leased to the Summit County Children's Home after which it remained vacant until 1924 when the property was sold. For some years the school fund has partly supported the Children's Bureau of Stark county, the Opportunity School of Massillon and has supplied a fund upon which the truant officer may draw for supplying needy children with shoes, clothes, glasses, etc., as the occasion requires.

"Arvine Wales I, who accompanied Thomas Rotch when he moved to Ohio, was made one of his heirs. During the entire history of Charity Rotch school there has always been a Wales on the board of trustees of the endowment."

In the agreement were some interesting provisions:

"Said Heldenbrand agrees to serve as superintendent of said school for the period of Three years from the First day of April next. To furnish such pupils as the Trustees may admit to said School with abundant, plain and wholesome food, and with clothing neat, comfortable, and in kind and quantity sufficient and suitable for the season. Said Heldenbrand also agrees to do all the washing and ironing necessary for the pupils at his own expense, furnish all the beds, bedding and furniture, tools and stock of all kinds that may be necessary for the carrying out of the School and farm, Also all books and stationary and lights; and to prepare on the land of said Charity School and haul all the firewood. . . . "Said Heldenbrand shall also furnish all medicines and medical and other attendance as may be necessary for the pupils, and such other necessities as the health and comfort of said pupils may require. . . . "The said Heldenbrand shall instruct in all branches of a good common English education (so far as the capacity of the pupil may admit) including Reading, Writing, Arithmetic, Grammar, Geography, Vocal Music, History, Natural and Moral Philosophy (and for the boys) the rudimentary principles of Agriculture. He shall also teach them the principles and habits of personal cleanliness and propriety, — of industry, good morals and economy. It is also agreed that as a part of their education the boys shall receive instruction in ordinary practices of good farming and the girls in the customary duties of housewifery. It is further agreed that throughout the year the pupils shall be allowed daily Eight full hours for sleep; And that the following portion of the pupils' time shall be devoted to manual labor, viz. From the First of November to the First of March five hours each day. From the First of May till the First of September Eight hours per day; and during the Months of March, April, Sep-

tember, October Six hours each day. And the balance of the pupils' time shall be devoted to study, instruction, recreation, etc.

"It is further agreed that any time should any of the pupils run away or escape from said school without leave it shall be the duty of the Superintendent to use all reasonable means to recover them. The Charity School reimbursing him for all his necessary travelling expenses while so engaged. . . .

"The Charity School of Kendal further agrees to pay said Heldenbrand the sum of Fifteen Hundred Dollars per year in quarterly payments as nearly as may be. Provided however that when the number of pupils in said school shall fall below the maximum number of Thirty said School shall have a right to deduct from said sum of Fifteen Hundred Dollars a sum at the rate of Forty Dollars per annum for each pupil less than Thirty that shall attend said School.

. . ."

So ends the story of the only Rotches to become early pioneers in the great central section of the United States. The house which they built at Spring Hill Farm, not much changed, is still in the possession of the Wales family, who took it over after the Rotches had died.

## "AUNT MARY" ROTCH (1777-1848)

(From the *Morning Mercury*, New Bedford, December 25, 1941)

By WILLIAM M. EMERY

DESCRIBING the home life of his younger days the late Bishop William Lawrence in his autobiography stated: "Our parents never asked us to do what they did not do gladly themselves. Father did not tell us to go to church. He went, and we went with him."

A parallel to this situation prevailed in the case of the early Quakers of New Bedford. Young and old, they were guided by the "inner light." Thus, Mary Rotch, first Quaker, then Unitarian, spoke of the experiences of her childhood: Her father and mother, she said, "never told her to do this or to avoid that, but only that there was one with her who would tell her, whilst she might very easily deceive them."

And Ralph Waldo Emerson, a young clergyman, listened admiringly.

Mary Rotch died more than ninety years ago. Her father, William Rotch, Sr., was the wealthiest and most important man of his time in New Bedford. She became an important personage, too. The father built as his residence a commodious home at the northeast corner of Union and Second Streets, which, being the only mansion in the village, was termed the Mansion House from the start — a well-known landmark in Wall's famous painting of New Bedford in 1807.

William Rotch had three sons and three daughters, of whom Mary was the youngest and the only one to remain single. Two brothers and a sister married into the Rodman family. Staying with her father to care for him until his death in 1828 in his ninety-fourth year she was rewarded for her faithfulness with the legacy of a large fortune, including the Mansion House, as well as much other real estate. The various land holdings of the early members of the Rotch family always were large.

Eliza Rotch, a granddaughter of William Rotch, also assisted in the care of the nonagenarian, and a few months after his death married Professor John Farrar, a noted member of the Harvard faculty, and went to Cambridge to live. She became an author of some note. Left alone in the big house, Mary Rotch, a spinster of fifty-one, took as a companion Miss Mary Gifford, daughter of

Warren Gifford of Dartmouth, who lived with her until Miss Rotch's death, a period of nearly twenty years. Finding the Mansion House too large for their needs Miss Rotch decided to lease it for a boarding house or hotel, and sought a home elsewhere.

In 1832 the hotel keeper desired to install a bar-room in the old homestead, a project which caused a commotion in certain quarters. Mary Rotch's nephew, Samuel Rodman, was a strong teetotaller, who frowned upon the custom of wine-drinking, then widely prevalent among the elite. In his diary, published some years ago, he made the following entry on Oct. 4:

"Called to see Aunt Mary relative to a conversation on the subject of the proposed establishment of a bar-room at the Mansion House. I hope that the indecent project may yet be frustrated."

Mr. Rodman did not refer to the matter further in his diary, which may furnish ground for the supposition that the bar was not permitted. Two or three years later the building was occupied as a high class boarding house with Mrs. Lydia Doubleday as landlady, and no liquor was sold on the premises. Subsequently, long after Miss Rotch's death, Louis Boutell conducted a hostelry there, advertising a strictly temperance hotel. After his day the Mansion House continued for years as a hotel, down to the time of its destruction by fire in 1928.

The Rotches originally were Quakers, various members of the family occupying high places in the councils of the Society of Friends. Mary Rotch was one of the elders of the New Bedford meeting. She and her sister, Mrs. Elizabeth Rodman, became involved in 1823 and 1824 in the schism which developed among the Friends because of the attitude of the "New Lights" in disregarding some of the stricter practices of the society. In consequence the sisters, as well as their niece, Eliza Rotch, and others, were disciplined by the Meeting. The discontented members finally withdrew and allied themselves with the Congregational, afterwards the Unitarian Church, of which the brilliant and magnetic Dr. Orville Dewey was pastor. Among these were not a few of the Rotch and allied families. Subsequently in New York, Dr. Dewey became one of the most celebrated clergymen in his denomination.

Commenting on the experience which Miss Rotch then underwent, her nephew, Samuel Rodman, a life-long Quaker, some fifteen years later wrote as follows:

"My Aunt, barring some of the incongruities of her later years incidental to her change of religious views and the unwise proceedings of the Society from which she was disunited, which mar a little

the beauty of her character, is one of the finest women within my knowledge."

Just where Miss Rotch and her companion, Miss Gifford, resided for ten years after the death of William Rotch, Sr., is not certain, although they had a Summer home in the outskirts of Newport. On the division among the heirs of Mr. Rotch's property in Rhode Island Mary Rotch chose a farm at Seaconet Point as her share, but there is no record that she ever occupied it. The Rodman diary contains references to visits made in June, 1834, and June, 1836, to the Rotch Summer place, "The Glen," at Newport, "a singularly interesting and secluded spot," where the Rodmans were hospitably entertained by Aunt Mary.

In 1838 Miss Rotch built the house on South Sixth Street now the parsonage of the Unitarian Society, where she resided until her death ten years later. Mr. Rodman recorded her removal to this home as follows:

"Dec. 22, 1838. Called in the evening to see my Aunt Mary in her new habitation, into which she moved on the sixth inst. She and her friend and protege, Mary Gifford, seem now snugly and permanently fixed under their own roof, which I doubt not will be more comfortable and agreeable than their hitherto migratory state and habits. The scale of their house and its finish is unostentatious and unpretending, in unison with the modest merit and unambitious character of my Aunt."

Miss Rotch was of a most kindly and helpful disposition. She often watched all night by the bedside of some sick person. Years afterward her pastor, Dr. Dewey, wrote that her name was precious to him. He said she was "called by everybody 'Aunt Mary,' from mingled veneration and affection. . . . She had so much dignity and strength and character in her bearing that it was impossible for any one to speak of her lightly. . . . When speaking of the Supreme Being she would never say 'God,' but 'that Influence.' That Influence was constantly with her, and she carried the idea so far as to believe that it prompted her daily action, and decided for her every question of duty."

In the Winter of 1833-34 Dr. Dewey was abroad for the benefit of his health, and the Unitarian pulpit was filled during his absence by a cousin of Mrs. Dewey, Ralph Waldo Emerson, then a clergyman. Mr. Emerson became acquainted with Aunt Mary, and a warm friendship grew up between them, which brought to her a fame in subsequent years far wider than the confines of New Bedford. Any thought of a romance may be speedily dismissed, as not only

was Miss Rotch old enough to be his mother, but that very Winter he first met at Plymouth and fell in love with Miss Lydia Jackson, who became his wife.

It has long been a tradition that Emerson lodged in the home of Aunt Mary on South Sixth Street, but it will be noted this residence was not built until several years after his stay in this city. Emerson's lodgings in a fashionable boarding house have been made known through one of his published letters.

Aunt Mary's conversations with Emerson dealt largely with religion. She always clung to the Friends' idea of the "inner light," which she impressed upon him as a ready listener. The young clergyman, then unknown to fame, who had been leaning toward her view for some time, soon became a full convert. In his letters and journals he subsequently paid tribute to the influence of this highly intellectual and spiritual woman in forming his religious beliefs. He referred to her "sublime religion," and termed her one of the "supreme people." There were numerous other allusions. In the last letter Emerson wrote her, in 1847, he said: "I never forget the statements so interesting to me you gave me many years ago of your faith and that of your frinds." She is accorded due praise in all the Emerson biographies.

Another celebrity with whom Aunt Mary formed a friendship was Margaret Fuller Ossoli. They were probably introduced by Mrs. Eliza Rotch Farrar, a good friend of Margaret in Cambridge. Harvard University has a collection of letters of Margaret Fuller to Mary Rotch. The celebrated writer visited Aunt Mary on at least one occasion, and perhaps others.

In a letter to Emerson from New Bedford in June, 1842, Margaret declared Miss Rotch "is a nonpareil of a hostess in her combination of quiet, courteous attention to the comfort of her guest. Aunt Mary finds the guide of her life has been a restraining, not an impelling power. She has known peace and assurance, but not energy, not rapture. She is unacquainted with the passions and with genius. She is strong and simple, a vestal mind, transmitting the oracle with purity, but not the parent of new born angels." In a postscript she added: "I like Aunt Mary's dry humor. Have you ever seen that?"

It is due to the zeal of Prof. Ralph L. Rusk of Columbia, who included the Fuller letter in his six-volume collection of Emerson's correspondence, that this appreciation of Mary Rotch has been given to the world.

In the Unitarian parsonage is a fine full-length mirror, said to have

belonged to Miss Rotch. Perhaps Margaret Fuller surveyed her blonde reflection therein.

Probably there has never been another resident of New Bedford of whose characteristics we have descriptions by so noted a trio as Emerson, Margaret Fuller, and Dr. Dewey.

Miss Rotch died on the evening of Sept. 4, 1848, at the age of nearly seventy-one. She was survived by her brother, William Rotch, Jr., and her sister, Mrs. Elizabeth Rodman, both very wealthy, and by a number of nieces and nephews. The brother's home was the present County Street residence of Mark M. Duff and family, and Mrs. Rodman resided in a stone mansion on North Second Street, east side, just north of William Street, now used as a storage warehouse.

Considerable surprise was created by the provisions of Miss Rotch's will, as it contained no legacies for her wealthy kindred. To her companion, Mary Gifford, she bequeathed \$60,000 outright, and her dwelling on Sixth Street, with all the furniture and personal effects. The residue of the estate, including the Mansion House, was left to her legal adviser, Thomas Dawes Eliot, one of New Bedford's foremost citizens. No inventory of the estate was filed in the Probate Court.

Miss Gifford continued to reside in the Sixth Street home, in her turn having with her a companion, Mrs. Eliza Mitchell, a sister of Mrs. Thomas D. Eliot, who came for a two weeks' visit, and remained for twenty-five years! Miss Gifford bequeathed her \$2,000 and considerable household furniture.

Mary Rotch owned two costly china tea sets, notable for their rich coloring in deep red and gold, purchased for her in Paris. One of these came into possession of Mr. Eliot, and the other was inherited by Miss Gifford, who bequeathed it to Mrs. Samuel Rodman. Eventually it was a legacy for her granddaughter, Miss Julia W. Rodman, who died in 1937. The latter's heirs presented the china to their kinsman, John M. Bullard, a Rotch descendant. It was placed on exhibition by Mr. Bullard at the Old Dartmouth Historical Society last Summer.

A portion of Mr. Eliot's tea set is now in possession of his grandson, Edward M. Stetson of 189 Orchard Street. It boasts the distinction of an assiette monte, that towering centerpiece of a china service.

Miss Gifford died in 1875. Her will restored to one branch of the Rotch family \$20,000, left by her in trust for the two grandchildren of Mrs. Anna Morgan Rotch of Morris, N. Y., widow of Francis

Rotch, a nephew of Mary Rotch. The Sixth Street homestead was a part of the residuary estate, bequeathed to three daughters of Thomas Dawes Eliot. In the 1890's, in the ministry of Dr. Paul Revere Frothingham, it was purchased by the Unitarian Society for a parsonage.

The following letter was not a part of Mr. Emery's story in the *Mercury*:

Havre 5m'' 30, 1843.

To Mary Rotch  
New Bedford.

Ma Chere Amie

The day after the receipt of thy letter I went with Mme Winslow and our children to Paris where we selected a pattern for thy tea-set &c. which I have just received and shipped on board the Iowa for New York consigned to Barrow and Prior for account of Wm. R. Rodman to whom they are requested to forward the case marked W. R. R.

I hope the porcelaine will be to thy taste, it was the richest pattern in the great manufactory of Louis Andre and Co. who furnished John Hare Powell with a similar set.

If thou should at any time wish to procure other articles from France remember that it will always give me great pleasure to serve thee, and I hope thou wilt command me freely.

I enclose the original invoice of the china with the expenses thereon.

Receive from Mme Winslow and myself the expression of our grateful remembrance, and present my civilities to M. Gifford,

Thy affectionate and devoted friend,

Jer. Winslow.

A copy of this letter was furnished in 1938 to John M. Bullard by the late Mrs. Eliot D. Stetson whose husband was a grandson of T. D. Eliot, and who had in her possession supper china which was purchased by Miss Rotch in 1847 to match the tea-set.

In 1847 Louis Andre's address was Rue de Paradis-Poussonniere. Jeremiah Winslow, as a young man, had spent considerable of his time with the Rodmans in New Bedford. Later he made his home in France, where he married a French girl.

JOSEPH ROTCH  
(1790-1839)

JOSEPH ROTCH, the beautiful, one of the handsomest and most devastating men ever born, Joseph Rotch, the bad, or, at least, the weak, if you can judge by the comments of the worthy members of the Rodman family and their descendants, Joseph Rotch, the very loving and human husband and father, if you can judge from his own letters; it is hard to write of Joseph Rotch. The histories of New Bedford and the ordinary family accounts start with his great-grandfather Joseph, the founder of the family or, at least, of its fortune, extol the great William, give much credit to William, Jr., and then just skip to Benjamin and William J., Joseph's sons. There is practically no data on Joseph.

Samuel Rodman, Sr., as strict a Quaker as his father-in-law, wrote from Philadelphia on 11 mo. 22, 1810, to his son Samuel, the diarist: "It would be very agreeable to see thee, since I am within about forty miles, but the advanced step of the season and the deep muddy state of the roads renders it improper to remove further from New Bedford --. Jos. Rotch and Jas. Scott came in company with us to New York, via Newport; we left them at the former 5th day morning. Have not seen them since, they may have gone to Haddonfield direct. I believe theirs is a Latin and Greek pursuit. I should have been as well, better, satisfied if Jos. Rotch had kept at home; he is evidently departing from the principles of his education, in dress and address, and I fear the influence thereof upon Benjamin. To me it will be grief inexpressible to have to see any further departure in my sons from the line of their education, knowing that evil and not good, misery and not happiness, must be the inevitable consequence. Dear Thomas fell a sacrifice to his departure from the way in which he should have walked, tho I humbly hope and trust he found favor and was accepted by the Father of Mercies in his awful close. In the disposition of Wm. and his conduct I derive little if any satisfaction, that my hopes of comfort and enjoyment in my sons if I live, are confined to thee and Benjamin. My prayers are that I may not be disappointed in you; it would bring my gray hairs, with sorrow to the grave."

This is a rather pathetic letter, and I am inclined to think Samuel (then fifty-seven) had a real sense of values. He knew where real happiness lay. But he wrote from a point of view so different from that which we have today that we would almost all find ourselves the subjects of his disapproval. Certainly his son Samuel lived up to

his hopes, and young Samuel's comments in his diary, showing disapproval of Joseph and others, are from much the same point of view. At the date of this letter, Joseph was under twenty, William R. Rodman was twenty-four, Samuel, Jr., seventeen, Benjamin, sixteen and Thomas had died the year before at twenty-four in Havana after sailing from New Bedford on a blockade runner.

Joseph and his equally handsome brother Thomas had evidently been given a good deal of money by their father or grandfather when they were quite young. They built the first big houses, mansions according to contemporary letters, when they were thirty, and I do not think they had made much money themselves, though, like the older Rotches, Joseph was engaged in many lines of business. He had a store and with his brothers a cotton mill. This cotton mill was one of the first, if not the first, in New Bedford, a city which for a time a hundred years later was to be the first in the country in the manufacture of fine cottons.

In 1798 Joseph's father purchased the water privilege near the Head of the River bridge, the land being "known by name of ye mill lot," with a grist mill and saw mill standing thereon. The grist mill eventually was replaced by a new mill built by Samuel Leonard about 1814 for William Rotch, Jr., for the purpose of manufacturing bed ticking, a project which he turned over to his sons. Joseph Rotch had a leading part in this enterprise.

In 1821 William Rotch, Jr., writing to his brother, Thomas Rotch, of Kendal, Ohio, had the following to say about his sons' success:

"I want to hear how thou gets on with thy factory. Our children are doing very well with theirs. They have eight looms making bed tick, and the reputation of them is such that the demand cannot be supplied at 40 cents a yard. Those looms use all the yarn they can make."

Subsequently the number of looms was increased to ten. By 1831 the enterprise was abandoned, and the property was offered for sale. It must have been a failure. It may have been the first cotton mill to fail in New Bedford. Unfortunately, it was by no means the last. The following advertisement was published in the *New Bedford Mercury* during June and July:

"Cotton Factory for Sale. The Subscriber offers for sale the Cotton Factory at the head of Acushnet River. It has in it three Frames containing about *three hundred* Spindles, and one Mule of about *two hundred*; a Dressing Machine, double speeder; *eight* Carding Machines and *ten* Looms. Has been employed in the manufacture of Bed-Tickings. For further particulars enquire of J. ROTCH."

This advertisement was not productive of results. In fact it was a dozen years before the property was disposed of. In October, 1843, William Rotch, Jr., for \$1,000, sold to Charles W. Morgan the water privilege, with land and buildings, "an old factory and saw mill on the east side of the road from Acushnet Village to the north, by the old factory in Fairhaven."

Subsequently Joseph Rotch operated a silk factory in a building on Mechanics Lane, opposite his estate. In an advertisement in the *New Bedford Mercury* he announced he was carrying on the various silk processes "from the cocoon to the loom. . . . The highest price will be paid for silk cocoons." The address was given as the corner of Eighth Street and Mechanics Lane, undoubtedly the northeast corner. Here were produced a fine line of silk fabrics which found a ready market.

The *New Bedford Mercury* in a report of a Fair of the American Institute held in New York in November, 1835, says:

"Specimens of silk, from the manufactory of Joseph Rotch, Esq., of New Bedford, says the N. Y. *Evening Star*, in evenness and strength appeared equal to the imported articles. This establishment is of very recent origin, and we learn that specimens of vestments of much beauty and firmness of fabric have already been manufactured there."

Joseph was part owner of thirteen whaleships, his brothers William R. and Thomas owning with him, and usually others too. Joseph, however, sold out in most cases, leaving his older brother to carry on a much more extended whaling business. One of their ships was the *William Rotch*, built in 1819, one of the ships depicted in the print often erroneously referred to as "The Rotch Fleet." Joseph owned in her at least as late as 1827. She was sold out of the family by 1852 and was with many other whaleships, wrecked in the Arctic in 1871.

Sleighing was a favorite pastime — and indeed a winter necessity of the early days — and New Bedford could boast of some especially fine turnouts on runners. Let us have recourse again to Mr. Ricketson, whose descriptions of sleighs that fascinated his youthful eyes are most entertaining:

"The handsomest 'establishment,' as we used to term it, was that of Joseph and Thomas Rotch," he wrote. "The sleigh was large and of graceful form, with a high rounded back and dasher to correspond. The runners also were high, standing outward more than common, and of a graceful curve. It was painted a soft blue outside, with narrow black stripes, the inside stuffed and lined with bright



Joseph Rotch  
(1790-1839)



Anne Smith  
(1795-1842)

Wife of Joseph Rotch. From a portrait by Thomas Sully.

red flannel; the horses were fine blooded animals, and the bells sonorous and musical. Other handsome family sleighs were owned by William Rotch, Samuel Rodman, Benjamin Rodman, Andrew Robeson, James Arnold and others."

At twenty-three and a half Joseph had married in Philadelphia Anne Smith, a beautiful and wealthy girl. (Perhaps that is where the mansion came from, though it was a Rotch tradition to see the next generation well supplied. No gift taxes then!) In the diary of Thomas Franklin Pleasants, a Philadelphia lawyer, appears under date of June 2, 1814, "About 12 went to pay E. M. a visit. Met Phebe Emlen and Betsey coming out of meeting. . . There had been a wedding, Miss Smith and Joe Roach. . . E. M. got home in a few minutes, had been at wedding."

I know a lot about Anne Smith, first from an excellent portrait of her, a very beautiful young woman, by Sully, which belongs to my mother, and second from her writings. She was a most devout Quaker, a most devoted mother and wife, and her serious writings seem almost incompatible with the almost modern hairdo and dress in which she was painted. She does not appear to be half the Quaker that she sounds, but I know she was. No music was allowed in her house and my mother has told me how her father as a boy, with his brother Ben, let themselves out the upper story window of the stately mansion on William Street so they could go to a dance.

It happens that most of Joseph's letters which I have seen deal largely with the building of this house. It was being built in the summer of 1821 when Anne and all her children except Benjamin were with her family near Philadelphia and Joseph and his eldest son were staying with his father in New Bedford. The children were all sick, Rodman dangerously so, and Joseph's letters deal much with the sickness and much with the house. There is a lot too about the servant problem, which seems to have been acute from their point of view. Joseph said no good cook could be found in New Bedford. He did not want colored help. The house, the first of the large ones in New Bedford, was to stand for only twenty-five years. On Anne Rotch's death, it was sold by the heirs to be torn down. Daniel Ricketson says:

"The house of Joseph Rotch, with the lot of land upon which it stood, was sold soon after his death and taken down to divide the ground into house lots. Thus one of our finest old family residences was lost. It was a large and substantial house fronting the south at some little distance from the street, and originally with a semi-

circular carriage drive, which was afterwards fenced in to make a lawn."

Mr. Ricketson could not refrain from adding a word of criticism:

"The house was much injured in appearance by its heavy Tuscan columns of wood, a fashion improperly adopted from the temple architecture of the ancient Greeks and Romans, but now abandoned in private dwellings."

Ricketson disliked even the beautiful courthouse, which still stands on County Street.

Rev. Alfred Rodman Hussey had in his possession a diary of Joseph Rotch. I learned of this only after much of this book was in print, or I should have attempted to read it. It tells of a trip Joseph made to New York and Washington in the early eighteen hundreds. He saw President Madison and the old Capitol, and is said to have painted an interesting picture of conditions in those days. It includes a valuable description of the interior of the House of Representatives before it was burned by the British in the War of 1812. Perhaps this was the trip he started with his Uncle Samuel in 1810 above referred to.

Samuel Rodman makes countless references in his diary to Joseph and Anne Rotch. The two men cannot have been very compatible, but they were first cousins and their wives were the closest of friends. Both Samuel and his wife, Hannah Prior (always "Ma chere H." in the diary) admired Anne tremendously and were extremely fond of her. Towards the end of his life Joseph was constantly laid up with rheumatism. This was a family disease, both his grandfather and his Uncle Ben Rotch having suffered terribly from it.

Joseph died at forty-nine in 1839, Anne at forty-seven just three years later. Perhaps that is one reason we hear no more of Joseph. His father outlived him by eleven years, dying at the age of more than ninety, and his grandfather had died at the age of ninety-three, while Joseph the first was over eighty. William J. died at seventy-four, so our Joseph had much less time for real accomplishment than had any of the others.

Samuel writes on 11th mo. 8, 1839:

"Joseph Rotch had an apoplectic fit about 12½ o'clock today, since which time he has been in a quite unconscious state and no hopes are entertained of his recovery."

And the next day:

"I go to sit up with my cousin Jos. tonight. He still remains unconscious, and may expire before morning."

He died about 12 o'clock on the 10th. And on the 13th:

"Attended the funeral of my cousin Joseph Rotch which was con-

ducted in a very satisfactory manner. A prayer by Mr. Morison was the only vocal service. Mr. Angier called before the funeral to leave his little son and afterward to take him back." (Joseph Angier was the husband of Joseph's daughter Elizabeth.)

"Thus has the earth been closed over the mortal remains of my cousin Joseph, endowed by nature with a sound understanding, amical disposition and handsome person, he was fitted so far to contribute his full share to the welfare and ornament of the community and society."

Samuel then laments that he never lived up to his possibilities, but adds that he had "within the last year awakened to an acute sense of former delinquency, which now affords much consolation in the true & sincere penitence which he manifested to his sorrowing friends, particularly to his pious & very exemplary wife, whose kind deportment and christian spirit had unquestionably been chiefly instrumental in promoting the change which is now her only consolation."

Only three years later almost to the day, death came again to this house; 11 mo. 6, 1842:

"As we were going to the Friends' Meeting this morning we were astonished to learn from Cousin Anna Arnold, whom we met on the way, that our dear Anne Rotch died last night at 1½ o'clock. We immediately retraced our steps. The intelligence was almost overwhelming to ma chere H. who has always been attached to her with more than sisterly affection." Hannah Rodman was particularly upset because though she had called twice "since the last attack" . . . she had not seen Anne. . . "so fearful were the children of her being injured by company, even of one she so much loved." They went over "to the house of mourning and saw all the children, Rodman having returned with Elizabeth Angier in the steamboat train at 7 o'clock this morning. We were with them without other company about an hour, when my dear H. fainted, overcome by the effects of sorrow, but she was revived, and was able to get home without a carriage, she preferring to walk, though she was scarcely equal to the effort." (She had to come up William two-thirds of a block to County, and then two blocks south to the Rodman house, the recent U.S.O. building and now the home of the New Bedford Community Chest and other charitable agencies.)

11 mo. 7. . . "My wife and her sister best knew and most adequately appreciated her modest worth and conscientious and affectionate nature. Under great and peculiar trials in her married life she has sustained herself with the meekness and constancy of a

Christian heroine. 11 mo. 8 Dr. Read. . . gave us his opinion that Cousin Anne's sudden death was owing to an injudicious application, made at her own suggestion, as I understood without the knowledge or advice of Dr. Bartlett, her attending physician, to which she was probably led by the practice of a homeopathic physician whom she saw on her recent visit to her daughter at Milton."

On November 10 the funeral service was held:

"After a long and solemn pause the Rev. Mr. Peabody offered what struck me as a beautiful and appropriate prayer. The place of burial was the family burial ground which is now a very unsatisfactory spot from the increased population in that part of town. The houses and some workshops having encroached on the Square which was allotted for a cemetery, and so appropriated by my grandfather after the decease of my grandmother Rotch. And I shall not be at all surprised if at no remote period the coffins there deposited should be disinterred and removed to a more fitting depository where the surrounding scene will harmonize better with the memory of the dead."

I do not know where the family graveyard was. I do not know when the coffins were moved, but they are all now in Oak Grove Cemetery in the west part of New Bedford, and have been for a great many years.

On the fifteenth of the month Samuel "went to the late residence of our cousin Anne Rotch, to attend my wife and Mary home, where I saw and took leave of Charles Smith and Eliz. Angier, who set off tomorrow for their respective homes. Benj'n goes also to Phila. to see after Rodman's interests, who has bot a farm in or near the State of Delaware. Thus excepting Joanna, the Mansion will be deserted of its recent inmates."

He doesn't mention William J., who had married his cousin Emily Morgan less than six months before, but on 3 mo. 25, 1845 he writes:

"Joanna Rotch will spend some days with us. The homestead has just been sold, and William's family have yielded possession."

Joanna was only sixteen at the time of her mother's death, pretty young to be left alone in the Mansion, so probably William J. had moved back to be with her. I believe when the house was sold she went to live with her sister Elizabeth Angier in Milton, the town where she made her home the rest of her long life. The New Bedford Directory for 1845 shows William J. at 109 Elm Street. Benjamin must have returned to New Bedford, as he is shown in the 1845 directory to be living with his grandfather Rotch for a time, before moving permanently to Boston.

### WILLIAM J. ROTCH (1819-1893)

WILLIAM J. ROTCH was my grandfather. He and I were, for a very short time, contemporaries. He died when I was just over three years old. I can remember sitting in his buggy with him, but it is at best a very hazy memory of one I considered a very old man. My impressions therefore, are second hand, but they are strong impressions. I knew his widow very well and called her "Grandma," though she was in reality my great aunt. I spent many week ends when in college and law school with her and her daughter, my Aunt May, in my grandfather's last house, the present Wamsutta Club. I knew, very well, all his children except Charles who had died in infancy. One of those children is, of course, my mother.

William J. Rotch was a tall, handsome gentleman, who, as was the fashion of his time, took himself very seriously. He was dignified and stern, but kindly. Most of his life he was a very rich man. He was associated with his brother Benjamin in many successful ventures, but after the death of the latter his speculations in mining stocks and western land were far from successful. A crash in textiles during the last years of his life, or shortly after his death, brought on in part by the suicide of a trusted friend and employee, cost his estate a great portion of its assets. Though a sizable fortune still remained, it was divided into nine parts, and, even in the days of no inheritance taxes, this left comparatively little for each. He was the last of the wealthy Rotches in New Bedford.

The impression I have formed of William J. Rotch does not tally very well with the house he built on Orchard Street in New Bedford, the house in which I now live. It is said to be a fine example of American Gothic; its plans and description are, from what I hear, in the Metropolitan Museum in New York. A young man came from New York especially to take pictures of it recently. "The Architecture of Country Houses" by A. J. Downing, New York, 1850, tells of "Design XXIII A Cottage Villa in the Rural Gothic style, the residence of Wm. J. Rotch, Esq., of New Bedford, Mass. from the plans of Mr. Davis." The house, almost exactly as it exists today, a hundred years later, is then described. The windows, particularly in the second and third floors, are few and rather small. Downing's account says: "The ceilings of the bedrooms may run partly into the roof, and are well ventilated by registers or valves, near the highest part of the ceiling, opening into a space in the garret above, the garret itself being provided with openings or ventilators, to permit

the escape of warm air." I find only one of these valves, and I do not live in the house in summer.

To this house, said to be patterned after houses William J. Rotch saw near the Hudson on his honeymoon, he took his bride of a few years and here he raised his family, much too large a family for the house. An addition was soon built on lines somewhat less extreme than those of the original house, and with more normal windows. In this house, built on land stretching from Orchard to Cottage Street given William J. by his grandfather William Rotch, Jr., all of the children, with the probable exception of the first two or three, of William J. Rotch and Emily Morgan were born. And here Emily died after the birth of her eighth child, Anna Smith Rotch. All but Charles, who died as an infant, lived here in very crowded conditions. The widower moved to the cold front room over the vestibule, with its oriel window. The oldest daughter, Helen, and little Emily, fourteen years younger, shared a bed in the southwest chamber. The second daughter, Isabel, shared a bed in the southeast chamber which then had no east windows, with baby Anna; Zaidee had the northwest room which was also a passage to the addition; Willy and Morg had the third floor rooms, with no heat, and the northeast chamber was a guest room. The only bath was behind the third story stairs, and the only toilet was off the landing. The original and present kitchen was then the dining room and the kitchen was in the annex.

"The cost of this residence in New Bedford, where building is dearer than here," says Downing, "was \$6,000."

To this house William took Clara Morgan, the younger sister of his first wife, as a bride, in 1866.

James Arnold died in 1868, leaving his mansion, on County Street at the head of Spring, to his nephew William, who promptly made extensive changes in the lovely old Colonial house, putting on a Mansard roof to be sure to have room for his large family. Into this house the Rotch family moved in 1872 and there Mary, usually known as May, the only child of William and Clara, was born.

The Orchard Street house was rented to William W. Crapo, who brought his sons Henry and Stanford up there. Interesting paintings by Henry H. Crapo show the house as it was then. The Rotches would not sell, and when Morgan married in 1879 the Crapos had to move out. Morgan brought up his family in the Orchard Street house, and later extended what was then Irving Court, and Maple Street through his grounds, moved the main house to the southwest corner of Irving and Maple and set the annex up as a separate house

on Cottage Street, selling the rest of his property for house lots. Mrs. Morgan Rotch sold the house in 1928 to Henry H. Crapo, and into this house in 1945 moved Catherine and John Bullard, the house where Catherine's father had lived as a boy and where John's mother had been born.

The big house on County Street was comfortably filled for a very short time, as William Rotch was married in 1873 and the last child, except May, had left by 1889. There, with many rooms upstairs shut off, lived Clara and Mary Rotch, with frequent visits from Isabel, long a widow, until their deaths about 1919, when the property was taken over by the Wamsutta Club. Much was added by the Club, but the little room to the north of the door and the second and third floors of the main building are just the same. The front parlor has become a bar-room. Clara Rotch would not like it.

William J. Rotch had died in 1893 and the obituary published by the New Bedford *Evening Standard* the day of his death tells the story of his life so completely that I am printing it in full. It also attempts to tell the story of the Rotch family, but makes the mistake of confusing the first William, of Salem, with his son William, of Provincetown, and says he was born in Salisbury, England, for which tradition there seems to be no basis of fact. It also misrepresents Joseph as being older than Benjamin.

(From *The Evening Standard*, Thursday, August 17, 1893.)

#### OBITUARY

\* \* \*

Sudden Death of Hon. William J. Rotch This Morning

\* \* \*

Expired at His Son-in-Law's Residence at Beverly Farms

\* \* \*

Public Career of One of New Bedford's Distinguished Citizens

\* \* \*

This forenoon the telegraph sent the sad news to this city that Hon. William J. Rotch died at an early hour this morning at the residence of his son-in-law, Dr. Thomas M. Rotch of Boston, at Beverly Farms. Mr. Rotch was in this city yesterday in apparently his usual health, and left in the afternoon to go to visit Dr. and Mrs. Rotch. He was born in 1819 and was therefore 74 years of age.

Mr. Rotch comes from an ancestry to which this section of the state and New Bedford in particular owes much of its material prosperity. The first of the family to settle in America was William

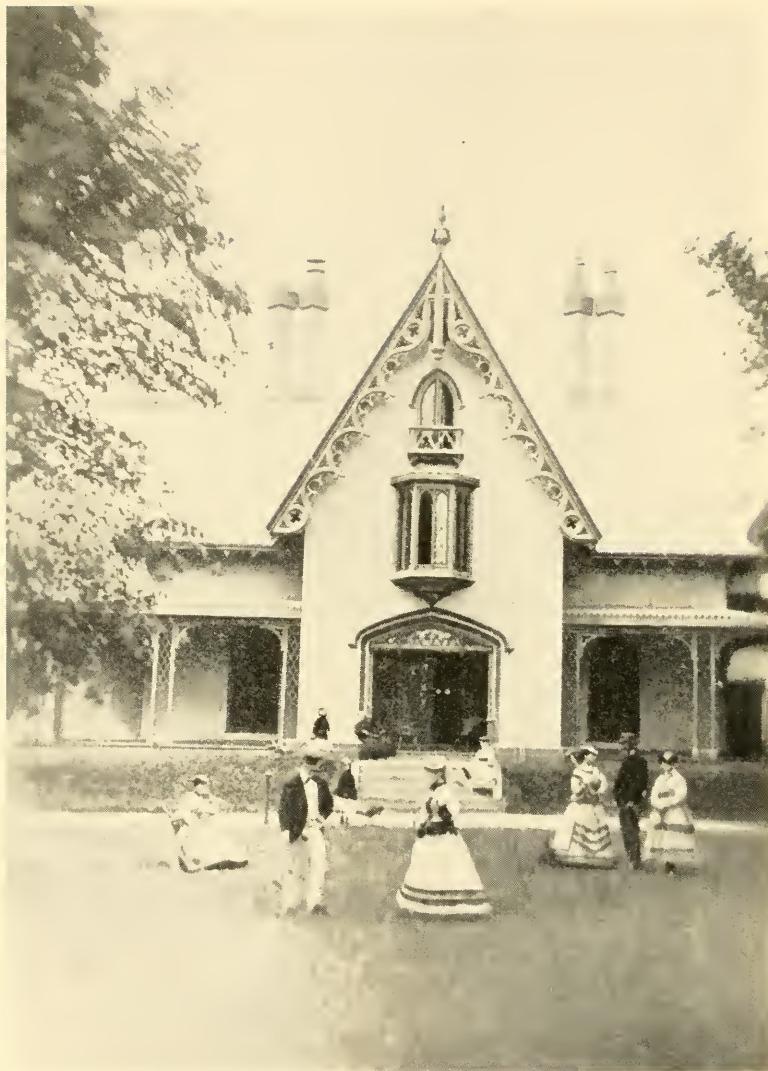
Rotch, who was born in Salisbury, Eng., and came to this country in 1700 or soon after, settling in Provincetown where he became a prominent citizen. He had two sons, Joseph and Benjamin. The eldest lived for a time in Braintree and Falmouth, and subsequently removed to Nantucket where he married Love Macy, a descendant of Thomas Macy, who was the first immigrant to the island in 1659. From Joseph are descended the Rotch families resident in New Bedford and Nantucket.

Joseph Rotch, who was an enterprising merchant, removed from Nantucket in 1765 to this place, which was at that time an insignificant hamlet in the town of Dartmouth. At the suggestion of Joseph Rotch, the village took the name of "Bedford," in honor of Joseph Russell, who bore the family name of the Duke of Bedford. Joseph Rotch was prominently identified with the interests of his adopted place and under his fostering care the whaling fishery grew and flourished. His home, on what was known as "Rotch's hill," — Water street — was burned by the British troops in General Grey's raid in 1778. Joseph Rotch's family consisted of three sons, William, Joseph and Francis.

William was born in Nantucket in 1734 and lived there till the close of the Revolutionary war. During the conflict the islanders suffered heavily, ships being captured by the enemy and communication being cut off from the main land, starvation at times was imminent. At the close of the war the whale fishery at the island was ruined, William Rotch's losses in captures of ships being estimated at \$60,000. In this state of things he saw no other alternative for the prosecution of business but to remove to England, and endeavor to re-establish himself. Crown officials would not consent to the introduction of American-built ships to England and so Mr. Rotch went to France. Here he was cordially received and established himself at Dunkirk. The French Revolution brought peril to himself and family, but through it all he remained steadfastly true to the doctrine of the Society of Friends. War becoming imminent between France and England, in order to save his ships from capture, Mr. Rotch found it necessary to remove from Dunkirk, and he returned to America in 1794 and after a year's residence at Nantucket, he settled in New Bedford in 1795, where he remained till his death in his 95th year in 1828. His residence was the historical "Mansion House," at the northeast corner of Union and Second streets.

William Rotch, Jr., one of the sons of William, was born at Nantucket in 1759 and removed to New Bedford soon after the Revolutionary war, spending the remainder of his life here. His residence





The House at 7 Orchard Street, New Bedford.

Built by William J. Rotch about 1845, and now numbered 19 Irving Street.

Picture taken about 1867.

*Left to right:* Clara Morgan Rotch, wife of William J. Rotch; Morgan Rotch, his son; Nannie Rotch, his niece; Helen Rotch, his daughter; William J. Rotch; and Sarah Rotch, his daughter. In the drive stands Emily M. Rotch, William J. Rotch's daughter; and above her is another daughter, Anna S. Rotch; Helen Morgan Rotch, widow of William J. Rotch's brother Rodman and Susan Rodman, first cousin of William J. Rotch.

for many years was in what is now the Mariners' Home, which then stood at the southwest corner of William and Water streets, and subsequently he lived at the house on County street, which was, after his death in 1850, purchased by the late Edward C. Jones. William Rotch, Jr., married Elizabeth Rodman of Newport, R. I., who bore him five children, one of whom — Sarah — married the late James Arnold, (from whom William J. Rotch, the subject of this sketch, inherited his County street residence). Another of the children was Joseph Rotch, who married Anne Smith of Philadelphia, and they had five children — Elizabeth, (who married Joseph Angier,) Benjamin S., William J., Rodman and Joanna. Joseph Rotch, who was born in 1790, died in 1839.

William J. Rotch was born in this city in 1819 and was graduated at Harvard college, with his brother Benjamin, in 1838, with the honors of his class, and was chosen a member of Phi Beta Kappa. He was associated with his brother in many business enterprises. In company with L. A. Plummer, they founded the New Bedford Cordage Company, which developed into one of the most successful manufacturing industries in the city. In later years the two brothers were among the first to recognize the value and aid in the development of the McKay sewing machine, which, under the able management of Gordon McKay has won a world-wide reputation. Mr. Rotch has been prominently connected with most of the important business enterprises of New Bedford, and has held many offices of public and private honor and trust. Among other offices he held was that of president and director of the Howland Mills Corporation and of the Rotch Spinning Company, president and member of the executive committee of the Rotch Wharf Company, a vice president and director of the National Bank of Commerce, a vice president of the New Bedford Institution for Savings, and of the Board of Trade, and a director in the New Bedford Copper Company, New Bedford Gas and Edison Light Company, Pairpoint Manufacturing Company, Wamsutta Mills Corporation, Potomska Mills Company, New Bedford Steam Coasting Company, Mt. Washington Glass Company, and Clark's Cove Guano Company, and was also a director and large stockholder of the Old Colony Railroad Company.

In 1852, at the early age of 33 years, he was elected Mayor of New Bedford, being the second person to hold that office after the incorporation of the city, and was also of the military staff of Governor Clifford. He had previously served two terms as Representative at the General Court — 1847-8 and 1849-50. But the allurements of public life had no charms for him, and he turned a deaf ear to all

propositions for public preferment. For thirty-four years he was president of the New Bedford Cordage Company and for forty-two years president and treasurer of the Friends' Academy, which latter offices were held by his grandfather, William Rotch, Jr., for thirty-nine years. In his long life in New Bedford Mr. Rotch established and maintained a character exemplifying all the best phases of manhood, and few men in their mature years were so fully vouchsafed the respect and esteem of their fellow citizens.

In 1842 Mr. Rotch married Emily Morgan, daughter of Charles W. Morgan, of this city; she died in 1861, leaving seven children. These are Charles M., (the eldest son, having died in infancy,) William, Helen, (who married Dr. T. M. Rotch,) Morgan, Isabel M., (who married Pierre Severance,) Sarah R, (who married Frederick Swift,) Emily M., (who married Dr. John T. Bullard,) and Anna S., (who married Francis H. Stone.) In 1866 Mr. Rotch married Clara Morgan, and by her had one daughter, Mary R.

From 1876 to 1881 Mr. Rotch lived in Boston during the winter, and in 1881 he went abroad with his wife and four daughters, returning in the fall of 1882. After that he resided in his capacious mansion on County Street, formerly the home of his uncle, James Arnold, surrounded by extensive and beautiful grounds, and filled with all the home treasures that wealth can procure. He abated none of the interest in the city of his ancestors, but was ever ready to assist in the development of new industries, and his heart and his purse were ever open to aid in the work of deserving charities.

Like his ancestors, Mr. Rotch was a warm and earnest friend of the oppressed, and in the days of slavery he was a sincere advocate of emancipation of the downtrodden race, and was one of the pioneers of the Republican party. He was a ready and eloquent speaker, and his services were eagerly sought on many public occasions. He was of graceful and courtly presence, and his upright carriage made him a conspicuous figure as he passed through our streets from day to day. He had a kindly word for all, and although the wealthiest man in the city there was nothing of arrogance or ostentation about him, and his ready smile was as freely bestowed on those of lowly condition as upon those more favored by fortune. He was a member of the Unitarian Church, and was identified with numerous charitable and benevolent institutions.

## The English Rotches

THOSE who know little of the history of the family may expect to read in this chapter about the ancestors of the first William. I wish that they could, although, had I been able to write of those old people in Salisbury, or wherever they may have lived, I should have placed the chapter at the beginning of the book instead of here. It is of a member of the fourth American generation, Benjamin Rotch and of his English descendants that I now write.

It so happens that writing of these cousins, no one of whom I have ever seen, has been made comparatively easy for me. I have been furnished with a picture of the ancestors of the branch, and of their children, more clear-cut, more intimate, and more interesting, though painted in France, England and Wales, than any picture I have of my own ancestors of the same two generations though the latter lived and died in houses situated in New Bedford within three short blocks of where I myself grew up.

This strange circumstance was brought about by the fact that two women belonging to this branch set down their thoughts in books, and that these books, describing life in England, having found their way to the Pacific coast of the United States, were graciously sent back to me by Francis Rotch, V. One of the authors was Eliza Farrar, daughter of Benjamin and Elizabeth, who wrote of the family in her "My Life's Romance, or Recollections of Seventy Years," published in 1865, and in a more intimate manuscript, "Memoirs of the Life of Elizabeth Rotch," written four years earlier. The other was Anne Waln Morgan Rotch, sister-in-law of Eliza, who wrote a contemporaneous "Journal" of her European trip, which lasted from 1842 to 1845, in the form of letters to her sisters which have been preserved in three manuscript volumes. Extracts from all of these sources are contained elsewhere in this volume and will prove of interest not only to those who are interested in the Rotch family, but to those who may wish first hand information of the French Revolution, of Greville, Nelson and Lady Hamilton, of life on one of the first Cunarders to be propelled by steam, or of the hunting of the carted stag more than a century ago.

BENJAMIN ROTCH  
(1764-1839)

and

ELIZABETH BARKER ROTCH  
(1764-1857)

BENJAMIN ROTCH, second son of William Rotch and Elizabeth Barney, was born on the island of Nantucket 9th month 12th, 1764. Unlike his older brother and sister, each of whom had gone to the "continent," as it was called, for a mate, Benjamin married on 3rd month 29th, 1787, a Nantucket girl, Elizabeth Barker, daughter of Josiah and Elizabeth (Hussey) Barker.

They had gone to school together on the island from their earliest years. She had then been broadened by a year or two at school in Newport, at the time the Rhode Island town was occupied by the English army. He, at the age of nineteen, had sailed with his father on that first memorable trip to England and France on the *Maria*.

On his return, they were married, although her family were reluctant to give their consent because of rumors of further European business, fears laughed off by the groom. A son, Francis, named for Benjamin's uncle, was born to them in a little less than a year. Soon thereafter it became evident that Benjamin would have to go to France again after all. He sailed with his wife when the child was a year old, but Elizabeth was so seasick that after two weeks he landed her again at Nantucket and went on alone, though at that time he had no intention of making Europe his permanent home. His young wife, however, could not bear to be separated from him and sailed in the summer of 1790 to join him, accompanied by her father-in-law, William Rotch, Sr., her mother-in-law, Elizabeth (Barney) Rotch, whose name was so like her own, her son, and her two young sisters-in-law, Lydia and Mary.

The ocean was so broad in those days, when only sailing ships plied from shore to shore, threatened always by storm, and often by Barbary pirates, and when no news of a safe voyage could be received until the time of two voyages had elapsed, that we can well imagine the feeling of Josiah Barker and his wife engendered by their daughter's removal from Nantucket to that other world. No wonder they felt bitter towards the Rotches, who they believed had misrepresented the situation in obtaining their consent to the marriage. Their bitterness seems well justified, for their lovely devoted young daughter sailed away from Nantucket at the age of twenty-

five, destined never to return to America during the sixty-seven long years which were left to her.

The picture we are given of Benjamin Rotch, his lovely wife, and their many interesting children, is charming. We follow them through many vicissitudes and see the changes in them that environment and the shifting of the wordly fortunes make. Benjamin is obviously a delightful man, though perhaps equipped with few of those stern characteristics which constantly got his father into trouble, and perhaps made him great. His daughter thus describes him: "His various information and ready flow of conversation, his cordial manner and generous heart, won him many friends, whilst he was always seeking fresh acquisitions of useful knowledge." He and all of his sons, like most of the Rotches of his time, were physically very big, with large frames and a tendency in later years to put on much weight. Most of them were very handsome, at least in their youth.

Benjamin had great courage, and never feared to speak his mind in the face of danger, but we can see his rigid puritanical Quakerism soften after the influence of his father disappears. His jovial association with his aristocratic Welsh friends had its effect. A piano appears in Castle Hall a full generation earlier than such an instrument was tolerated among the Rotches of New Bedford, and Castle Hall itself was a far cry from Quaker simplicity.

But I am getting ahead of my story. In Dunkirk Elizabeth, the family historian, was born in 1791. She, like all the other Elizabeths with whom the family abounds, was always familiarly known as Eliza. The life seems at first to have been a pleasant one, though the island Quakers and the French ladies made a violent and often amusing contrast. But the pleasant days were soon to end.

Let us pause a moment to look at the France of that time. Louis XVI was on the throne, and soon after her arrival, Elizabeth Rotch accompanied her husband on one of his frequent business trips to Paris, and there saw not only the King but her first polished hard-wood floors. In fact, while dressing before a long French mirror, Elizabeth saw, in the mirror, a man enter her bedroom. She was so confused, though nearly dressed, that she slipped on the polished floor and fell! Our historian tells us that a man in her bedroom was much too French for the young Quakeress.

The Bastile had fallen in 1789, almost at the time Benjamin, without his wife, had landed for the second time in France. It was in June, 1791, just twenty-three days before the birth of Benjamin's first daughter, that Louis had fled from Versailles, had been captured at

Varennes, and soon thereafter had granted the constitution of 1791. The National Assembly met under this constitution; the Girondists became stronger, trouble with Austria and Prussia threatened, and the Sans Culottes invaded Louis' apartments on June 20, 1792. As the armies allied against France became active, things went from bad to worse in Paris, and in August the Commune was in power, and Robespierre. On January 21, 1793, Louis was guillotined. The English joined the allies, and war knocked at the Rotches' door. In 1794 Robespierre, too, was killed. The Rotches again were safe and were at last able to leave the country. Their stay in France could not have been in more hectic times.

During the siege of Dunkirk by the Duke of York all of the women went to Calais for safety. Elizabeth Rotch stayed in Dunkirk longer than most, but her husband, who had volunteered to act as chief of the fire department, finally took her to Calais, making arrangements there himself for additional protection in case of fire. Benjamin returned at once to the besieged city to put out the frequent fires which were caused by the hot shot fired by the troops of the Duke of York. Benjamin had, of course, refused to take up arms, but this fire department job gave evidence of his personal courage, for the scene of the conflagration was always the target of a bombardment. During the siege the French ladies in Calais came to depend more and more on the letters from Friend Rotch to his wife, for their own husbands never bothered to tell the truth.

Finally the siege was abandoned and Elizabeth Rotch returned to Dunkirk in time for her next child, Benjamin, to be born there, toward the end of 1793. At this period the Reign of Terror did not spare Dunkirk, and the dread guillotine was set up in the square. The English residents were in constant trouble and even the Americans were always in fear. An account of Benjamin Rotch's very unpleasant personal interview with Robespierre will be found elsewhere in this volume. The French wished at one time after the fall of the Monarchy to send Benjamin to America on a special mission, but he would not go, as his family were not to be permitted to accompany him.

Benjamin ordered all his boats to return to New Bedford at the end of their voyages, and kept only one at Dunkirk. Finally he was allowed to clear her for America. I do not know the exact date, but it must have been in 1795 or 1796. With him went some English, who had succeeded in concealing themselves on the boat. As Benjamin suspected their presence, he plied the French customs officers

with wine, and was mightily relieved when the latter left without making any discoveries.

William Rotch had left Dunkirk two or three years earlier and had spent a year or so in England, on his way to America, to oversee a certain suit in chancery growing out of an insurance claim. Benjamin really intended to go to America, but put in to England temporarily to look after this same suit. The suit, however, dragged on for so many years that Benjamin never left England. What finally happened to it does not seem to be recorded. It would be interesting to know. Without that suit there would have been no English Rotches to serve their King and sacrifice their lives in the World War more than a century later.

After a short time in London, where Elizabeth was very happy among her English Quaker friends, Benjamin was induced by Sir Charles Greville to go to Wales and look over the harbor at Milford Haven with a view to using it as a whaling base, providing terms could be obtained from the English government identical with those given the Rotches by the late Royal government of France.

Benjamin was further induced to make the trip, as many of his Nantucket relatives were already living there. Unlike these cousins, whose name was Starbuck, and who had fled from Nantucket to Nova Scotia, and later to England, he was not a Tory. The Rotches were often accused in early days of being disloyal Americans. That they were pacifists by religious conviction, there is no question. That they were conservative and distrusted some of the policies of the new Massachusetts government is also certain; but they favored the royal prerogatives and excesses of the then English King no more than they did the violence of the French Commune. The personal letters of every one of them show a desire to get back as soon as possible to their loved Nantucket or its neighborhood and to be able to live peacefully and simply again among their family and friends. Of William Rotch, Senior, and Elizabeth Barker Rotch was this particularly true, although many years of pleasant life in England undoubtedly dulled the latter's desire to return.

During the War of 1812 the position of these loyal Quakers became difficult. Milford was a naval base, and the English officers were their personal friends and dined frequently with them at Castle Hall. Eliza Farrar writes: "It was difficult for my parents to conceal the joy they felt over the wonderful news of the success of the Americans in their naval combats with the English, and yet it was mixed with much feeling for the defeated parties, some of whom were personally known to them." An amusing yet rather embarrass-

ing situation arose when one of Benjamin's naval guests remarked that a portrait on the wall resembled a man in Nantucket whose warehouses the guest had burned during the American Revolution. The unfortunate incendiary was horrified to learn that it was his host's father's property he had destroyed, though he tried to excuse himself by saying he was only carrying out orders. But I digress too much.

In a humble cottage in Milford Haven, where there were no better ones, Maria Rotch was born in May 1797. It was at this time that Benjamin went to Ireland and was sorely distressed to see the persecution of the people. The Royal Governor asked him for his opinion and the Quaker replied that such treatment was sure to bring on a revolt. The Governor said this was the very purpose of it, for unrest could best be cured by the quelling of an insurrection. In a very few months the Irish Rebellion of 1797 occurred.

From Milford the Rotches went to Haverfordwest, where better quarters could be obtained, and here Benjamin, often talking French to his family, and writing many French letters in an endeavor to settle up his Dunkirk business, was mistaken for one of Napoleon's spies. Luckily he was recognized by one of the Englishmen who had stolen passage out of France on the Rotch ship, so all was well.

For the next two years the family lived at Islington, near London, and for the first time the four children were together with their parents. At this time a young cousin came over from Bedford to attend a Quaker school with Francis Rotch. He was William Rotch Rodman, who then was described as a shy boy in light Quaker gray, a conspicuous costume in London, which embarrassed the wearer much until a darker suit was provided for him.

Finally the government granted the Rotches the terms they wished, and the members of the family in America and Benjamin decided that he should stay permanently in Wales. This was a great blow to Elizabeth, who had looked forward to having one last ocean voyage which was to bring her to her loved ones. She realized now that she would never see them again, but bravely followed her husband's lead. Her son William Barker Rotch was born in Milford Haven in August 1802, at which time Benjamin was building a large stone house in that town. This he was destined never to use, for Castle Hall came on the market and was purchased cheap, at first as a temporary abode. The new house burned soon thereafter, much to the delight of the family, who had become attached to their country place on the Haven.

Here, with business flourishing, Benjamin forgot his Quaker



Benjamin Rotch  
(1764-1839)



Elizabeth Barker  
(1764-1857)  
Wife of Benjamin Rotch

bringing up. Let us listen to Eliza Farrar: "Castle Hall, with its eight acres of land, was a piece cut out of the estate of Sir William Hamilton and sold to Governor Holwell on his return from India. He built a house with four towers to it, and somewhat in the eastern style, and gave it the name of Castle Hall; but subsequent proprietors had pulled down the towers, and the castellated parapet, and deprived it of every claim to be so called. It was a plain and very ugly house when my father bought it, and the pleasure grounds and gardens were in a wild neglected state, though capable of great improvement. As soon as the house was repaired, painted and papered, we all moved into it, and then my parents furnished it at their leisure, as what we took with us from Milford Haven supplied our first necessities. They both had excellent taste, and without any very expensive furniture they made the house look very well indeed. Great improvements were made, both outside and in. A great deal of ground was made in front of the house, terraces were formed and made into hanging gardens, and a small pond became an ornamental sheet of water. My father loved to realize his plans without delay, so to all the laborers he could hire, he added a file of soldiers from the militia regiment stationed at Milford. This led to an acquaintance with the officers and he used to give them very handsome dinners whilst we rejoiced in the military band that accompanied them.

"My father now received larger vessels loaded with sperm oil from his father and brothers settled lately at New Bedford, and these he refitted at Milford, and dispatched to the South Seas, officered and manned by Americans, but with six apprentices to each ship who were Welshmen. His vessels were far more successful than those employed in the same fishery from London, and the merchants there were very jealous of him and his privileges, and did all in their power to deprive him of them, but his interest with the government proved greater than theirs, and his business continued to prosper for many years.

"The extreme cheapness of fuel, in Wales, made it usual for persons of moderate means to indulge in the luxury of hot-houses and conservatories, and a clever Scotch gardener, named Prenderghast, led my father into great expense, in building those luxurios appendages. Those pineries used to ripen from 250 to 300 pineapples a year, and a Conservatory, eighty feet long and twenty feet high, built entirely of iron and glass, became the wonder of all the country round, and when filled with orange, lemon and citron trees, made Castle Hall quite a show place. The appearance of the house

was entirely changed too, by the addition of a parapet and two wings with swelled fronts.

"My father was much complimented on his improvements, and took great pleasure in them, but not so my mother; she thought it so much money thrown away, and she always remonstrated, and discouraged them. She always wished and urged her husband to make a safe investment of some of his gains, instead of spending them so lavishly or extending his business. But, as is too generally the case, the wise counsel of the wife was disregarded, and she must have had great self-command, if, when reverses came and her husband was a bankrupt, she did not say *'I told you so.'*

"When the wings were to be added to the house, Lady Cawdor was asked by my father to lay the cornerstone, and a great deal of company was invited to see it done, and to partake of a cold collation after it. All this seemed very absurd to my wise mother, and when she was expected to be dressed and ready to receive her company, she was found weeping in her own room. I well recall how this circumstance took from me all the pleasure of the day, though my mother soon appeared, as cheerful as usual, and the whole affair went off extremely well. A silver fish-knife served for a trowel, and Lady Cawdor spread the mortar with it, amid the jokes of her husband and the direction of her host."

In the "Castle" Benjamin Rotch entertained all sorts and classes of people, English, Welsh, Irish and American, Quakers, nobility, gentry, military, tourists, and poor relations. Elizabeth was worn out, though her radiantly happy husband tried to help her out by hiring housekeepers, with little avail, as she was too conscientious a housekeeper to be able to delegate her household duties. Amidst all this confusion her last two children were born, Caroline Rotch, early in 1804, destined to die the next year, and Thomas Dickason Rotch, named for the family's London agent, in June, 1807.

To Benjamin Rotch belonged a singular honor. He was the first to win an international yacht race. Half a century before the *America* crossed the ocean and brought back her famous cup, Benjamin's Rotch's yachts were consistently showing other contenders their rudders. It was on one of Lord Nelson's visits to Milford Haven that Lord Cawdor offered a cup to be raced for each year on August 1, the anniversary of the Battle of the Nile.

Evidently there was a cup for each year and the Rotch yachts won the races in 1803, 1804 and 1805. The race is still sailed each year on August 1. One of the cups is now in the possession of Sydney Rotch, in Teddington, Middlesex, England. This cup is made of

silver, with handles, and is engraved "Given by Lord Cawdor, Governor of Milford Haven, Won by the *Atalanta*, 1804, Property of Benjamin Rotch, Esq." \*

Sydney Rotch, a retired officer in the English Navy, was a great grandson of Benjamin, Sr. This cup was given him by Isabel, the wife of Benjamin Rotch, Jr., who lived to be over one hundred.

Another cup is in San Francisco, in the possession of a great-great-grandson, Garland Rotch,\* a retired Captain in the American Merchant Marine, and himself a participant in a very interesting and terrible modern sea adventure. His letter to his mother describing this adventure was published in the *Atlantic Monthly* under the title "Wreck and Rescue." This cup is inscribed, "Given to be sailed for by Lord Cawdor, Governor of Milford Haven, and won by B. Rotch, Esq. August 1, 1805." It was once in the possession of Eliza Rotch Farrar.

In a motor magazine published in California in 1929, I came across a very interesting story of this cup, which, unfortunately, appears to be somewhat fictitious. The winning boat was supposed to have been built in New Bedford especially for the race, and carried to England on the *Maria*, with W. Moores in command. "Benjamin's brother Joseph" is said to have sailed it. Francis Rotch told me, however, that the Rotch contender was built in England, being a revenue cutter that had been refused by the government. Surely there were few if any yachts in the United States in 1805, whatever may have been the case in England. Benjamin Rotch purchased this one to use as a tender to his many whale ships. He had no "brother Joseph", and the only Joseph who could possibly have sailed the *Governor* was Nancy Rotch's next younger brother, born probably about 1775, who is said to have been lost at sea. His father, an old man in 1805, was Captain Joseph Rotch, who was always employed by the New Bedford Rotches, and he himself may well have been in the employ of Benjamin, his second cousin.

Whatever doubt there may be as to where the boats were built and who sailed them, there is none that the cups were won and that they are still in the family. Francis Rotch thought the *Governor* won the California cup, and he also thought she was the original boat to race. However, the *Atalanta* evidently won the second cup. It may well be that the first boat to win was the English

\* Since this account was written many years ago Sydney and Garland Rotch have both died. The first cup is now in the possession of Mrs. Sydney Rotch in Alfold, Sussex, England, the second in the possession of Mrs. J. M. Rolls of San Francisco, a half sister of Garland's deceased widow.

revenue cutter, and that thereafter Benjamin Rotch had a boat built in America for the express purpose of winning the cup again. I believe that Benjamin's son Francis sailed at least one of the winners.

The Rotches' connection with Sir Edward Greville was close, and through it they were thrown often with the Hamiltons and Lord Nelson. Elizabeth Rotch, however, saw in the Divine Lady only a gross, immoral woman. That she had charm, had helped England immensely by her close association with the Queen of Naples, and was the lawful wife of the noble statesman who owned all Milford, helped not at all. And Emma's connection with Lord Nelson, though it brought that interesting hero into the life of the Rotches, made matters only worse. Elizabeth did her best to avoid Lady Hamilton, and if her behavior seems rude to my readers they must remember that she was only being true to the strict Quaker precepts which had moulded her life, and which had taught her to scorn this world and all that was of it.

The delightful life in Wales was unfortunately due to have a sudden end. Benjamin's whale ships had done well; three cargoes of oil were stored in London in 1814, and there was very little oil on the market. Benjamin proved himself a man of big ideas. What oil he did not already own, he bought. He had cornered the market and oil rose to £120. He advised his agent, Thomas Dickason, to sell. Dickason did not. Napoleon fell; so did oil — to £60. Benjamin was ruined.

The family was stunned. Horses and carriages, governesses and tutors all vanished. Most of the servants also departed, though a few faithful ones stayed on, despite greatly reduced wages. Elizabeth Rotch could now gather her flowers and arrange them with her own hands. No visitors or formal dinners troubled her more, and she was happier than she had ever been.

Benjamin, wracked by arthritis, a common Rotch malady, as well as by financial troubles, went to London to meet his creditors. His daughter Eliza was with him, and Benjamin, Jr., was studying law. Elizabeth Rotch and some of her children stayed on at Castle Hall for five years, with a bailiff running the farm end. I have seen the circular by which the place was offered for sale. "Particulars of a delightful Marine Residence and Estate, at Milford Haven, South Wales, For Sale," it reads, "By Mr. Scott" — "Castle Hall Freehold Estate in a beautiful elevated healthful situation. On the Banks of Milford Haven, One mile from the market town of Milford, Five from Pembroke, and Seven from Haverfordwest. The Residence of Benjamin Rotch Esquire, comprising an excellent Modern Family

House, Stone built uniform and very neat, with complete External and Internal Domestic Offices, elegant Pleasure Grounds, Lawn, Shrubbery, very productive Gardens with lofty Walls, capital Conservatory, Pineries, Peachery, Green-House, Fish Pond, and above 109 A. 3 R. 32 P. of very superior Meadow and Arable Land, of known Fertility, in the highest state of Cultivation. (Part Leasehold for Three good Lives) Convenient Farming Buildings" — "a Leasehold neat Marine Cottage Residence" — and "Two Thirds Part of an Improvable Freehold Estate in a Romantick Situation, contiguous to the Residence, comprising 28 acres of rich meadow Land, with Stone built Houses and Cottages." Such was Castle Hall at the end of the Rotch regime. The sale was to be at auction on April 3, 1818, at 12 o'clock. Evidently, despite the fact that the "lives" were described as "three good lives, of 24, 27 and 29 years, at a moderate rent of £168 per Annum" — strange sounds to American ears, there were no bidders, or insufficient, and the auction sale, which had already been postponed from November 28, did not go through. The place finally was sold at private sale and the family left it in August, 1819. I should like to know what it brought, but do not have the figure.

Two years or so earlier Francis Rotch, the eldest son, then twenty-nine or thirty years old, and William B. Rotch, fifteen, had gone to America. The mother and younger children settled in Bath, where Elizabeth was never happy. Benjamin, accompanied by his eldest daughter Eliza, sailed in September, 1820, for a visit with his father and mother and sister Mary at the Mansion House in New Bedford. They had a hard voyage of forty-seven days. Benjamin had one ship whaling again by this time, and as it was to be away three years, he planned to spend a year with his aged parents. He was gone two, but his daughter stayed on with her grandparents until they died, marrying John Farrar in New Bedford October 10, 1828, and not visiting England again until 1831.

From Bath the family moved to Bristol and then Clifton. By 1825 Benjamin, Jr., had made some money. He had always been of an inventive turn of mind, like his great-uncle Francis, and finally secured a patent. He was now able to purchase "Lowlands," a name that takes the place of "Castle Hall." It was situated near Harrow, on the hill, as I understand it, though the name would seem to belie the location.

Ben took his parents and sisters to live with him, and here they led a happy life until 1831 when, Ben being now married to Isabelle Judd, they moved to London where they were destined to spend

the rest of their lives. In that year the Farrars made their first visit, Eliza having been away eleven years. Three years earlier Francis and his wife, Anna, and their five-year old son, Frank, had visited their parents, he also having been away eleven years. William had come back in 1825, had taken a trip on the continent with his parents, and had left again for New Bedford, whence he was going to Fall River to be agent of the Annawan Mill. He had hardly entered on his new duties, however, when he became ill, dying in New Bedford after a very few days. This sad event made future partings from her American children even more tragic for the devoted mother.

Benjamin's business was prospering again, and his father's death in 1828 made it possible to pay in full the old debts he owed his captains, not only for their services, but for moneys they had deposited with him in his days of prosperity. In 1832 the family moved to 8 Sidmouth Street, London, where Benjamin spent the rest of his days and his wife twenty-two peaceful years. At this time Dickason Rotch, the youngest son, was married to Catherine Wason, and in 1836 Maria, the last daughter, married Rev. Stephen Langston, a widower.

I find no evidence that she, Benjamin, Jr., or Dickason ever came to America, but her daughter Gertrude Maynard was in Boston in 1903 and Dickason's daughter Maria was in New Bedford in 1856.

On March 30, 1839, Benjamin died at the age of seventy-five. He had lived in three nations, had seen the American Revolution and the vastly different French Revolution, both at first hand; had led the life of a simple Quaker, and of a Welsh country squire; had tasted success and failure. His early boyhood was among the peaceful scenes of a lonely island off the Massachusetts coast, his old age, equally peaceful, in the world's largest city. His was a life of contrast, but always he was blessed with an exceptional wife and a devoted family. He lies buried in Kendall Green Cemetery.

Elizabeth Rotch, who has been described as being old at fifty-four but young at ninety-three, lived on at 8 Sidmouth Street for many years. As her family one by one became separated from her, some in far-off America, and the others in other parts of England, Scotland and France, she felt the need of a constant companion, and secured Ann Dumaine, the daughter of one of the neighbors at Castle Hall, who lived with her for many years as one of the family. Her granddaughter, Maria Langston, a particularly sweet girl, also spent much time with her, while her children all visited her from time to time. The Francis Rotch family made a long visit from 1843

till 1845, and Eliza Farrar made three or four, some very short. Finally, after the death of Professor Farrar in 1853, Eliza went to England to relieve Ann Dumaine and spend the rest of her mother's life with her, as she had stayed with her grandfather William to the end in New Bedford thirty years earlier. Eliza was far from well herself, and agreed to come to London only if her mother would move out to the west end where the air was clearer. So at the age of ninety Elizabeth Rotch reluctantly left the home which had been hers for twenty-two years and took up a new abode at 17 Pembridge Place, there to die very quietly and peacefully, as she had lived, on December 4, 1857.

Her life seems a strange blend of sadness and happiness. She missed terribly those from whom she was separated by a sea that was for her impassable, her parents, her relations and early friends, and three of her children. But she was fortunate in those who were left near her, two sons and a daughter who never left England for long and who were devoted to her. Ben, who must have been a most interesting son, was always near by at Lowlands, and Dickason, who lived sometimes in Scotland and sometimes on the Continent, seems usually to have kept a horse and carriage in London which was always at his mother's service. She was loved by all and her descendants are fortunate that her devoted daughter has left such a vivid picture of their charming ancestress.

So ends my story of Benjamin and Elizabeth Rotch. We should remember as we leave this chapter that they and all their descendants, whether in the old world or the new, have used a distinctive pronunciation of the name. There is no question that the original pronunciation was Roach or Roche, or perhaps more nearly Roatch. But when Benjamin's grandfather and his two great-uncles, determined to spell it R-o-t-c-h, they gave good opportunity for their younger kinsman, in a strange land, to use a more pleasant sound. Whether it was in France or England that it was first rhymed with Scotch, I do not know, but the change seems sensible, and has continued until this day among the members of this branch, though, as far as I can find, among no others.

### FRANCIS ROTCH (1788-1874)

FRANCIS ROTCH, eldest son of Benjamin and Elizabeth (Barker) Rotch, was born on Nantucket 1st month 16th, 1788. He sailed when only two years or so old with his mother and his grand-parents to join his father in Dunkirk, where he spent his early childhood. His youth was passed in England, where he attended a Quaker school when not living with his parents in London or Wales. He was about twenty-five or six when his father lost his money, and three years or so later he left England and took his young brother, William, to America to seek his fortune. Undoubtedly he landed at New Bedford or immediately went there, but I first find him at English Prairie in Illinois, whence on the 18th of 2nd month, 1819, he wrote a letter to Charles W. Morgan.

It appears from this letter that he was already engaged to Charles' sister, Ann Waln Morgan, whom he had known for only two weeks. Benjamin Rotch, Sr., writes his father that two weeks is too short a time for his son to have known Ann, and indeed, even today, when things move so much more quickly, it does seem that the love affair of the young man from England and maid from Philadelphia had progressed with very great speed. Charles Morgan was evidently troubled too. English Prairie was not only in the wilds of the frontier, but seems to have been a colony of liberal thinkers. It was evidently much disapproved of by the elder members of the Rotch family. Francis did not wish to settle in New Bedford, but promised Charles he would do so, as he, too, considered Illinois no place for Ann.

At the time of the above letter, Charles at twenty-three was the head of a family of four orphans whose mother had recently died. He was engaged to Francis' first cousin, Sarah Rodman, and was planning to settle in New Bedford after his marriage. Charles and Sarah were married on June 3, 1819, and Francis and Ann on December 1. The next April Susan Waln Morgan, sister of Charles and Ann, was to marry Sarah's younger brother, Benjamin Rodman, and was also to move to New Bedford, so that the young Philadelphia orphans must have been far from lonesome in their new abode. The other brother, Thomas W. Morgan who also came to New Bedford, did not himself marry into the family which in the previous generation had seen three Rotches marry three Rodmans, but his daughter, Helen Morgan, in 1843 married Rodman Rotch, thus binding the three families closer together. And the unions did not stop

even here, for Thomas Morgan Rotch, son of this last marriage, married his double cousin Helen Rotch, and Charles W. Morgan, II, youngest son of Thomas, married Anne Rotch Hudson, granddaughter of Francis and Ann Morgan Rotch.

Francis took a prominent place in the rapidly growing village on Buzzards Bay. He served as an executor with his cousin Samuel Rodman of the will of his great-uncle Francis Rotch who died in 1822. He was early appointed a trustee of Friends Academy. It was during his New Bedford residence that his three children, Francis Morgan Rotch, Charles Morgan Rotch, and Maria Rotch were born. He was interested, I believe, in shipping, but like all of the other Rotches of his time, his business interests were limited to no one undertaking. It is probable that as he had come to New Bedford, he had also accepted his Grandfather Rotch's offer of help, and very likely busied himself to some extent with the affairs of that grand old man.

But after a busy eleven years Francis left New Bedford for Butter-nuts, in Morris, New York, which was destined to be his home for the rest of his long life. Here he cultivated a large stock farm. He was most successful. I have a cup won by him for best cow, best heifer and best bull in a show in 1841. He stood high in agricultural circles and was most respected in his community. His connection always remained very close with his brother-in-law, Charles W. Morgan, who settled his New Bedford affairs for him, and continued to be his close friend and adviser until his death. A delightful picture of Francis and his family is drawn in the writings of Ann Morgan Rotch, copies of some of which are included in this book, the originals being in the Old Dartmouth Historical Society.

Francis Rotch died January 19, 1874, having outlived his last surviving child by about ten years. His wife, however, did not die until 1884.

**ELIZA ROTCH FARRAR**  
**(1791-1870)**

ELIZA ROTCH, second child of Benjamin and Elizabeth (Barker) Rotch, was born in Dunkirk during the French Revolution, spent much of her girlhood and her young womanhood in England and Wales, and came to New Bedford to make her home with her grandfather Rotch about 1819, after her father had lost his money and had had to sell Castle Hall.

While in New Bedford she became very active in Friends Meeting, often taking the high seat. Samuel Rodman says on 23rd of 10th month 1823:

"The women took some measures respecting Eliza Rotch who has lately occupied a seat in the gallery of the ministers and elders of a pretty decisive character."

The measure taken was to appoint a committee to draw up a complaint to send to England against Eliza. She was a New Light and championed the more liberal point of view. Many of the other members of the Rotch family were also New Lights, and this finally caused some of them to be disowned by the Meeting and most of the others to leave it voluntarily for Orville Dewey's Unitarian Church.

Eliza's Grandmother Rotch died in 1824 and her Grandfather Rotch in May, 1828. Eliza and her Aunt Mary were left alone in the Mansion House, but not for long as Eliza very shortly became engaged to Professor John Farrar of Harvard, a widower twelve years older than she.

Samuel Rodman wrote on June 1, 1828, just two weeks after the death of William Rotch, Sr.:

"Dined at father's with a small family party to meet Professor Farrar of Cambridge. He is the favored admirer of my cousin Eliza Rotch, who, with Aunt Mary, were of the company. He appears to be an affable unaffected man, his scientific reputation well established from his long connection as professor of mathematics at that celebrated institution. He leaves town tomorrow and probably before many months will lead my cousin to the hymenal altar."

Eliza's letter to Mrs. George Bond at Winthrop Place, Boston, about her approaching wedding, is a gem. She asks to have its contents kept quiet, but it has survived for well over a hundred years and is so interesting that I can see no harm in including it here. She wrote:

"New Bedford Sept. 2d, 1828

"My dear Cousin,

"I was truly sorry to make you pay postage for such a poor scrap of a letter all about my own concerns, but I was so called off from my writing that I could add no more. I recd. the corsets very safely by Mr. Davis & am much obliged to you for them & your accompanying note — I have since received Geo. Wms' letter & return him many thanks for his prompt execution of my commission. I have often thought of you during the oppressively hot weather we have had & of Mr. Bond in particular. The great annual sales must fatigue him extremely but as his health is so much improved I hope he will not seriously suffer. As I am for the first time in my life occupied with housekeeping affairs you must not wonder if they show their common place heads in every few lines of my letter. If I were writing of the war with the Turks I should be sure to think the next minute of *Russian Towelling*. If I heard any one talking of the Lord Chancellor of England on his wool sack my thoughts would run off to a *wool mattress* — just so I cannot write of the Annual Sales without wishing to know whether there was any fine cotton sheeting sold at them. All I saw from Dover was too coarse; all from Providence too narrow. Will you ask Mr. Bond if he knows of any in these sales that is very good and very wide.

"As I am here quite out of the world & surrounded by those who were educated Quakers I want to consult you about many things, but then my dear cousin you must keep this part of my letter to yourself for I do not like to have my arrangements talked of, even by the young people in your family. As Mr. F. cannot leave his college duties for more than three days, he will come one day be married the next evening & return with me the day after — going to a house where there has been no lady to arrange anything, I cannot possibly be ready to see company directly. I should therefore be very glad to have a week there to myself before I see company & I want your advice as to how to obtain it. E. Cabot says I can give out that I am going to Cambridge at such a time & name a week later than that on which I really go there, but that is a prevarication that I cannot adopt. Would it not do to get Mr. Farrar's friends to tell the truth that I wish to be a week incog & that after that I shall see company for a week? I suppose I may be wholly excused from appointing an evening for seeing company as I shall be in the country morning visits are better, are they not? I wish to know whether it is the fashion now to give any wedding cake to morning visitors & whether any cake & wine will be expected during the week that I see com-

pany. As E. Cabot is to be married on the 15 see company on the 16 & set off on a journey on the 17 & be gone two weeks she is no guide to me or I could follow her lead. When she comes back she means to be ready for company for a week that the Cambridge folks may have an opportunity of calling. I wish you could find from her if she means to give them cake & wine & if it is to be wedding cake. I could ask her myself but she is so very busy it is cruel to take up her time in writing about such things, but you could in half an hour's talk find out all particulars & write them to me. I should like to know what her wedding dress is to be & what she will wear on her head. I have a hurried scrawl from her tonight in answer to a letter I sent her by Dr. Follen, but she does not tell me half I wish to know. I suppose they have engaged a house or the wedding day would not be fixed. Miss Sedgewick is to be one of her bride-maids — will she have more than two? Must people have bride-maids & groom's-men, whether they want them or not? Do tell me that. Neither my aunt or I thought of saying anything to Mr. F about bringing any friends to the wedding till since he left us & now I only said we should be happy to see any gentlemen friends of his whom he might wish to bring. Is that sufficient? As we do not know any of his relations we cannot well invite any & I am sure I do not want any strangers present. If he likes to bring some grooms-men it is all well, but I should be glad if that could be avoided. Do write me your opinion fully on all these things. And pray tell me dear cousin if I may wear a colored silk dress to receive my morning visitors, the week that I see company, or whether it is thought necessary for a bride to be in white. I hope it is not. I should greatly prefer a *cold.* silk unless it *wd* be too remarkable. And now I hope you will in your kindness of heart excuse my troubling you with all these questions, and in consideration of the real service you are rendering me by acting this sisterly part your benevolence will lend you patience.

"I am writing this after all the family are in bed or I should have a message of love from my aunt. I am so busy all day I have no time for writing except the night. From five this morning till after tea I had no respite from attending to work women & cabinet makers & trying on dresses (having a dress maker in the house now) & receiving visitors & packing up huge boxes of things that my Aunt gives one out of this house & that she wants removed out of her way. Five packing cases go by a packet to Boston tomorrow. So you see I am really very busy. Besides all this active employment I have marked with the needle 40 letters today.

"I had a very pleasant visit from Ellen Sturgis a few days ago — she is an uncommon girl so sensible & original! Today Mr. Sturgis came with his pleasant face & cheerful chat. I was very glad to see him but could not detain him half as long as I wished.

"I have at last had long letters from my Mother saying all I could wish about my destination with kind messages to Mr. F. & an invitation to him to write to her. I hear too that F & A continued firm in the determination of embarking on the 24th so they are now at sea & have been 10 days out.

"Geo. W. Coffin called here a few evenings since but I was out & did not see him. He told Susan Wood that only a few days before he left home his mother had not heard of my engagement. He was the first to tell her of it. Poor Aunt Coffin! I hope her feelings were not hurt.

"We have a fine shower tonight. I hope the blessing reaches you. Good night my dear Cousin in hopes of having a long answer to my long letter very soon I am yours affec'lly

"E. Rotch, Jr."

I had hoped to find in "A Young Lady's Friend, by a Lady," which Eliza published in 1837, her own answers to the questions she asked in the letter, but unfortunately the answers are not there, though this very early book on etiquette is well worth reading and shows its author to be a woman of great common sense.

On October 10 Samuel writes again:

"Evening at Aunt Mary's, where with a collection of our family circle and some of Prof. Farrar's friends from Boston to witness the ceremony which united the destinies of my cousin Eliza Rotch and the Professor. The Rev. Mr. Dewey officiated in an appropriate manner, and the occasion and circumstances attending were altogether of an interesting and agreeable character. My cousin has for a husband a man of deep science and great moral worth."

Mrs. Nathaniel Hathaway wrote in a letter started on October 9, 1828, but finished later:

"Eliza Rotch is to be married tomorrow night. I saw her and her intended drive by here this evening."

Later:

"I was seated upstairs yesterday, sewing, and received a large piece of delicious wedding cake with Mrs. Farrar's compliments and saw her husband and self pass in a carriage for her new home in Boston. Her Aunt Mary will be left exceedingly lonely. There was all the cousins invited. Miss Arnold stood up with a Mr. Goldfinch

from Boston, as bridesmaid and groomsman. She, Eliza — was dressed in an elegant white satin with a deep crepe silk flounce with satin rolls, top and bottom, full short sleeves with a deep lace border round the neck and a lace scarf. No Handkerchief. I like the open, respectable way in which she married, much and the manner in which she spoke of it. Neally — Grinnell — said she talked and made enough for the whole town — but I *Like* it It show'd nothing hidden or that they were ashamed of. I see not why, as it was a pleasant thing all round should not speak of it."

Eliza and her husband lived in Cambridge. William J. Rotch, who entered Harvard in 1834, called on them frequently, always referring to Eliza as "Mrs. Farrar." This is somewhat surprising to me as she was his father's first cousin and had made her home near him with his great-grandfather when he was a boy. The Professor's health was not good, but the Farrars made several trips to England and the Continent. They were in France in 1839 when Eliza's father died, but Eliza could not get to England for some time as her husband was not well enough to travel.

In her "Recollections of Seventy Years" the author says:

"I dedicate to the Memory of My Husband these Recollections which were often repeated in his sick room to soothe his hours of anguish." John Farrar died in 1853, and Eliza went back to London to be with her mother until the latter's death three years later. Her own health was not good, so she induced her mother to move to what she considered a more healthy part of London. I know nothing further of her life during the next sixteen years. She died in Springfield, Massachusetts, in 1870, where I have heard that she went seeking health.

Colonel Thomas Wentworth Higginson in a tribute to Mrs. Farrar spoke of "her strong and well-balanced nature. Her resolute zeal in moulding the manners as well as the morals of the young. She was one of our first and best writers for children. Her 'Young Lady's Friend' was almost the pioneer manual of its kind.

"She readily saw the remarkable intellect of Margaret Fuller, and also perceived the defects of her training. She undertook to mould her externally, to make her less abrupt, less self asserting, more comme il faut in ideas, manners and even costume. She had her constantly at her own house, reformed her hairdresser, and instructed her dressmaker; took her to make calls; took her on journeys."

BENJAMIN ROTCH, JUNIOR  
(1793-1854)

BENJAMIN ROTCH, third child of Benjamin and Elizabeth (Barker) Rotch, was born at Dunkirk in France, November 29, 1793, at the height of the French Revolution. He grew up at Milford Haven in Wales and at Castle Hall nearby. He must have been a very interesting and charming young man.

His sister, Eliza Farrar, gives us a vivid description in her "Memorials." After telling that the education of the four older children had been completed and that their tutor, the Rev. Richard Roe (who I had always supposed lived only in legal textbooks as a foil for Joe Doe!) had returned to Ireland, she writes:

"Francis entered his father's counting house and assisted him in the whaling business; Ben wished to go to college and study law, but my father's Quaker prejudices were opposed to this, and for some time he was allowed to amuse himself with writing verses, endangering his life by hoisting a sail on an Indian birch canoe, and skimming over the haven to the astonishment of every one who saw his small, frail bark; practicing the flute, riding, yachting and making experiments in natural philosophy, for which he had a great deal of apparatus given him in exchange for a mathematical instrument, which he invented to enable us to make the parallel of latitude on our school maps, (called a cyclograph) by which a portion of the largest circle may be drawn, without having its radius. Our school room in the summer house became the scene of his experiments, and the brass handle of the door was often charged with electricity, to startle some one of the family or alarm a countryman. There he planned and executed his famous flying machine, at which I assisted by making the silken wings."

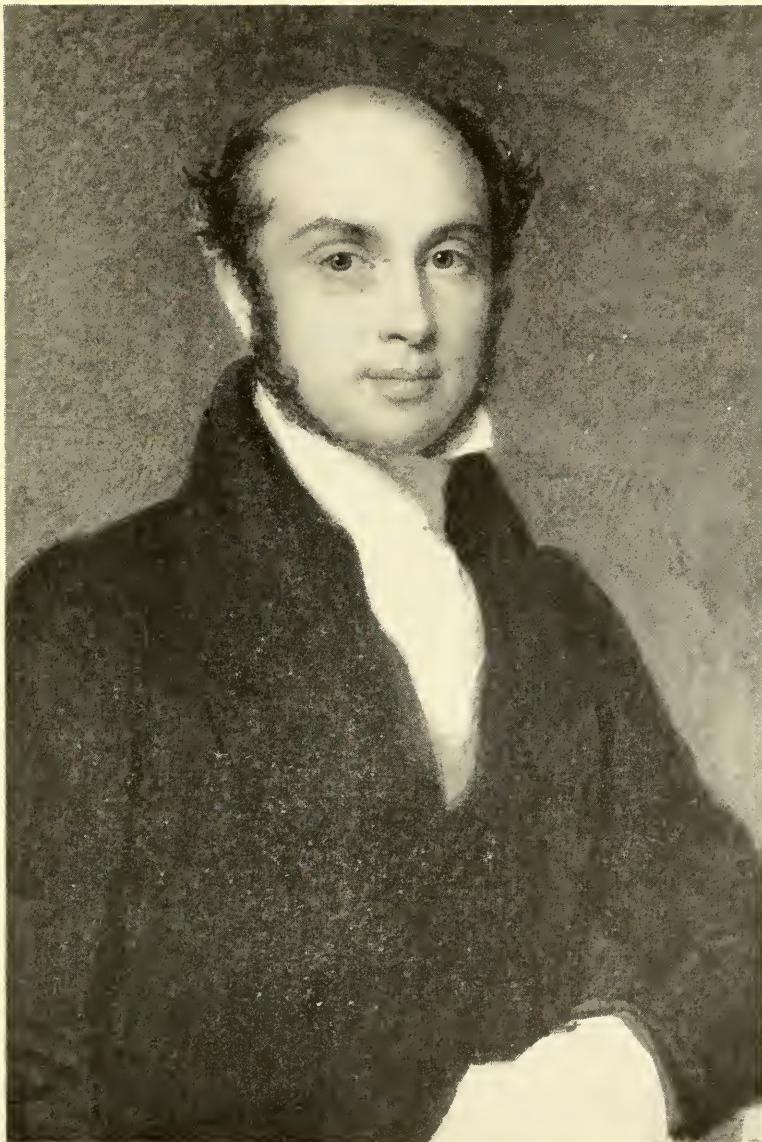
Would that we could know more of that flying machine, the toy of a boy in Wales a hundred and twenty years before boys everywhere, inspired by actual planes swooping over their heads, began to devise toy gliders, often with silken wings, that could be hurled into a breeze, there to dart and swoop much as do their big counterparts above. We hear much of young Ben's inventive genius. I am sorry I do not know more of his actual inventions, one, at least, of which brought him out of near poverty into comparative wealth.

His father's failure gave Ben the opportunity he wished, and he at last was allowed to study law. His father writes to that stern old Quaker, William Rotch in New Bedford, in 1819 when Ben, Jr., was twenty-five: "Dear Ben is pursuing his profession in London,

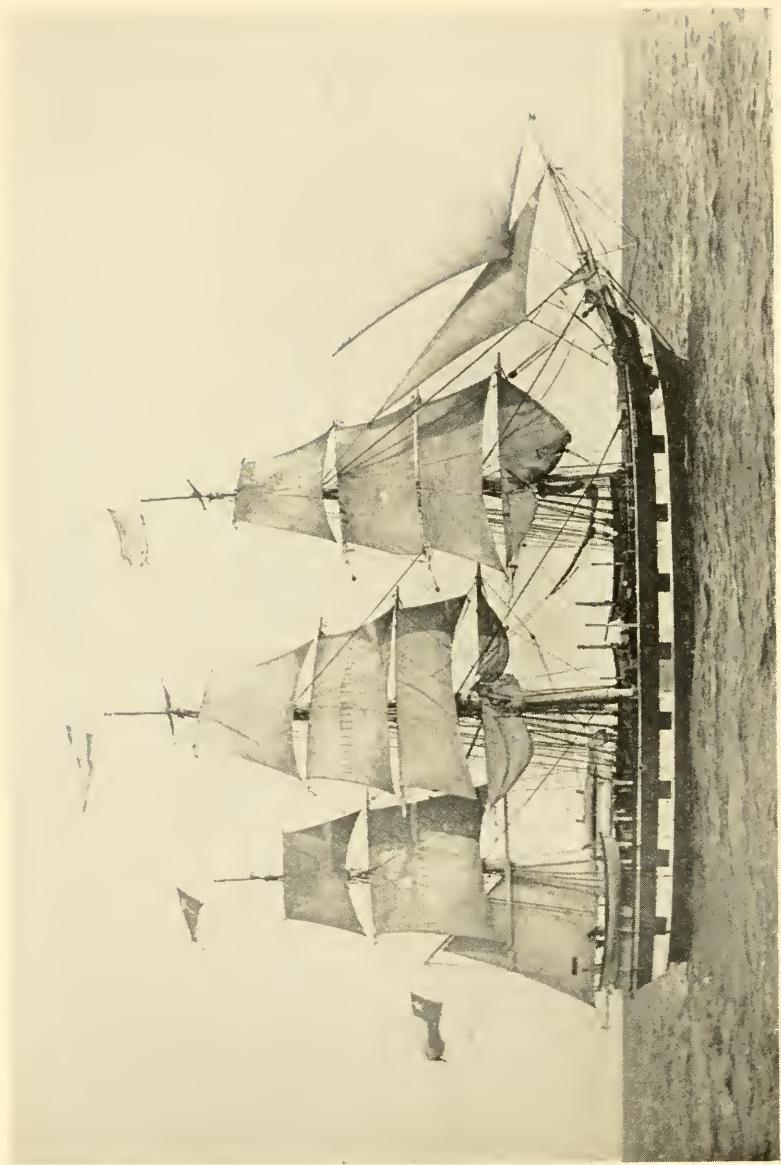
and thou wilt be pleased to hear that Ruth, the American Minister, to whom I introduced him before I left Town has employed him in some law case from America — and paid fifty dollars as the first fee. The dear fellow did the business so much to Ruth's satisfaction, that he wrote Ben a flattering letter, on the manner in which he conducted it — which was more to Ben than his fee — and further Ben was given to understand that the minister had much law business from America, which his business as a minister would not admit of his attending to — and he had determined to put it in Ben's hands as their *Law Agent* — If so it will be a great advantage to Benjamin, as it may throw many Americans in his way who come out for Patents & that of obtaining Patents and drawing specifications of Patents is his particular object while practising under Bar as termed — until he is called to the Bar as a Counsellor for which he has Fees from 5 Guineas to 25 according to the complexity of the machinery he draws. He is not in the way of having much business in that line to do yet — his two severe illnesses having interrupted his pursuits.

"Now my dear Father don't let this dear grandson of thine sink in thy estimation from supposing him a Lawyer or Attorney, who do all the dirty work in the law — No — he possesses an honourable mind, is qualifying himself for the highest and most honourable part of the profession, that of a Counsellor where he can refute all dis-honourable cases — he has been offered very profitable concerns as attorney, but he has refused them all for the dignified part of the profession — my friends in that profession tell me that he is well qualified, in abilities, temper, and *feeling*. That he is almost sure of success if his health will admit of the close application it requires I much fear — He struggles hard to pay his way from one quarter to another, for he will starve rather than run into debt & almost sooner than he would tax me for a pound, that a former friend of his would impose the loan of to him, to pay his Fee of Admission to the Law which he knew I was not able to pay."

Evidently Ben did not devote himself wholly to the law, for by 1825 he had made a large sum of money by what his sister terms "his clever invention of the Patent Lever Fid." He decided to invest a portion of his earnings in real estate and purchased the "pretty villa of Lowlands, near Harrow, on the Hill," for much less than its true value. His parents and sister Maria lived with him here until 1831. In 1827 he had married nineteen-year-old Isabelle Anne Judd in York, and in another three years had prospered so that:



Benjamin Rotch, Junior  
(1793-1854)  
Member of Parliament, Magistrate and Inventor



The ship *James Arnold* on her way to be delivered in Chile.

he no longer needed his family as boarders to help keep up Lowlands.

In March, 1834, Ben's political career was evidently well under way, for his mother writes to Eliza Farrar in America: "Judge Story is quite right, — Ben is a Reformer, not a Radical; he is truly independent and will not truckle to the Ministers and they know it well, and hope to weary him out with opposition. They also know he is a clever man; they have said it where it comes round to us again, and they are the more vexed that they have him not at their beck. All this time there is no salary for the Chairman of the Middlesex Magistrates! The truth is, they want the chair for some one of their own clique, and are in hopes that Ben's patience will not last much longer, and that he will voluntarily resign." Evidently the ministers were in a fair way to succeed, for Elizabeth Rotch writes later, when Benjamin, Jr., was a member of Parliament:

"Sometimes Mr. Dewey [undoubtedly the Reverend Orville Dewey, a Unitarian minister from New Bedford, then visiting in England] would meet Ben, which seemed to give him great pleasure, for he took delight in Ben's company, as dear son Farrar used to do. Ben took him down to Lowlands for a day or two, which Mr. Dewey greatly enjoyed, and they turned boys together, and played cricket, etc.

"As I wish you to share in all the amusing scenes at 'Sidmouth Castle,' I must give you a sketch of one that occurred here, a few evenings since. We were seated around the table, reading and working, and Isabelle one of the party, when Benjamin entered, habited in his full court costume, on his way to the Levee of the Speaker of the House of Commons. His coat with pocket flaps, and buttons on them, and Quaker collar, breeches and silk stockings, highly polished steel shoe-buckles and knee-buckles, shirt-bosom and wrist bands trimmed with wide, rich lace, bag-wig, cocked hat, and sword. We turned the creature round and round, and laughed at him to his, and our content. We sent him off with orders to return, and give us a full account of all that he saw and heard from his brother monkeys at the Levee."

And in April 1834, Ben's devoted mother again writes:

"It is about 12 o'clock in the day, and I am writing by lamp light; how delightful! But the Spring will soon be here, and the winter has been so mild, that we have had frost only one day! Isabelle spent yesterday with us. She is very well, and prettier than ever she was, and generally improved. Ben was sitting as Judge in Clerkenwell Court, from ten in the morning till five, when he dined, as he is

always expected to do, with his brother magistrates, and came to us to tea; after this, he went down to the House of Commons. How late they sat, I do not know, as I have not read the paper. Yesterday there was a disgraceful scene in the House. That clever but hateful Agitator, O'Connell, accused the Irish members of holding very different language in and out of the House. This led to recrimination that finished by an order to the Sergeant at Arms, to take two of the members into custody to prevent a duel. Ben was in his Court at the time, he regretted that he had not been present, to have given O'Connell a good 'set down.' I was glad he was not; for it would only have made the Agitator his enemy, and as O'Connell cares not for truth or justice, he would speak any falsity he chose against Ben, in the face of the whole House. Ben has grown stout on the abuse he has already received from the Irish Barrister, Phillips, and it has improved his looks so much, that his cheerful, happy face looks almost handsome! He has a noble countenance.

"Ben has as yet no salary. Parliament used to choose, and pay, the Chairman of the Middlesex Greater Sessions, but the Middlesex Magistrates are a powerful body, and they chose to be independent of Parliament, and preferred to choose their own President, and that the County should pay him. Now Parliament has met, it is expected to be soon settled, according to their wishes, and if they are not liberal in their pay, Ben will renounce the office, as a handsome remuneration alone could induce him to sit so many hours and days of his life, in that Court. It is very fatiguing and wearing to body and mind, and only such spirits as his could endure it as he does, and grow fat upon it. Dear fellow! he fags hard, and deserves good pay, for only think of his having tried twelve hundred prisoners in the last year! Now how many witnesses must he have questioned, and how many charges to the Jury must he have given! He says the fair average of witnesses would probably be three to each prisoner, and that would be three thousand six hundred witnesses!!! So you will not wonder, (should the salary not at all equal the labor and fatigue and responsibility of the situation) to hear that he has resigned the chair.

"But enough of our M. P. now for dear Dickason. We have just had a long long letter from dear Catherine full of interesting particulars of their life at Montpelier. They are both very well, but Dickason has grown so stout, that he is obliged to diet, or rather to eat less, and drink no wine. The medical men have frightened him, by saying he is too stout for so young a man, and may be liable to

apoplexy. Catherine assures us that Dickason is very economical, and makes her the happiest of women."

I do not know how long Benjamin Rotch served as a member of Parliament, though I gather it was not for long, but presumably the fact that he was a member at all proves that he had become a naturalized subject of the King, for he was an American citizen by descent and a French citizen by birth. I have never heard that he came to America even for a visit. He is therefore the first of the thoroughly English Rotches. His older brother and sister returned to America to marry and live out their lives, his younger brother William, came to America and died there early in life, his sister Maria married in England, but one of her children settled in Texas. Dickason, the youngest of the family, also remained in England, and as Benjamin and Isabelle had no children, it is from Dickason that the present English Rotches descend.

Ann Morgan Rotch, wife of Francis Rotch, writes from London in October, 1843, of Benjamin's meeting his brother's family on their arrival at Liverpool: "Dear Ben did everything he could to welcome us, and has been devoted to us until now, for fortunately for us he has not been called much from here. It is still vacation, but soon his leisure will be over and we will have to give him up. He had reached Liverpool the 13th, determined to be on the spot when we arrived. He has changed a good deal, is monstrously fat, and entirely bald, as agreeable, however, as ever." It was fourteen years since Ann had last seen him.

Ann then goes on to describe what she calls a "thoroughly successful exhibition of phreno-magnetism — our brother Ben the operator." "This singular fellow," she writes, "finds he has this power, he does not use it but at a distance from home, as he would lose caste, in such complete contempt is magnetism held. I was astounded at the results; if the lad was not deceiving us, it was marvelous beyond expression — and I was almost awe-struck. That there was no collusion is very certain. Ben professes not to believe more than he sees." She goes on to describe how the subject was put in a trance and how Ben would press the organ of firmness, or of benevolence, or of language, and of the results he obtained.

The arrival at Lowlands a day or two later is thus described: "Isabelle was at the station in her pony chaise, a complete and elegant little establishment. The Tilbury, drawn by one horse, was also there, and all safely arrived at sweet Lowlands, Isabelle driving me in first rate style, her pony very spirited, but minding her admirably. She seemed as joyous as possible. We paused at the door

to look around. The whole is in excellent order, and beautifully arranged, Isabelle always chief superintendent. The deer trotted up to us — to the children's great delight. It is really a lovely little spot, and very complete. His few acres are turned to good account, the table has been chiefly supplied from them, pork pies, ducks, chickens, rabbits and pigeons, and lamb and mutton too."

Benjamin Rotch, Jr., like his father and many others of his family, suffered terribly from arthritis. He was a great believer in and even a crusader for hydropathy, or the cure of ills by water. Ann writes on November 10, 1843: "We heard from poor Ben, laid up with the gout. He had been threatened with it, but had not time to give himself the necessary water treatment. Frank [Francis M. Rotch] went to his chambers, where the poor fellow was caught, with Isabelle, not being able to get to Lowlands, as they hoped. They initiated Frank into the manner of douching the foot, which he did industriously and gave his uncle great satisfaction, which is no small praise, for a gouty person, you know, flies into a passion if any one comes near them, and he gave many a twinge and groan, not enduring anything upon his foot. When Frank returned and gave us his account, Francis and I determined, as soon as dinner was over, to go and see him. Dickason went with us. We took tea with Isabelle, and had a pleasant social time. Ben was a little revived every time the water was applied, but he said he knew he should not be cured without a couch, for local applications without the general use of water, seldom carried off a disease, and he would get off for Lowlands, and must stay and be thoroughly treated. We left him better, but he had a sad and suffering night and couldn't move the next day."

Nine days later she writes from Lowlands: "Ben was on his couch and I was glad to have an opportunity of seeing what it was. Only his face was visible. He was wrapped in fourteen thicknesses of blankets, his head enveloped in flannel, and a small feather bed, very full, laid over all. He had been there two hours, was in a profuse perspiration, and quite easy. He had been in severe pain all the day before. He joked with us all and said he should remain another hour. Poor fellow, he can but just keep the enemy at bay. Francis remained to help him through the couch."

The next day Francis Rotch went out from London to stay at Lowlands with Ben to liberate "dear Isabelle, who came at two o'clock in her pony chaise and made me go out with her, she driving and the groom behind. It was cold, but her little steeds went so finely and the people were so gay" that Ann enjoyed the airing

thoroughly. They went through Hyde Park, but it was rather early for carriages. It was almost a month before Ben was able to be about again.

I think I have read somewhere, though I cannot find the reference now, that Ben and Isabelle had a charitable hospital somewhere near London. They were not fond of seeing many people, but were certainly both great favorites with the other members of their family, and both were extremely lovable characters. Benjamin died October 31, 1854. His wife survived him by more than half a century, and is remembered by many of the younger members of the family as a very charming old lady. She died April 22, 1909. When we recall that she was born October 10, 1808, we realize that the date of her death was significant in itself. She was one hundred years, six months and twelve days old. Married for twenty-seven years to a man who was born in the tumult of the French Revolution, she seems to bind the past and the present very closely together. That she lived to such great age was a distinct surprise to me, for the impression I gained from reading contemporary accounts was that Isabelle had little strength and was on the whole far from well!

WILLIAM BARKER ROTCH  
(1802-1826)

WILLIAM BARKER ROTCH, fifth child of Benjamin and Elizabeth (Barker) Rotch, was born, according to an indorsement on the back of his parents' marriage certificate, at Milford Haven, 8th month 29th, 1802, the first day of the week, at four o'clock in the afternoon. I record these details because I have so little else to write of this young man, who died unmarried in the mansion of his grandfather, William Rotch, Senior, in New Bedford, October 5, 1826.

He had come to America with his oldest brother, Francis, about 1817, soon after the loss of his father's fortune, and had gone first to English Prairie on the frontier in Illinois, where he met with a serious accident while hunting. Later, after Francis' marriage, William, too, came to New Bedford.

His cousins, the Rodmans and Robesons, had recently become interested in the manufacture of cotton textiles, just starting at Fall River, twelve miles from New Bedford, and William was, at the age of twenty-three, chosen to be the agent of the Annawan Mill, in the former village.

I will let his sister Eliza tell us a little about him and about his sad and untimely death:

"Whilst residing at Clifton, in 1825, the family received an unexpected visit from my brother William. He had left them a schoolboy of fifteen years old, he now returned a handsome youth of twenty-three. Six feet two inches in height, slender, but well made, with light curly hair and soft blue eyes, he was very attractive, and his sweet disposition and gentle manners endeared him greatly to his family. His mother's heart overflowed with love for him, and she was so covetous of his society, that when his father proposed to take him to Paris, and show him the wonders of the capital, she conquered her dread of the passage across the Channel, sufficiently to make one of the party, and a happy trio they were, as a diary she kept during her absence in France, abundantly proves. To their surprise, they found Dr. & Mrs. Wilkinson in Paris, and took an apartment with them, which added greatly to their pleasure. The account my mother gives of this trip is full of life and spirit, and many a happy hour did she and Mrs. Wilkinson spend together when their gentlemen had separate engagements. After three weeks in Paris, my parents and William made a tour through Brussels, Ghent and Lisle, to Dunkirk, where they spent twelve days among the descendants of their old friends, whose devoted attentions to them, proved how strong a feeling of attachment to Mos. & Mad.

Rotch, had been cherished by the parents, and handed down to the children. They were feasted, and carried from house to house; they were made the confidants of family secrets, and were enabled to reconcile opposing interests, and make a lasting peace between those who had long been on bad terms. They could hardly tear themselves away from this circle of loving friends; but as the time approached for William to return to America, it was desirable to be in England.

"They arrived in Calais too late for the packet, so my mother slept in the same hotel to which she fled from the siege of Dunkirk thirty years before. She was very unfortunate in her passage across the Channel, being at the mercy of the winds, they were out fourteen hours, and she was dreadfully seasick. No steam packets in those days abridged the voyage.

"My mother's attention was next given to the outfit of her darling son, who was returning to New Bedford, with the expectation of becoming the agent of a large Cotton Factory belonging to his cousins. To give him everything he needed, and to send tokens of remembrance to all her loved ones in the United States, was a most congenial occupation. She was never so happy as when indulging her generous nature in this way, and now it served to turn her attention from the thought of parting from Willy. But the terrible moment came at last and deeply did she feel it.

"She often said, that she was tried in the tenderest point, and that for one who loved her children so devotedly, it was very hard to have so many of them separated from her by the broad ocean.

"William lived but a few months after his return. An attack of dysentery carried him off, in ten days. He was taken ill at his grandfather's house, was tenderly nursed by his Aunt Mary and his numerous male cousins; but even his youth and strength could not resist that fell disease, and the news of his illness had hardly reached his parents, when it was followed by that of his death. His mother was much overcome by it, and her letters to me after it, are full of a mournfull tenderness for those who remained to her, with an earnest desire to see them. I should have gone to her at this time, had I not promised to remain with my grandfather to the close of his life, and he was then ninety. Francis too felt much for his mother, and began to entertain the idea of a visit to her, but this was not accomplished till 1828."

## ELIZABETH BARKER ROTCH

### An Exile from Home

An address delivered by the Rev. Alfred Rodman Hussey to the members of the Old Dartmouth Historical Society in New Bedford, October 3, 1945.

THIS is the story of an American girl who had a long life, varied above the ordinary. Born in Massachusetts while it was still a colony under the British crown, she was destined to wander far afield, spend two-thirds of her long life in foreign lands, see cities and men, consort with the great and near-great, have her share of joys and sorrows, win through to

"An old age, serene and bright,  
And lovely as a Lapland night,"

and in spite of lifelong separation from her native country, remaining to the end a loyal American, and consistent Quaker.

Since it is the proper custom for every dependable historian to cite the source material from which his narrative is drawn, let me begin by listing the authorities by means of which I first discovered the subject of this sketch, and, as our acquaintance deepened, came to know her, with increasing affection and admiration. First, a Memoir, still in manuscript, written by her daughter, and now owned by a descendant living in the Far West, from whom I was able to borrow it. Then, several of Mr. Bullard's monographs of various Rotch relations, which he kindly loaned me. Besides these, the daughter's reminiscences, "Recollections of Seventy Years," written and published in her old age. And, most important of all, a sheaf of my heroine's own letters, written to her sister-in-law, which are now one of my prized possessions. There are more than fifty of these letters, covering altogether sixty-three years, written, of course, with no thought of publication, and offering a striking revelation of the writer's temperament and personality, which is simply invaluable.

On March 29 in the year 1787, there was a wedding on Nantucket. Of the details of the occasion, we know little, save that the meeting house was crowded. And we do know what the bride wore. "She was dressed in a pale peach-colored silk gown, with the skirt wide open in front, showing through a transparent apron, a quilted satin petticoat of a light blue color. A light drab satin cloak, lined with white, reached nearly to her ankles, and was wide enough to make in after years two mantles, one for each of her daughters." So, after the custom of the Society of Friends, Elizabeth Barker and Benjamin Rotch pledged their troth, each to the other, and became man and wife. Their romance had begun in childhood. When they

were both little tots, at a dame school, they were detected in a clandestine correspondence. Called to the bar of justice, and commanded to surrender the note she had just received, the little girl refused. Popping the scrap of paper into her mouth, she faced her accuser, saying, "If thee insists on having it, I'll swallow it." Whereupon the teacher refrained from pressing the point. The incident reveals certain traits of character which she was to manifest throughout a long life. On the island, her marriage attracted no little attention. Her husband's father, William Rotch, was the richest man, and leading whaling merchant on Nantucket. There at the foot of Main Street his counting house still stands, its walls bearing the names of his three best known ships, one of which, the *Dartmouth*, had its part in the Boston Tea Party. All his other children had married off-islanders; three Rotches married three Rodmans from Newport, Rhode Island. Benjamin alone married a Nantucket girl. Both were good-looking above the average, he a big, handsome, attractive young fellow, she tall, slender, blue-eyed, fair-haired. Their marriage was singularly happy, destined though it was to carry them far from the place where it began.

When the Revolution ended, the Nantucket whaling industry was in dire straits. During the war, the islanders had suffered many hardships; and now that peace had come, they distrusted independence. In fact, at one time, they seriously considered remaining a part of the British Empire. In order to recoup his fortunes, William Rotch looked across the Atlantic, with the idea of carrying on whaling from English ports.

With this end in view, he crossed the sea, hoping to persuade the British government to subsidize the venture. Unsuccessful, in France his persuasion found more willing ears; with the result that he established his business at Dunkirk. And thither, in 1790, Benjamin and Elizabeth journeyed, as his representatives. In the meantime, during their three years on Nantucket, to them a son, Francis, had been born. So that it was a family of three which set sail on one of the family ships, being accompanied by William Rotch himself, his wife, and their two daughters, Lydia and Mary. Landing in France, they set up housekeeping in Dunkirk, in a house on the Grand Place, which was to be their home for four years. For Elizabeth the separation from her motherland was to be lifelong because so seasick was she during the six-weeks voyage that she was never able to persuade herself to cross the sea again.

At first, her life in France was comparatively uneventful. She settled down to adapt herself to the novelty of foreign housekeep-

ing. Once, she travelled with her husband to Paris, where she first saw parquet floors, was scandalized by the service of a male chambermaid, and, at Versailles, had a glimpse of the King and Queen dining in public. They also had three months in England, where they went to Bath in the height of the season; and in London met many prominent Quakers, Frys, Gurneys, Hoares. Writing to a sister-in-law in America, Elizabeth records her impressions of Bath: "I was extremely pleased with the Elegance of Bath. It was exactly in the bathing season. We walked in the pump rooms, Surrounded by invalid Lords and Ladies, whose disipated lives had worn out their constitutions. I was equally pleased and surprized to see and taste the water, which they constantly pump up, smoaking hot, it is not unpleasant to the taste, and must be very comfortable to bathe in, tho I did not try the latter because it is said to debilitate people that are in health. It is a city of disipation, and I was told mostly supported by the company, which visits it at the bathing season, and those very pale faced beings which we see in the pump rooms, as soon as they recover enough to endure it, are attending the Assembly rooms, and at the card tables until midnight. Poor creatures, how it hurt me to see them." It was during this English sojourn that Benjamin took his hand in matchmaking. Joseph Fry had proposed to Elizabeth Gurney and been refused. On learning that the Rotches were going to Earlham, he begged Benjamin to say to "Betsy" a good word in his behalf. No opportunity offered until, on the eve of departure, Mr. Rotch found himself in the garden with the lady. Seizing the shining hour, he asked her, what message he might carry to her suitor. "Tell him," she said, "that he has no hope but in the fickleness of woman." "Then," replied the other, "I shall tell him he has every hope." This he did. Joseph Fry straightway went down to Earlham, and was accepted.

On their return to France, the Rotches found the country on the brink of chaos. Revolution broke out. And the Americans found their own situation far from pleasant. Soon, Dunkirk was besieged by the British fleet commanded by the Duke of York. Most of the wealthier inhabitants fled, but Elizabeth, refusing to leave her husband, valiantly stood her ground. To her sister-in-law she wrote: "I have however a tolerable share of courage, and under my dear Benjamin's protection am willing to tarry here awhile longer, not that I should like to be in town during a siege, (and as Benjamin proposes) live in the cellar, but my dear, it is no small matter to take ourselves and children, servants etc. over the channell, if it were allowed, and at present all communication is forbid, even the

Mail! And then were we to flee, and leave our furniture, it might fall a sacrifice. . . . if thou recollects, during the American War those who staid fared the best". So they elected to remain, the decision bringing many a test to their courage. The English had a pleasant habit of firing red-hot cannon into the town. Consequently, the Mayor ordered that no closet in any house should be kept shut; and that a bucket of water and a pair of tongs should be placed in every room. Our heroine had also to deal with other problems. Food becoming scarce, rationing was established, allowing only a certain quantity of provisions to a family, requiring superfluous provender to be turned in to the common store. Officers were appointed to visit every home, and see that the law was enforced. Now Elizabeth Rotch had a large and varied store of goodies, preserved fruits and vegetables, which the family ships had brought from home. One closet in her room was filled with them. Would she give them up? Not she. Therefore, on the day when the official visitation was due, she got into bed, had them all taken from the shelves, and arranged around her, under the bed-clothes. So she received the officers, politely invited them to come in, bade them inspect the empty closets, apologizing the while for receiving them thus, on the plea that she was in an interesting condition. Embarrassed by their reception, after a hurried inspection of empty closet shelves, they hurriedly withdrew. Whereupon, she got up, and soon had the jars, cannisters and boxes back in their places. But, their courage notwithstanding, eventually they found themselves compelled to leave. As the Revolution ran its course, and mob-rule developed, the time came when in the square under their windows, the guillotine was set up. Heads fell. Then Marie Antoinette was executed. A general illumination of the town was decreed. To the American Quakers, obedience was impossible. So on the night appointed, serenely they waited for the mob's attack. Soon, there was a knocking on their door. But, instead of an angry rabble, it was a neighbor, come to congratulate them on the beauty of their lighted house. Only then did they discover how the Mayor, respecting their scruples, and to protect them from violence, had caused to be erected on the street outside their door a scaffolding bearing an array of lighted lamps. So they were saved.

Soon afterwards, however, they managed to escape on one of their own ships, taking with them a number of refugees. Making their way across the channel, Elizabeth and Benjamin, who had now three children, two boys and a girl, journeyed to London, expecting to remain for only a short time. But a suit in chancery

dragged its slow length along, until, at last, all hope of return to America disappeared, and they settled down in England for good and all. At first, they set up their household goods in Islington, then a pleasant rural suburb. During their sojourn there, on her walks in the village, did Elizabeth occasionally meet a little, thin man, clad in rusty black, his pale features lighted by cavernous black eyes, walking arm in arm with a portly housewife? She may well have done so, for at that very time, Charles and Mary Lamb were living in the neighborhood. But of one personal contact, on a loftier social plane, made by the Rotches at this time, we have substantial evidence. They met and talked with the King and Queen. This is how it came about: Being Friends, their principles forbade them going to court. But Benjamin West was an intimate friend. He was then President of the Royal Academy, and had no difficulty in securing an audience with George III for his American co-patriots. We will let Elizabeth describe the occasion in her own words. Under date of 7 mo, 1799, she writes to her sister-in-law, Elizabeth Rodman, in New Bedford:

"Eliza has begun her French studies & seems much pleased, she expects to read fables in a short time, she spells them very well. She accompanied us, the other day, to the exhibition at Somerset House, (where) we were fortunate enough to be admitted in company with the Royal Family, who generally go to see it a few days before it opens for the public, and our friend B. West thinking it would gratify us, asked the King's leave to admit us with them, which he consented very heartily, and he with the Queen, several of the Princesses & Prince Edward Duke of Kent, were all very civil & took much notice of us. Eliza was pleased with them all but the King, and he being in undress with a brown bob wig, did not answer her expectation, which was that 'at all times he wore a crown of costly diamonds, and flowing robes covered with ornaments,' so she very candidly told West, 'she was disappointed in the King, but that the Queen & the Princesses were very very charming'." Years later, the same little girl, writing her own Recollections of Seventy Years, to the story adds a few colorful details: "Mr. West, ever ready to oblige my father, procured for him a near view of the King and Royal Family, by gaining their permission for them to be in the hall of Somerset House, when the King, Queen and Princesses passed through it on their way to look at the annual exhibition of pictures, the day before it was opened to the public. Mr. West always break-fasted with the King on that occasion, and attended him to the exhibition, pointing out to him some of the best pictures, as he had

not patience to look at many. My father, mother, two other Americans who were their friends, and myself, formed the favored few. All wore the Quaker dress but myself, and the King said in his nervous way, ‘Are these your Quaker friends, Mr. West?’ and repeated it twice before Mr. West could reply. ‘Is that little girl a Quaker? She has not got a Quaker bonnet on; if she had the Quaker bonnet, I would have spoken to her, tell her so, tell her so, Mr. West.’ Meanwhile the Princess Elizabeth admired the bonnet of my mother, and said she wished she could have one like it. The Royal party stopped a few minutes in the hall, on purpose to give the strangers opportunity of looking at them, which was a kind attention to Mr. West.” From the Rotches’ association with Benjamin West, one other tangible result survived: in West’s painting of Christ Healing The Sick, the head of the demoniac’s father is that of Benjamin Rotch.

Meanwhile, the household at Islington had been enlarged by the advent of a guest from overseas, the first of many. A young nephew, William Rotch Rodman, had arrived for a long visit. Of the household there, a pleasant picture has come down to us in a letter written by our heroine to her sister-in-law in New Bedford, under date of 1 mo. 2nd. 1800:

“I have now taken up the pen while Wm, Frank, Eliza and Ben having just finished a romp at blind man’s buff, are quietly set down to play a game at grammatical forfeits, they are now all talking together & Joanna the loudest to silence them, so if I make some mistakes I trust thou wilt forgive it. Wm & Francis have been home a week yesterday. . . . I have just had a kiss on my cheek as I sit writing which I suppose is the redeeming of a forfeit.”

Further on in the same letter we find a paragraph which shows that, in those days, life in Britain, even close to London, was not without its drawbacks:

“Yesterday we dined at Friend Hoares, Newington, where we met three young women from Ireland (Bradshaws) the granddaughters of friend Hoare. Their dining room is very large & after the table was removed they all joined in the amusement of blind man’s buff, much to the gratification of the party. We came home in the evening, and as robberies are very frequent in our neighborhood friend H. was very uneasy, but we got safe back, and so much are we the children of habit that I believe we conversed all the way back and never thought of the danger until near our own door.”

For these American Quakers, whaling was a profitable industry,

and Benjamin was growing rich. With wealth came higher standards of living, along with entrance into high society, so-called. The setting up of a country establishment followed. In Wales, Milford Haven was the home port of the Rotch ships. Living there, at the time were a group of Nantucket friends, Tory exiles from their home island, among them various Starbuck relations. The lord of the manor was Sir William Hamilton, and from his nephew, Charles Greville, Benjamin Rotch leased a tract of land overlooking the harbor, and thereon proceeded to build himself a country house, where he lived in considerable style. Castle Hall was a pleasant abode, its rooms large, with a conservatory, a big garden, stables, standing in extensive grounds. Elizabeth, always the Yankee house-wife and consistent Friend, never cared for all this grandeur. But Benjamin revelled in it. In my possession there is a Lowestoft tea-set, lovely in its simplicity, plates, cups, helmet creamer, teapot and sugar bowl, all severely plain, without ornament save a tiny pink rosebud on each piece. This was sent as a wedding present by these English Rotches to their niece Eliza Rodman, in New Bedford. She was engaged to John Bowne, of New York. They had passed Meeting, and the date for the wedding was already set. But, at the last moment, the lady found herself unable to carry out her part of the bargain; and the nuptials were called off. All the wedding gifts were returned to their donors, save this china. Eliza could not bear to part with it, treasured it all her life, and years later bequeathed it to my mother, her favorite niece. Eliza Rodman was my great aunt, and it is interesting to note that the rejected suitor subsequently married another great aunt of mine, Elizabeth Howland, sister of my Grandmother Hussey.

At Castle Hall there was much entertaining of the local gentry, as a letter from Elizabeth to her "Dear sister Rodman" bears witness. Writing from Milford on the 18th of November, 1801, she says:

"I hope soon to have another cook. She is not what is called a professed Cook, yet she sent our table the other day as excellent a dinner as I wish to see, for a party of our friends, viz Lord & Lady Cawdor, & some others of our Pembrokeshire gentry, who had come to Milford to see the corner stone of our new house laid. It is done with a sort of ceremony in this country, & Lady Cawdor performed the business with her own hands, it being previously prepared with an inscription, dates etc. and with a silver fish knife as her trowel. Her ladyship acted the part of mason admirably well, surrounded by spectators, she is the belle of the country, and one of the hand-

somest women I ever saw. After the parade we all returned to the house and sat down to dinner."

What, on this occasion, they had to eat, we know, from the menu enclosed in the same letter, together with a plan of the table arrangements, which the hostess had made out for her cook. There was boiled salmon, with fried whiting laid round the dish. This was followed by Lobster and anchova soup in tureens; after which Tongue and Boiled Fowls, with oyster sauce, Roast Beef, Partridges, with vegetables. The dessert consisted of raspberry tarts, jellies and syllabubs, rice pudding, damson pye, cheesecakes, with rich gravy and currant jelly "in boats." The whole topped off with "the desert sent us as a present from a gentleman in the neighborhood, consisting of apples, pears, figs fresh from the tree, nectarines, filberts, & American nuts." A pretty substantial meal! But then the Quakers were always mighty providers.

And now the drama is enlivened by the entrance of two historic personages, famous and infamous, no less than Lord Nelson and his inamorata, Lady Hamilton. The Rotches had already met them in London, where, at the town house of Charles Greville, they had gone to an evening party, given in honor of his uncle and his wife. In Eliza Rotch Farrar's memoir of her mother, we have a breezy description of what took place. She says: "My mother was shocked to find herself in such bad company, and refused to be introduced to Lady Hamilton, who was the lion of the evening. She was still very handsome, and sang sweetly, and though she saw that she was avoided by the beautiful Quakeress, she was not to be deterred from speaking to her, and when taking leave, she rushed up to her, and said, she hoped to see her in Wales that summer, as Sir William and she meant to visit Milford, and they should certainly call upon her. My mother was dumbfounded (*sic*) by this impudence, and not choosing to say she should be happy to see her, she said nothing, but secretly resolved to avoid her if possible."

But it was not possible. Her ladyship proved as good as her word. During the following summer, the entire Hamilton menage, Sir William, Mr. Greville, the redoubtable Emma, with Lord Nelson in tow, descended on Milford Haven to remain there for some time. Sundry entertainments were given in their honor. Reluctantly, the Cawdors invited them to dine at Stackpole. Sir William and his nephew called on Benjamin Rotch, at Castle Hall. The next morning, which was warm, Elizabeth was seated in a room whose long windows opened on the terrace, when who should walk in but Lady Hamilton, unannounced, as bold as you please, saying that she

could not leave Milford without seeing her dear Mrs. Rotch. We can be sure, hot as the day was, the temperature of that room was perceptibly lowered; and the back of the hostess was stiffer than ever! It was during that same visit, that in honor of Lord Nelson, on the first of August, the anniversary of the Battle of The Nile, Lord Cawdor arranged a yacht race, offering as a prize a silver cup. This race became an annual event, surviving down to the outbreak of World War II; the cups, on two occasions, being won by Rotch boats; and are still treasured possessions of the English Rotches. On the evening of the first race, a subscription dinner was given at the local hotel. Benjamin went, and was scandalized at the behavior of the lady at the head table. Nelson was a glum, dour individual. Lady Hamilton sat next to him, and as he had only one arm, cut up his meat for him, occasionally selecting a choice morsel from her own plate, and popping it into his mouth. For what happened later, we will let Mrs. Farrar tell us, in her own words:

"After dinner, they had toasts and songs; when Lord Nelson's health was drunk, she alone, of all the ladies, stood up with the gentlemen, and joined in their hip, hip, hurrah! She sang a song about the battle of the Nile, and threw her hand back on the hero's breast, as she warbled forth his praises. The company retired disgusted with the conduct of this bold, bad woman." A shocking spectacle, indeed!

During the same year, in which these high doings transpired, Elizabeth presented her husband with a son, the last of four boys and two girls. Of their children, the eldest, Francis, the only one of their offspring born on Nantucket, spent most of his life in the United States, there marrying Ann, the youngest sister of Charles W. Morgan. Eventually, they had a house, Butternuts, in Oswego County, near Cooperstown, New York. During our Civil War, their son was an officer in the Union forces, afterwards marrying, and going west, where their sole descendant, another Francis, is still living. In Dunkirk had been born the oldest daughter, Eliza, about whom more a little later. The second son, Benjamin, also French-born, was educated in England, studied law, and must have become a British citizen; for he became a judge, in London, and one of the Law Lords in Parliament. I have a pamphlet, "Suggestions for the Prevention of Juvenile Depravity," published in London, in 1846, printed for private distribution only, and sent to "Chas Morgan, Esq. with the Author's compliments." Its author is Benjamin Rotch, one of her Majesty's justices of the peace for the county of Middlesex. There is also extant a lively letter written by his mother, de-



Whalers at Rotch's Wharf, New Bedford.



Emily Morgan Rotch  
(1860- )

scribing King William IV's visit to Parliament in 1831 when excitement over the Reform Bill was at its height. Ben took to wife a certain Miss Isabelle Judd, who survived him by many years, living down to the very eve of World War I. They had no children. The other daughter of Benjamin and Elizabeth married a Church of England clergyman, the Rev. Mr. Langston. Of the other boys who lived to grow up, one settled in the United States, dying in Fall River, comparatively young. Another, Dickason Rotch, made several long visits in New Bedford, but lived his life in London, prospered, and acquired some progeny.

Now, to go back to the Rotches at Castle Hall. Their sojourn on the pinnacle of glory was destined to be brief. Riches, alas, have a way of taking unto themselves wings. Benjamin's prosperity was short-lived. The time came, when he tried to corner the English market in whale oil, failed ignominiously, and, in modern parlance, "lost his shirt." Forced into bankruptcy in 1814, he lost almost everything, and Castle Hall, with all its contents, had to be sold. From the shipwreck, he managed to salvage enough to provide a modest income; but he never recovered his former position of privilege and power. To Elizabeth, who had never trusted worldly possessions, to whom the splendors of Castle Hall had always been distasteful, the change in the family fortunes was a blessing. Henceforth, she could live in harmony with her simple tastes, and good housekeeper that she was, take a personal hand in her domestic affairs. After the crash, she and the younger children settled, for a time in Bath, favorite refuge of the impecunious; while Benjamin and Eliza sailed for America. They had a forty-seven day voyage, landing in New Bedford, where they were guests of the patriarch, William Rotch, at his Mansion House. For Eliza the trip proved a fateful one, for she stayed on, after her father went back to England; and at the Mansion House, on the tenth of October, 1828, married Professor John Farrar of the Harvard Faculty. Eliza had some literary gifts. She became the Emily Post of her day, publishing various books on etiquette, especially designed to improve the manners and morals of young females. She took Margaret Fuller under her wing; and it was she who inspired Charles T. Congdon's mot: "Eliza Farrar taught Margaret Fuller how to enter a room; and Mary Rotch taught Emerson how to save his soul."

From Bath, meanwhile, the Rotches moved to Bristol, then to Clifton, thence to Lowlands, near Harrow, a house they bought; and at last to London, where they settled down, in 1832, at 8 Sidmouth Street, Regents Park, which was to be their home for twenty

years. There, in 1839, Benjamin was gathered to his fathers, tucked up "under green bedclothes" in Kensal Green. The sunset of life by Elizabeth was passed in characteristic fashion. She grew rheumatic, slightly deaf. She was lonely. The children were scattered. For companion, she had an attractive girl, Anna Dumaine, whom she loved as a daughter. She looked after the ways of her household, dusting, often descending to the kitchen to cook some favorite dish. Much of her time she spent at the window in the Boston rocking chair her son-in-law had sent her. She was a prodigious letter-writer, keeping in touch with all her relatives, far and near. Her letters reveal a personality, strong, lovable, not without its element of greatness. She never ceased to protest inwardly against her exile from the land she still called home. Always was she fervently patriotic, deeply interested in what went on in the United States. At her fireside, American visitors ever found a warm welcome, journeying cousins, nephews and nieces from New Bedford. Mr. Webster called on her. On another occasion, the American minister and his wife, Mr. and Mrs. Abbott Lawrence, whose daughter had married her kinsman, Benjamin Smith Rotch, were her guests. Deeply religious, so long as she was able, she went regularly to the Westminster Friends Meeting, where she saw and heard speak the great philanthropist, William Wilberforce.

When the weather was propitious, she took the air, first, in a one-horse brougham given her by her son, Dickason; later, this conveyance was replaced by a Bath chair, in which she was drawn by a boy through Kensington Gardens, always taking with her a packet of seeds for the birds, and a bag of little cakes to delight the soul of any child she chanced to meet. This was after she had moved from Sidmouth Street to No. 17 Pembridge Place, not far from Kensington High Street. So, almost imperceptibly, as it has a way of doing, old age drew on apace. "The golden evening brightened toward the west." There was light at eventide. Somebody truthfully said of her, "She was old at fifty-four, young at ninety-three." Serenely, with her mental powers unabated, with indomitable courage, and firm faith, she waited for the end of earth. On December fourth, 1857, a month after her ninety-third birthday, her long exile reached its close. So ends this story of Elizabeth Barker Rotch, good woman, noble wife and mother, staunch lover of her native land.

## The West Coast Rotches

I AM not attempting to write the story of all the male Rotches, no matter where they may have lived. I am trying to give the genealogical data on all, male and female, whatever their surnames and wherever they live or have lived, if I can find them. In most cases I have written little about those who have left no descendants, excepting some of the early ones, as without descendants there are not likely to be so many personally interested. There is a branch of the family, however, now unhappily represented by no one of Rotch blood, that has done so much to make this volume interesting, that I feel I should write a bit of their story.

Twenty years or so ago someone called to my attention an article in a West Coast motor magazine about a cup which had been won by a Rotch boat in England many years ago and which was then in the possession of Captain Garland Rotch of San Francisco. I wrote Captain Rotch for further information. Finally an answer came, not from Garland, but from his brother Francis in Seattle. Frank, for so he, his father, and his grandfather were always known, had been not only a captain in the Merchant Marine himself, but a writer of stories. He had not only the answers to most of my questions, which Garland did not have, but he sent me on a wealth of original material about his branch of the family, from which I was able to write many years ago my account of the English Rotches.

The story starts with Francis Rotch, son of Benjamin and Elizabeth Barker Rotch, born on Nantucket in 1788, but brought up in Dunkirk and England and Wales, of whom I have written in my account of the English Rotches. He came to America after his father's financial reverses, married in 1819 Ann Waln Morgan, and settled in New Bedford. Here he had a son Francis Morgan, a son Charles Morgan, who died at seventeen, and a daughter Maria.

From New Bedford the family moved to Morris, New York, where both father and son became leading agriculturists and breeders of fine cattle and sheep.

Maria married Radcliff Hudson, had a son who died when nine and a daughter, Anne, named for her grandmother, born in 1850. Maria died when her daughter was only four. Anne spent much

of her time with her grandmother Rotch and used to come with her to New Bedford in the summers to visit her Uncle Charles W. Morgan. In St. James Episcopal Church in New Bedford on October 6, 1881, she married a second Charles W. Morgan, son of her grandmother's brother Thomas. This Charles was a widower and was twenty-five years older than his second wife. These Morgans made their home in Versailles, France, where Ann Morgan Rotch was visiting them when she died in 1884. Shortly after the death of her husband in 1896, Anne Rotch Morgan embraced the Roman Catholic faith and became a nun in England under the name of Sister Anne Monica. She is still teaching bookbinding at the age of 96, and so nearly blind that one of the other sisters has to write her letters for her.\* When Anne gave up her worldly life she sent many Rotch portraits, miniatures, records and much beautiful Rotch silver, including the famous cup, to her cousin Frank Rotch in America. It was this material that this Frank's son Frank loaned me, and which his widow, in accordance with a wish expressed in his will, has sent, together with the miniatures and portraits, to the Old Dartmouth Historical Society in New Bedford.

Francis Morgan Rotch, who was born in New Bedford in 1822 and died in Morris in November 1863, has left behind him a brilliant record. When I was visiting his grandson Frank in Bellevue, outside of Seattle, in 1940, Frank showed me four Harvard medals which had belonged to his grandfather, who had graduated from Harvard in the Class of 1841, and asked me if the medals meant anything to me. I said they certainly did, that they showed Francis Morgan Rotch was a scholar, a musician, an actor, and socially most acceptable. The medals were those of The Phi Beta Kappa, The Pierian Sodality, The Hasty Pudding Club and The Porcellian Club.

I have a small silver cup, the gift of his grandson's widow, which bears the inscription "Awarded by the American Institute at the 16th Annual Fair, 1843 to Francis M. Rotch, For the Best Ewe Southdown Breed." This cup was probably won just before he sailed on the *Caledonia* in October of that year with his parents and sister to visit his Grandmother Rotch, his uncles and his aunts. His mother's letters published herein tell of his activities in Europe, principally his hunting of the carted stag.

Frank Rotch sent me a printed folder, headed "Remarks of Honorable William Kelly, before the New York State Agricultural Society, February 11, 1864." Above the heading is written in ink "In

\* Anne Hudson Morgan died in 1946, since the foregoing was written.

Memory of Col. Francis M. Rotch." In the margin is written in pencil "To the memory of our son." It starts "Mr. President — I rise to perform a sad and melancholy duty: it is to present to this society resolutions commemorative of our late associate and friend, Francis M. Rotch, long a member of the Society, and for a time one of its Vice-Presidents."

Mr. Kelly then goes on to tell of the late Colonel and to extol him. He says Francis was an artist of no mean ability, that he had a passionate love of flowers, that he was fitted by education and ability for any walk of life, but chose, like his father, to be an agriculturist. "Whilst any branch of farm husbandry interested him, and received his careful attention, he possessed a special taste for the breeding of cattle, and a strong desire for the improvement of the herds of this country." He imported the best cattle from England, and exported their get back to England. He planned for educational advantages for farmers.

He was a member of the New York State Senate, and when the Civil War broke "moved by patriotic ardor he entered military life, and accepted an appointment on the staff of Gov. Morgan, stipulating only one condition on taking office; that he was to have active service in the field. This was promised him, and ere long he was detailed to duty in connection with the Army of the Potomac. Here as everywhere, he was active, energetic and efficient, fulfilling his whole duty to his comrades and his country. It was whilst thus engaged, he contracted that disease, which, after a brief time, terminated in death.

"There is one who mourns him that has our special sympathy — that aged father — one of the founders and early Presidents of this Society, whose name is never spoken within these walls but with profound respect. We can say to him, you weep not alone."

Francis Morgan Rotch had married Catherine Gilbert in 1862, and to them was born a few months before the Colonel died a son, another Francis Rotch.

This Francis Rotch graduated from Johns Hopkins University and went into the lumber business in Wisconsin, where he married Mary Garland and where his two sons were born. In 1887 he came to the State of Washington with Jerome Garland, his father-in-law and partner. At Bucoda in that state he built a mill, one of the first large cargo mills in the country. He was a member of the first State Legislature. Later because of failing health he felt it best to go to sea, and was serving as Purser on the *S. S. President* in 1918 when he died in Honolulu.

The two sons Francis (Frank) and Garland both roamed the world, and both left fine records. Both took to the sea, Garland more exclusively than Frank.

Although Garland was the younger, I will tell of him first, both because my so doing breaks the somewhat monotonous line of Francises, and because I want to save Frank, to whom I am eternally grateful for all his help, till last.

Garland was born in Bloomer, Wisconsin in 1888. I first heard of him in 1929 or so when he was a yacht broker in San Francisco. I sent him one of my printed forms such as so many of you have been pestered with, asking data about his life. Some years later he answered. He wrote that his residence from 1921 to 1927 was Buenos Aires, Argentina, from 1927 to 1929 New York City and then San Francisco. He answered the question about college, if any, and degree, as follows:

"No college degree. Reason, Mother phoned to school one afternoon to have Garland excused from school. Principal replied Garland had not been to school for six weeks. That evening when Garland's father came home he offered Garland the choice of going to a reform school or going to sea. Three days later Feb. 27, 1904, Garland was apprenticed for four years on the British barque *Dunstaffnage*."

Below is a history of the nautical career which followed:

- Feb. 27, 1904 to April 20, 1908,  
Apprentice, British Barque Dunstaffnage
- April 20, 1908 to April 21, 1909,  
Second Mate, British Barque Dunstaffnage
- June 6, 1909 to Dec. 30, 1909,  
Second Mate, British Six Masted Bktn. Everett G. Griggs
- Jan. to May 1910 (Approx.),  
Quartermaster, AM. SS Mexican
- May to Jan. 1911 (Approx.),  
Third Mate, AM. SS Nebraskan
- Feb. to July 1912 (Approx.),  
Second Mate, AM. SS Virginian
- July 6 to Sept. 3, 1912,  
Second Mate, AM. SS State of California
- Sept. 1912 to Nov. 1915,  
Second Mate and Mate, AM. SS Yale
- Dec. 1, 1915 to Aug. 16, 1916,  
Mate, AM. SS Admiral Clark  
(This voyage was terminated by the sinking of the ship as described in the accompanying letter, a letter well worth reading.)
- Oct. 1916 to May 1917 (Approx.),  
Mate, AM. SS Admiral Evans

- June 1917 to Aug. 1917 (Approx.),  
    Mate, AM. SS Seattle
- Sept. 1917 to Feb. 1918 (Approx.),  
    Master, AM. SS Western King
- May 22, 1918 to Apr. 30, 1919,  
    (Lt. Commander, U.S.N.R.F. O.S.T.S. Active) Commander U.S.S. West Ekonk. From this ship he scattered his father's ashes at sea.
- May 1919 to Feb. 1920 (Approx.),  
    Master, AM. SS West Ekonk
- Feb. 1920 to Aug. 1921,  
    Master, AM. SS Defender & Montana (Name changed during this period)
- Sept. 1921 to Oct. 1922,  
    Asst. Director U.S.S.B. Argentine & Uruguay
- Oct. 1922 to Jan. 1924  
    Director, U.S.S.B. Argentine & Uruguay
- Feb. 1925 to May 1925 (Approx.),  
    Acting Surveyor, AM Bureau of Shipping, Argentine and Uruguay for Mr. David Currier, exclusive surveyor for A.B. Shipping
- June 1925 to Nov. 1927 (Approx.),  
    Marine Supt. Munson SS. Co. Buenos Aires
- Feb. 1928 to May 1930,  
    Yacht Designer & Broker, San Francisco, Designed Schooner Yacht Zaca
- May 1930 to Dec. 1932,  
    Acting as sailing Master and Navigator for Templeton Crocker on World Cruise and scientific expedition to the Galapagos Islands on the Yacht Zaca.

Captain Rotch retired in 1933 and lived in San Francisco until his death ten years later. Here I found him in 1940. I had written him a few times but had had answers only from his brother. I was passing through San Francisco and knew he lived at 100 Juanita Way. Driving in to the city from Berkeley, I found the little house, with its door open and a radio blaring, but apparently with no one at home. My wife and I were about to pass on, disappointed, when we saw a tall, lean man with a black patch over one eye coming up the street. He turned in at the house and I felt sure I had before me Captain Garland Rotch. I said "Is your name, by any chance, Rotch?" (pronouncing it to rhyme with Scotch, as has always been the custom with all the descendants of Benjamin). He said it was and I told him mine was Bullard. He said "Not John Bullard from New Bedford?" I was pleased my letters had made that much impression. He took us in, showed us the famous cup that Benjamin had given his daughter Eliza Farrar, and which had later belonged to Mrs. Charles Morgan, II, with its inscription which read: "Given to be sailed for by Lord Cawdor, Gov. of Milford Haven, and won by B. Rotch, Esq. 1st August, 1805," and on the back "Presented by B. Rotch to his daughter, E. Farrar as a token of affection, 1832." He took us downstairs to his den, a fascinating room, filled with

pictures of his square riggers and other ships and with pictures and trophies of the South Seas. I am sure the names of the islands would mean more to me now than they did then, for we have all been educated by World War II. He told us of a native chief who wanted to trade him six wives for a pig, or some such thing. He said "My wife always chides me for not taking a few. She thinks she could use them for maids as we haven't any!" His wife was not there so we missed her, as we were leaving San Francisco the next day for Northern California and a visit in Washington with Frank. Garland wrote me twice after that, sending me the data on his voyages and other information. One of his letters ends "P. S. Don't forget. I don't wear a black patch." He was certainly wearing one the day we saw him, but I gather it was only temporary. And it did give him an extra look of being an old sea dog.

Finally there was my contemporary Frank, Francis Rotch the fourth in a direct line, and the fifth if you count Joseph's son Francis. He told me he thought he was the sixth. There was one more Francis, a descendant of the original Benjamin, and perhaps others in that line. Frank Rotch was more helpful to me in the preparation of this book than any other member of the family. He showed more interest, and wrote me many more letters than anyone else. But he was so modest that I would have had little to write about him were he still living. He always said there was not much to tell except that he, too, had commanded his own vessels, and that he had written short stories. He obviously had a fine sense of humor, which showed up in his many letters. I knew he had been in World War I, and I had seen him once, when, a few days after my visit to Garland in 1940, he met my wife and me at the railroad station in Seattle, drove us out to Bellevue, introduced us to his mother and to his wife Maree, who had served also in the last war as a nurse, showed us his collection of Rotch paintings, fascinating miniatures, and much beautiful silver, including what he called the Castle Hall silver, and finally, late in the evening, drove us back to Seattle to take a train for home.

Within the next five years Frank's mother and Maree were to die, and Frank was to marry Helen Samson Boyce. In 1945 I wrote Frank two or three letters and got no answer, which was so unlike him that I became worried and was not much surprised when a letter from his widow's daughter told me of his death.

True to his promise, Frank had left the Rotch paintings and miniatures and records to the Old Dartmouth Historical Society in New Bedford, but first he had left them to his wife. It is probable that

the gift to the Society was not enforceable at law, but Mrs. Rotch raised no question and sent everything on at once, also sending my wife a lovely silver spoon and me the two silver cups won at cattle shows over a century ago by Frank's great-grandfather and grandfather.

Among the papers sent to New Bedford by Mrs. Rotch were three newspaper clippings about Frank, two printed during World War I and the other an obituary. I am very glad to have seen these clippings. They tell me much more about my modest cousin than he ever would himself.

The news clippings say Frank attended the University of Washington, but he evidently did a lot of things before that. To quote from one of the clippings:

"Lieutenant Rotch had a penchant for getting into things at just the right time to see the best of it and then to go somewhere else. It was that way when the Spanish War was on and he 'sneaked' into the Navy at the age of 14 by saying he was 18. He was in the Philippine insurrection when the Army and Navy combined forces for a big clean up."

"He was on the China station two years later when the Boxer uprising caused trouble and he managed to get in on the party which was first over the Pekin wall. He was entitled to three campaign and service medals — and had them — before he departed from the Navy for other scenes."

"In South America he worked on two railroad projects before he discovered that the high altitude was affecting him and went to Panama, where he was assigned to the command of a construction gang."

He next went to Puget Sound, and then jumped between Seattle and Alaska, where he commanded a river steamer for the Alaska engineering commission.

When World War I started he came back from Alaska and went to officers' training school, but was thrown out because of trouble with a knee. He then enlisted in the Coast Artillery and became regimental supply sergeant. Then to officers' training camp again at Fort Monroe, Va., and to Europe as a Second Lieutenant of Engineers. He served at St. Nazaire and Brest. "In Paris in September he was looking over the vast military stores at the evacuation depot, from which millions of tons of supplies were sent to the front. It was the day of the last shelling of Paris by the big guns and a shell made a direct hit on a gasoline tank scow, which was anchored in the river.

"Seeing the immense danger to life and property when the wood-work became ignited, Lieutenant Rotch dove into the water and swam to the scow. A line was quickly made fast despite the heat, which seared his face and hands, and from there was taken by him to a tug which came to his assistance. The barge was towed to a place of safety lower down the river and the flames put out.

"For this act Lieutenant Rotch wears the decorations of three of the leading nations of the world." He was also recommended for the Congressional Medal.

His Distinguished Service Cross Citation says:

"For extraordinary heroism during the bombardment of Paris, France, by hostile aircraft on the nights of September 15-16, 1918. Lieutenant Rotch displayed unusual courage and devotion to duty when a direct hit was registered by a hostile aircraft on a barge load of gasoline at the Quai de Javel, Paris, France. Without regard to danger Lieutenant Rotch plunged into the Seine River, which was covered with a film of burning gasoline and, swimming out to the barge, succeeded in making fast a wire allowing a tug to tow the barge out of danger."

He also received the British Military Cross and the French Croix de Guerre avec branche. He was the only one in his company to get the D. S. C.

After the war Frank kept up his military interest, holding commissions in the Field Artillery Reserve, successively as First Lieutenant, Captain, and Major.

I wish that he and Garland, or one of them, could have had sons to carry on their brave traditions and the name of Rotch. I wish I had known them better, and I wish that Frank could be here to read the book in the formation of which he took such a great interest.

## The Great Rotch Scandal

IN DELVING into the history of a family made up of many hundreds of members for a period covering nearly three hundred years, one is sure to find some things that are discreditable as well as much that is creditable. Perhaps it is best to preserve only the good. Certainly I do not belong to the school of writers, somewhat prevalent a few years ago, who seemed to wish to tear down all that was good in heroes of the past, and to expose all their weaknesses. But in case anyone should get the idea that all Rotches were strong and sanctimonious characters, I think I had better say that the family has been very human, and that many of its members, whether bearing the name of Rotch or not, have been weak, if not actually or intentionally bad, and that many have been too charming to the opposite sex for their own good.

I have decided to write in general terms of this scandal without intending to imply that there were not others nearly as bad. Certainly there were no others so well known to their contemporaries or so widely published by the girl's father to the world. That no descendants of either party to the tragedy survive to read these lines has helped me to decide that as a matter of great interest in the history of the family, I should tell a part of the story. I am not, however, going to mention any names.

The scandal and the events leading up to it occurred in New Bedford in the first third of the nineteenth century, more than a hundred years ago. It was at the time when the Rotch-Rodman-Morgan family was at its biggest in New Bedford, a time when many of its members were taking a leading part in the affairs of the town, a period when some of its younger members were turning away from the strict principles of Quakerism, to the more easy ways of the world. One of the participants in this particular scandal bore the name of Rotch. The other had a Rotch mother, but bore another name.

The man was married to a fine woman and had children. The girl was unmarried, but did marry many years later. Her father and mother were among the most respected members of the community, and continued so throughout their lives. I will call the man Casanova, the girl Alibech, and her father and mother Mr. and Mrs.

Merchant. Casanova and Mrs. Merchant were first cousins and Casanova was twenty-one years older than Alibech. The two above facts make the matter considerably worse.

The scandal was, of course, hidden from the younger members of the big family, but it was well known to all the older members, and to everyone else in town, who no doubt enjoyed mightily seeing what was often referred to as the Royal Family in so much distress.

The following letter was written by Mrs. Merchant to one of her aunts at a time when her daughter Alibech was twelve years and eight months old and Casanova was thirty-three:

"Uncle Ben & Aunt Mary improved the opportunity when Wm. R. & Caroline were going to Princeton to take passage in Wm's carriage which he sent on to Providence the day before they went themselves, & they took Joseph's carriage & pair; his horses had never been a journey, were high in flesh this day very warm, & tho' they were light (all the baggage having gone in Wm's carriage), only himself Caroline & driver in Joseph's, yet at Pawtucket one of the horses failed and died before morning; this is a great loss here, it being so difficult to get well broken horses — Joseph blames himself entirely, for offering them as he did, his disposition to oblige overcame his judgment — poor Caroline was almost sick about it — another accident which occurred the same day was very near proving deeply important. As my husband and myself could not leave home to make our accustomed visit to Providence, & Alibech having always shared in the Mulberry Grove cherries, when they were ripe, Casanova was going to Pawtucket to engage the screws for the candle house which he is building opposite this house in company with James & Joseph — and offered Alibech a seat in his buggy which is a vehicle high in the air, his horse however being remarkably gentle, & Casanova very attentive & thoughtful of his travelling companion we for the first time trusted her from us, they left here at six o'clock in the morning — about 9 I saw a strange old fashioned chaise stop at the door & on opening it who should appear but Casanova & Alibech! They were both laughing by pre-meditation that my alarm might not be great; on inquiry into the mystery it seemed they were jogging on at about 6 miles an hour when the horse trod upon a round stone, suddenly fell & threw them 6 feet beyond his head, turned over upon his back broke the shafts & lay kicking, Casanova was soon upon his feet & ran to Alibech lifted her up and carried her into the shade took off her bonnet & by fanning brot her to, she did not faint, but the force of the blow

suspended her breath, she says for a minute she suffered very much & thought she should never breathe again, but after that she felt perfectly well — It was such a merciful preservation as I could scarcely realize — we sent for Dr. Read but he did not think it necessary to bleed her as she felt no inconvenience from it, she was very much wrapt up & we could not discover even a bruise."

Presumably the Merchants continued to let Alibech go driving with Casanova, and perhaps the fact that they did was the reason the young ladies of the Rotch family were never allowed thereafter to go driving with a boy or man down to the time when automobiles replaced buggies. Apparently, automobiles were considered much safer. I heard an older member of the family say when they were new, "It takes two hands to drive an auto." She had evidently not considered the ease and joys of parking! At any rate Casanova continued for many years on the best of terms with all his cousins.

Just nine years and one month after that fatal buggy ride, the storm broke, and what a storm. At this time Casanova was forty-two, the dangerous age, and Alibech was twenty-one. We will pick the story up in Samuel Rodman's diary, where the references are not clear enough to arouse much interest unless you know what he is talking about.

"Sunday. In the evg. at Chs Fleemings, where illustrations of a depravity surpassing any possible previous conception were made, exciting on the one hand in the assembled friends the strongest abhorrence and on the other hand the deepest commiseration for its victims.

"Monday. Remained at home through except a short walk and call at (Casanova's brother-in-law's), the disclosures of yesterday involving many in the severest affliction, rendering a little suspension of the ordinary duties of the day most consonant with my feelings and those of ma chere H., who made a call at Mr. Merchant's.

"Tuesday. The late calamitous disclosures were today communicated to one of the principal sufferers, (Note: to Casanova's wife) whose unsuspicuous confiding and ardent affection made them fall with lacerating power on her gentle and innocent mind, exciting in all her friends who witnessed or were otherwise acquainted with it the most intense sympathy. She and her sister and my bro. W. went to the island in the evg. at the request of the person who has occasioned by his baseness all this terrible affliction.

"Wednesday. Bro. W. returned early this mg. from the isle leaving his two distressed companions. Benjn returned from New York this evg. hastened by the late events.

"Thursday. Made several calls on different members of the family circle. Benjn. went today to Naushon to attend his sister Mrs. Casanova and her sister on their return. They ar'd, about 9 o'clk p. m.

"Saturday. Called with ma chere H. to see our afflicted cousins Mr. & Mrs. Merchant. They appeared serene & supported under their unspeakable calamity. Casanova left the Island of Naushon as is supposed on the 5th Inst., probably never more to be seen in this place, where he has proved himself so base a villain."

It is my understanding that Alibech told her parents she could never marry her fiance because of her relations with her cousin. This seems extraordinary enough, but much more so is that her father, who was a shrewd man in business and a charitable man in his dealings with the public, should so pillory his daughter, apparently for the sole purpose of exposing the man in the case.

Here follow two letters, the first giving the point of view of one not in the family, and the second of one connected with the family.

Extract from a letter written by someone not in the family to someone in St. Michael's, Azores, dated at Fairhaven the Wednesday that Samuel Rodman wrote as above:

"I have now to inform you, my beloved Mary Ann, of a most disgraceful circumstance which came to light only day before yesterday. . . . Casanova, perhaps you may have seen at Sister Prescott's, he was accomplished and for that reason was thought of by the family — he married in a good family — a Miss — — her portion was about \$15,000, his grandfather also gave him about as much and Mr. Merchant built some candle works purposely to benefit him and has assisted him in different ways that he is thought to be now worth \$50,000 — about 5 or 6 years since, Alibech Merchant was between 12 and 13 Casanova being a cousin and married man took her out frequently to ride but nothing, of course, was thought of it. He has been giving her improper books to read to poison her mind so as to be able to accomplish his diabolical purpose and it seems she has been his mistress for upwards of 2 years without her friends mistrusting either of them and when she has expostulated with him he has even threatened her life. She was engaged to Mr. T. a fine young man from Boston and a member of one of the oldest and most respected families in the city — she was to have been married this winter but of course now it will never take place — Mrs. Merchant was cousin to Casanova — she was informed of the circumstances by her daughter, and it shocked her so much that she is very ill — her husband despairs of her life and if that is spared of

her mind, but the most unaccountable thing to me is Mr. Merchant assembling a few friends the day after he heard of the circumstances and being he himself the publisher of his daughter's disgrace as no visible proof of her guilt is likely to appear. I wonder they did not try to conceal the matter, but Casanova thought and said to someone who spoke to him on the subject that Mr. Merchant would not dare expose him . . .

"This affair has entirely blasted the happiness of her Parents and greatly mortified and humbled the other members of the family — so great was the excitement in Bedford on Monday that had Casanova shown himself he would have been mobbed he will never dare show his face again in this town — he has absconded some say to England and others to Naushon one of the Elizabeth Islands — when Mr. Merchant published this he said he and his wife were willing to renounce the world purposely to punish so great a villain as Casanova — when Harriet came to see me in the spring Mrs. Merchant, Alibech and Casanova called on her — I never liked this man as he always had a sarcastic smile on his features but enough of the Merchant concern for the more I think of it the more unaccountable the conduct appears in publishing it instead of trying to keep it a secret — some might believe the report and others would deny it, that the truth would never have come out had they never named it themselves as no one would have dared to talk to the Parents on so delicate a subject. This affair is a common topic of conversation with everyone — such was the excitement in Bedford that a mob collected on the Wharf as the steamboat went to the Island with some members of the family and they thought it probable he might return in her and they meant to tar and feather him. His wife went in to Mr. Rodman's Monday afternoon and seeing several members of her family assembled and looking gloomy she made the remark and wished to know what was the reason, but they said they could not then inform her — she went to the piano and played a lively air to try to dispel their gloom — they did not wish to name the thing to her but were obliged as she expected some company in the evening, she would not however believe it until she went to the Island and found it was really too true — he has left the country forever and they are parted to meet no more — it was an hour or more before her friends could remove her to the Packet to return home after the departure of her husband — You are quite tired of this subject my beloved Mary Ann but as you are acquainted with Mrs. Merchant and I have always admired her I thought you would feel interested about her."

Letter addressed to A. S. Rotch from one of her brothers, one week later than Samuel Rodman's last entry:

"Phia

"My dear Ann

"I have secretly longed in my heart to sit down to write to thee — esteeming and valuing thy late letter as a mark of thy love, and confidence which I hope will ever continue, and never be obliterated — be assured it has had an awful humbling effect on my mind —

"The day on which I received it thy brothers and sister's, Uncle Ridgway, Edward Smith and wife, Thomas Meuen & wife, dined with us — therefore the opportunity was favorable in the chamber after dinner when I had previously desired Sister to withdraw with all except thy four married Sister's to read thy letter to them — reports had reached us as thee would be informed on reading Sister Hetty's letter, and thine confirmed it — language is inadequate to convey what we feel, it has felt to me that it is calculated to be a solemn warning to us all, on our Children's account, at least some of us —

"It is matter of surprise to some, seeing there was not likely to be exposure from any thing happening to her; That this dreadful intercourse was not in some way hid from the public ear — if money could have shut up this foul stain, on account of his wife or widow, and fatherless children — would it not have been better. — There is Mercy and forgiveness with God for every repenting sinner — therefore to fall into his hands with prayer and contrition and a sense of that Godly sorrow which worketh true repentance not to be repented of — but when any of us poor frail mortals go astray — which we are all constantly liable to without keeping on the *watch*; what a picture is presented by our fellow beings, how much more ready are they to hear, and believe evil of us than good — where are the tears and prayers of the righteous to recover the wanderer, and the sinner, who tho' his sins be as *scarlet* or as the *crimson dye*, they have the promise to be made by this holy blessed power of repentance to be washed away, and become as *white as snow* or as wool, thus are the promises of the gospel unfolded to the believer — with clearness and comfort that my soul follows those who are dead in trespasses and sin, with desire that they may lay hold and partake of saving grace — It is not for us to cast away our frds and connections — to plunge them yet *deeper* and *deeper* in the *mire of iniquity* — but let the language of our hearts be, '*Come ye sinners*' — I apprehend many a one has been lost — from the hard and cruelty of treatment exercised — some have in despair committed suicide,

some in one way and some in another have been *deprived* of *restoration* — which the gospel so beautifully and forcibly illustrates —

"And as for myself I hope thro' obedience to the Divine light and life in thy own soul thou will be a messenger of peace and consolation to the afflicted — to the humble repentant since in fact Dear Ann thy faithfulness is important and will assuredly be blest to thyself and family if sufficiently adhered to let me hear again from thee."

There are other letters in which members of the family called a spade a spade, and poured out their hatred of Casanova. The above letter to Ann Rotch, who was one of the cousins by marriage, points out that by exposing the matter great harm was done to the innocent wife, whom the writer seems to assume to be by then a widow, and her children. Casanova did not commit suicide. His wife forgave him and was devoted to him for the many more years that he lived. He himself made a fine record in a new home, far from New Bedford, and died much respected by his new neighbors. His wife was very dear to many members of the family and frequently returned to visit them in New Bedford. His descendants made fine records. The unfortunate Alibech, about whom I know much less, did finally marry, though not to the man who was then her fiance. Certainly the pleasures of the affair could not have been worth the pain caused to so many and the disgrace brought upon the participants themselves.

## "NEW BEDFORD FIFTY YEARS AGO"

Painted by William A. Wall

THE colored prints of this painting, originally issued in 1858, hang in the homes of so many of the Rotch descendants that I think a word about it here would be of interest. One print, the property of Captain Lennox Boswell, is in his dining cabin aboard his ship *H.M.S. Kenya*, and there are countless prints in the possession of other descendants in America.

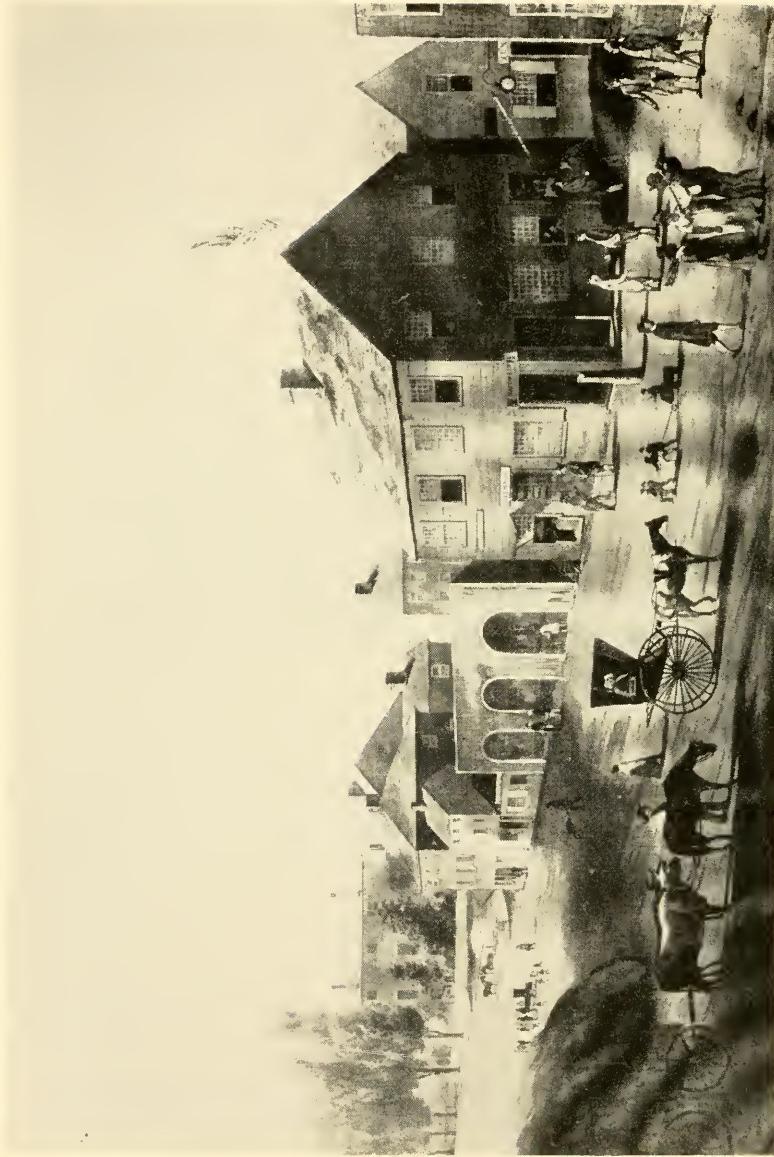
Mr. Wall was capable of better painting than is indicated in this imaginary street scene in the New Bedford of 1807. The picture shows the northwest corner of Union Street, which was then known as the Main Street, and Water Street. There are three original paintings. I have what I believe to be the first, having acquired it from the estate of the late Francis R. Hart, a member, I understand, of the Wall family. I believe it to be the oldest because it represents fewer figures than do the others. And it is a bit more crude, the white horse looking more like a goat than like a horse. The second used to belong to the family of Daniel Ricketson, the historian, and now belongs to the Old Dartmouth Historical Society. It depicts more figures than the first, but lacks a few that are in the third, which was formerly the property of the late Amelia Jones and used to hang in William Rotch, Jr.'s County Street house during its long ownership by the Jones family. It is now in the New Bedford Free Public Library. It was from this third painting that the prints were taken.

The large house furthest up Union Street, that is on the left, behind the row of poplars, is the mansion of William Rotch, Sr., which later became a hotel, finally disreputable, known as the Mansion House, and was burned in 1928. The next building of which only the roof can be seen, (although it appears to be part of the Dutch Cap building) stood on the northwest corner of Union Street and Johnny Cake Hill. It belonged to Joseph Rotch, father of William, and was probably the house in which he died, his principal house on Water Street having been burned by the English in the Revolution. The Dutch Cap house is still standing on the northeast corner of Union and Johnny Cake Hill. Johnny Cake Hill leads up to the Old Dartmouth Historical Society's Whaling Museum, and to the Seaman's Bethel, made famous by Herman Melville in "Moby Dick," and to the Mariner's Home, originally the first residence of William Rotch, Jr.

The man in the chaise is William Rotch, Sr., who had come to New Bedford in 1795 from France, where he had established his whaling



Lower Union Street in New Bedford, probably in the 1860's. Showing the mansion of William Rotch, Senior, then a hotel. The next house was where Joseph Rotch died, his larger house having been burned by the British. These two houses and the next, which still stands at the north-east corner of Union Street and Johnny Cake Hill, show in the print "New Bedford Fifty Years Ago."



William A. Wall's painting of "New Bedford Fifty Years Ago."  
Showing an imaginary street scene at Union and Water Street about 1807. William  
Rotch is in his chaise and his mansion shows in the left background.

business after the Revolution had caused him to leave Nantucket.

A letter from the artist to William Penn Howland dated January 10, 1859, says:

"Opposite the store door on which is sign of 'Jehaziel Jenney' is himself talking with Peter Barney — next to the right (near the stone post at northwest corner) are two figures — Abraham Russell and William Rotch, Jr. Still further to the right and opposite the barber shop of Nathaniel Rogers are Samuel Rodman, Jr., and Captain Rowland R. Crocker — In front of these and near the northeast corner are two figures, one of my father and the other not intended for anyone in particular. Still further in front and near the group of colored persons is Barnabas Taylor, and in the chaise is William Rotch, Sr. The female figure is Patty Hussey and the man by the team will do for Caleb Sherman."

William Rotch, Jr., had come to New Bedford in 1787 to look after the affairs of his late grandfather, Joseph, who had been active there from 1765 until his death in 1784.

Samuel Rodman had married Elizabeth Rotch, daughter of William, Sr., and had continued in Nantucket until about 1795, when he too moved to New Bedford.

William Rotch, Sr.'s legs, with knee "britches" and white stockings, show in the author's original. His son and son-in-law are similarly clad.

There is a very crude version of this painting which was formerly in the possession of the late Harry Russell. I had understood it was probably the original rough draft of the picture, but William A. Wing tells me it was painted by Mr. Wall when he was an old man, long after the others.

## Sarah Bullard (1924-1942)

A tribute written by her father a few days after her death.

SALLY WAS BEAMING WITH HAPPINESS AND THE JOY OF LIFE WHEN SHE RODE BLACK SAMBO OUT OF THE RING AFTER WINNING THE FIRST CLASS IN THE LITTLE LOCAL HORSE SHOW GIVEN OUTSIDE THE VILLAGE OF PADANARAM IN DARTMOUTH, MASSACHUSETTS, ON SEPTEMBER 6, 1941, TO COLLECT FUNDS TO PURCHASE A ROLLING KITCHEN FOR DARTMOUTH, ENGLAND. SALLY WAS NOT A SHOW RIDER AND SAMBO WAS NOT A SHOW HORSE. SHE HAD, TO BE SURE, WON A NUMBER OF RIBBONS AT A CHILDREN'S SHOW IN DEDHAM SOME YEARS EARLIER, OTHERS AT TRYON, NORTH CAROLINA, IN HER SPRING VACATION SHORTLY THEREAFTER, AND OTHERS A YEAR AGO AT NEW HOPE, PENNSYLVANIA, WHERE SHE WENT TO SCHOOL. BUT SHOW RINGS WERE NOT HER FIRST LOVE, THOUGH SHE ADORED ANYTHING AND EVERYTHING CONNECTED WITH HORSES.

SALLY LOVED TO BE IN THE SADDLE, OR ASTRIDE A HORSE WITHOUT A SADDLE, AND SHE HAD LOVED IT EVER SINCE SHE TOOK OVER JOHN'S PONY, DIXIE, WHEN A VERY LITTLE GIRL. AND SALLY WAS A HUNTRESS. SHE HAD JUST TURNED SEVENTEEN WHEN SHE RODE SAMBO DOWN TO QUANSETT IN AUGUST FOR THE LAST TIME FOR A FEW DAYS' CUB HUNTING BEFORE THE HOUNDS LEFT FOR THEIR FALL SEASON WITH MYOPIA. AT TWELVE SHE HAD STARTED FOLLOWING HER COUSIN BUNNY ALMY AND THOSE HOUNDS BY THE POUNDING SURF AND OVER THE SAND DUNES AT HORSENECK BEACH AND UP AND DOWN THE COUNTRY BOUNDED BY THE PASCAMANSETT RIVER IN HER OWN DARTMOUTH AND THE ACOAXET RIVER IN NEIGHBORING WESTPORT. AT FIRST SHE RODE NANCY, A FIERY LITTLE MARE HER UNCLE HENRY CRAPO HAD GIVEN HER ON CHRISTMAS, 1935, TAKING ONLY THE SMALLEST JUMPS AND WITH A GROOM TO SEE THAT SHE AND LITTLE HARKER ALMY, MUCH YOUNGER EVEN THAN SHE, DID NOT GET LOST OR OTHERWISE INTO TROUBLE. BUT EVEN IN THOSE EARLY DAYS SHE WAS OFTEN IN AT THE KILL. IT WAS NOT THE KILL ITSELF, WHICH HAPPENED INFREQUENTLY AT ANY RATE, THAT SHE LOVED, BUT THE EXCITEMENT OF THE CHASE, THE CRY OF THE HOUNDS, THE BEAUTY OF THE COUNTRY, AND ABOVE ALL HER HORSE. SHE WAS TAKING ALL THE JUMPS BEFORE THE END OF THE 1937 SEASON, AND THEREAFTER THERE WAS NO MORE GROOM. SHE AND NANCY WENT WELL THROUGH THE NEXT YEAR.

THE FALL OF 1938 SHE WENT AWAY TO SCHOOL AT CHATHAM HALL IN VIRGINIA AND HER HUNTING HAD TO BE CROWDED IN TO HER CHRISTMAS

vacation, when ice and snow are likely to be met with in New England, even in the part below Cape Cod, where the Gulf Stream makes winter hunting possible, and her spring vacation, which was all too short. Nancy had developed a bad knee and was on the rough now, so she rode the Boydens' Minnie or Alex Pierce's Carey and once one of Bayard Tuckerman's beautiful grays. That winter she acquired School Bell, a three year old three-quarter bred mare given her by the publishers of the magazine *Country Life* as a prize for a story to be written by a child. Sally, unbeknownst to her parents, had entered the contest and when she was fourteen had written a beautiful story about fox hunting that won her the prize. The news came nearly a year after she had sent the story in, as a complete surprise to her for she had not realized the contest was to run for so long, and had forgotten all about it. But Sally's prize was too green to hunt, though she spent most of the summer of 1940 schooling it and had taken it to Holmquist School in New Hope when she went there that next fall.

A horse was needed for the Christmas hunting in 1940, so Sambo was brought down from Hamilton on trial when the hounds came home to Quansett in early December. Sally hunted him all that vacation and loved him. When she went back to school in January, we took Sambo back to Pokanoket Farm, across the river from Padanaram, and kept him "up" so that Sally could hunt him again in her spring vacation, considerably longer than that at Chatham, and she did so hunt him with great pleasure.

Last summer School Bell stayed in New Hope to be ready for Sally when she should go back in late September for her last year of school, and Nancy had a little foal, Joker, so Sally, when she wasn't sailing her twelve footer at Nonquitt, or racing it — and she won many races too that summer — or dancing, or going to church, or gentling and fondling the colt, spent most of her time with Sambo. She borrowed a cart and started driving him, because gasoline was beginning to get short, and found he drove perfectly. "Dad," she said, "Sambo is wonderful, he will do anything." But Sambo, like his mistress, was fundamentally a hunter. He was big and rangy, and though a far safer horse than either Nancy or School Bell, he was certainly not a show horse.

After they had pinned the blue ribbon on Sambo in that first equitation class, Sally rode up to me. "Dad," she said again, "thank goodness they didn't make us change leads. Sambo will do most anything, but he won't change leads in the show ring." And as Dad had to go back to Nonquitt for a wedding, Sally offered to put Sambo over

the jumps on the little outside course so Dad could see him go. "Where is your derby?" said Dad. "Oh, I have it here, but I don't need it over these silly little jumps and I don't want to wear it, and I never do when I am just jumping little things at the farm." So Dad was weak minded and Sally, without the derby, took Sambo over the jumps beautifully except for the last jump which was just low brush, as Sambo well knew, which he just ran through.

Dad went back to Nonquitt to join Mother and John and get ready for the wedding, and, after riding in another class or two, Sally, looking so beautiful and radiant and tall and slim in her party clothes, joined them just as they were going down the receiving line. Scarcely was the wedding breakfast served when she said she must be getting back to her horse show and a couple of more very important classes. Mother's pleas that she would be tired and that the show could get on without her were of no avail and shortly thereafter, though none of us knew just when, she slipped away and we never saw her again.

It was the last class and Sally had just admitted to a friend that she was very tired. Sambo was probably a bit tired and very bored. They had been around once and cleared the jumps perfectly. As they came off the last jump spectators think that Sambo started to swerve to the left towards the stable, and that Sally tried to turn him too quickly to the right, to have one more go, the last one of the show, at those jumps. She was a beautiful rider and he a very safe horse — we had never known him to stumble — but she was tired and probably was not riding well then. And he probably did not change his lead. He went down in a heap, some thought on top of Sally. But surely Sally, without her derby, struck on her head.

Her friend and hunting companion, Doctor Bonney, was judging the show. He rushed her to the hospital in New Bedford and saw that she had every possible care as did her cousin, Dr. Channing Frothingham, who rushed up from his tennis, and the brain specialists who came from Boston that night. She was still unconscious when we reached the hospital, having heard of the accident when sitting on the Nonquitt beach, and she stayed unconscious for eight long months, partly spent in Boston hospitals, partly back in her Padanaram home. Then on May 4, 1942, she died. There can never be anyone else like Sally.

Sarah Bullard's prize story published with the head note which follows, in *Country Life* for December, 1939, on a page headed "The Young Sportsman:"

"Sarah Bullard, of New Bedford, Mass., a student at Chatham Hall,

at Chatham, Va., is the winner of the story contest held by *Country Life* during the past few months. She gets her choice of a pony or a dog, to be sent her at Christmas time.

"Her story, 'The Hunt Passes By,' was judged the best because it is soundly constructed, full of feeling and very well written. *Country Life* congratulates the young winner — she was 14 when she wrote the story, is now 15 — and thanks everyone who entered stories in the contest."

(Note. *Country Life* presented Sally with a full sized hunter instead of with a pony.)

#### "THE HUNT PASSES BY

"A cold, gusty wind was blowing from the North; the sky was dull and gray, and because of a sticky, wet snow, I did not think it a good day for the dangerous sport of fox hunting. However, I started out, but the footing was slippery, and the jumping difficult and dangerous. I avoided as many jumps as possible, and because of my caution, I lost the hounds.

"Evidently my mare must have slipped on the slick snow, and twisted her leg, because she suddenly seemed to go lame. I stopped to see where the trouble lay.

"Deciding that she had just wrenched her leg, and that there was nothing I could do at the present I was about to mount and head for home when I heard the hounds break into full cry in the woods beside me. They seemed to be coming nearer. I feared I should turn the fox if I wasn't careful, but even as this thought passed through my mind, the small reddish-gray animal in question ran into the narrow lane where I was standing.

"The nimble fox crossed the lane in three leaps and made his way into a near-by snow covered field. As he raced across the field, standing out clearly against the white of the snow, he showed plainly that he could run for many miles yet without tiring. He held his brush high, and he ran with an easy grace. Standing well back, he practically flew over the stone wall at the end of the field.

"At the sound of crashing underbrush, I turned around in time to see a tawny, black and tan hound, Rascal, come bounding out of the woods, the pack at his heels. They tore into the field. Their noses close to the ground. One by one, they, like the fox, disappeared over the jump at the end of the field. Their music still echoing through the fields when they were gone from sight.

"Then the master, who made a beautiful picture in his pink coat

on his far-famed gray mare against the gray of the sky and the white of the snow, galloped into the field with a whip at his heels. Master and mare, followed by the whip, all took the wall faultlessly, just as the field of riders came pounding up the road.

"They came to a sliding, slipping stop and turned into the field on the trail of the master. Urging their lathered mounts into a faster speed, they too strung out in the field, clearing the wall, one after the other, without mishap.

"As the last one disappeared a last faint halloo of the master, urging his hounds on came like music to my ears.

"I turned my mare's head, and slowly we limped towards home.

"SARAH BULLARD, aged 14."

## PART TWO

The Rotches Speak For Themselves



MEMORANDUM  
Written by  
WILLIAM ROTCH  
in 1814 in the  
EIGHTIETH YEAR OF HIS AGE

A FRIEND of mine has repeatedly requested me to put on paper some of the occurrences of about Twenty Years of my life from 1775 to 1794 which he had heard me relate in conversation.

When the Revolutionary War began in 1775 I saw clearly that the only line of conduct to be pursued by us, the Inhabitants of the Island of Nantucket, was to take no part in the contest, and to endeavor to give no occasion of offence to either of the contending Powers.

A great portion of the Inhabitants were of the Denomination of Friends, and a large number of the considerate of other Societies united in the opinion that our safety was in a state of Neutrality as far as it could be obtained, though we had no doubt that suffering would be our lot, which we often experienced from both parties. Our situation was rendered more difficult by having a few restless Spirits amongst us, who had nothing to lose, and who were often thwarting our pacific plan, and subjecting us to danger, not caring what confusion they brought upon us, if they could get something in the scramble.

My own trials begun soon after the War broke out. In the year 1764 I had taken the Goods of a Merchant in Boston, deceased insolvent, who was Deeply indebted to me.

Among these were a number of muskets, some with, and others without bayonets. The straits of Belleisle opened a new field for the Whale Fishery, where wild fowl were abundant, and my Guns met with a rapid sale. Whenever those with Bayonets were chosen, I took that instrument from them. The purchaser would insist on having it, as an appendage belonging to the Gun, and I as strenuously withheld it, and laid them all by. Many Years afterwards I removed to another store, leaving much rubbish in the one I had left. Among the rubbish were these Bayonets, neglected and forgotten; until the War commenced, when to my surprise they were brought into view by an application for them, made by a person from the Continent.

The time was now come to endeavor to support our Testimony against War, or abandon it, as this very instrument was a severe test. I could not hesitate which to choose, and therefore denied the

applicant. My reason for not furnishing them was demanded, to which I readily answered, "As this instrument is purposely made and used for the destruction of mankind, I can put no weapon into a man's hand to destroy another, that I cannot use myself in the same way"—The person left me much dissatisfied. Others came, and received the same denial. It made a great noise in the Country, and my life was threatened. I would gladly have beaten them into "pruning hooks," but I took an early opportunity of throwing them into the sea.

A short time after I was called before a Committee appointed by the Court then held at Watertown near Boston, and questioned amongst other things respecting my Bayonets.

I gave a full account of my proceedings, and closed it with saying, "I sunk them in the bottom of the sea, I did it from principle, I have ever been glad that I had done it, and if I am wrong I am to be pitied." The Chairman of the Committee Major Hawley (a worthy character) then addressed the Committee, and said "I believe Mr. Rotch has given us a candid account, and everyman has a right to act consistently with his religious principles, but I am sorry that we could not have the Bayonets, for we want them very much."

The Major was desirous of knowing more of our principles on which I informed him as far as he enquired.

One of the Committee in a pert manner observed "then your principles are passive Obedience and non-resistance." I replied "No my friend, our principles are active Obedience, or passive suffering." I had passed this no small trial respecting my Bayonets, but the clamor against me long continued.

From the Year 1775 to the end of the War, we were in continual embarrassments — Our Vessels captured by the English, and our small vessels and boats sent to the various parts of the Continent for provisions, denied, and sent back empty, under pretence that we supplied the British, which was without the least foundation. Prohibitory Laws were often made in consequence of these unfounded reports. By this inhuman conduct we were sometimes in danger of being starved. One of these Laws was founded on an information from Governor Trumbull of Connecticut, who had been imposed upon respecting our conduct in supplying the British.

I wrote to the Governor on the subject, and laid our distress very home to him, assuring him at the same time that nothing of that kind had taken place. He was convinced of his error, and was ever after very kind in assisting us within his jurisdiction.

But there were so many petty Officers, as Committees of Safety, Inspection, etc. in all parts, and too many of them chosen much upon the principle of Jeroboam's Priests, that we were sorely afflicted.

It was about the year 1778 when the current in the Country was very strong against us at Nantucket, the vessels we sent after provisions, sent back empty, and great suffering for want of food was likely to take place, that the people who thought we ought to have joined in the War (not Friends) began to chide and murmur against me. They considered me the principal cause that we did not unite in the War (which I knew was measureably the case,) when we might have been plentifully supplied, but were now likely to starve, little considering that if we had taken a part, there was nothing but supernatural aid (which we had no reason to expect) that could have prevented our destruction.

Though I had done everything in my power for our preservation, this murmuring of the people operated so severely upon my spirits, that I was once (a time never to be forgotten) on the point of asking of that Divine Being who gave me life, that he would take it from me, for my affliction seemed more than I could bear. But being restrained by that good hand, which had so often been my deliverer, after shedding a flood of tears, my mind was more easy, and my spirit revived.

In the Year 1779 seven armed Vessels and Transports with soldiers from Newport came to us, the latter commanded by George Leonard, an American, as were his troops in general, having joined the English. They plundered us of much property, some from me, but a considerable amount from Thomas Jenkins. While they were plundering his store, I attempted to pass the Guard they had set, being desirous to see Leonard, and intercede with him to desist. But the Guard arrested my progress with the Bayonet. After some time Timothy Folger succeeded in speaking to him, and advised him to go off, for the people would not bear it much longer. He took the hint, and retired much enraged.

We soon had information that Leonard & Co. were preparing another and a more formidable expedition to visit us. The Town was convened to consult what measures should be taken in this trying emergency, which resulted in sending Dr. Benjamin Tupper, Samuel Starbuck and myself to Newport, to represent our case to the Commanders of the Navy and Army. We arrived in the harbor of Newport, where Captain Dawson commanded the Navy, and General Prescott the Army.

But the American Refugees had made interest with the General not to suffer us to land, and we were ordered by Dawson to depart. We interceded with him to let us stay a little longer, for we found the Expedition was progressing rapidly, and unless we could arrest it, it would be in vain to proceed to New York. Dawson by request of General Prescott, under the influence of the Refugees, ordered our immediate departure again. Dr. Tupper now for the first time went on board, and in his plain blunt way, after the usual ceremony of entry, addressed him in this manner —

"You order us to depart. We cannot be frightened away, nor will we depart. We know the extent of your authority. You may make a prize of our vessel, and imprison us — much better for us to be thus treated, than to be sent away. We came here for peace, and you ought to encourage everything of this kind," etc. — His reasons made such an impression on Captain Dawson, that he gave us liberty to stay as long as we pleased — The Refugee Boat came several times to us, to get us (to go) off — We insisted on going on shore, but they as often refused us. After this conversation with Dawson, the Boat came again, and Dr. Tupper insisted that he would go on shore — They still denied him unless he intended to stay with them. As he was not always exact in his expressions, to answer his purpose he says "Well, I am going to stay," and almost forcibly got into their Boat, and went on shore, being satisfied that if he could once see the General, he could in this respect destroy the influence of the Refugees. He accordingly got liberty for Samuel Starbuck to come on shore, and the next day for me to follow. We found it necessary to be in friendship with the Refugees, that if possible we might stop the current of their intended predatory visit.

I got on shore in the afternoon, and found that I must wait on General Prescott. — Knowing his brittle temper, and it being in the afternoon I almost dreaded to appear in his presence. However, let my treatment be what it would, I wished it over and accordingly went.

I was introduced to him by one of his Aids — He received me very cordially, gave me his hand, and said "Mr. Rotch will you have some dinner? — I can give you good bread, though the Rebels say we have none." I thanked him saying I had dined — "Well, will you take a glass of wine?" I answered "I have no objection if thou canst put up with my plain way" — The glass was filled, with his own, and those of all the Officers at table — as a stranger introduced, they all drank to me before I put the glass to my lips — I

then observed to the General, "As I mentioned before if thou couldst put up with my plain way, I was willing to take wine with thee, but as we as a society disuse these ceremonies, I have always found it best to keep to my profession, let me be in what Company I may. Therefore I hope my not making a like return will not be accepted as any mark of disrespect, for I assure thee it is not the case." His answer was, "Oh, no, if a Quaker will but be a Quaker, it is all I want of him — But ——— is no Quaker" — (naming one of our profession) and I was sorry for the cause of his remark.

After some conversation, I mentioned that I did not wish to intrude further on his time, and rose to retire — "Oh no," says he, "you must take Coffee." I accordingly stopped. He was full of conversation respecting the siege of the Americans, and made it a very trifling thing. I then mentioned (the French Fleet being at that time before the Town) that twelve capital ships being before the Town we thought was much against them.

"To be sure," said he, "it is not very pleasant, but we do not mind them."

I then gladly got away. We applied to Major Winslow formerly of Plymouth to introduce us to Colonel Fanning who was the principal. When we mentioned our situation, that we were likely to be destroyed, the Colonel was very high, saying we might join the English then — We observed that such a step would inevitably destroy us. — "Well," said he, "I have been destroyed also" — (I believe he was Governor of North Carolina at the beginning of the War) — Major Winslow endeavored to soften him by representing our peculiar situation, but there seemed little prospect of anything favorable when we parted. They had a Board of Refugees established, Colonel Fanning President, who would hear us when they met. We accordingly attended, and found Fanning very mild, and disposed to alleviate our sufferings — and as we proposed applying to the Commanders in New York, we asked if they would put off their expedition, until they could know the result of our mission there.

Fanning thought this reasonable, and put the question to all the Principals there — They readily agreed until it came to Leonard, who very reluctantly gave his assent.

We then proceeded to New York, and applied to the Commanders, Commodore Sir George Collier of the Navy, and Sir Henry Clinton of the Army. On representing our case to Sir George, he readily gave us an Order, forbidding any British armed Vessel to take any thing out of our harbor. This was a great relief.

I then laid before him the state of our captured seamen, that all the exchange of prisoners at that time was partial, that as we made no prisoners, we had none to exchange, consequently ours remained in the Prison Ships until they mostly died. On his understanding the reasonableness of the request, he ordered that all our men should be released that were not taken in armed vessels (for such we had no right to apply) and that it should not be so in future as long as he had command.

We also applied to Sir Henry Clinton through one of his Aids. (Major Andre that fine young man who lost his life as a Spy.) We could get no written order from him, but he intimated that he would direct that those in his department should not molest us, which no doubt he did, as they gave over their expedition, and we had a little quiet, until Sir George Collier's command was superseded by the arrival of Admiral Arbuthnot, and the shaving mills then came upon us.

Timothy Folger was then sent to New York, and he obtained a like Order as that from Sir George Collier. Added to this, he got Permits for a few vessels, about fifteen, to whale on our Coast, which were successful, but it was with great difficulty that distinction could be made between British and American armed vessels, as the latter would make prize of us if British Permits were found.

I now come to the most trying scene in my experience during the War, — which was being with four others impeached for High Treason by Thomas Jenkins, where there was no step between being clear, and death.

The laws of this state at that time made it high treason for any person to go to a British Port without the consent of the Court.

We were well assured that if we applied we should be refused, and if we did not apply to the British, we should from every appearance be destroyed by them. Under serious consideration I was willing to be joined to the two others before mentioned and proceed, as with our lives in our hands. This was made one of the great charges among others in the Impeachment, a copy of which will be annexed.

We were examined before a Committee of the Court on the Impeachment, but knowing we were to appear again when the witnesses should attend, we made no defence, which we afterwards found was an error in judgment.

By this means the Court thought us guilty, and were about making out an Order to the Grand Jury, to find a Bill against us and

commit us to Prison, which if it had taken place would have been in the severe winter of 1780.

But happily my much valued friend Walter Spooner Esqr, a member of the Court, just then arrived, perceived the business before the Court, and came to us for information. We told him we had reserved our defence for the second examination. He considered us in an error, and said we must send for Jenkins who resided at Lynn, and have another examination, and he would get the Court to stay their proceeding until this should be done.

We accordingly all met before the Committee, General Ward a worthy character in the Chair.

It was put to me first to answer to the high charges. (When I rose he politely told me I need not rise — I thanked him, but my heart was so full that my tongue seemed incapable of utterance while sitting.) I answered to the charges in such a manner as fully to convince the Committee of our innocence — When it was finished, the Chairman, I have no doubt from a desire to put our minds at ease, asked me when we expected to return home — I replied that he could better judge of that than I could — (being now in custody) — He then asked me if I would take the supeneas for the witnesses to Nantucket, and deliver them to the sheriff. This was also to console our minds. I answered in the affirmative if he thought proper to entrust me with them. I accordingly took and delivered them.

In the spring following we appeared again with Twelve out of Twenty witnesses, who were all I could get to attend, and then had another full examination.

Before we entered upon it I desired liberty to ask Jenkins a question, which was granted. Some of his friends had propagated a report, that I had offered him money, if he would withdraw his Complaint. I then put the question to him, whether I had ever made him any offer of the kind — But it irritated him — I therefore went no further in a question to him, but desired liberty to make my declaration, before we entered on the charges in the complaint, which was readily granted. I then said, "I now declare in the most solemn manner, that I never have, directly or indirectly, by myself, or by any person for me, proposed or offered one farthing to Thomas Jenkins to withdraw, or in any way to mitigate the charges in his complaint now exhibited."

I looked over the charges, and made my Defence Article by Article — and when I had gone through the whole, I observed to the Committee, that if I had not answered clearly to their satisfac-

tion, if they would put any question that they thought would throw more light on the subject, I would answer it without equivocation or mental reservation. The Chairman General Ward made me a low bow, and asked no question, by which they appeared satisfied.

They then took the Complaint, and examined the witnesses, one by one upon each charge — “What do you know of this Mr. such a one?” (reading the Charge) “nothing” — and so to the next, and throughout the whole charges, and the whole Witnesses, when “nothing” was the universal answer, except from Marshall Jenkins — He began to tell what the Refugees told him at the Vineyard when they returned from Nantucket.

The Chairman stopped him, and said, “were you at Nantucket?” He answered “no” — “Then you can give no evidence.”

One charge against me was corresponding with the Enemy. This correspondence was a letter given to Ebenezer Coffin, addressed to General Prescott, requesting the release of his son, and assuring him that he had not been in an armed vessel.

This same Ebenezer acquainted his Brother Alexander that I had furnished him with this letter, who used his utmost against me.

The Committee were composed of the two Branches, the House and Senate, who reported to their several Departments. The House then took the vote and cleared us fully except one single vote. But the Senate in their vote held us — The House then desired the Senate to appoint a Committee of conference, and they would do the same. They met, and reported, each Branch adhering to their former vote.

Thus we were discharged by the House, and held by the Senate, (but not detained) and so it remained until we were set at liberty by the Peace.

In the Complaint I was charged with being the means of preventing a Brig which had much of Jenkins’s property on board from being re-taken — I suppose that was the case, by reasoning with the Owners of the Vessel then present.

The seven armed vessels had now gone over the Bar, and anchored, waiting for the flowing of the tide to take the Brig out — It was then suggested by some hot-headed men, that they could re-take her — I admitted it, but asked the Owners if it would be an even stake, observing “they have now got what they will take at this time, and if this vessel is stopped, it will bring the whole seven armed vessels into the harbor again, and no doubt the destruction of the Town will be the consequence” — For there was no effective force to prevent it. “If you (the Owners) will let her go, I am will-

ing to contribute to the loss of Vessel and Goods on board, in the same proportion that I should pay in a Tax of equal amount" — A great number of people were present, who generally united in the proposal. The Owners let the Vessel go, and I contributed Seven Hundred and Twenty dollars toward the loss of the property, which was more than double my proportion of a like Tax.

When this circumstance was known while we were in Boston, it raised great indignation against Jenkins, that such a charge should be in the Complaint, when I had made double compensation to what I ought.

In a conversation at the time of our examination with him, several others present, I understood him that I ought to make some concession. My answer was "if turning my hand over by way of concession, would withdraw the Complaint, I will never do it — If my innocence will not protect me, and my life should be taken, my blood will be required at thy hands" — This shocked him very much, but it did not last long, as he told some of his friends that he believed Samuel Starbuck and myself were clear. They then asked him why he did not take our names out of the Complaint — He replied "because it suits me best to keep them in."

So callous a heart I hope is not often to be met with, thus playing with our lives as with a Tennis Ball. I am glad to leave this tragic scene and proceed —

Some-time in the Year 1780 Admiral Arbuthnot returned to England, and Admiral Digby succeeded him. As soon as Arbuthnot was gone, those plundering Refugees were upon us again, our protection having ceased by his Departure. This renewed our perplexity. The Town was convened to consult about measures to prevent destruction -- The result was to send a Committee again to New York, to solicit an Order from Admiral Digby similar to that which we had before. It was proposed for me to go with two others. I had then been confined nearly nine months with the Rheumatism, had just left my crutches, and was hobbling about with a cane — Therefore I could not think of such an undertaking. But all others utterly refused to go, unless I would accompany them. This brought a great straight on my mind — To go I thought I could not, and to omit it seemed almost inevitable destruction. At last I consented, under great apprehension that I should not live to return. We accordingly set sail, and when we were off Rhode Island, I was obliged to have them go to the East side of the Island, and lay there several days, for my pain was so great that I could

not bear the motion of the vessel — But we got safe to New York in a few days after it abated.

Admiral Digby had arrived — Commodore Affleck (since Admiral) still being there, and he having kindly assisted in getting the Permits for a few whaling vessels the year before, we applied first to him — We asked him to introduce us to the Admiral, and assist us in procuring protection against their cruisers in our harbor, and some Permits for the Fishery.

He looked very stern, and said, “I don’t know how you can have the face to ask any indulgence of us — I assisted in getting Permits for you last year, which I have been very sorry for. I find that you have abused the confidence we placed in you, for Captain —— who cruised in Boston Bay and its vicinity told me that he could hardly find a vessel but what had the Permits, and you deserve no favor” &c &c — I heard him patiently through, while he was giving us such a lecture, knowing I could overthrow it all — I then answered “Commodore Affleck thou hast been greatly imposed upon in this matter. I defy Captain —— to make such a declaration to my face. Those Permits were put into my hands — I delivered them, taking receipts for each, to be returned to me at the end of the voyage, and an obligation that no transfer should be made, nor copies given. I received back all the Permits except two before I left home, and should probably have received those two on the day that I sailed. Now if any such duplicity has been practiced, I am the person who is accountable, and I am now here to take the punishment such perfidy deserves.”

He immediately became placid, and said, “You deserve favor. I am now going to the Admiral — do you be there in an hour” — We attended punctually — He introduced us to the Admiral, and informed him that his predecessor Admiral Arbuthnot granted the people of Nantucket a few Permits for the Fishery last year, adding, “and I can assure your Excellency they have made no bad use of them.”

Thus after a storm came a pleasant calm. We obtained an Order, as heretofore, respecting the property in our harbor, and Twenty four Permits for the Fishery — And I returned home much improved in my health.

It was necessary to secrete these Documents from American Cruisers, but such was the difficulty of distinguishing them, that two were presented to American armed vessels, who immediately took the vessels as prizes. This occasioned us to pursue other means

for the security of this small privilege, though a very useful one to us, which I shall mention hereafter.

We were now brought into the most eminent danger, which no human effort could check, much less prevent. Nothing short of the interposition of Divine Providence preserved us from apparent ruin. Several Sloops of War, and a number of Transports intended paying us a destructive visit. They were in sight of us in the three days, near Cape Poag (Martha's Vineyard) — They got under way three mornings successively, and stood for the Island with a fair wind, which each morning soon came round against them, and the tide by that time became unfavorable, which obliged them to return to their anchorage still in view of us.

Before they could make the fourth attempt, Orders came for their return to New York for some other Expedition.

Thus we were mercifully relieved for that time, after more fearful apprehension than any we had before witnessed. Messengers were arriving one after another, and twice I was called up in the night with the disagreeable information that they were at hand. A solemn time indeed it was, and can never be obliterated from my memory while life and reason are vouchsafed.

We had a few restless Spirits amongst us, who were continually involving us in perplexity whenever opportunity offered. From a misrepresentation it was sometimes charged upon the Inhabitants at large, though without the least foundation, therefore this Arma-  
ment was prepared to strip us of what could be found.

When this misrepresentation was discovered, those who authorized the Expedition appeared very glad that it was not executed.

I was one with ten men, and two Women friends, captured in going to our Quarterly meeting at Sandwich by a British Privateer from New York. They had just before taken a Cedar Boat, and ordered us to depart in it immediately, having first plundered us of what money they could find, but they took neither baggage nor provisions from us.

The Vessel was mine, and I pleaded earnestly for her, and sometimes nearly obtained a majority to give her to us — But another Can of Grog would be stirred up by those who would not consent to release her, and this never failed to gain several to their side. They repeatedly ordered us into the boat and to be gone, 'till the Captain of the Privateer called to the Prize Master, to know why he did not send us away. He replied, "they will not go." He then sent a furious fellow to drive us off. Samuel Starbuck and myself were standing together, he approached us with a violent counte-

nance, and uplifted Cutlass, saying "Begone into the boat, or I'll cut your heads off." I looked him earnestly in the face, eye to eye, and with a pretty stern accent, said "I am not afraid of thy cutting my head off — We are prisoners, treat us as such, and not talk of cutting our heads off." — He dropped his arm with his cutlass, and seemed very much struck at my boldness.

There were now two vessels coming rapidly in pursuit of them, and we thought it was time to be off. They soon retook our vessel, and pursued the Privateer, and took her, but the men left her in their boat, and got on shore on the Vineyard. They hunted them, and took all except that one who threatened to cut off our heads, and he made his escape.

Our vessel being retaken, I recovered her by paying salvage, as did a young man the most of his money, who had two hundred dollars taken from him.

I now return to the Permits granted us by Admiral Digby. The American Cruisers generally had knowledge of our whaling Vessels having them, therefore every deception and disguise was resorted to, to entrap them. They were too successful in drawing the Permit from two and taking them as prizes.

It was now evident that we could proceed no further without having Permits from both contending Powers. Accordingly the Town was convened, and Samuel Starbuck and myself were sent to Congress, to represent our distressed situation, an endeavor to obtain their permission, as well as that of the British for a few vessels.

We set off in mid-winter and arrived in Philadelphia where Congress was sitting. We opened our business first to General Lincoln, Samuel Osgood, Nathaniel Gorham, and Thomas Fitzsimmons. The first was Minister of War, the others were members of Congress. The last a great commercial man. To them we opened our whole business — We drew up a Memorial but did not present it until we had an opportunity of stating our case, to the most influential members. Among them was President Madison, who as well as others, treated us with great civility, and seemed to take an interest in our sufferings.

We went to one of the Massachusetts Members, who resided in Boston. He was extremely prejudiced against us. I fell in with him alone, and conversed about two hours with him, endeavoring to impress him with our situation, and the necessity of our having the aid of Congress, but apparently with little effect. At last I asked him three questions, which were "is the whale fishery worth pre-

serving in this Country?" — "Yes" — "Can it be preserved in the present state of things by any place except Nantucket?" — "No" — "Can we pursue it unless you and the British will give us Permits?" — "No" — "Then pray where is the difficulty?" — Thus we parted. We reported this conversation to our beforementioned friends.

We had now drawn our Memorial, and desired them to look it over. They approved it, and advised us to get the same person to present it. Accordingly we repaired to his apartments, requested him to examine it, and give us his judgment whether our statement appeared correct. He approved it — We then requested him to present it to Congress, if it was agreeable to him to do so. — He accepted, and presented it accordingly. It was deliberated upon in Congress, and a disposition appeared to give their aid in its accomplishment. They eventually granted us Permits for Thirty five vessels for the Whale Fishery.

They were delivered to us, and the next day a Vessel arrived from Europe, bringing a rumor of a Provincial Treaty of Peace having been signed by our Ministers and the British Government, to take place when the Peace between England and France should be concluded. And it was not long before an official account of it reached Philadelphia.

Thus ended this destructive War, with the separation of the United States from Great Britain.

Our arduous labors, after five or six weeks attention, were now terminated, and might have been spared, if we had apprehended Peace had been so near. The British were still to hold New York, and other Territories now ceded to the United States, for a limited time. I obtained liberty to proceed to that City to accomplish some business, and then returned home.

The happy return of Peace was now enjoyed in the United States, but poor Nantucket, whose distresses did not end with the War, though rejoiced at the event, still seemed doomed for a time to ruin in the Whale Fishery. Separated from Great Britain, the only market of any consequence for Sperm Oil, we were necessarily brought under the Alien Duty of 18 pounds Sterling pr Ton — A duty laid upon Aliens to encourage British Subjects. Such we then were, but this duty had its full force upon us. Sperm Oil was sold at Nantucket after the Peace at 17 pounds Sterlg pr Ton, which before we were separated was worth nearly 30 pounds Sterling. 25 pounds Sterling was necessary at that time to cover the expenses, and leave a very moderate profit to the Owners. Thus a loss of nearly 8 pounds Sterlg pr Ton attended the business.

We continued it for two years at a certain loss, with a hope that some more favorable turn might take place. But no such prospect appearing, and the loss I had sustained by Captures in the Revolutionary War (about \$60,000) had so reduced my property, that I found it necessary to seek some new expedient to prevent the loss of all. I found no probable alternative but to proceed to England, and endeavor to pursue the Fishery from there.

I accordingly took passage on the Ship *Maria*, William Mooers Master, accompanied by my son Benjamin, and sailed from Nantucket on the 4th of 7th month 1785. We had a fine passage of Twenty three days, five of which, having Easterly winds, we gained only one day's sail forward in that time. I proceeded to London, calling on my old friend Doctor William Cooper at Rochester, (who with his family went to England in this same ship two years before) and requesting him to accompany me to London, which he kindly did.

When we reached Shooter's Hill, in full view of London, and Eight miles distant, forcibly feeling the great distance which separated me from my family, myself a stranger in that land, the occasion that drew me there, and the uncertainty of its answering any valuable purpose, I was overwhelmed with sorrow, and my spirits so depressed, that in looking toward that great City, no pleasant pictures were presented to my view. But I found it would not do to give way to despondence, reason resumed her empire, I was there, and something must be attempted.

We reached London, and I took lodgings for myself and my son Benjamin at Thomas Wagstaff's in Gracechurch Street. Our first Journey was to the West of England, in which we had the agreeable company of my friend James Phillips. We visited the Sea Coast from Southampton, to Falmouth, in search of a good situation for the Whale Fishery, if we should conclude to form an Establishment on that Island. We found several Ports suitable for the purpose, but none that we preferred to Falmouth. In that large Harbor, there are several smaller, that would do well for the business. I had very favorable offers of divers places, but I was only on discovery, and did not wish to entangle myself with any. After viewing the Coast, and spending some days at Plymouth, we took a circuitous route, and returned to London. — At Bristol I visited the Grave of my Brother Joseph, who died there Eighteen Years before.

My next Object was to know what encouragement we could obtain from the British Government.

My friend Robert Barclay perceiving what my business was, spoke to Harry Beaufoy, a Member of Parliament who introduced me to the Chancellor of the Exchequer (the great William Pitt then about Twenty seven years of age.)

He received me politely, and heard me patiently. I laid before him our ruinous situation, saying "when the War begun, we declared against taking any part in it, and strenuously adhered to this determination, thus placing ourselves as a Neutral Island. Nevertheless you have taken from us about Two Hundred sail of Vessels, valued at 200,000 pounds Sterling, unjustly and illegally. Had that War been founded on a general Declaration against America, we should have been included in it, but it was predicated on a Rebellion, consequently none could be in Rebellion but such as were in arms, or those that were aiding such. We have done neither. As a proof of our being without the reach of your Declaration, you sent Commissioners to restore peace to America, in which any Province, County, Town &c that should make submission, and receive pardon, should be reinstated in their former situation. As we had not offended, we had no submission to make, nor pardon to ask — and it is certainly very hard if we do not stand on better ground than those who have offended, consequently we remained a part of your Dominions until separated by the Peace."

This last sentence I pressed closely, wherever I could with propriety introduce it, knowing it was a material point.

After I had done he paused some time, and then answered to our remaining a part of their Dominions until separated by the Peace "most undoubtedly you are right Sir — Now what can be done for you?"

I told him that in the present state of things, the principal part of our Inhabitants must leave the Island. — Some would go into the Country — "A part" said I "wish to continue the Whale Fishery, wherever it can be pursued to advantage — Therefore, my chief business is to lay our distressed situation, and the cause of it, before this Nation, and to ascertain if the Fishery is considered an Object worth giving such encouragement for a removal to England, as the subject deserves."

Thus our conversation ended, and I withdrew with my friend H. Beaufoy.

The Chancellor of the Exchequer could not be expected to attend to all applications, and I suppose he laid mine before the Privy Council, as the Secretary of the Council Stephen Cotterel sent me a note soon after this conversation, saying the Council would sit

at an early day, when they would hear what I had to offer. I waited for that early day a month, and then applied to Secretary Cotterel to know what occasioned the delay — The answer was, that so much business lay before them, that they had not been able to attend to it, but would soon.

Thus I waited, not daring to leave Town lest I should be called for. This state of things continued more than four months, during which time I received several, what I called unmeaning Court messages, "that they were sorry they had not been able to call for me" &c —

I then desired them to appoint some person for me to confer with, that the matter might be brought to a close. This was done — But unhappily Lord Hawksbury was the person. A greater Enemy to America, I believe, could not be found in that Body, nor hardly in the Nation.

I waited on him, and informed him what encouragement I thought would induce a removal, which I estimated at 100 pounds-Sterling transportation for a family of five persons, and 100 pounds settlement. Say 20,000 pounds — for a hundred families. "Oh!" says he, "this is a great sum, and at this time when we are endeavoring to economise in our expenditures." I replied, "Thou mayst think it a great sum for this Nation to pay, I think two thirds of it a great sum for you to have taken from me as an Individual, unjustly and illegally." We had a long conversation, and I left him to call again, which I did in a few days.

I then added to my demand the liberty to bring in Thirty American Ships for the Fishery. "Oh no," said he, "that cannot be, our Carpenters must be employed." I mentioned that we had some Vessels that we possessed before the War — "Those can surely be admitted" — "No — they must be British built." — "Will it be any advantage, if an Emigration takes place, for the Emigrants to bring property with them?" "Yes" — "If they can invest their property in Articles that will be worth double here to what they are there, will that be an additional advantage to this Country?" "Yes — certainly" — "Then why not bring ships, when two of ours will not cost more than one of yours?" — "Oh we don't make mercantile calculations, 'tis Seamen we want" — "Then surely two of our Ships will answer your purpose better than one of yours, as they will make double the number of Seamen, which must be the very thing aimed at." He saw that he was in a Dilemma, which he could not reason himself out of, and struggled through with some violence.

He had now made his nice calculation of 87 pounds — 10 for

transportation, and settlement of a family — and says he, “I am about a Fishery Bill, and I want to come to something that I may insert it” &c. — My answer was, “Thy offer is no Object, therefore go on with thy Fishery Bill, without any regard to me.” I was then taking leave and withdrawing — “Well, Mr. Rotch, you’ll call on me again in two or three days.” “I see no necessity for it” — “But I desire you would” — “If it is thy desire perhaps I may call.”

However, he let me rest but one day before he sent for me. He had the old story over again, but I told him it was unnecessary to enter again into the subject. I then informed him that I had heard a rumor that Nantucket had agreed to furnish France with a quantity of Oil. He stepped to his Bureau, took out one of a file of papers, and pretended to read an entire contradiction, though I was satisfied there was not a line on the subject.

I said, “it was only a vague report that I heard, and I cannot vouch for the truth of it — But we are like drowning men, catching at every straw that passes by, therefore I am now determined to go to France, and see what it is — If there is any such contract, sufficient to retain us at Nantucket, neither you, nor any other Nation shall have us, and if it is insufficient, I will endeavor to enlarge it.”

“Ah!” says he, “Quakers go to France?” — “Yes,” I replied, “but with regret.” I then parted with Lord Hawksbury for the last time.

I immediately embarked with my Son for Dunkirk, where I drew up our proposals, and sent them to Paris, not wishing to proceed further, until I found the disposition of the French Court. They sent for us to come immediately — We lost no time in answering the summons, and soon reached Paris. The Master of Requests who was the proper Minister to receive our proposals, and to make his remarks on the several Articles, had examined them, and made his remarks accordingly. The propositions were

1st A full and free enjoyment of our Religion, according to the principles of the people called Quakers —

To which he annexed, “Accorde.”

2nd An entire exemption from Military requisitions of every kind.

To this he annexed the following just remark, “as they are a peaceable people, and meddle not with the quarrels of the Princes, neither internal or external, this proposition may be granted.”

The other propositions related to the regulation of the Whale Fishery.

We next proceeded to the several other Ministers at Versailles, five in number. First to Calone Comptroller of Finance — We gave our reasons for not taking off our hats on introduction, to them all — Calone replied, "I care nothing about your hats, if your hearts are right" — Next, to the aged Vergennes, Minister of Foreign Affairs — Then to the Marshall DeCastre Minister of Marine — To the Prince of Reubec Generalissimo of Flanders — and last to — the Intendant of Flanders, who all agreed to my proposals.

We then returned to Paris, and were to visit Versailles again, to take leave, according to the Etiquette of the Court. Before we set off one of the Ministers asked us if we did not wish to see the Palace. We excused ourselves, as we did not think curiosity would justify us, if our plain way would give any offence. While we remained in Paris we received a note, saying the Minister had spoken to the King who gave full liberty for the Nantucket Friends (avoiding the name of Quakers when they found that it was given us in reproach) to visit the Palace, both its public and private apartments, when he was out (which was almost every day).

To view the private Apartments was a great indulgence, not often granted except to persons of note. But unfavorably for us, the King did not happen to be out on the day we went to take leave, which was a disappointment, but we went through the public Apartments, and into the Chapel. When we hesitated at the latter, the Officer insisted on our entering in our own way, showing us every thing remarkable, and pointing out the places occupied by the Royal Family in time of Mass, &c —

We now took leave and returned to London.

After I was gone to France Lord Hawksbury became alarmed, and enquired of Harry Beaufoy if I was gone to France — He answered in the affirmative — "Why is he gone there?" — "For what you or any other person would have gone — You would not make him an offer worth his acceptance — He will now try what can be done in France." Alexander Champion wrote to me, I suppose at Lord Hawksbury's request, to inform me that he had made provision in his Fishery Bill for us, and inserted liberty to bring in Forty Ships, instead of Thirty which I demanded, he having forgotten the number, but it was too late.

This letter was brought to our Apartments, and we understood the bearer to enquire, if a Dutch Gentleman resided there — He was answered in the negative, and my letter was lodged in a small letter Office, always an Appendage to the large Hotels. The very evening we left Paris it was brought to me.

We now returned to London, and I was soon sent for by George Rose (I suppose father of the Minister lately sent to the United States) who was one of Pitt's Secretaries. He enquired if I had contracted with France — I told him, no — I did not come to make any Contract. Propositions were the extent of my business — "You are then at liberty to agree with us — and I am authorized by Mr. Pitt to tell you that you shall make your own terms."

I told him it was too late — "I made very moderate proposals to you, but could not obtain anything worth my notice — I went to France, sent forward my proposals, which were doubly advantageous to what I had offered your Government — They considered them but a short time, and on my arrival in Paris were ready to act. I had a separate interview with all the Ministers of State necessary to the subject (five in number) who all agreed to, and granted my demands. This was effected in five hours, when I had waited to be called by your Privy Council more than four months." He still insisted that as I was not bound to France, I should make my own terms with them, but all in vain — the time had passed over. Lord Sheffield also sent for me on the same subject, but was soon convinced that it was too late. The minority came to me for materials to attack Lord Hawksbury, but I refused.

I now began to prepare for returning to my family. Accordingly I bought a good ship and, with William Mooers Master, we left the Downs the 11th of 10 month 1786 — After a tremendous passage of Sixty Eight days, in which we had twelve heavy storms, we arrived in Boston, and by way of Providence and Newport reached my own home on the 1st of 1st month 1787, and to my unspeakable comfort found my family well after an absence of Eighteen Months.

We next prepared to increase our Fishery in Dunkirk, and my Son Benjamin returned there, to superintend the Business, he having become a partner with my son in law Sannuel Rodman & myself.

After remaining at home nearly four Years, I thought it best to make another voyage, to assist my Son in our business at Dunkirk — And not expecting to return in less than three Years, a term too long to be separated from my family, I proposed to my Wife to go with me, and take our Daughters Lydia & Mary with us, to which she consented — and we also took with us my Son Benjamin's Wife and Child.

We sailed from New Bedford in the Ship *Maria & Eliza*, which I bought for the purpose, Abisha Haydon Master, on the 29th of 7th month 1790. We arrived at Dunkirk in Thirty Eight days, and found

our son Benjamin in health, and greatly rejoiced to receive his Wife and Child, as well as to see us.

Early in the Year 1791 I was called upon with my Son to attend the National Assembly at Paris — We were joined by John Marsillac in presenting a Petition to that Body for some privileges and exemptions connected with our religious principles.

The Petition was drawn by John Marsillac before we reached Paris, and notice given that it must be presented in the next day.

On perusing it, we found some material alterations necessary. And in some instances it was difficult to express in French the alterations we made in English, without losing their force. My not understanding the French Language it was impossible to have such expressions inserted as I thought necessary — And the time was so short, that we were obliged to let it pass with much fewer amendments than we wished.

The hour was come for presenting it, and the previous notice given of the Quaker Petition, I suppose drew every Member in Town to his seat. The Galleries for Spectators were filled, and many could not be accommodated, nor did we wonder at their curiosity, considering the novelty of the Object.

We had been, with Brissot De Warville, Clavier, and some others looking over the Petition until the latest moment, and must now proceed to the Assembly. They with several others had come to accompany us, and just as we were moving, One observed, "You have no Cockades — You must put them on." We told them we could not — It was a distinguishing Badge that we could not make use of. "But," said they, "it is required by Law, to prevent distinction, that people may not be abused, for their lives are in danger without them, and there is always a large Body of the lower classes about the Assembly that we have to pass through." Our answer was, that we could not do it, whatever might be the consequence — That we were willing to go as far as we could, and if stopped, we must submit to it — We saw that our friends were full of fear for our safety. We set out under no small apprehension, but trusting to that Power that can turn the hearts of Men as a water course is turned, we passed through this great Concourse without interruption, and reached the waiting room of the Assembly.

A Messenger informed the President of our arrival, and we were immediately called to the Bar.

John Marsillac read the Petition, with Brissot at his elbow, to correct him in his emphasis, which he frequently did, unperceived I believe except by us. At the close of every subject, there was a

general clapping of hands, and the Officers whose business it was, endeavoring to hush them that the reading might proceed, this hushing I thought was hissing, from my ignorance of the language, and apprehended all was going wrong, until better informed.

After the reading was concluded, the President Mirabeau read his answer. The clapping was repeated at the end of every subject — at the close, the President said — “The Assembly invites you to stay its Sitting.”

As we were passing to the seats assigned us, a person touched Benjamin, and said, “I rejoice to see something of your principles brought before this Assembly.” He did not know who it was. After we were seated, several Members came to us for conversation on the subject of our principles. We remained until the Assembly rose, and then retired to our lodgings.

We next found that a visit to the influential Members, in their private Hotels, was necessary, to impress them with the reasonableness of our requests. We accordingly proceeded, John Marsillac, Benjamin & myself, and met with polite reception from all except two, and nothing more than a careless indifference from them. One was Bernard, a young man of good talents, but great vanity — At our approach he offered us no seats, but threw himself on his Sofa at great ease, which we were told was his common attitude, when Applicants of much more consequence than we were came into his presence. The other was Tallyrand — After endeavoring to impress him with the foundation of our Petition, he made no reply, but let us pass silently away.

We generally found a number of persons with the members we visited, not of the Assembly, but Applicants, soliciting their interest for the different Objects they were pursuing — and the features of our Petition always led to an opportunity of opening our principles at large, particularly that respecting War. They invariably enquired and listened with great attention, and seldom was any opposition expressed. We had much conversation with Bishop Gregory, who was a very catholic man, liberal in his sentiments, and much esteemed — and also with Rabant De St Etienne then Bishop of Autun. He was a very valuable man, and I believe was a blessing to many over whom he presided. He was one that fell a victim to the Guillotine under the sanguinary Reign of Robespierre — He inclined to converse much on non-resistance, and finally, thus summed up what he considered the view of its advocates, and of pure Christianity —

“If an assassin comes, to take my life, and I conscientiously re-

frain from taking his to save it, I may trust some interposition for my deliverance. If however, no interposition appearing, I still refrain from precipitating a soul unprepared into Eternity, and he is suffered to effect his purpose on me, I may hope to find mercy for myself."

The Object of our Petition was of little consequence to me, whether granted or not compared with the opportunity we now had, of somewhat spreading the knowledge of our fundamental Principles, above all that of the Inward Light or Spirit of God in every man, as a primary Rule of Faith and Practice. We met with a number of serious persons, who were in great measure convinced of the rectitude of our Faith, and they gathered to us at our Hotel one evening after another, one inviting others to come with them, until these social meetings in our apartments became exceedingly interesting. The conversation was almost wholly on religious subjects, and they always appeared well satisfied with the hours thus spent.

It was then a turbulent time in Paris, and much more so afterwards — Several of those valuable persons fell in the Reign of Terror, and others are beyond my knowledge, but the remembrance of those Evenings and of the feeling of divine influence that attended them I believe will never pass away.

One of our Visitors informed us that the Duchess of Bourbon was greatly interested in the principles we profess, and said if we wished to see her, he would make way for it — But Benjamin's business calling him home, and my not speaking the French Language, we could not accept the proffered interview. We therefore returned to Dunkirk.

In the course of the Year 1792 fresh trials awaited us. A great Insurrection took place in Dunkirk, founded on a rumor of the exportation of Corn — Several houses were attacked, their furniture totally destroyed, and the families, among whom were particular friends of ours, but just escaped with their lives. At last the Military were called in aid of the Civil Authority, and Fifteen of the Rioters were killed before they were quelled. The Head of one of these families escaped in disguise, and his Wife and Daughters were secretly conveyed to our house at midnight, whence before day-break a friend escorted them on their journey to the Chateau of her Father Sixty miles distant. Martial Law was proclaimed, and wherever five men were seen together in the evening, and night, Orders were given to fire upon them. It was indeed an awful time.

A great trial now assailed us, which I had anticipated with seri-

ous apprehension — That of an Illumination for the Victories of the French over the Austrians. The Illumination was announced as for tomorrow evening — Having very little time to consider what could be done, Benjn & myself thought best to go immediately to the Mayor and Magistrates then assembled, to inform them that we could not illuminate, and the cause — That as we could take no part in War, we could not join in rejoicings for Victory. On opening the subject, they were much alarmed for our safety, and asked us what protection they could afford us. We replied "that is no part of our business — We only wish to place our refusal on the right ground, and to remove any apprehension that we are opposing the Government." "Well," said the Mayor, "keep to your principles — Your houses are your own — The Streets are ours — and we shall pursue such measures as we think proper for the peace of this Town." — We retired, though not without some fear that they would send an armed force. Should this be the case, and any life be lost in endeavoring to protect us, I thought it would be insupportable. However they took another method, and sent men to erect a Frame before our house, and three other houses occupied by those of our Denomination, and hang a dozen Lamps upon it. The Mayor had also the great kindness to have a similar frame with Lamps, placed before his own house, in addition to the usual full illumination; and he once, and the Magistrates several times walked by our house, to see if all remained quiet — for they were under great apprehension. The evening being fine, and great numbers walking in the streets, they generally stopped to enquire why this singular kind of illumination, when they were informed by the person placed there by the Mayor for this purpose, and to take charge of the Lights. On his assuring them that we were not opposed to the Government, but were Quakers, they went on their way. We had all withdrawn into a back parlor where we spent the evening, and thus passed this trying occasion unmolested.

A circumstance took place in the afternoon previous to the illumination, which I believe contributed in part to our remaining quiet. My Son was passing in the Street, and observed a number of men conversing very earnestly. One said, "If there are any Aristocrats who do not illuminate they will be destroyed." Benjamin then remarked to him, that he hoped that would not be the criterion to judge Aristocrats by, as he could not illuminate, and gave his reasons. The man who had been so earnest then addressed him thus — "I am glad I know your reasons, and I will endeavor all in my power to prevent your being injured." — Another of the com-

pany said, "Mr. Rotch, this man can do more with those people whom you have the most reason to fear, than any man in this Town" — and I have no doubt that he used his influence with those very people. Thus we may frequently see a concurrence of circumstances in our preservation, which is by many attributed to chance — I believe it is rather the watchful care of our Heavenly Father, however undeserving we may be.

Another illumination took place soon after, when the same course was pursued towards us by the Mayor as before. A young man was passing our house late in the evening, when many lights in the Town were extinguished, and saw two men searching on the Ground. On enquiring what they were seeking, they said, "We are looking for something to demolish these windows — they are Aristocrats, and do not illuminate." He told them they must not molest us, that we were no Aristocrats, but were Quakers, whose religious principles forbade public rejoicings on any occasion, and persuaded the men away — Of this the young man's father informed us the next morning.

The next Illumination was on the arrival of Commissioners sent from Paris to stir up the people to action — My Son being absent, I requested Louis DeBacque to go with me to the Commissioners, and as my interpreter, give our reasons for taking no part in it.

We found them in one of the Forts, and after Louis had communicated what I wished, the Principal among them came to me, and taking me by the hand, desired we would do nothing contrary to our scruples on their account.

After some further friendly expressions, he turned to a large Body of people present, and thus addressed them — "We are now about establishing a Government on the same principles that William Penn the Quaker established Pennsylvania — and I find there are a few Quakers in this Town, whose religious principles do not admit of any public rejoicings, and I desire they may not be molested."

That same evening the Commissioners assembled the Town at the Town House, to address them on their public affairs, and in the course of it, he took up our case again, and as before, desired we might not be molested, but protected. — We afterwards found that several candles had been stuck around some pillars on the outside of our house, though we did not know it at the time.

This must have been done by Mechanics in our employ, several of whom on each of these occasions, passed much of the evening in walking before our houses to see if there was any service they

could render, and telling those who enquired that we were Quakers and not Aristocrats.

In the beginning of 1793 I became fully aware that War between England and France would soon take place. Therefore it was time for me to leave the Country, in order to save our Vessels if captured by the English. I proceeded to England, two of them were captured, full of Oil, and condemned, but we recovered both by my being in England, where I arrived two weeks before the War took place.

My going to France to pursue the Whale Fishery so disappointed Lord Hawksbury, that he undertook to be revenged on me for his own folly, and I have no doubt gave directions to the Cruisers to take any of our Vessels that they met with going to France. When the *Ospray* was taken by a King's ship, the Officer who was sent on board to examine her papers, called to the Captain, and said, "You'll take this Vessel in Sir, she belongs to Mr. Rotch."

My Wife and family embarked secretly from Dunkirk with many Americans in a ship bound to America, and were landed in England, where I had the great comfort of receiving them four months after I left them in France.

Louis Sixteenth was Guillotined two days after I left that agitated Country — an event solemnly anticipated, and deeply deplored by many who dared not manifest what they felt.

We were now settled in London, where we enjoyed the company of many old acquaintances and friends until the summer of 1794. My Son William sent the Ship *Barclay*, David Swain Master, to France with a Cargo, and ordered her from thence to London to take us to America.

We embarked the 24th of 7th month, had a long passage of Sixty One days, and arrived in Boston 23rd of 9th month 1794. The night before our arrival an awful circumstance took place during a Squall — Calvin Swain, Brother of the Captain, fell from the main top sail yard into the long Boat, and was instantly killed.

We soon proceeded to New Bedford, and after spending a few days there, returned to our home at Nantucket, finding all our Children, and Grandchildren well that we left more than four years before, and six added in Samuel's and William's families.

We staid a Year at our old habitation, and then removed to New Bedford, where we have remained until now, when I have entered on my Eightieth Year.

Many occurrences I omit in giving the foregoing account, or they would swell this scrip to a considerable volume — When I take a

retrospective view of this part of my life, of the dangers to which I have been exposed, and the numerous preservations I have witnessed, to be attributed to nothing but that Superintending Power, who is ever ready to succour the workmanship of his holy hand, it fills me with astonishment and admiration, and seeing my own unworthiness, I may exclaim with the Psalmist, "What is man that thou art mindful of him, or the son of man that thou visitest him!"

New Bedford 2nd mo 1814

THE RESPECTFUL PETITION  
OF THE  
CHRISTIAN SOCIETY OF FRIENDS  
CALLED QUAKERS,  
DELIVERED BEFORE THE NATIONAL  
ASSEMBLY,

Thursday 10th February 1791

Respectable Legislators:

The French Nation having appointed you her Legislators, and your hearts having been disposed to enact wise laws, we solicit the extension of your Justice and Benevolence to the Society of peaceable Christians to which we belong.

You know that in several States of Europe and North America, there are a great number of Christians known by the name of Quakers, who profess to serve God according to the ancient simplicity of the primitive Christian Church. Several Towns and villages of Languedoc contain a number of families attached to this primitive Christianity. Many other families, which came from America, have settled at Dunkirk, under the auspices of the late Government, in consequence of the invitation given to the Inhabitants of Nantucket, for the purpose of extending the French Fisheries. These Islanders have proved themselves worthy of your kindness by their success, and the same motive will induce them to continue to deserve it. Concerns, however, of far greater moment, have this day brought us before you.

In an Age signal for the increase of knowledge, you have been struck with this truth, that Conscience, the immediate relation of man with his Creator, cannot be subject to the power of man: and this principle of Justice hath induced you to decree a general liberty for all forms of worship. This is one of the noblest decrees of the French Legislature.

You have set a great Example to the Nations which continue to persecute for religion, and sooner or later, we hope, they will follow it.

We are come to implore this spirit of Justice, that we may be suffered, without molestation, to conform to some principles, and to use some forms, to which the great family of Friends called Quakers, have been inviolably attached ever since their rise.

Great persecutions have been inflicted on us, on account of one of these principles, but to no purpose. Providence hath enabled us to surmount them, without using violence. We mean the principle

which forbids us to take arms, and kill men on any pretence; a principle consistent with the holy scriptures: "render not" (said Christ) "evil for evil, but do good to your enemies."

Would to Heaven this principle were universally adopted! All mankind becoming one family, would be brethren united by acts of kindness — Generous Frenchmen, you are convinced of its truth; you have already begun to reduce it to practice; you have decreed never to defile your hands with blood in pursuit of conquest. This measure brings you, — it brings the whole world, a step towards universal peace. You cannot therefore behold with an unfriendly eye men who accelerate it by their example. They have proved in Pennsylvania, that vast Establishments may be formed, raised, and supported without military preparations, and without shedding human blood. We submit to your laws, and only desire the privilege of being here, as in other Countries, the Brethren of all men — never to take up arms against any. England and the United States of America, where our brethren are far more numerous than in France, allow us peaceably to follow this great principle of our religion, nor do they esteem us useless members of the Community.

We have another request to make, which we hope you will not refuse us; because it flows from those principles of justice to which you do homage. In our registers of births, marriages and burials, we have preserved the simplicity of the primitive Church. Our maxims forbid useless forms, and limit us to those which are necessary for ascertaining the terms of human life, consistently with the good order of Society. We request that our simple registers may be deemed sufficient to legalize our marriages and births, and authenticate our deaths, by causing a declaration thereof to be made before a magistrate —

Finally, we request that we may be exempted from all Oaths, Christ having expressly forbidden them in these words, "You have heard that it hath been said by them of old time, thou shalt perform thine Oaths; but I say unto you swear not at all, but let your yea be yea, and your nay, nay."

Wise Legislators, you are persuaded as well as we, that an Oath is no assurance of sincerity; that it can give no additional force to the declaration of an honest man, and does not deter a perjurer. You admit that an Oath is but a peculiar way of making a declaration, — as it were a peculiar mode of speech. We hope therefore you will not refuse to hear us in ours. It is that of our common Master — that of Christ. We trust that we shall not be suspected of a wish to evade the great purpose of the Civic Oath. We are earnest

to declare in this place, that we will continue true to the Constitution which you have formed; we cherish and respect it, and it is our full purpose to follow its laws in all their purity; on the other hand, if our words, if our evidences are found to be false, we willingly submit to the penalties on false witnesses and perjurors.

Can you, respectable Legislators, hesitate to grant our request? Cast your eyes on the history of our Society, in the Countries in which we are established. More than a Century hath elapsed, and we have never been found in any Conspiracy against the Government. Our temperate rule of life forbids ambition and luxury, and the purpose of our watchful Discipline is to preserve us in the practice of those manners, to which we were led by the exhortations and example of our Founder.

We esteem employment a duty enjoined on all: and this persuasion rends us active and industrious. In this respect therefore our Society may prove useful to France. By favoring us you encourage Industry. Industry now seeks those Countries where the honest industrious man will be under no apprehensions of seeing the produce of a Century of labor snatched away, in an instant, by the hand of persecution.

Now that France is becoming the Asylum of Liberty, of equal law and of brotherly kindness, and adds to these sources of prosperity, perfect liberty for every individual to obey the dictates of his conscience, in relation to the Almighty; — what prospects of advantage will arise to induce our Brethren who inhabit less happy Climes, to settle in France, a Country favored by Nature, as soon as they learn that you have granted them the same civil and religious liberty which they enjoy in England and the United States of America.

Such is the respectful Petition we present to you, for the relief of our Brethren in France, and for the good of a Country which we love. We hope among your important engagements in reforming this Great Empire, and multiplying the sources of its happiness, you will extend your justice and regard to us and our Children: it will bring upon you the reward of the Almighty, and the love of virtuous men.

#### ANSWER OF THE PRESIDENT (MIRABEAU)

Quakers, who have fled from Persecutors and Tyrants, cannot but address with confidence those Legislators who have, for the

first time in France, made the rights of mankind the basis of law. And France, now reformed, France in the bosom of Peace, (which she will always consider herself bound to revere, and which she wishes to all other Nations) may become another happy Pennsylvania.

As a system of philanthropy, we admire your principles. They remind us that the Origin of every Society was a family united by its manners, its affections, and its wants, and doubtless those would certainly be the most sublime institutions, which would renew the human race, and bring them back to this primitive and virtuous Original.

The examination of your principles, as a matter of opinion, no longer concerns us: we have decided on that point. There is a kind of property which no man would put into the common stock: the motions of his soul, the freedom of his thought. In this sacred domain, man is placed in a Hierarchy far above the social state. As Citizen, he must adopt a form of Government: — but as a thinking Being, the Universe is his Country.

As principles of Religion, your doctrines will not be the subject of our deliberation. The relation of every man with the Supreme Being is independent of all political institutions. Between God and the heart of man what Government would dare to interpose? —

As civil maxims, your claims must be submitted to the discussion of the Legislative Body. We will examine whether the forms you observe in order to ascertain births and marriages, be sufficient to authenticate those descents which the division of property renders indispensable, independently of good customs.

We will consider whether a declaration, subject to the penalties against false witnesses and perjury, be not in fact an Oath.

Worthy Citizens, you have already taken that civic oath which every man deserving of freedom hath thought a privilege rather than a duty. You have not taken God to witness, but you have appealed to your consciences. And is not a pure conscience a Heaven without a cloud? Is not that part of man a ray of the Divinity? —

You also say that one of your religious Tenets forbids you to take up arms, or to kill, on any pretence whatsoever. It is certainly a noble philosophical principle, which thus does a kind of homage to humanity. But consider well, whether the defence of yourselves, and your equals, be not also of a religious duty? You would otherwise be overpowered by Tyrants! — Since we have procured Lib-

erty for you, and for ourselves, why should you refuse to preserve it?

Had your Brethren in Pennsylvania been less remote from the savages, would they have suffered their wives, their children, their parents to be massacred rather than resist? And are not stupid Tyrants, and ferocious Conquerors also Savages? —

The Assembly will, in its wisdom, consider all your requests. But whenever I meet a Quaker, I shall say,

My Brother, if thou has a right to be free, thou has a right to prevent any one from making thee a slave.

As thou lovest thy fellow-creature, suffer not a Tyrant to destroy him: it would be killing him thyself.

Thou desirest peace — but consider — weakness invites War — General resistance would prove an Universal Peace.

The Assembly invites you to stay its Sitting.

## COPY OF THOMAS JENKINS'S COMPLAINT

To the Honorable the Council, and the Honorable the House of Representatives, in General Court assembled, at Boston, Novr 1779.

Thomas Jenkins humbly sheweth — That as a true and liege subject of the State of the Massachusetts Bay, as well as from enormous personal injuries received, he is most strongly urged to lay the following representation and complaint before the Supreme Legislature of the State.

Your petitioner complains of Dr. Benjamin Tupper, Timothy Folger Esqr, William Rotch, Samuel Starbuck, and Kezia Coffin, all of the Island of Nantucket, as persons dangerous, and inimical to the freedom and independence of this and the other United States of America; as Encouragers, Aiders and Abettors of the Enemy, in making inroads on the State Territories, and depredations on the property of the good subjects of this State.

It can be clearly proved (if your Honors should think fit to order an enquiry) that reiterated attempts have been made by some of the above persons, to induce the Inhabitants of said Island, to settle correspondence with, and openly join the Enemy.

In particular the said Timothy Folger applied to the Selectmen of the Town of Sherbourn, in a written request, subscribed with his own hand, to call a Convention of the Town, in order to choose a Committee to treat with the British Commanders at New York and Rhode Island; and also whether it was expedient for the Town any longer to pay Taxes to this State; and upon the said application being reprobated by the Selectmen as highly prejudicial and inimical to the honor and interest of the State, said Folger declared that several of the principal Inhabitants of the Town were of his opinion; and then insolently told the Select men they deserved to be damned if they refused to comply with his proposal —

This treasonable proposition will be proved by the Select men. That there was a private Correspondence carried on by some or all of the aforesaid persons with the Enemy can be proved by the annexed list of Witnesses No. 2 — and that the Commander of the predatory Fleet which came to Nantucket last spring, confessed that they never should have come there on the design they executed, had they not been repeatedly called upon and invited for the purpose, by the Friends to the British Government, in the infamous number of whom the persons above complained of were notoriously enrolled. Doctor Samuel Gelston will prove this confession.

That upon the arrival of the Renegado Fleet at the Bar of the harbor, the aforesaid Rotch and Folger together with one Josiah Barker, (without any appointment or consent of the Town) went on board the said Fleet, and after tarrying some time, came on shore in company with several of the principal Refugee Officers, and immediately went to the said Rotch's house, where, after calling in three or four other men of the same inimical character with themselves, a long consultation was held.

In about an hour the Council broke up, and one of the said Officers with a number of his people proceeded immediately to some Ware houses of your Complainant, and robbed him of — 260 barrels of Sperm Oil, 1800 lbs of Whale Bone, 2300 wt. of Iron, 1200 lbs of Coffee, 20,000 wt of Tobacco, and a number of smaller articles, all of which they carried off, together with a Brig, one moiety of which he owned, to the loss of your Complainant, Twenty five hundred Guineas at least. — This property was pointed out to them by the said Dr. Tupper and Kezia Coffin. — That other effects of the true and liege subjects of this State were particularly pointed out to the Enemy for plunder, by some of the persons above complained of, and especially by said Starbuck, can be amply proved.

— Your Complainant begs leave further to add, that after the Enemy had got possession of his Brig above mentioned, frightened with a false alarm, they precipitately left the harbor, and the said Brig behind them, with only five men in her; upon which some of the well disposed Inhabitants proposed securing her, which might with ease have been effected; but the said Folger and Rotch with some others of the same complexion and sentiments interposed and dissuaded, and opposed the intention of the people; by means of which the said Brig and Cargo were finally carried off, after a Pilot was procured by the Enemy, who was induced to take charge of the vessel by the advice of the aforesaid William Rotch. — To put the inimical and treasonable sentiments and designs of the said Dr. Tupper beyond all dispute, after he had returned from New York, with said Starbuck and Rotch, where they had gone on an illegal and dangerous errand, upon a Town Meeting being convened, said Tupper after having menaced and abused all those persons, who had been opposed to the said Triumvirate going to New York, moved that a Committee should be chosen, for the purpose of seeing that the King's servants, meaning the adherents and officers of the British King, should receive suitable respect and protection and be kindly used, and that all refractory persons, (meaning such liege subjects of this State as were opposed to their traitorous pro-

ceedings) should be apprehended and sent where they would meet their punishment.

Innumerable other instances of the most dangerous and illegal conduct in some or all persons now complained of can be produced, should your Honors think fit to order an enquiry to be made; which your Petitioner and Complainant humbly prays may be ordered, as well for the public interest, as that some reparation may be made him, and his other suffering brethren, who have sustained very heavy losses, by the cruel and treasonable management of those people; and that such Order may issue from your Honors as shall compel the persons charged as above, to answer to these Articles of complaint, and that summonses may be granted for the Witnesses whose names are herewith handed to your Honors, to attend at such time as your Honors shall order the enquiry to be made.

And your Petitioner as in duty bound shall ever pray. —

(Signed) THOMAS JENKINS.

a true Copy

Attest John Avery DC.J —

Witnesses to the several Charges vizt.

JOHN WATERMAN	MARSHALL JENKINS
BENJN FOLGER	(M Vineyd)
WALTER FOLGER	BENJN HUSSEY
SHUBAEL BARNARD	STEPHEN HUSSEY
PETER MACY	SETH JENKINS
EBENEZER COFFIN	SHUBAEL WORTH
DOCR SAMUEL GELSTON	STEPHEN FISH
TIMOTHY FITCH (Medford)	PAUL PINKHAM
SHUBAEL DOWNS (Walpole)	WILLIAM HAMMETT
	JOHN RAMSOLE
	GEORGE HUSSEY 2ND
	FRANCIS CHASE

LETTERS AND EXTRACTS FROM LETTERS WRITTEN BY  
WILLIAM ROTCH, SR., TO SAMUEL RODMAN  
AND WILLIAM ROTCH, JR.

London 11th mo., 2nd., 1785.

My Dear Sons. Saml<sup>o</sup> & Wm.

I have recd.<sup>o</sup> all the letters you have mention'd to have sent up to the 8th mth.<sup>o</sup> 11th pr. Geo. Folger, who I have not yet seen, he having with his owner Boylston on Bd. (board) arrived and gone to France (before we returned) to seek a market for his Oil, which I believe he may do, preferably to this. we returned to this City the 22nd, after making a circuitory rout of 8 or 900 miles through the kingdom, and as we have visited the Sea Coast: — that is the harbours that we thought worth notice, from South Hampton to Falmth<sup>o</sup>, I shall give you a short description of them with my judgement thereon in some respects. We left London the 6th of the 9th month in a violent wind to the SW., which was a near hurricane in some parts of the Channel, & did much damage to the Shipping in several places, we first proceeded to South Hampton, nearly opposite the middle of the Isle, a fine capacious harbour, with a fertile Country round it, — but a great resort in the bathing season of fashionable people frm.<sup>o</sup> both City and Country, which makes provision of Rents high, and a place where too much gaiety & dissipation abounds, unsuitable to bring a family in our way; nor are there any friends there. We then proceeded to Lemington, noted for making Salt, but did not like the situation. Christ Church was next but a small shallow harbour by no means well adapted. We then proceeded to Poole- a fine harbour but with a long crooked narrow Channel up to it, yet water enough, a place of very considerable business, & increasing good places for Wharves & houses, with easy port Charges, some friends there, & would do very well, if no better place could be found, the greatest aversion I have to it is;— it is surrounded for a great extent of many miles with barren heath, though there is some good land near the Town; but in small proportion. it is a good place for Ship Buildg<sup>o</sup>, though considerably dearer than in our part of America as is the case throughout Engld<sup>o</sup> and in some places very high. We then visited, Bridgeport & Lime, two small harbours, by no means for our purpose; the next was Tingmouth, a very fine Harbour though Small, with a bar before it, of 16 feet at high water, I should have little objection to this place, were there not several far superior, & the want of agreeable Society, we now came to Dartmouth, wch<sup>o</sup> we used to speak of

in our own Country, this is a fine Harbour, of easy access, except the wind blowg<sup>\*</sup> right out, when a vessell\* may lay at the mouth ready to come in when favorable, not more than a mile from the entrance of the Town, is capable of receiving a very large number of vessells wch\* may ride secure against all winds, has a remarkable fine Key of great extent it is built on front of the Town but detached a little distance so that we enter it by a bridge, it is on a kind 5 Square that vessells come all round it except just where the Bridge is, wch\* is not more than 20 feet wide, is near 1300 feet round- this harbour and Town is surrounded with very high land, the Streets, wch\* are but two in length, very narrow, the back street near 20 feet above the front, the houses being built against a high steep hill, the top of wch\* overlooks the top of the highest houses I believe 2 or 300 feet, in going out of Town, we have too steep an ascent of near a mile to make it pleasant, the town being surrounded with such very high hills is the greatest objection I have; at wch\* Benjn\* smiles, telling me such an objection will hardly bear for me, supposing I would seldom want to go out of Town, therefore very little inconvenience to me. Our next port was Plymouth — a noble Harbour with various branches from its entrance unexceptionable as to its situation as well as the Country round it in every respect, yet one great objection remains that is, there is a large Dock Yard & Magazines for the Royal Navy, many being built here, & many laid up in ordinary in this harbour in time of Peace, & a great din of war in the time of war, which would be very disagreeable to us, yet there are two Towns, one of which is the Seat of Naval and Military business, the other of common Merchant business. We then visited Loo., found it a Shallow Harbour of abt\* 10 feet of water at high water therefore may be pass'd by. The next we came to was Fowey — commonly called Foy — this is a fine deep harbour but as near like Dartmouth as hardly to need any other description respecting the surroundg\* heights; it once had a fine trade, wch\* was some years back removd\* to Falmh. We now come to the last in the channels that demands our attention, and that is Falmouth. notwithstanding the land where this Town stands is higher than I would wish, yet there is such an extent of situation after entering this harbour, that one is not confined to Falmth\* Town but may have a Choice of many miles, so that this place is sufficient to answer every purpose of convenience, and I think taking a general view is rather preferable to the rest; but Plymh\* & Poole are also good situations. We intended to have gone to Milford Haven, but business calling me to London was

obliged to omit, it for the present, with some expectation if life & health is afforded to see it in the Spring. I suppose it is (Milford) the best harbour in England or Wales, it is surrounded with a fine fertile Country being a part of South Wales, abounds with provisions & Coals & has more wood in its Neighborhood than any other harbour that I am acquainted with; Ship buildg\* is also cheaper here than any other part that I know of. It is very near Ireland which I look upon as some advantage; upon the whole I believe this port the best adapted for number of Poor People, but for my own part I should prefer one of the Ports in the English Channel and many of them before London. I find the land holders of the different Ports are fond of encouraging our comg\* here, but I have positively declared that we will never submit to settle on land under the usual tenures, which are on leases for three lives, the persons on whom the lives are fixed must be named; when a life drops it is a common practice, for the lease holder to pay a sum wch\* they call a fine & put in another life, but without a stipulated fine at first agreement. It increases as the lands become more valuable, & finally is at the will of the Proprietor whether to suffer lives to be renew'd, and if he is avaricious, he may refuse, & when three lives are gone, may take all with the improvements into his own hands; wch\* I would never submit to, nor will it be necessary if we are ever obliged to come here, by reason, we can settle on better terms. After viewing the Sea Coast, we took a turn to Bristol, thence through several Counties as far North as Shropshire & then to London, particulars of the rout intend mentiong\* in yr\* dr. Mothers letter I have now given you a little acct\* of the Sea Coast, which I viewed with many painful hours, on reflecting on the cause of my Journey, which had nothing in it pleasing but seems altogether of a compulsory nature, in a prospect of being oblig'd to abandon our native land, occasioned by the most ruinous system of conduct at present that perhaps ever befell any people. But so it is suffered to be, though I believe in judgement rather than in Mercy, and notwithstanding\* this is a fine country & I believe may have many encouragements yet, I desire heartily, if it may be consistent with Divine Providence, some way may be open'd to render it unnecessary to quit our habitations, though I confess, I have no prospect of that being the case; but whatever we do, I hope it will be with a clear evidence that we are right and then no doubt a blessing will attend, if not an increase of the things of this World, yet an increase of peace of mind, which is far superior to that of Corn wine or oils; I am so favored in this respect as only to

desire to be rightly conducted in this important matter, whether to remain or remove. I am now attending to the Hallifax petition & whether I shall be able to hand you any result thereon, or even any well grounded judgement of the encouragement that Government will give, by this conveyance is uncertain, but shall endeavor that no time shall be lost in communicating the necessary when I am possess'd with any knowledge on the Subject. If we could have got into a State of Neutrality, I could have obtained great assistance here to have had some indulgence for the Island, which I cannot but hope would have been attended with some good success, but being held as a part of the United States, precludes any attempt in that line. Enderby & Sons recd<sup>\*</sup> yrs. of the 8th mth<sup>\*</sup> 16th advising that some purchases for France has prevented yr. purchasing any more than abt<sup>\*</sup> 50 Tuns, indeed I am glad that the holders of oil can do better than we can do for them, for at the best Market under our present situation there must be a loss. I rather doubt your being able to get the Warwicks away, but probably must ship what you have purchas'd in some other vessell, unless you can get some other kind of frt<sup>\*</sup>. I have spoken to Enderby on that head, that if they Insure, they may have liberty in some other vessell, but I believe they will not cover it. I shall not need any money sent for my own use having enh<sup>\*</sup> here for the next twelve months to come, as I took the ships Canvass for her Sails off & Sd.<sup>\*</sup> least I should not have money en<sup>\*</sup>. The other stores are all paid for, nor shall I take any money of Enderby on acct<sup>\*</sup> of the oils you ship them, therefore you may draw without any regard to me, remember to give Saml<sup>\*</sup> Elliot the preference in Bills; except you can sell them on the Spot & save the Risque of the money. I do not know how we are to remit Cdt. their balle<sup>\*</sup> when due, if it must be done in Specie, don't send until the moderate season comes round. We have heard much said of the heavy taxes of this Nation indeed they are great, and must be so, so long as such an enormous debt hangs upon them, & notwithstanding<sup>\*</sup> almost everything is tax'd, yet the resources are so great that the taxes are paid regularly, and Stocks rise almost daily, & there are at this day more buyers than sellers; money is exceedg<sup>\*</sup> plenty, this must be admitted as an evident truth by the value of it; it being lower now than at any period for a long time. The tax laid on me for '83- I mean our Town and State; would even in this City pay more than my house rent and Taxes of every kind, allowg<sup>\*</sup> me also to be in a large trade that might afford a large profit; It is therefore not for want of promisg<sup>\*</sup> prospects here in pecuniary

matters, far beyond what my own Country can afford, that makes me averse to shifting my quarters; but from a strong attachment to America, and particularly to Nantucket; which has afforded me such ample resources, in years that are gone over and gone, I mean the Inhabitants, not the place, nevertheless, I believe America will yet be a noble Country in some future time, but a day of adversity she probably will have first to pass through for her wretched conduct since the peace which has brought her into great contempt in the eyes (I believe I may say) of all nations acquainted with her, however spacious their appearance may be toward her to answer their own purpose, but after all, I fully believe things might be much mended between America and this nation, were the United States to set heartily about fulfilling the treaty of peace according to the Spirit and intent of it; but so long as that Haughty Spirit remains, and the most flagrant breach of a treaty of their own making still subsists, a reconciliation cannot take place, for it is now too late to frighten this nation into a compliance with things they see to be oppos'd to their Interest, though that might have been done at the Settlement of the peace, but that time is lost. I fear the Algerenes will be a sad scourge to us, though I long to hear that a peace is concluded with them, but how can we wonder, that they are permitted to make Captives of us; when after such solemn protestations in favour of liberty wch<sup>\*</sup> have been so plentifully pour'd forth, though we now find with polluted lips in some, that some of these very people should now be engaged in the African trade for Slaves, witness the vessels<sup>\*</sup> from Boston & Newport & the sale of them in Carolina, surely as more light hath of late been defused on that subject, a relapse into such horrid iniquity will probably bring a heavy judgement on America; in wch<sup>\*</sup> I believe this Nation will partake, for her great iniquity in that unrighteous traffick<sup>\*</sup>, but Friends here have begun the work of layg<sup>\*</sup> the wickedness before the Nation, & the other desenters as a body are about taking it up, that I believe it will not be lost, untill<sup>\*</sup> something is accomplished. how has my pen been straying from business, but it is occasioned from a deep sorrow for the State of our Island, wch<sup>\*</sup> led me a little into the general cause, & consequently caus'd some deep reflections, which I could hardly smother in my own breast; though it seems to be beside the line of my intended or necessary communications. Before this reaches you, you will probably hear Zacchery Coffin is taken by the Algerenes, I intend writing Shub'l the particulars to whom I refer you.

The more I think of the Halifax matter, the more sorry I am that

any hasty step is taken untill it is known what Government will do in the case, I know from the nature of the business there was an apparent necessity of a speedy attention to it; yet it is so uncertain how it will operate\* here, that I confess I am at a loss how to form a judgement for myself; for however desirous Governor Par, with the people in general may be to promote such a settlement, which is certainly founded on good reason, yet the main points necessary to be done to render it of any use to our Inhabitants, is entirely out of the Governor's power I fear, my doubts do not arise from any apprehension, of its being a measure not worthy the particular attention of this nation, but rather from viewing the pursuits of nations, to matters of little consequence, and neglecting material ones as though below their notice, and untill a thing is effected, we can never judge with any degree of certainty, what ground we are to stand upon which I believe will be no disservice; he seem'd desirous that we should be help'd but saw no way while we were a part of the United States; there are many that commiserate our situation, but none that finds the remedy I could wish. I am now attending on the Hallifax Memorial, which wears a more favorable aspect than heretofore; we were on 6th day last at Lord Sydneys office, who is Secretary to the American department, to desire it put forward, as I had stay'd it until then; while we were conversing with his Secretary, Mr. Guy Carlton came in, & as he is going out Governor Generale of Canada, Nova Scotia etc., the Secretary handed him the Memorials to read, which he perus'd & hop'd there were no difficulties in the way to prevent it being attended to, I then put into his hand the State of our Island, which I had drawn up as before mention'd, on having it read, he expressed his full approbation of the truth of it, & that we ought to have some special favours granted; but all that will be under the condition of removing into the British Government; he is a plain agreeable man, & having known him at New York, we had a good deal of a chat; In the course of conversation, he paid us a respectfull\* compliment, (if a compliment it may be called) speaking of friends, he look'd upon Benj. & myself, and says: "there is a certain decency in your society which I wish all the World possessed," wch\* I believe was the reall\* sentiment of his heart, he being a man not given to flattery.

As there is no prospect of any indulgence to our Island in its present situation as I have before mentioned; I am now endeavoring to find the best encouragement for those that are obliged to remove into the British Government, leaving each to his own

choice, whether Nova Scotia or any other part, which I expect will soon be determined on; and after all that is done I should heartily rejoice to find some opening that would render it unnecessary to quit the Island, but nothing of that yet appears, and I fear will not. When Morey sail'd I wrote Hussey by him, discouraging his proceedg\* on the last plan of the Cantons voige, as I wrote you before, but leaving it to him to decide; if he gave it up I advised that Ships coming here, since which when I was at Falmh\*, I wrote to Mosey by Barney Ray, advising him and Whippey both to touch at Barbados on their return & inquire for letters, but if none were found there, then to proceed here according to our first plan, but it uncertain whether Ray sees him; but I hope it will not be long before I shall be able to find, whether it will be best for the Ships to come here or go to Hallifax, that place being the alternative in my view, & perhaps it may be most eligible to go there to be clear of the duty rather than here, when I find from headquarters, wch\* is preferable; I shall forward letters there, (Barbados) accordingly. A. Champion has a letter by the way of Liverpool fm\* B. Hussey at the Isld\* dated sometime in the 7th mh, 6 weeks after the first, he had got in the whole abt\* 1300 barls. & 27 tuns bone, (no great for the time) Whippey has 630 bls. abt\* half and half with proportion of bone. I took 480 — the concern we proposed for F.\* — in the Canton is dropp'd — we have our  $\frac{3}{4}$  in every respect. — If it will answer the same purpose I had rather the Ships should go to Hallifax, for unless there is a peace obtained with the Algerines, it will be very dangerous passing fr\* the Southward to this Island. I am glad you have kept our oil, as it will not do at this market to pay the duty, better markets may be found elsewhere, the price in France under their duty is better than this. Geo. Folger is still in France, they have drawn off their oils to get the thin part, cannot find what they sold at. I have one object in view for a Small quanty\* of Oil, in which I cannot yet get full information. Enderby is glad of the oils pr. the Warwick, but complains of it falling short in gage more than usual, beside one caske over gauged 5 gs. wch\* if so must be a mistake, we shall see to it. I have recd\* of them L-240 Stg., L-200 of which with the 116gs. pr. Mitchell (wch\* fell short in Wgt 3819) amt. to L-119.27.3- making 319.17.3 I have pd. Champion & Dickason and am in hopes when you send Enderby's Acct.\* Currt\* that I shall make out L-100 more for them, as the boat board will help out, those I sold them, say 9935 feet at L-6 Stg. L-59.12 — you must not draw on them for any more, the L-1000 to S.E. (wch\* are come to hand and accepted) as I mentioned in

a former letter you might do it; having now appropriated it as before mentioned (to C. & D. acct.) The Warwick had a good passage arrived in the Downs the 6th ult. but by unfavorable weather did not get up till the 13th,- Enderby & Dickason then had a prospect of a better market for the oil by exporting it, & reported it for that purpose, E. then desired the vessel might lay a few days to determine, this detained her nine days & come to nothing, Dickason only comply's with E.'s choice because he had the chief of the Cargo, his not being an object; then we put the vessel up for Boston engaging not to sail till the 10th — but there was not frt\* enh\* appear'd, to send her that way, therefore we chose to have none, that from one circumstance and another she has been unexpectedly detained three weeks extra, but no fault of the Master, he having attended his business well, she now goes direct to Nantucket with hardly a package but our own, she has 15 Tuns hemp instead of 20, having ship'd 5 before, pr. Capn. Davis; had the season for a passage been more favorable, I would have had her fill'd up with hemp, which I think is a good article, and good of its kind cost I believe L-24.10, wch\* with the drawbacks will reduce it to a moderate price, they have broke up but about  $\frac{1}{4}$  of it so that about  $\frac{3}{4}$  is in the original bundles, I hope you will be able to sell it for Cash, if it cannot be sold at our Island, it may be best to see to the Markets in Boston & Providence before it is taken out of the vessel & may be best to transport it in her, for if put in a small\* vessell, it must be all broke up which injures it much. I have with the large pots added 2 tuns of small ones for cooking, you will find these a very advantageous article as they all go by wt\* here down to the Smallest & will all sell by tab\* with us the largest at a good advance, & the smallest at a great profit\*, we may have any kind of Small Iron ware at the same rate here such as skillets, bakg\* pans, Cart boxes etc. I should have taken a qunty\* of Skillets, but the legs were too short, for our kind of coals, for here they set them on top of the fire, therefore if you send for any give directions for the length of the legs. I am much pleased with the Warwick she is so handsomely and well done, I hope you have paid the Man well as he has done her so faithfully;- I wish you could find some business for her if she returns safe, untill next whaling season to the Southward, for I think the prospect to the Northward is not worth pursuing. If Indian Corn is cheap I believe a load of that article would do in the Bay of Biscay; & the Cost will not be much, if you have a mind to try it, & can make a barter for it, I would advise her touching at Cork in Ireland

where I would lodge letters to direct him; or perhaps a pot of Potash & may be got at Norwich, all which I submit to your judgment\*. I shall order our goods in her insur'd out, but am undetermined about the vessell.\* Mitchell was obliged to get a Cable and Anchor in the Downs before the Pilot would take Charge of him, wch\* cost 60 odd pounds, the loss in the purchase & expense perhaps about L-25.- I wrote you sometime to get a quan'ty\* more whale bone, but would have you proceed no farther than already engag'd, as like our boats, they are grown out of repute here. If the Current Exchange for good bills did not exceed 5 pct., I hope S.E. refused giving 6, I wish to keep on the top, but in such a case it is unnecessary to go beyond.\* I see no cause to alter our correspondents here, they are as good a house as we can be connected with, & the real friendship I bear toward them, creates pity to see them in such embarrass'd circumstances for want of remittances. — I am glad to find you have sent the Falkland & Bedford a whaling. I fully approve your taking the Spy, wish she was on that business also, provided she had a good Master. Hope you have been able to purchase the little quan'ty\* of head matter you propos'd, as it will make a little business. I wish to know whether Folger recd\* the £-200 at the Nincryd of Geyers, wch\* I was to have, I am afraid he neglected it. Desire Jos. Hussey to keep pushing the matter forward on Ingraham, but not to commence a suit, as I hope to get it by easier methods, but it must be in that Country, by a letter frm\* him (J. H.) by the last ship, he informs me he had recd\* only £-94 since I came away but had repeated promises as usual. The Ceres frm\* Boston which brother Francis intended to have taken passage in, is cast away in Bolonge Bay on the French Coast, pretty well up Channel, after getting ashore, they put out the Boat, in wch\* was one man, After putting in their money about £-6000 Stg., & the letters, the Boat overset, the man was drowned, & the money and letters lost, since wch\* the letters are found, I had two by her, one frm\* brother Frans. the other from Jos. Hussey, the money not found by the last acct\*. I find by Mitchell the £-1470 Tax is not levied; indeed I should have thought very strange if it was, yet no wonder there are a few advocates for it, the tenor of whose conduct throughout has evidently been uniformly to raise themselves into consequence at the expense & ruin of the Town, and particularly to saddle us with a treble portion, which while they can do that & pay but little themselves, that destructive ambition will not be allay'd, however I hope you will remonstrate over & over again before it is suffer'd to be levied, nor ought that

sum ever to be done, we paid in our most flourishing time about £-12 to the Thousd\* and this is 10, in our distressed state. If there should be an opening for me to order the Canton here, I shall want the Indentures of the Masters of some of the Blacks, with their full power, not only to retain their present voiges, but to secure those whose apprenticeship may not have expir'd in future vizt\* (namely) Geo. Lawrence for his Black man, Peter Macy for his Boy – and a full Power frm\* Edward Bourn of Sandwich for his Jo Cunnet, he gave me a power, but it is limited to the present voiges, after which he may keep what he in future carry in his own hands & deprive his Master of it. I shall also want something from Shubl\* Lovell respectg\* his Jo Tobey, we ought to have Lovells acct\* against him with a Power, & our acct\* against Lovell will be necessary, I dont recollect the other Blacks nor their situation, these precautions will be necessary, though uncertain whether he will call at Barbados or not, for want of advice. Its also uncertain yet whether it will be of service.

I would advise you to keep up a full stock of cooperstuff of all kinds, for it will always be a good article. – I intended to have sent you a particular list of the Southern Whalemen by this conveyance, but doubt being able to procure it timely; then can send out about 12 Ships frm\* here with as good head men as can be found anywhere, (mostly our former Inhabitants) the others but indifferent, yet may succeed better than those, as we sometimes see. – I want much to be in Ireland a few weeks, but know not how to come at it, without more detention in the Spring than I am willing to give up, yet I think in the last extremity something may be done to advantage.

I mentioned in a former letter, Wm. Folger was cast away & with some of the Crew lost, since which we find he & his mate were well; four men were lost. – You will find my letter without system, or regularity, as I pen things as they come into my mind. – If hemp should be in demand & will sell for Cash let me know as soon as possible, that more may be sent out; you must see when remittances are due to Cgd. and keep them up, if no other way, money must be sent in the Spring. – If there should be any prospect of a paper Currency taking place in Massachusetts and you find any probability of M. Gill inclining to discharge his Note in that way, dont take it at any rate, but if you fear such a thing, with reason, call before such a Currency takes place, but if no danger, I had rather it should remain on Interest; the Note mentions Gold or Silver, but how far they may endeavor to supercede special

contracts is uncertain. — We have no acct\* from Zacchery Coffin since I wrote before, but expect it soon, in the meantime, everything is done that can be done, until further intelligence is recd\*, & then if his ransom is not very unreasonable the money I believe will be rais'd without difficulty by subscription, for here are a noble Spirited liberal people in this Nation. If you could procure a good frame for a Ship of 200 or 220 Tuns (midlingssharp) in the barter line, about Dartmh\* to be built at Bedford, I would have you do it, perhaps G. Claghorn would undertake & build her if we succeed, but the timber should like to have provided as soon as possible, & put into the Salt water. If I find it will not do to build her there, we can transport it, I hope to be able to write you fully on this head pr next oppoty\*.

If we have money in Joseph Husseys hands, wish you would direct him to send me One hundred Guinneas pr first good oppty\* in the Spring, they must be 5 ug\* (Jwe qr\*) also a Barrel of good Cranberries if reasonable. I shall give you the earliest intelligence, I can of the success Hallifax business, which may be a government about any of our removals, and if thou my son Saml\* should see thy way clear to remove, shall furnish thee with property sufficient to do business with, provided I am favour'd to retain mine until that period, as it has long been my judgement, that the assistance of a parent in this respect can never be better bestow'd than in the early period of life, where Children conduct\* with propriety, — should thou think it best to remove in the Spring and should not hear from me again before, thou may go forward with such property of vessels, stores, oils, bone etc. as thou with Wm. think proper.

I entirely forgot to leave any direction for the payment of my mother-in-law her annuity of £-3 wch\* was due the 24th of last month, I hope you or bror\* Frs\* has thought of it, if not, pray do it as soon as possible with Interest, & as Frs\* will be come away, please to write to Hervey and Anthony to inquire whether he has remitted it, & if not for them to pay it. I desire you would pay Bartlet Coffin (Samls\* neighbor) Sixty pounds Sterling & take two receipts\* (recd\* of Robt. Calef by our hands) & send me one as soon as may be, for I shall not take the money until I have the rect\* you may likewise send a copy of the rect\* by another oppty\* wch\* may have serve to show it is paid if the rect\* should miscarry, Calep was about sendg\* out the money in specie by me when I should go, but this will answer our purpose better. I have sent 3 casks lintseed oil bot of Enderby, which comes out at about 2/72

pr. gl. & will do perhaps, if no extra expense on it when you have oppty, (without money) to purchase good Cedar Boards, you may get 20 thousand & lay by, but not ship them until further directions, see that they are good. There is a box of Garden Seed for the Widow Hayley on bd<sup>\*</sup> (inboard) wch<sup>\*</sup> your particular care is requested to forward them soon, perhaps to Providence, if no direct oppty- by Water to Boston, as it may go down in pr Coach. There are also Letters off the Warwick for Boston & Rhode Island wch<sup>\*</sup> we have been requested may be forwarded by you. The Keys of the two trunks are in Mitchells care — a letter directed to Thos. & Geo. Eddy, Philada, we are desir'd to forward as soon as possible, if it gets into some post office it will do — a list of the Whalemen from here is procured & will be sent by Benjn. I have sent for Benjn<sup>\*</sup> Taber 2 bibles cost 42 Sh. Sterg. if the money I directed to pay L-5.11 Laid Md. is not paid him, it must be taken out of that sum, & if it is paid he must repay you. Perhaps you may get a frt<sup>\*</sup> of flax seed for the Warwick for Ireland. I have pd. Mitchell 1-35.6.11 Stg. for Warwicks use wch<sup>\*</sup> I only mention to enable you to calculate her voige, as it was just the amt<sup>\*</sup> of his acct- to that time, some other matters will turn up before he goes to Sea, wch<sup>\*</sup> he will plan to acct<sup>\*</sup> & settle with you; I don't know how her frt<sup>\*</sup> will turn out as C. & D. have pd<sup>\*</sup> the other expenses.

Mitchell is to leave us tomorrow morning, the vessell is gone down to Gravesend I must therefor close, after comparing my incoherent bulky budget, to our valuable frd. D. Howlands observation in another case, (to whom give my love when oppy.) that is, what is wantg in quality, I have made up in quan<sup>y</sup>, as many matters are for your own perusal only, you will distinguish them. — I am with endeared love to you all, yr<sup>\*</sup>

affectionate father,  
W. R.

Pray let me hear frm<sup>\*</sup> you as often as possible, dont forget the Packet at N. York. I intended to have handed you a list of the vessels from this Kingdom on the Southern Fishery, but cannot do it by this oppty. I believe there are 22 fitted out this year, and 5 out of that saild<sup>\*</sup> last year, one of which was Benjn. Clark, is expected daily having 85 Tuns by the last acct<sup>\*</sup> Shut. Gardner is arrived in France with 600 Barrls., 4000 tuns bone, what part is Sperm I cant yet learn. If you can get the Warwick away, I hope she will be here soon, as I am anxious to hear from home. Not having time to add any further historical acct<sup>\*</sup> at present, the Mails

being within an hour of closing, must conclude, therefore with endeared love to you, with my dear daughters, your wives, (to whom I intended to write but cannot now) I am your affectionate father, Wm. Rotch

P. S. I hope to write you again by another vessell bound for N. York, in about 3 weeks. This goes pr. N. York Packet. — I have been this day on the Hallifax matter & am as usual to call to-morrow.

London 2nd mo., 27th, 1786

Dear Sons Samuel & William,

Would have you get two good frames for two Ships of 200 Tuns each — of 66-24 — 10½ & 4 let them be good and Cheap, deld\* at Bedford & put in the Water, if G. Claghorn will undertake it, perhaps he may have to build if we build them there, if they cannot be got good & cheap, & with little money, omit them at present as molass or other goods must fetch such things, Cordage is not a bad article to barter with at this time. As I mentioned in one of my former letters, would have get a good Stock of Cooper Stuffs, for wood hoop'd and Iron hoopd casks & good of its kind, I should be glad we had a hundd° thousand, & you may provide 20 thous. good Cedar boards. Dont omit writing me for fear I should be gone, you may direct for me in future at No. 33 Grace Church Street, London, & if any doubts of my being here, put it under cover to T. Wagstaff

London, 3rd mo. 30th-1786

My Dears Sons Samuel & William

The timber I mentioned for Two vessels\* would have only engaged if it can be done without Cash, as I wish that reserv'd for other uses. . . . .

Manchester 4th mo--8th, 1786

Dear Sons Samuele\* & William

my last to you was pr\* Capn.\* Cushing a few days past, via Boston, but cannot recollect the date nor number. — as our business in the generale\* has not been so productive since our union as we hop'd, I have sometime since concluded, that all profits arising therefrom since our partnership, shall be equally divided among

us that is One third each, & if it should please Divine Providence, not to permit us ever to meet again in mutability let this be sufficient to make a settlement in the way I have propos'd. We intend for London on the 4th day morning next, when I believe if no intervention now unseen presents, we shall proceed pretty direct for Paris, as we thinke\* there is a prospect of introducing our Oils there, & remain where we are; but as we can give you no perfect acct\* of this matter, I can say no more at present on that head, nor have I intimated our thought on this journey to yr\* dear Mother, thinking it may be best for her not to know it, as it may add to her anxiety; but as I am here, I wish to search out every reasonable prospect; I have wrote to Benja\* — but France or Ireland are the best prospects. Encouragement to come directly here is not wanting, but I think not best to mention particulars; especially as my most hearty desire is, not to be oblig'd to quit the Island. Was it possible to consult you, which I now much want, there is a prospect that would effectually serve our family if I dare undertake it, but I want advice, yet it is impossible to have it, I cannot with safety mention it, I mean it will be at the risque of opening the business. Dickason informs he has letters dated 31st, 1 mo. in answer to some by Mitchell, if so he must have had a short passage for winter. I have made no insure\* on him. My dear love attends you with my dear daugrs\* (yr\* wives) in wch\* Benj. joins & am your affectionate father,

Wm. Rotch

London 6th mo. 7th, 1786

My dear Sons Samuele & William,

I wrote you in a great haste, No. 12, 27th inst. pr\* Capn\* Bigelow for Boston under cover to Jos. Hussey & to yr\* dear mother No. 21-28th pr\* same conveyance under cover to J. H., but having but just then reach'd this City & the vessel to depart the next morning gave me no time to recite the severale\* dates of yr\* letters, nor make reply to the particular matters therein contain'd, both which I shall endeavor to do now, so far as is necessary. the letters recd\* were as follows, viz: 2 frm\* yr\* dear mother No. 7-1m.27 7 No. 8-3m. 28 1 frm little Mary 3 frm\* Samuele\* 1 m.27 3m.29 & 4m.5 1 frm\* Jn. Elkins 3 from Wm\* 1m.28 3m. 14 7 3m.20 1 frm\* Jos. Gardner 1 frm\* Shut\* Coffin.

Wms. No. 9 via pr\* Hallifax\* has not come to hand nor the remittance of Brother J of L-290,- but wish it may take place, nor is No. 10 pr\* the New York Packet of the 3d mh\* she is suppos'd

to be lost that whatever letters or papers were sent by her that are of consequence will be necessary to forward Copys though I hope to leave this Country before any can arrive after rect\* of this. I shall make reply to such parts of yr\* letters as appear to require it, & go through with the common business before I enter upon a detaile\* of my proceedgs\* in this Nation and in France, which I can now do with less caution than heretofore, — I am glad the Warwick reach'd you in good order & afforded you that satisfaction which we mutually enjoy at receiving the account of each others welfare. You can readily judge by your own feelings what a relief it was to my anxious mind on my return frm\* France to meet yr\* agreeable communication announcing the general health of our family, (as I have not heard a word from you for more than 5½ months) especially my dear daugr\* Eliza\* being safe in bed, shall now be waiting with great solicitude for the consequence of my other dear Daughr\*, in wch\* I trust you have not faild\* giving me the earliest intimation as I mentioned in my last Whippey was arrived at Falm. with 600 Bls. (though frm\* his usual method hope will turn out 700-) 4000 lbs. Bone some Seal Skins, I believe 3 or 4000 — I have ordered him to Dunkirk. Mory has 280 lbs., mostly Sperm, the London Ships in general about 12 Tuns each. — I note the sums of I. Lovels debts, I Om., & Sam Hero am glad you have had a favourable winter it set very hard about two weeks after Mitchell saild, & abundance of Shipwrecks & lives were lost round the Coast.

I hardly expect the Massachusetts will make a paper Currency, & if it should be the case, I suppose my Notes on Gill mentiong\* to be pd\* in Silver or Gold will be a security, indeed I would have you refuse paper at any rate, if offerr'd, as it is on Interest it may rest untill my return if I should be so favour'd. As Geyer is gone to America with his family, I would not have anything but gentle means pursued with him, persuasions I hope in time will effect our purpose. I would have this method pursued as it will bear. U. Bunkers money is pass'd to our cred. Bartlett Coffins wifes rect. with M. Mirick & M. Bunkers request to her son are all come to hand. The import act & the 10th section of the Act appointg\* the Commissioners are not come to hand, perhaps they were in the N. York Packet. I have never seen the Act appointg\* the Commissioner; I very much doubt it extending to any of our losses, but I wish our people to try them; I am clear & ever have been, that all our property was taken not only unjustly but illegally, yet I cannot see where to get hold of any person, without contending with the Gov-

ernment, which is too unequal a task<sup>e</sup> for many of the Captors are dead, & the Government by a Special law has indemnified all of them from all Actions even illegale<sup>e</sup> proceedings in capture, I have taken advice & find much of my property was taken illegally; if I can engage any eminent Counsellor to undertake upon a Certain part, I propose doing it, but then we must produce living evidence; written will not answer; that upon the whole the prospect is but indifferent.-

I note Payne has lost action on the good Intent, but has appeal'd; its a Scandale<sup>e</sup> to any Government to be pursuing an individuale<sup>e</sup> for L-300 or suffering its implacable officers to do it especially in a cause where they had even no jurisdiction, but he is Saule<sup>e</sup> like, hunting David, may he fare as well in his pursuit with his tools. — A.C. & I.B.-N.- The taxes are beyond all bounds; will our infatuated Courtiers have the folly to assess it & say still, we are as able to pay it as other Towns? — would have you get a good Stock of Cooper stuff — am truly glad you have separated our Sperm Oils would have you follow that practice with all that comes into our hands. Shall endeavor to remember the Bark Beaver. — I was afraid either Benjn<sup>e</sup>. or myself must have tarried here this year, but it will not be the case, as there is no apparent necessity for it.

I am quite undetermined which way we shall endeavour to return home, the New York Packet seems to be the last resort; I should like to go with Calahan if his ship was Brittish, but I fear going out in an American Ship, though we had no allarms<sup>e</sup> this Spring of Algerines except about their own Coast, No late Acct<sup>e</sup> from Zecchus Coffin, I did hope & still do, that as he was directed under the Care of the Spanish Consul at Algiers through the request of the American Ambassador at Madrid, that he was to be releas'd that way. If hemp should be low, I intend shippg<sup>e</sup> a quanty<sup>e</sup>, perhaps 30 or 40 tuns, that perhaps may make us a passage in some good vessel, but having a new arrangement of our oil matters to make in France, I fear shall not be able to get away till the 1st of the 8th mo. Whatever reports you may have of a Treaty of Commerce between this Country & America, be assured it is without the least foundation, for that Country is now viewed in such a contemptible light by this, that they must adopt another system, rather than attemping<sup>e</sup> to frighten this Country into any treaty. The treaty between this Country & France is likely to be completed. — As I wrote you before would have you send all our Whaling vessels that are for the Brazils early from which we shall probably reap an advantage, let them pursue the Right whales if they are

easiest found & taken, & be carefull\* in boiling the oily\* out without burning, & keep it as white as they can, yet boil it enough to keep it sweet, also to clean the bone well on the Spot while fresh, and if they are willing to return to Dunkirk & fit out there the next voyage and return there again we shall have the Bounty, but if that cannot be done willingly, let them return to Nantucket. I am glad to find you propose C. Mitchell to Jamaica in the Friendship if you see any favorable prospect in getting him in safe & consistently, as I want him employd\* untill\* we fix him in a business which I shall communicate if I live to return. Upon a second thought I believe it will be as well for our vessels to return from the Brazils to Nantucket, as it is probable there will be time enh\* for them to come frm\* thence to Dunkirk, we can then separate the Sperm Oily\* & if they can but find them plenty will in that respect be more profitable than Whale. I have especiall\* liberty to Ship to France (say Dunkirk) 250 Tuns of Oily\* this year exclusive of what our own Ships or vessel\* bring in this Season, duty free; now as we shall have but a small part by us of that quantity, if any of our people are minded to put in a quantity they may; but as it will sell better with the foot taken out, let us see if we cannot make some reasonable advantage of the oily\* so shipp'd belongg\* to other people; if they would let us draw it of and give them so much thin oily\* for the thick\*, it would be serving both our purposes, except such as have Spermaceti Works that is the Mitchells I mean, who I wish to have no advantage of in that respect, if our people are minded to ship with us as I mentioned before, you may take in a quany\* with ours on a frt\* & 50 Stg.\* pr\* Tun, I believe it will now with some attention in introducing it, fetch a good price, & when introduc'd will probably always keep pace with the London Market, if the Bedford should be tight and Strong, she will do better for that Business than whaling, if she is in good order Mitchell, perhaps would come in her; If that should be the case or any other vessel\* put in 30 or 40 boxes of good Candles; consign all to DeBauques Brothers—Merchts. Dunkirke, on the whole if you had rather keep our Oily\* untill\* my return if I should be favor'd so to do, you may do it, but I think best to ship it as soon as you can; & fill the vessel up with Stores wherever they can be put, what induces me to think this year particularly favorable, is the Crop of Rape seed from whence great quantity of oily\* is extracted is likely to be very short. You need not mention that the oily\* will come entirely duty free, as ours is now on better terms than the American Contract, therefore ours with those that ship under us

may reap the advantage & not disclose that part for the present, the whole had best be shipd\* under our house but on acct\* & risque of W. Rotch & Sons & Co. let every quantity be kept separate as to Mark and numbers, I am not certain whether the thick part of the Southern Whale oil\* will yet do so well in France, if we have any you had better keep back the thick, I don't mean to draw it off, but those Casks that have a large proportion of thicke\*, I have brot\* the thicke\* kind into use here & find it more valuable than the thin, but as this experiment is in the Soap business, it may not answer in France; I have been much deceived respecting the Quantity of vegetable oils produc'd\* in France, suppossing\* it had a great surplus to export, which I find entirely the reverse; as they are obliged to import large quantities for their own use; such is the state of that Article, that at a little distance from Paris there is a manufactory employ'd in extracting Oile\* & fat from all dead Animals, that die of themselves or accidentalls, such as horses, cattle, hogs, dogs, cats, etc., the bones are broken & with the Carcass all thrown together, & the wretched stuff extracted fetchs 22 Guineas pr\* Tun\* the prices of Linseed & Rape oils in France are now L-36.10 a Tun Common Genoa L-45 our good whale we suppose to answer better purposes than the Rape. (the Linseed being chiefly for painting) and the Sperm better than the Genoa; but I rate good whale at 30 lbs. & Sperm at L-40 though the Sale at first may be slow, yet I see it may be extended & I hope we may reap good advantages from this opening.

If I can find a cheap American Ship here, and fit for whaling, I intend buying one & fitting her out from Dunkirk, wch\* with our other two if Morey arrives safe, will all have a Bounty of 43/9 pr\* Tun on the Ship, this circumstance you need not mention yet, though if I live to return I shall open the whole if it should appear best. — I shall leave the remainder of the page to add such little matters as may occur, & begin with my proceedings on the generale\* scale of my coming to this nation on another sheet. — as I mentioned before, I think it will be best for our vessel fitted out frm\* Nantucket for the Brazils this year to return to Nantucket, & then to Dunkirke\*, when we can put in such stores as please & etc. — as I wrote you by Mitchell I think, that I had taken much pains to get the Maria qualified to escape the danger of the Algerenes, & to bring in her oils duty free, what I had repeated promises of, but after detaining the Ship at Portsmouth near two weeks, which begun to infringe on the time that they should be on their voyage, & on consulting Morey with his mate and endsmen, they

were all more willing to proceed without a pass than to lose more time; they accordingly proceeded. I then intended & expected to get an order from the Treasury to the Custom House in Barbados to have her furnished there on her return; there appear'd still a disposition in many of the Councils to do something for me, but I found early that the Secretary of one of the departments set his face against it, as also against the Halifax\* Memorials, and although only a Secretary to the office, yet they generally have such influence over their principles, as to operate powerfully in the business that comes before them; yet I was repeatedly assured that the oils taken by that ship should come in duty free some way or other which kept me easy in some measure for a time, & I fully believe it was then their intention to admit it, and also to give every encouragement to the Fishery at Nova Scotia, & I was accordingly as I wrote you notified by the Committee of Lords of the Privy Council that I should be called on by them at an early day, but as all the operations\* of this government are slow, those in power generally having to consult their own safety on retaining their places rather than the good of the State, I suppose they began to consider that it was necessary to feele\* the pulse of opposition, & those concerned in the Whale Fishery to see whether these indulgences would go down, which occasion'd that early day that they had mentioned to me, to be protracted for more than four months, in wch\* time I severale\* times called on them, & at other times, they sent messages to me with the common unmeaning Court politeness of being very sorry that they had detain'd me so long, but that they would take the matter up very soon, these pretenses being cheap they were easily lavish'd out, & might have serv'd to have fed the vanity of one who had not so often experienced the little sincerity that so frequently accompanies the professions of a Court; in this intervalle\*, one of the Minority, a Member of the Privy Counsele, with whom we were intimately acquainted, & wish'd to serve us & to give us the most liberal encouragement, provided we would remove to Great Britain, gave us his thoughts on the Subject, & back'd it with such strong reasoning, with an assurance of being join'd by the opposition if they adopted that plan, he also advis'd to get our family here at any rate which would secure a large body, they immediately took it up on that ground, resolving to give no indulgence to our Ship but on a removal here; & to cut off every advantage in a removale\* to Nova Scotia, except the liberty of settling there employing British built Ships & etc., but no more of our vessels\* nor other property to be admitted

there (those that were admitted last fall will be secure). I reason'd with them with all the little energy I was possess'd of, of the bad policy of such a plan, in discouraging the removal to that Country & endeavoring to compel\* us to this Country only, assuring them that it would oblige us to seek elsewhere for that assistance & encouragement that we had reason to expect from this Country, & was so much their policy to give, but all was in vain if I would with my family come direct to Engd\* we should have our own terms, which I believe would have been the case; but that was a circumstance that requir'd deliberation, consultation, & an evidence of living in the way of our duty, otherwise we could not expect a blessing to attend; that upon the whole, I took my leave, giving notice of our intention of going to France, that no just censure of taking any secret step should be placed upon me having from the first endeavor'd to act in an open candid manner, void of duplicity, that no reproach might justly rest on my character as a private man, nor be plac'd on us as a Society; assuring them that by the measure they were not pursuing with certainty as they suppos'd of obtaining this purpose, would fully defeat their own intention, as I said before, I then took leave & with great reluctance we went (that is Benjn.\* & myself) to Dunkirke\*, where we join'd Brother Francis and were accompani'd by our friend Francis Coffin of that place, we proceeded to Paris, were directed to proceed to Versailles the next day, where we were soon introduc'd to the Comptroller of Finances first, who was the business man, & had had the outline of our business sent him by our frd\* Coffin frm\* Dunkirke\* before our arrivale\*; that in half an hour or less, our business was well done & sign'd by him, our two Ships were admitted, as was the United States also; we have liberty as I mentioned before, of sendg\* 250 Tuns of oil\* besides what our own vessels obtain; and have a bounty of 43/9 Stg\* pr\* Tun\* on the tunnage\* of the Ships, fitting out frm\* Dunkirke,\* returng\* there, with severale\* other privileges which I shall mention if I live to see you.

Such is the policy of this nation, that foreseeing the prospect of a desirable object, they decide at once, give liberal encouragement; having it always in their power, as suddenly to retract, but in our case we have the advantage in our hands, it will therefore be permanent for a time if it succeeds, and our family, may yet keep together if we live; we were then introduced to the Prime Minister (Vergennes) the Minister of Marine, with several other Ministers of State, where we were recd\* with all the civility &

politeness that the policy of that nation dictates, we appear'd in our usuale<sup>o</sup> way with our heads covered, which being explain'd, policy directed their apparent full approbation, & though a singular appearance, yet every marke<sup>o</sup> of respect was shown<sup>o</sup> us, & after a second visit to the Ministers of State to take leave according to the etiquette<sup>o</sup> of that Court, we received the same mark of civility as before, I then most gladly set my face toward<sup>o</sup> this Country; with a hope that in all our transactions there the truth professed by us had not suffer'd and also with a degree of thankfullness<sup>o</sup> in being discharged from a burthen<sup>o</sup> respecting our business that had laid so heavy upon my shoulders since my leaving home, as at times to be almost insupportable, especially in the consideration of the separation of our family in a removale, which on its former footing may not of necessity take place, yet by yr<sup>o</sup> last accounts of the State of things its yet probable we may be oblig'd to quit the Island from other causes, but may in that case I hope keep together; I desire all our movement may be under the direction of best Wisdom. I have much more to communicate, but it being now in the midst of the Yearly Meeting, & the Mails for the packet to be clos'd this evening must draw to a conclusion; fearing also that I shall not have time to write yr<sup>o</sup> dear mother, which if so hope she will excuse, well knowing nothing but necessity would admit of the omission. I am with the endeared love to you all, your affectionate Father,

William Rotch.

F. Coffin, our frd<sup>o</sup> & assistant has a great influence at Court & is a deserving man, desire you would present him with a box of good Spermacet Candles by the first oppy<sup>o</sup> when you ship our oil, write to C. & D. for Insur<sup>o</sup> at & from Nantucket to Dunkirke,<sup>o</sup> with liberty to touch at an adjacent Harbour to fill up, & write them to insure it clear of the risque of Algerines & other Barbary Cruisers, wh<sup>o</sup> will lower the premium, & the risque on that head very little in coming to London vessels keep to the Northward after getting over Nfd<sup>o</sup>, Land Banks.

Dunkirk 10th mo. 12, 1790

Dear Son Samuel Rodman,

I observe what thou mentions respecting the Jaws of Calumny<sup>o</sup> being opened wide against me after my departure; this is no better treatment than I expected from my great enemies and their circle

(but I trust I am not entirely friendless yet on my native spot) had it been otherwise it must have been in some consequences of a reformation at heart, which would be at present I think somewhat miraculous; but thankfull I am to feel my heart diverted of resentment or wishing them ill, let them wallow in their own mire untill they are weary; banishment, confiscation or other punishment does not the least disturb my tranquility, of which I enjoy a much larger share than in my own country, I want nothing but my dear children and a small circle of my near friends to make me happy as to the enjoyments of this life; I am thankfull as thou observes, we are removed of the reach of inveterate enemies, even whither we are at home or abroad; they know I never fear'd them, which has been a sore mortification to some; after all they have done or can do; I hope ever to endeavor to follow the injunction of the great Master; to love my Enemies, bless them that Curse me, and do good them in my power that evilly intreat me; I have never missed serving that Island when in my power, and am glad I am to feel at this moment the same disposition; but what much affects me and more than any personal censure is to find the great number among our members in Society on our Island that are wishing for a war between England and France, to break up the fishery here, such depravity is truly to be deplored; I think it is probable they will be gratified, but perhaps it may not prove their blessing in the end.

Eliza got well here, and is through the small pox; that her parents cannot now make us chargeable for her death by seasickness on the passage, and consequently the provision proposed of a Coffin etc., when she made the attempt to come with her husband hath been unnecessary; let them reflect on their treatment to a son; is he worthy of it; is he a Cain, is he a Renegade, is he the off-scouring of all things, that he should be not only neglected but I believe I may say hated by them; not a line even from a mother whose tenderness for her own dear daughter's husband, one would have thought could hardly have been so entirely surpassed; forget, he never can, but forgive, I hope he will; I desire to close the scene, for tragedys of this kind are too much for any but callous hearts. — Josiah Jun. wife is an amiable woman, I think worthy of a more equal partner, Benjamin values her much. — Before I close my letter I will give thee a short sketch of the light or importance of the fishery in the Eyes of this nation, by this thou may judge, of the great importance and influence of the great man and his son to overthrow it; Benj. gave us a hint thou may remember, of its

having been discussed by a Committee of Commerce and Agriculture, which were unanimous in favour of its continuance and protection, one dissenting voice excepted, who I suppose was a great Rape-seed farmer, his opposition must equally operate against the importation from America as on the fishery here, as his aim was to establish Rape oil in the room of whale of all kinds, but Benj. who was present at the discussion, soon refuted him and put him to silence; when they make their report to the assembly, there is no doubt but it will be adopted; previous to this he had a Meeting at Paris with the Minister of State, the Marquis La Fyate, and Jefferson the American Ambassador, part of the conversation was upon the petition from Dunkirk to prohibit all foreign oil being admitted into the kingdom, except American oil; this petition was sent long before this meeting; even when Britain was bringing in her oil so plentifully, and Benjamin at that time insisted on American oil being admitted, but the Minister was determined it should not, and dashed out the words, American oil with his own hand, upon which that general prohibition took place, though afterwards the present back door for American oils was opene'd and this I suppose was done by Benjamin's means; Jefferson at this meeting charged him obliquely with being the Author of the prohibition on American oil, he denied, it and assur'd him he had been the strenuous advocate for its admission. He appeared to doubt it; B. pushed him to know if he really doubted it, telling him if he did, the original petition he added is now present, which would show\* him that the exception to Amn. Oil was in the originals, and dash't out by one of the Ministers now present; he asked which of the Ministers it was; his answer was it was not for him to be personal in any such matter, but as the Minister was present he knew the truth of what he asserted, and that he had strenuously contended for the admission of American oil. He then acknowledged that he believed what he said to be true, and seemed satisfied, and not so reserv'd as heretofore; yet after this meeting, the Ambassador drew up a long petition on the same subject, to endeavor to influence the Minister to relinquish the fishery to America, this was sent to the Minister I believe Necker, accompanied with a letter — which I suppose was a request that it might not be exposed — perhaps with a hope of working secretly with the Minister, which if so; was warrantable and as it was his duty to serve his country in the best manner he could and in this step if the memorial contained nothing but the truth, which I will not say it did, I justify him; but if secrecy was intended, this or some other cause disgusted the

Minister, that instead of any privacy, he sent it, I believe, with the letter also direct to De Bauque and Benjamin's lodgings, for their perusal and answer, which they did and so effectually refuted all his arguments that the petition shar'd the fate of many others, being put to sleep under the table; The Marquis also show'd all the friendship for America in his power in this case, which was very well; and I think I have understood that the committee of Commerce and Agriculture after their discussion on the subject, and before they decided, sent a deputation to him, (the Marquis) to know if he had any objections to state against the continuance and protection of the fishery in this kingdom; I understood he answered in the negative, or made no objections; much more I might relate but it becomes tiresome to me and doubt it will be so to thee; thus I wish our great men may consider they have not sufficient power to overturn us in this branch, but its probable the war may do it for them if it takes place . . . . .

What I have mentioned respecting B's meeting the Ministers, Ambassador etc. thou may keep within our circle as it is not my intent to publish any thing in our own favour; as truths cannot be recd. by many at this time; I therefore avoid vindication, having a satisfaction in my own mind, that is the result of a consciousness of having done nothing to merit censures so liberally bestowed on me.

Dunkirk, 1st mo. 25th 1792

Dear Son Samuel Rodman,

. . . . .  
We fully approve thy purchases of the Brig Sampson and the New Hull for the Sally materials (though in other circumstances too small) as well as thy sendg. men after live Oak and Cedar; nor does there need any appologys\* among us, as we all mean to act in our distant situations upon one principle, that is, the general benefit; Thou will find by some of my letters that I wish every attention to be paid to seasoning the timber of the new Ship, she will be large and costly, I have already desired, she may be set up with as much timber as can be plac'd upon her, and to stand twelve months without a plank on her, the streaks mark'd out on the timbers and the holes board long fore plank, — this will be a novelty, I suppose, but I know it can be done and the Carpenter must be paid for it, as likewise for any loss in the planks; get 2 or 3000 feet more of out board planks than the vessell\* will take, which may prevent a loss in width and length by boardg\* before

hand, giving oppty for the timbers seasoning, will also give more time to provide the best of planks, both oak and pine; I hope thou'll get the live Oak transoms, as well as the top, Apron, etc. I wish the vessell to be set up as soon as may be and plac'd on her as can be to season, and the rest hew'd out and put to seasoning. . . . .

Thy acct- of Thos's child being sick but better, was succeeded the next morning by letters both from Wm. and Thos<sup>o</sup> of its dissolution the account was affecting to us, but to me more from the extreme agonies it suffered, than from its removal; I am glad to find Thos<sup>o</sup> and Charity were favoured with so much fortitude and resignation in so trying a circumstance, in which I trust they will find peace; I intend writting<sup>\*</sup> them ere long . . . . .

Dunkirk, 2nd mo. 11th, 1792

Dear Son Samuele Rodman,

. . . . . the Oile c/o Maxfield came just right for us to make a good advantage in laying it out here, if there had been more it would have been equally so — but this need not prompt thee to any speculation further than Mexican oil that can be strained to advantage; as the Crisis of the stand or falling of this Constitution is probably at hand; therefore a time that requires caution. I do not wonder that the King's acceptance of the Constitution was attended with pleasing sensations to you; it had the like effect on us; but they were soon alloy'd by the preparations for an attack upon this Kingdom by the ex Princes, nobles & Clergy, allied openly or secretly by almost all the Powers of Europe, civic liberty being poisonous to Despots; an attack I believe will be made in the Spring; time will determine the event; the present encouragement in the fishery from the advanc'd price of oil and Bone which is really advantageous so far as the money can be appropriated to the produce of this Kingdom, determines us to keep steadily on & keep our Interest all Insur'd in Engd. untill an alteration in the Government more favourable. . . . .

Dunkirk 2nd mo. 18th 1792

Dear Son Samuele Rodman

I wrote thee the 25th ult. to go c/o Capt. Chapman fm. Havre for Boston — 30 to 31 c/o New York Packet 11th Inst. to go c/o Capn. Maxfield, & 16 to go by Chapman or Maxfield, by the 2nd & 3rd thou'll find the Canton safe arrivale; the last was only to inform thee of the arrivale of David Starbuck fr the Coast of Peru with 550 Barls. Sperm oil, (brings no acet so late as the Falkland,

having left the Coast before her), — and also of the great Riot that took place here on the third day last the 14th Inst. in which the front windows of 7 9 or 11 houses (wch number I cannot yet ascertain) with the furniture & other property wch fell in their way was destroy'd; they had most of the day unmolested, but in the afternoon, the Arm'd force was called out by the Magistrates, the Red flag display'd, & Martiale law proclaimed, under which the Town still remains; orders were given to fire on the Mob wherever they should be found, and on any collection of people that had the least appearance of a Mob; these orders in a few instances have been put in practice in which some few have been killed and others wounded; about 500 foot & horse came into town, next morng from adjacent Towns, that a large arm'd force is now here which in the whole I apprehend does not amount to less than 5000, large Patrols night & day have been kept up since, & will probably be continued untill the Masquerade time is over, which is forbidden by the Magistrates, but whether will be generally obey'd is yet undetermined; tomorrow will be the usuale time for its beginning; this affray took place first on some dealers in Corn for exportation wch was said to be prejudiciale to the poor; but like all other such like assemblages their first object was soon lost, and pretense seem'd their purpose; we have been very quiet since the matter took place; all the Houses are order'd to illuminate, with which with others readily comply, although we cannot do it in times of public rejoicing; thou may readily believe it has been a time of great trial, but through Divine Favour we are yet preserv'd from suffering; we find many were to be the victims of this fury, any distant affront to any of the individuals was now sufficient to mark their persons & property for destruction; among these was our Cousin Fran. Macy who was threatened by a Sailor that had been with him some years ago, that his property should be destroyed before morning; but the Magistrates perceiving it, I have heard they set a Guard to his house & all remain'd quiet, but have not seen him since to know the particulars. — I little expected ever to be in the midst of another Revolution after that of America was completed, but here we are, and I am glad at present under every circumstance that we are here, though what our sufferings may be is hid from our eyes; if things should continue in this agitated state, & the Government too weak to prevent lawless intrusion, I hope we shall have oppy. to shift our quarters to some place of tranquility.

I wish thou would inform Jn Elkins that Betsy Locke is here

waiting to go with Moores to America when any oppt- presents wch. is uncertain; but she appears to be in the last stage of a consumption, we never expect she will reach America, & doubt her ever living even to embark, that I wish her relatives may make no dependence of seeing her in that part of the world. . . . .

. . . . . I duly observe that thou mentions respecting the regulations of funerals &c which I have long wished for & am glad it is likely to be accomplished & reduc'd to Christian decorum. The two preparative meetings I must leave thou to see the utility of that can see, as also the buildg another Meeting House, all that I can say on these two subjects is, that I wish every addition or alteration to be made that can conduce to the revival of truth among us; One thing I have been long convinc'd of; and that is; if the Meeting House could be remov'd to the Lot of D C's as once proposed; I believe it would be of real advantage in encouraging many to get out to Meeting who are unable to reach it where it now stands, and would be a means of many others attending who might only make the distance & the disagreeableness of passing the bleak hill in winter a pretext for their omission; as to my subscription, thy Ideas are just in respect to my attachment being much wean'd from the Island, though a part of the Inhabitants I sincerely love, and the whole mass I feel a regard for, as a Christian duty, and desire I may ever contribute to their welfare when in my power; these considerations do not appear sufficient to induce me to do so much, as I once might have been willg to have done; nevertheless when I am favour'd to feel a little of the coverg. of that Universal love which reaches over Sea & land to the whole human Race, I feel a willingness to contribute my mite in any manner, to Nations Kindred, tongues, & people, the world over, for the promotion of the cause of Righteousness in the earth; under this consideration, I am still willing to subscribe One hundred pounds Lnd. toward the removing the Old & building the New if concluded on, provided a Sum sufficient for both is subscribed for before either is undertaken, but if not enh. for both, my subscription must be wholly confined to the removal of the Old House, but under the express conditions that the means for fully effecting it shall be provided; I mean subscribed for before it is undertaken, so as not to saddle the meeting with any debt on that acct; not yet to apply to the Quy. Meetg for any assistance in a pecuniary way. . . . . The order against Masquerading has been almost universally obey'd. a few persons excepted, who were minded to insult the law, in that respect have been safely conducted to prison,

where there are also about 70 of the Rioters lodg'd; by which it appears, authority is restoring. I am with endeard love to self & dear Elizh. (to whom I wish I could write in answer to her truly acceptable letter c/o the Canton, but she will excuse me) in wch our family unites (in haste)

Thy affect. father W Rotch

One day more of the usual time masquerading yet to pass but hope it will no more appear than it has this day.

London 7th mo. 29th. 1792

My dear Son Samuel Rodman

I wrote thee from Liverpool by the way of New York, but do not recollect the date. I find by Benjm. he has recd several letters from thee and Wm. but can make no reply untill I know the contents as I directed all that should be recd here to be sent to Dunkirk in my absence, that the family might receive the earliest information of Dear Elizas situation; our great anxiety is much reliev'd at present from the agreeable accounts of her recovery so far as to be able to ride out; but I still remember how easy it is for the poor body to be pulld down, by a relapse, after the most flattering prospects, but I desire to leave it to Him who hath mercifully dealt with us in abundant kindness & love unspeakable many ways. — I have with Lydia been from Dunkirk six weeks mostly in the North in a circuitous journey undertaken mostly on her acct., to give her an oppy of being among our numerous kind friends at several Quly Meetgs. much to our satisfaction & I hope to her benefit in the best sense; we now expect to return in 3 days with Martha Routh & Christiana Hustler who are on a Religious visit two of my valuable particular friends. Benjn. is fitting the Mary for Bedford her voige turned out but 500 Bls., all Sperm by her; I hope to write thee fully if not too much engag'd with our frds. thy Bill on Dickason has appear'd & is accepted (say L 500) I wish thee now to draw also for Thos. what I formerly propos'd or desire him to do it, on De Bauques in Stg. as I suppose livers are hardly of any value with you, & we shall order where the drafts shall be paid in London; unless Anthonys have been successfull enh to sell Livers to answer that purpose; upon the whole I think it will be better to let Thos. draw himself when he wants, or can appropriate it to advantage; I hope thou hast recd a little Supply by the Ann before now, I believe about L 410 Lmd we would gladly have sent L 1000 but the risque (nor of the Sea) was too great. when thou mentions the rect. of it let it be in terms not very intelligible.

I wish thee to make no Speculations for France at present; that fine Kingdom is in a deplorable situation, owing as I apprehend to the violence of the Jacobins, many of whom are in the Assembly, & they wholly under the control of that Club, they have lost the confidence of the people, all seems going to wreck, not the least prospect of the Constitution being supported; the powers without are now drawing towards France in a force of about 200,000 men; I am not disappointed in the present prospect, having given the matter up ever since the early part of the setting of the present Assembly, seeing their trifling conduct; Benjn has held out strongly, untill the last letter I recd. from him a few days since, where he quite unites with me, that the cause is lost unless some Providential interposition. beyond what we have any reason to expect; the Assembly seems peculiarly qualified to create & increase enemys, they are now quarrelling with Le Fyet, I suppose he cannot unite with their too wild Republican Spirit; I hope the King, Queen and Dauphins life will be spar'd, but I am not without my fears for their safety, from the violent patriotism that prepossess those at the head of affairs at this time; Revolutions I believe generally wear the same features, except in such a case as Poland, where it was by general consent, except a small portion of the Nobility; but that wicked Empress of Russia, the troubler of the peace of Europe & Enemy to mankind, is at work on the poor Poles, & I fear will overthrow them. I have no doubt but France might have secur'd a very good Constitution by a compromise with the ex-Princes, but the flaming Patriots despise all Ideas of that kind, determining I suppose on the old Maxim of loose the horse or win the Saddle, I cannot better describe the present than to say they are much like our violent Patriots in America in the time of our Revolution, moderate men have no influence, therefore they withdraw as much as they can.

I never expectd to be in this midst of a second Revolution, but am not sorry that I am here (in France) considering our own affairs requires it; I wrote thee before that our Bounties are now made permanent, by which we have no need to apply frm time to time for the grant to be made as we have been since the breakg up of the old Government; & I find by B's last letter, Louis DeBauques was returnd frm Paris where he had been on this business & has recd all our Bounties except the Mary's, whose papers for her present voiges did not arrive quite in time, but suppose will be paid soon. — if at any time when thou has occasion to draw & its more convenient to draw on Dickason & pass the Bills through his

Son Thos. hands thou may do it only I suppose we shall have the usual commissn to pay, for receiving & paying, wch by drawg on DeB's we save, our Money being in the Bankers hands here; I believe we have now about four Thousd here, the purchase of the Ann her Copper etc. with the premiums (which are all pd) has reduc'd the sum we had here very much; but I hope when the Hopes and Penelopes Cargoes are sold we shall be able to add about Three more & everything paid for the Maria is at North Shields (near New Castle upon Line) as I believe I mentioned before, expect her repairs are now in great forwardness — our vessells being all out (except this Ship), I hope soon to be able to see just our property here, and when I receive the Inventory frm thee, shall be better qualified to arrange our matters fully for a final settlement, so as for me to leave the business entirely, I think at the return of the vessels if they do return, will be the proper time; I shall then wish to know whether thou would choose to continue thy whole share here, or whether thou can do better with part of it in America.

I find by some sad neglect of Brikbeck & Ball the remainder of our try pots are not shippd altho they promised me they should go in a Ship near sailing when I went into the North, they are now to go by Barnard they have been long made & waiting an oppy which they neglected embracing. — Its probable from the plenty of Sperm oil frm the Pacific Ocean it will be low here, the last sold for £ 34, head & body; I also expect our Market in France will also be glutted. — I desire thou would send us soon as may be a Barrell of Maple Sugar & some good dry Cod, at any time, which I forgot before to mention. if thou should purchase a vessell of 150 or 60 tuns as we wrote for Moers to come in with Staves we ought to have beef enh for the Lydia & Dianna in her, perhaps 80 bbls. the other Ships will not want until another voige to America can be made; we must have our Beef from that Quarter, whether Pork or not, I cannot yet determine. The growth of Grain in this Country (Eng) is great this year yet there is a prospect of Scarcity, from the abundant rain this Spring & summer which still continues to be too frequent for the necessary help of vegetation, I observ'd the wheat to be much beaten down by the rain as I passed the Country & much of it by that means will never ripen; but can't say how it is in France. It's probable we shall want Mollasses frm America if any saving, the last in Dunkirk was 40# per Ct. (96 Engh.) on which thou cant calculate. Thou see, I run from one thing to another just as they occur. — Thou must attend to the

article of Ltd & Barrell Staves to have a quuty always provided at the best season for price, & that they may be season'd, it is an object that even this year has given us great advantage over others in quality, price & timely supply, by having the Staves under our own command. — I have engag'd some Greenland Casks at No Shields of which the Maria is to be filled at about 20 Stg. per Tun & to be in very good order I saw some of them when I was there, this saving I think will help us out. I fully intended to have wrote my dear daughr. Eliza — but I know she will not attribute the omission to want of affection which on acct. of her late illness seems if possible to be redoubled, but I do not expect to have time by this oppy. but I hope to by the Mary.

I am with endeared love to you all as if named

Thy affectionate father

Wm Rotch

Dunkirk 8th mo. 13th 1792

Dear Son Saml Rodman

..... I thinke thou had better make no insure for the future in America if there is time to give us notice here to have it done in London, I had both the Canton & Osprey insur'd in London not knowing thou intended it in America, timely to omit it. All our whole Ships are insur'd, this perhaps, thou will hardly approve; but I thought it really necessary in the present state of things in this Country; I should not have done it on acct of this risque of the Sea, but feard Commissions being granted by Emperour, which if done, would have set many Engh to work, am glad to find it is not so as yet. I thinke by the best calculations I can make, notwithstanding, the many disadvantages we have labour'd under in loss of exchange & heavy sums for Insurance etc. we have perhaps nearly doubled our Stock, & with this additionale advantage, our vessells except the Maria, being all at Sea, and not more than 50,000 lb yet to pay, the Bountys having already been appropriated that way, that if they should be successful it will add a considerable sum of clear money, but I cannot calculate so fully on the property in oil here on acct of the danger that may attend this as well as other places engg'd in War, knowing that destruction comes sometimes unexpectedly. — I am truly glad that all accts are settled between Wm & us to his & thy satisfaction; I look forward with some satisfaction to the time of my leaving the business & retiring, which I wish to be at the return of the Ships for which let this be

sufficient notice to thee, I believe its now time for that event, being weary of the concerns of business though very little of the Active part falls to my lot, yet the unsettled state of things here & the depreciating paper system has too engross'd my mind, though it has been in savings rather than in gettings . . . . .

The night of the 1st Int. will be a memorable period in this Nation; The violent patriotic party who now seem to have the rule in this nation, applied to the N. Assembly to have the King dethron'd or his Power suspended with which the Assembly did not comply; in consequence of this a mob about 100,000 surrounded the Palace in Thueliries (the Gardners) an apendage to the Palace was planted with Cannon & the Kings Guards for the protection of the Sovereign etc. — They broke into the Thueliries, were fir'd upon by the Guards, many killed, but they overpowered them (the Guards) & killed every man they could find, the King, Queen and family made their escape to the N. Assembly which is near the Thueliries, and were taken under their protection that night, & the next day under the protection of the Volunteer National Guards & conducted to a little place where they were safe the last acct; on his arrival at the N. Assembly he requested his Sovereign power to be suspended, wch they immediately complyd with this probably appeased the people they were tolerable quiet again; but deplorable indeed, is the State of this fine Kingdom; the combined forces are marching in great force against them, the event is only known to him who has the treasures & secrets of wisdom, & will do, & suffer to be done, as he pleases. I am afraid thou will hardly understand my scribble as I am driven now to a hasty conclusion, after saying the number killed in the late insurrection at Paris cannot be ascertained, the first acct was 8000 the present 12 to 1500 — the latter is the most probable. I am with endeared love to thee dear Eliza the Children our relatives & friends in general as though named in which our whole family unite. Thy affectionate father,

William Rotch

I have been a little more particular in Wm letter of this insurrection than I have time here

Dunkirk 9th Mo., 10th, 1792

Dear Son Samuele Rodman,

.....  
I observe thou mentions the difficulties attending collecting the Materials for the New vessel, & the price of 17 dolls pr Tun; my last to thee was to push her forward if she could be done to ad-

vantage in 20 months or thereabouts, but on considering it, I was sorry for what I had mentioned, knowing everything could not be well season'd; and now at the high price of 17 dolls I had much rather lay the Materials entirely by, let them remain in dock one or two years before she is begun, if thou has not engag'd with Claghorn or if thou has, & he can employ himself otherwise to his satisfaction so as to be willing to relinquish this vessell for the present, I would advise thee to lay her by for some time, even if the Keel etc. is up it may be pay'd over & kept from harm, but in that case provide all the lumber and dont let a stick of it be used on any pretense. I am sorry we ever proposed building her in America as we can under the present state of the paper medium, get one built in this country much cheaper & abundant & more lasting, except the live Oak & Cedar. . . . .

. . . . . A dreadful massacre took place in Paris on the 2nd inst. the populace on those confind in the several prisons, for Crimes against the State, or being inimicable to the Constitution; they appointed twelve persons to try them, those for Debt or small crimes were releas'd but under the dreadful trial, it is said several thousands fell victims to popular rage, among which were a great number of the Clergy, I omit say more on the subject, the thought is enoh almost to chill our veins; I sincerely wish nothing of the kind may again happen, but the terrible threatening manifest of the Duke of Cromwell greatly irritated the people, indeed it is a strange composition and I apprehend must have a direct tendency to frustrate his own intention therein, where innocent persons are equally liable to suffer by his threatend punishment & devastation. The combination of the Powers of Europe against France is in my opinion a horrid plan & I hope they will be frustrated; yet not by the shocking means that I have mentioned above, for such conduct must add many Enemies to the Nation; but I desire to close the Scene as a well wisher to peace and good Government, the Civil and Religious Liberty of the subject under whatever form it may be administered.

Dunkirke 10th mh 16th 1792

My dear Son Samuele Rodman

Our late critical situation renders it necessary to keep our Children advis'd of such occurrances as may have a prospect of influencing our continuance at or removal from this place, as I know you will feel great anxiety for us; when the Mary saild (5th int. & I believe had a fine passage out of the Channel) our appre-

hensions were at the height; but she had not been sailed more than two hours before we recd the intelligence of the Duke of Brunswick having begun his retreat, which has continued, though very slowly, through the difficulty of passage by the great rains, which renders it almost impracticable for heavy Carriages to pass in the Low Countries in some of the Roads; the sickness in his camp & the want of provisions with a body of the French Army hanging on his Rear have been additional obstacles to his progress, this has been a pompous, though an alarming expedition; the King of Prussia, in person, attendg the army probably thought to march direct to Paris with little opposition; I pity the suffering of the poor Soldiers who are so often led to the slaughter, either by the Sword, famine or pestilence to aggrandize the Ambition of Princes, doubtless the King was deceived by the Emigrants in supposing he would be recd with open arms as soon as his formidable force entered France; how this disappointment will operate time will determine, I sincerely wish it may put an end to the further intervention of Foreign Powers, & leave France to settle their own Government, but I am rather apprehensive, that almost the whole force of Europe on the Continent will unite in another attempt next Spring; if so I wish they may by some Providential means be equally disappointed; by which its probable many thousand lives might be spared; but what has most immediately effected us favorably is; the Seige of Lisle being raisd & the Austrians returned into their own Country; the consequence of this Seige was of great importance to us in this place, if it had fell, doubtless their next push would have been here; the prospect was alarming, but through Divine favour we are relieved from our apprehensions at present; yet not without anticipation of the probability of their return in the Spring; the Town was much alarmed one day by an express sent from Cassel that they were in full march with a large body for this place & had reached the Skirts of that Town 18 miles from us, but it prov'd a Small body of about 30 which were discover'd by some Peasants; . . . . .

Dunkirke 11th mh 12th 1792

my dear Son Samuele Rodman

. . . . .  
We had a very severe trial on 6 day eveng by the Town being illuminated on acct of two Commissarys of & frm the N Convention sent to visit the Frontiers in the Qur. & endeavor to reconcile the people to the Government where necessary & unite them to one

another, likewise to impress the Military with the odious and dis-honourable manner of plundering the Inhabitants of such Towns as shall fall into their hands (for which General Custine shot three of his Officers and several of his men & returned the plunder to the Owners) it was 3 in the afternoon when I first heard of the inland illumination the succeedg eveng; it shock'd me very much, Benjn was absent, & I not able to speak the language, many new troops in the Town that knew nothing of us; our lives seemed greatly in danger by misconstruing our refusal, but as soon as I could recover a little; it seem'd to fix strongly on my mind to go immediately to the commissary, & explain our reason & principles in this respect, I accordingly called on Benjn Hussey; & Louis Du Bauques to accompany us & introduce us, we found them surrounded with many people mostly of the Military rank; Louis introduced us & represented our case, one of them immediately recognized me & mentioned that I was one of the persons that presented a petition to the Assembly of which he was then a Member, he took me by the hand and expressed his desire that we would do nothing on their acct nor at any other time contrary to our Religious principles, with much more in the most liberal manner; then speaking the people much in our favour as a Society, & mentioned W Penn foundg the Govenmt of Pennsilvania on true liberty, & that the French Nation were now endeavoring to copy that model &c we then took leave with great cordiality.

When I returnd home I found a man placing lights before our door, as before last year, I suppose by order of the Mayor & Magistrates, but I know not by whom; but what is still more extraordinary; is that the Commissarys met a large body of people at the Town House at 7 in the eveng I suppose by appointment, where the same person who is a great Orator, harangued the people in a lengthy speech in which he did not forget to mention us again as a Society, being a peaceable people, and ought not to be molested in any nation, & desired we might be protected in our religious principles & that nothing might be required of us contrary thereto, but to leave us entirely to ourselves in this respect, with much more in our favour he took up a considerable time on this subject. — thus have we once more been mercifully preserv'd through another scene of danger which at first was too much for my little fortitude to sustain, but that secret hand vouchsafed to appear in an eminent manner for our deliverance, as at several other times since our arrival in this land; which is cause of humble thankfulness and ought to reanimate us in endeavoring to hold up that

measure of our blessed testimony committed to our charge; but those trials are severe, especially in this time of eminent danger when life is so easily taken by misinformed populace; but this last trial I think will render our situation less dangerous than heretofore on acct of the public manner in which our reasons were made known, but we are at this present plac'd in a perilous situation, but as I believe it is all in wisdom & I hope will tend to some advantage in the best sense, I am reconcild to stay until the object of my coming as to business is fully answer'd — I am with the united love of our family to thee, dear Eliza (for whose reinstated health we much rejoice) the Childn with our relatives & friends in General. Thy affe father — W Rotch-

The Dianna was in time to save the return premium.

We are all well except colds.

Dunkirke 12 mo 3rd 1792

my dear Son Samuele Rodman

.....  
We have another very severe trial to pass, yesterday was a great day of rejoicing for the progress of the French Army & a very great illumination in the eveng. But we have been preserved though not without great anxiety for our safety, lights I suppose by order of the Magistrates were placd as heretofore before our doors, & no harm done us; but these are severe trials, as life is in danger, B & E still in London. we are all well, the post hour calls me to a conclusion. with the united & Abundant love of our family to you all as if named — I am thy affe father -

W Rotch

Dunkirke 12th mth 15th 1792

My dear Son Samuele Rodman

.....  
I am very glad thou hast relinquished Town Meeting, for really the conduct there is a disgrace to the community I mean such as it was last year in the choice of a Fed. Rep. I hope B Worth's advice will have some good effect in preventing our frds from uniting in such corrupt conduct; enterg deeply into political matters of any kind, is ever dangerous to the cause of Religion. Am pleased to hear the New Meetg house is completed, & a good Model, & that the Old one's so forward & probably before now finished; thou hast never inform'd me whether my subscription was effected, or whether not wanted as thou once apprehended; .....

LETTERS AND EXTRACTS OF LETTERS WRITTEN BY  
WILLIAM ROTCH, SR., TO HIS YOUNGEST SON

2nd day morning, Boston 5 mo, 3'd 1790

Dear Son Thomas,

I left home on 7th day afternoon & got safe here yesterday, after as smooth a passage as ever I know (of 25 hours) I expect Sammy set off for Bedford yesterday, hope he got there last evening & will soon be at Newport. I took my rout by water, with intent if any ways convenient to stay here (if a good passage) this day, & go up for Providence tomorrow with a hope of being present at thy marriage; but now give it over, as it must be fatiguing to me to go & return so suddenly, besides some business that needs my attention here for a few days. I know under every circumstance thou'll excuse me, my will is not wanting to give countenance by my presence to a union that so fully meets my approbation, therefore accept my best wishes for a satisfactory performance of the Ceremonious part, and a future improvement in well doing. I have rec'd a number of letters here from London from C & D. Enderby but to my great disappointment not one from Benj. Whether he did not write by Scott or Bernard or whether our letters have been plunder'd I know not, but hope not the latter; as I have not time to write Sammy or Wm by this post please to give them this for perusal. [The rest of letter is all business.]

with love to self and whole connection

Thy affectionate father

Wm Rotch

Boston, 5th mo, 15th, 1790

Dear Son Thomas

I duly rec'd thine of the 7th in't with Williams addition; I am pleased to hear that your marriage was conducted to your own & your friends satisfaction; and as by this means a beloved daughter is added to our family, I hope she will find in us that parental affection that is not only her due, but our duty as well as inclination to extend. I think it may be almost ceremonious to say any thing that may appear like an invitation, believing you are fully sensible that your company in our family as soon as you can make it convenient, will be truly acceptable to us. As you are now enter'd as it were upon The Theatre of life, I can find no language of my own do full to my wishes as that excellent advice recorded in holy

writ, "seek first the Kingdom of Heaven and the righteousness thereof and all other things (necessary) shall be added" (or words similar) that I wish may be your concern, and more my own in my younger days.

Wm reached here this afternoon, was taken with the prevailing Epidemic (the influenza) soon after he got home, but by sweating and Laying by one day enabl'd to set out on 6th day, & now seems pretty well except the remaing of the disorder which appears wearing off, it still prevails here & in the Towns around, it has been attended with considerable mortality in this Town, though mostly to aged people, often six or seven buried in a day. I took the disorder early on my arrival here, but kept out for two or three days, since which through the unfavourable weather (mostly easterly wind till this day) I have been confin'd to the house, but am now so well (though a heavy cough attends me at times) that I hope to set out, the day after tomorrow morning for Haverhill with intent if well to return here next day. Wish to hear from thee by next Post, particularly with the state of Sister Rodman's health, for which I feel concern'd. I am also desirous to hear from Lydia as I find by Wm she has been indispos'd, should be glad of a line frm. her. Cousin Wm. Macy has been sick here, oblig'd to let Crocker go off without him, but is now pretty well & seeking a passage. — 3rd day morning, fine weather, I feel recruiting, hope to set off tomorrow morning on my eastern journey. Wm. pretty well, & gone to meeting. I may venture (though absent) to unite his love with my own, to thee, dear Charity & Lydia, Sister Rodman with every branch of the family, in which I am thy affectionate father.

Wm. Rotch

Dunkirk, 9th mo, 14th, 1790

Dear Children Thomas & Charity

Although time will not permit one to say much, yet I wish to hand you some pledge of parental affection; you are much the companions of my tender care and sympathy in this separat'd state, but by looking to and keeping near the fountain of life, you will experience a never failing source of comfort in every probation that may attend, which in the course of your pilgrimage here will doubtless be many and various, this has been and ever will be the lot of those who wish to follow the footsteps of the flock of Christs companions. I must refer you to Sammy for the particulars of our passage, though nothing peculiarly remarkable attended it; we have cause of humble thankfulness that this was the case, and for

our safe preservation over the great Ocean which was sometimes Awfully Majestic and terrific. We are all at present much favour'd with health; though sickness is [considerable of this letter is illegible though the word "pox" can be made out] after our arrival dear mother & sisters were free to be inoculated, which was accordingly done as also to little Francis and I believe has taken effect in all, it has hitherto been very favourable here in this way to our Americans (the French & Flemings generally averse to the practice) yet I need not tell you that anxious solicitude attends me, but with a hope they will be favour'd to get well through. I wish I had time to write dear Sister Rodman for whom I feel much fraternal affection, when you write, communicate our united love to her & the daughters; please also to extend it to our near relatives at Nantucket, Uncle & Aunt Brown, Aunt Sarah, uncle Benj. & Aunt Lois, cousin Wm Anna & Lydia Macy, with our cousins Matthew, Dan'l, Uriah & wives etc. with Elly, Phebe, Wheeler, etc. and accept a double portion yourself from every branch of our family here in which I am your truly affectionate father

Wm Rotch

Dunkirk, 10th mo. 12th, 1790

Dear Thomas

..... my absence from thee at this time is the most exercising to me, on acc't. of thy being as it were just launching forth into the world, that if by any means the experience of thirty or forty years, might point out to thee, the many Rocks & shoals that I have run upon & that are the constant assailant of our pilgrimage here, though as to myself, through the unbounded mercy & compassionate love of a Gracious helper, not of that fatal kind that many a poor creature have been wreck'd upon, having through my life so far as I can recollect, (for which let all that is within me be ever thankfull) been preserved from gross or immoral conduct; yet am sensible of having fallen short in many religious dutys, may thou be more faithfull and attentive to the Divine voice, which will if attended to point out our duty clearly; good examples in our society are wanting the world over wherever they are scatter'd and with you I thought it was evident that with us at our Island there was a declining, glad should I be to find that I mistake it; but I wish more diligence may possess the youth of our age, that they may fill up the places of us that are in the decline of life, with more propriety than many of us have done. ....

London, 6th mo., 18th, 1791

My dear Son Thomas

I rec'd thine of the 4th mo. 5th sometime past, and although we are depriv'd of your desirable company, it is an inexpressable satisfaction to receive the affectionate communication of our dear Children, more especially when it announces the continued favour of that inestimable blessing, health which hath been abundantly dispensed to our family, and loudly calls for a united return of Gratitude to the Father of Mercy & Our desires to return to America, I believe are equally strong with that our Children, and at as early a period as the nature of the business in our coming to Europe will admit, which I think if favour'd with health will not exceed the time propos'd when we left America. I love my native spot or rather its Inhabitants, but from a fear of increasing depravity, my desire of resuming my former residence is much abated though I wish never to omit any opportunity in the line of duty of serving them, notwithstanding the flood Gates of envy & reproach are suffer'd to be set open, yet a consciousness of innocence, hath been such a shield to my mind, that I know not that the recitals of those malignant censures have ever disturb'd me; but have been able to say let them Rage & Roar untill their fiery spirits are exhausted, I have not even a desire that my few friends should even undertake my vindication. If we are favour'd to return, I believe we shall settle in Bedford, have wrote Wm. & Sammy on the Subject, as also on the exchange of the Mattepois farm with Col'n Kempton if can be done on equal terms, likewise desire he may not sell Dr. Perrys house. I observe what thou says, respect'g the representation & abuse of certain persons, but whatever you do, be careful not to meet them in their own Spirit, but keep cool and deliberate with reason, for passion soon carries a man off the right foundation. I am glad to find there are yet a number who can feel disgust as such enormities as have been practis'd &c, but after all those confused in worldly affairs, let us remember there is a better way, which will if rightly pursued yield the peaceable fruits of Righteousness and joy everlasting, when time to us in this world shall be no more. I entirely approve of thy removing to Bedford and am sorry that I mentioned anything discouraging on the subject, especially under the circumstances of thy dear wife, sincerely desiring everything may be done that can contribute to her comfort. I have long since wrote Wm. & I believe to thee also, that I had made provision for thee of a thousand pounds Stg. or 30,000 livres that he might draw for whenever wanted.

Dunkirk, 9th mo., 9th, 1791

Dear Son Thomas

My last to thee was the 6th mo., 18th ult. frm. London which I suppose went by Cap't Barnard, since which I have rec'd none from thee. I hope it is long since thou clearly understood that I had made provisions for a thousand pounds hg. in ster'g or livres for thee, to be drawn for, either by thyself or Wm. whenever it could be made use of, but I am a little concern'd to find no draft for that purpose has yet appear'd; and I may now acquaint thee that thou may augment it to fifteen hund' pounds sterg, or its value in livres, always remembering it is best to draw for the latter when it can be done, as the loss on stg. is 25 pct. here, which with the advance of 5 pct. on bills in Boston, still leaving 20 pct. clear loss, but dont let that circumstance prevent thy having the money unless it cannot be appropriated to any advantage, in which as well as every other matter of business thou can have the assistance of thy brother Wm. if favour'd with life & health; . . . . .

W. Rotch

P. S. I cannot recollect that I have said anything to thee respect'g our new Chaise at Nantucket, but always meant for thee to take it, with thee, & use it as well as the horse. I hope Sammy has reduced our stock of cows. Thy mother has some articles to send thee but the opp'r is uncertain. I fear I shall not have time to write Wm. by this conveyance.

Dunkirk 12th mo. 16th, 1791

Dear Son Thomas

. . . . . I well know the Company, conversations, but above all the retir'd settings & communicating of such in our habitation, has been a great Blessing & Our Family, but I find myself far Short, yes very far of that improvement which I ought to have made; yet am thankfull that in this advanc'd age, I sometimes feel a desire to double diligence, in seeking and securing through Divine Mercy, the things that belong to my peace; dear Tho's some of you are now so situated as to possess a privilege, which I did not enjoy; (though my own fault) and that is, you have (Wm. excepted) no more business than if rightly tim'd is necessary for both body & mind, for I believe employment is really useful & we are unsafe without it; Idleness I wish may never be the lot of any of my posterity; now in my youthful days, notwithstanding the Heavenly impressions frequently extended to my mind, which I often felt

ardent desires I might retain with increase, yet the great & extensive round of business which continually, rested on my shoulders, much too much for one person, would seem sometimes, (if not to be effected by a lureing prospect) take possession as it were by storm, of my poor weak mind; . . . . .

New Bedford, 2'd mo. 16, 1804

Dear Children (Thomas & Charity Rotch)

. . . . . when we take a view of the almost innumerable favours dispensed to our several families it is cause of humbling every high thought & a desire rais'd to be found in a state of thankful acknowledgment to the Great & Alone Author of every good Gift; but when we look toward our dear offspring of the second degree, the airy dispositions of some of them, in endeavouring to appear like the people of the Land, it is cause of deep sorrow, & in some measure embitters many of the hours that would otherwise pass with less exercise, we cannot say with pleasure, for few indeed are those, to any that are concer'd for Zions welfare, the many deviations in our highly favour'd Society is cause of lamentation, must if continued in, draw down Divine displeasure in the end, but hope & believe their will yet be preserv'd a number, desirous of supporting the Ark of the Testimony in its various branches, may those be strengthen'd to hold on their way. Your tried situation is often the subject of our sympathy, but as faithfulness is abode in, have no doubt strength will be afforded sufficient for the day, therefore be of good cheer, he that is in you is greater than all your opposers, & as you keep your feet firm on ground, the Enemies of Truth cannot prevail, & although there is no doubt but trials will continue to assail you, yet that is but consistent with the terms (through Tribulation) that the Kingdom is to be enter'd and if that can but be obtaind, it matters little what our sufferings are here, if favour'd to land safe at last. . . . .

The following letter was written shortly after Thomas had moved from Hartford, Conn., to Kendal, Ohio:

Salem, 11th mo. 14th, 1812

My dear Son Thomas

I am with Mary now here on a short visit to thy dear Brother & Sister Dean for the first time as to myself since their marriage. Am glad to find they enjoy usual health, as was the case with thy dear mother and our several families, Lydia for some time past found

her hearing considerably obstructed, so that I fear'd it would increase to an alarming degree of deafness, which might much impede her usefulness, but on our arrival yesterday we had to rejoice at her perfect recovery in that respect. We rec'd thy very acceptable letter of the ----- giving the account of your great & affecting as well as afflicting alarm of the Indians being reported in your neighborhood, and rejoic'd that it prov'd a false alarm. From what did it arise? Was it from some malicious person or persons or whence did it take its rise? In thy next perhaps thou will mention it. We have been & still are in no small agitation, in this state on account of the War, the almost general disapprobation is very visible; in our little Town which is now only the West side of the River. (The Town being last year divided, the East side under the name of Fair Haven) was held last week a meeting, to vote for a member in Congress. Tho's. Hazard (thy brother) being a Candidate, & had 21 votes, his opponent 407 or peace, & the day before yesterday was the Meetg. throughout this State for the choice of Electors for President & vice President, when in our town 399 had the peace ticket (for Clinton) & 9 for the war (for Madison).

I believe near or quite all the war representatives from this state have liberty to stay at home, after 3'd mo. next, others for peace having been chosen in their room; we have a faint hope of exchanging the President, Clinton for Madison, but I fear it will not succeed, yet the difference will be so little that it may convince him (Madison) that he has been deceived & impos'd on by those warriours about him; the calamity of war is already severely felt in the Marine Towns in this state, poverty & distress staring many in the face, with much threatened increase as the winter approaches; our town has felt much by Captures amt \$200,000 already & much more exposed, & the laboring poor would have felt much more of the pressure had not thy Brother Wm. & Sam'l employed many men in repairing vessels & removing the Rock before Wm's house, Sam'l not less than 30 or 40 men, & Wm. perhaps near 20 ----- as to what I have mention'd about polities it may not be worth thy perusal, but to us it is of great importance, whose external existence depends on peace. I have just been reading a letter of our daught'r Eliz'a from Milford to Daugh'r Lydia, giving a favourable account of their health, Benj'n in particular who had been attended frequently with dangerous spasms, but very free from them last winter, which I wish may continue, she gives an acct. of several of our near acquaintance that are remov'd from works to rewards, & may their sentence be well done good & faithfull servants enter

&c. A desirable, but above all a necessary attainment, when I consider my own advanc'd age, & how very short the residue must be, I feel it necessary to endeavour to prepare for that period which is so rapidly approaching, could I but have some glimpse of a happy Eternity, it would be consoling indeed; but sometimes I am overwhelm'd with fear & doubts, seeming to have no anchor to stay the tossed mind in a tumultuous Sea you my dear Children are far from us, but I trust under Divine notice, desiring that all yours as well as our trials may contribute to further the necessary preparation for enduring substance.

I wish thou would write us as often as thy engagements will admit, which I know must necessarily engross much of thy time but I hope not so as to infringe the most noble purpose of our creation; this I have no doubt thou & dear Charity keeps in view.

I want to know how thou gets on, what number of Sheep, whether the Country agrees with them, whether thou got the 150 acres of ground prepared & sowed other interesting particulars of thy situation, & above all whether dear Chartrys health continues as by last acc't — a blessing indeed that calls for all our gratitude. Thy uncle Francis is still with us, tho. he has been absent all summer mostly at Philadelphia — how far are you from Lake Erie — thou kindly desired J. Hosier to get me a map at Pittsburgh but none were to be had, James spoke well of the Country, & I believe wishes to go, but he cannot sell his house, which I suppose is the principle part of his property. — I am now joind by thy brother & Sister Dean & Mary in the most affectionate love to self & Dear Charity, & am as at all times

Thy affectionate father  
Wm. Rotch

P. S. We have this day accounts of the arrival in London from the Baltic of thy Brother Wm & Eliz'a with a Cargo of hemp & Iron & another Cargo from & to the same ports with a like Cargo in a ship they chartered, both having licenses; we have had great apprehensions for them, there being a large property on board.

My dear Father has given me the liberty of adding a line wch. affords me an opp'r. of acknowledging the acct. of a few lines frm. my dr. Sister forwarded some time since by Alexana'r wch were very acceptable, particularly as it gave an expectation of thy being relieved frm. some portion of care I wish it may be realized & thy health not have suffer'd frm. the exertions thou hast been under the necessity of making. I have deeply felt for you under that state

of alarm you have experienced tho of short duration wch. I hope may never be repeated, we can satisfy my father abt. the cause, as A Purinton explaind it to us. Do write when you can it is so pleasing to hear of your comfortable progress, tho not pleasing as respects your detentions so far frm. us. I regret very much your being subjected to all the variety that travels can impose wch. must be the case a while when settlements are distant. Our frds. here about as usual except that Betsy Purinton was overset in a chaise a week since & dislocated her wrist it was set directly and likely to do well though very painful at times, with much love in which my dear Wm. and sister Becky unites.

Thy afft.

Lydia Dean

EXCERPT FROM THOMAS ROTCH'S LETTER APPARENTLY  
REFERRED TO ABOVE

Kendal Stark Co. Ohio  
10th. mo., 27th, 1812

Dear Parents:

There has been such a sameness in this part of the state that I have hardly had anything to urge the necessity of keeping you steadily informed of our situation until from a letter written at Norwich by A. Skinner dated the 28th of the last mo. saying that many reports were in circulation representing this state as in a very suffering condition (I suppose he meant from the Indians, this he so fully contradicted as to allay the fears of our friends at Hartford.) It has been ascertained by the many parties of rangers and especially by a detachment of 150 men from General Harrisons Army that there are no Indians to be found this side of the River Resin, where they found a party that they surprised and drove off. General Bells Army are yet in the neighbourhood of Mansfield delaying for the arrival of an army of two thousand men, one hundred and sixty waggons with sixty pieces of artillery commanded by General Wadsworth of Connecticut. They were about to encamp at a place 9 miles from Canton, when previous notice had been sent several days before that preparation might be made by the Innkeeper for the officers, at the time of their reaching this place an express came into the Army and so supposed in consequence of which they were ordered to march three miles further and that they were hastened forward this morning but as they have not reached this place this

evening it is probable that they have encamped on the plains this side Canton. What such an Army with more than a thousand horses are to do for forage and grain at this season of the year in passing such a new Country, when their daily rations for the latter is said to be twelve hundred and fifty bushels of oats per day, I know not. This evening Charles Skinner has just returned from Canton. The Army is encamped about a mile beyond where they have taken almost everything from the neighbourhood that their wants require, but unlike the first, they pay for everything being supplied from the land office for the new purchase the fund from which Corp Sloane informed me yesterday while here, he had received orders to appropriate to their necessities. Tomorrow I shall probably know how far we shall be sufferers. I have nine fine working Oxen most of which are tolerable beef that will probably fare as others before them have done, either to put to their waggons, or for the slaughter, the best resort for their preservation I must endeavour to determine by morning, perhaps it will be to go to Canton, (where I have not been for more than three months) to speak to General Wadsworth which I think I may do upon the ground of his professed regard by a respectful letter received from him soon after my arrival at Canton last winter and my present concern with his son in a Rolling and Sliting Mill in Connecticut. Perhaps by timely precaution I may prevent much damage. A message was sent to me this evening that they were endeavouring to hire Oxen to assist their heavy waggons on, and that if they could not hire (of which there is not the least probability) they should press them and that mine, unless some precaution taken would undoubtedly be of the number — but as I have never put anything out of the way, except weapons applied to the taking of life, do not know what I shall do.

## EXTRACTS FROM LETTERS OF WILLIAM ROTCH, JR.

5th mo. 27, 1788:

My brother Benjamin and his family arrived here in this place (New Bedford) yesterday to take passage in the ship Bedford, Capt. Hayden, for Dunkirk.

8th mo. 13, 1788:

My brother Benjamin sailed 6 mo. 6. We apprehend he had a long passage.

10 mo. 13, 1789:

Capt. Moore is just entering the river in 47 days from Dunkirk.

11 mo. 10, 1789:

I have lately purchased a new Brig't about 150 tons which I expect to send perhaps first to London and then to Dunkirk to go on the Greenland Fishery. [She was the *Mary* valued at £600.]

12 mo. 14, 1789, to Edmund Prior in New York:

This goes by my neighbour Coln Geo. Claghorn Shipwright one of the first of that profession (deservedly) in New England who is bound to the western part of Connecticut & perhaps to New York. Should he call on thee request as he is a Stranger there thou would consider him as one of my Friends. [Claghorn later built the U. S. S. *Constitution*, which is still afloat at Boston.]

1 mo. 30, 1790:

I consider myself young in Commercial life & not yet two years separated from the watchful care of an experienced father, whose precepts aided by examples that has established him an unimpeached character, I have endeavored to make the standard rule of my conduct.

5 mo. 22, 1790:

I shall want a platform & steps, also two sets jambs Mantel pieces & Hearths, which request thou would have made in the best manner & of the watest Stone, when ready please to ship them by a careful hand with the amount, & I will either send thee the Candles or Cash — My Candles are of the best quality & of the best kind for the West India market.

The steps to descend in front & on each end & connected all round those three sides. The platform 6 feet 8½ Inches long & 3 feet wide two steps below all plain edges, without mouldings ---- 2 hearths 5 feet 11 Inches long 2 feet wide Jambs 19 inches wide

4½ Inches thick with neat front 32 inches high Mantle pieces to fit them 40 inches long exclusive thickness of Jambs the Jambs to flare so as to agree with the front of 40 inches & the back 28 Inches, width of the step stones I suppose about 12 inches or as is common.

The prices thou sent me of the foregoing articles are higher than I expected or than I was informed of from Nantucket, but presuming thou will place them upon equal terms that thou would to a person on the spot I shall rest easy therein.

I shall be glad to have them as soon as convenient & request thou would get them freighted upon as good terms as thou can.

7 mo. 27, 1790, to Thomas Dickason:

This will be conveyed with my aged parents, who, with my two youngest sisters and Ben's wife are about embarking in the *Maria & Eliza* for Dunkirk. [Both parents were then fifty-five, William Jr. was himself thirty. It's all in the point of view!]

8 mo. 11, 1790, to James Parsons & Sons:

I am much obliged by your care in the shipment of the Quarter Cask Wine; of which say 7 pounds 9 is to your Cr. and having a twenty dollar Bank Bill (of Philada) I have inclosed it, which request you will place to my Credit.

My father, mother, two sisters & brother Ben'jn wife sailed the 29 Ultimo in the *Maria & Eliza*, Capt. Haydon, they have had a moderate time since but the wind has been mostly favourable. [Elizabeth Barker Rotch, Ben's wife, was so seasick she never came back to America. Perhaps the weather wasn't so moderate out in the Atlantic.]

11 mo. 17, 1790:

We hear of the safe arrival of my parents and sisters at Dunkirk in 38 days. All Well.

10 mo. 8, 1790, to Samuel Osgood:

The great inconvenience the commercial part of this neighbourhood suffers for want of a Communication by regular posts with the other parts of this state and of the Union has induced my Townsmen & self to unite in making this application to thee requesting thy attention to this object so interesting to us — when we have no doubt but our importance to the community as a commercial people will induce thee to think with us that we are entitled to the aid of the public in the establishment of a Post from this place to Boston & Newport —

I do not find there are any public posts to the south east of the Road from Boston to Providence consequently a very extensive

tract of Massachusetts is deprived of the benefit of a Post. I have no doubt but thou art acquainted with our Situation our principal business is the Whale Fishery and we have within this District upwards of one hundred sail of Vessels besides the advantages that would result to us the Counties of Dukes & Nantucket would be immediately commoded as a packet is constantly kept between those places & this Town.

The Post Road we wish to be from Boston through Taunton direct to this place which will be 63 miles and from this to Newport 30 miles in all 93 miles & will be performed out & back in one week. We have not ascertained the expence of transporting the Mail neither can we calculate what revenue may be expected to be produced but apprehend that the assistance of fifty or sixty pounds per Annum with the benefit of News papers & some trifling business may pay the Rider and I am not without hope that the Letters will pay one hundred Dollars of that sum.

We request thy early consideration of this subject and if it meets thy approbation we shall beg leave to recommend a suitable person for a PostMaster & also a Rider — I shall request my friend Edmond Prior to apply for thy determination & shall be pleased with a favourable conclusion. Interim I am with great respect thy assured friend

[Samuel Osgood was Postmaster General of the United States.]

10 mo. 12, 1790, to Edmond Prior:

We have no account of the prohibition of the importation of American Oil into Great Britain being off, but my friends have ordered this quantity from an apprehension, "that the difficulty will be done away" having suffered last year by my speculation, I have not yet concluded to take another risk. I expect to give 28 pounds for it.

We have suffered much in place for want of a Post, & we suppose our importance to Government will be thought deserving of their aid, I am unwilling to add to thy cares but know not how to avoid requesting thou would deliver the inclosed to S. Osgood, & if not too much trouble consult him upon it, to save the repetition of our plan for the post I will leave the letter unsealed for thy information & when perused please to seal it.

Abm Russell the barer of this has contemplation to establish a Stage Waggon from this to Boston & Newport, & would by that channel transport the mail upon more easy terms than any other person.

But I have feared proposing him for that purpose least the Post-master General might suppose our plan was only to establish a mode of personal conveyance at the publick expence.

4 mo. 6, 1791, to Capt. Elisha West:

Thou being Master of the sloop Mayflower owned one half by thee and one half by myself ----- Thence thou will proceed according to our plan to such part of the West Indies as thou thinks most advisable & dispose of the Cargo & lay out the proceeds in such articles as thou thinks most for our interest only omit taking any rum or Spirits of any kind except a few gallons for store's and family use not exceeding a barrel for me of the very best kind.

Our plan being to procure a cargo of Old Copper & Iron — would have thee do the best thou can in procuring it unless thou finds thou can do better in other articles which I do not expect, but thou art at thy liberty to do as thou thinks best.

Thy wages to be forty five shillings per month and customary commission — Wishing thee a good voyage & speedy return.

5 mo. 14, 1791, to Joshua Eddy:

I herewith send thee a mould for a Chimney back, & request thou would have me Cast two backs as soon as may be. If thou has a neat Roman Alphabet I shall like to have this Motto put on them in a neat manner in one line viz:

Nobilitas est unica virtus.

But if it cannot be done well I had rather it was omitted. —

I shall be much obliged by thy sending them to Fosters at the Pond, with a bill of them & I will send the amount in the same channel.

7 mo. 27, 1791, to Joseph Anthony & Son:

I duly rec'd your esteemed favour of 20th Ult. with Invoice Iron & Flour by Capt. Rotch which came safe to hand, & the amo. is to your Credit.

I am sorry to find the continued dull sale of Candles & Oil as it greatly retards our commercial transaction with your City. Hope this season will yet furnish you a market for my Candles, & that you will encourage my shipping you more in the fall.

I am glad to find you have drawn the 10,000 Livres altho payable at a late date, part of which I expect I shall be necessitated to have discounted, but when I have occasion to draw will endeavour to accommodate myself without that loss — & your selves with reasonable notice to negotiate it.

I shall by this draw upon you in favour of Daniel Offley for 80

pounds 11-2 your Curry at 30 days sight, which I apprehend may not become due before the note of 90 ds. yet should it make any difference with Daniel I wish you would pay it at sight & charge me the discount. I have some remittance to make to Edmund Prior, which I shall draw likewise upon you for, both sums I hope will be within the Amo. of the Note of 90 days.

The Iron for W. R. Sons came duly to hand.

I am in want of a few articles for finishing my house which I know no way to procure but by troubling you to purchase — as particular attention will be needfull & they are of so trifling consequence, I much wished to avoid it — I shall add them at foot, & shall be obliged by your forwarding them by Captn Howland if practicable to have the marble ready.

I request upon further consideration you will as soon as the first payment becomes due, remit to Edmund Prior, New York for my acct. five hundred Dollars, & if necessary have the remainder discounted at the Bank at that time.

I am Sincerely,

Memo. to be shipped by Captn Howland

Marble (of Pennsylvania) for fronts of 2 fire place Viz: neatly jointed together & polished

1 mantle piece 42 $\frac{1}{2}$  Inches long ) all 5 inches wide

)  
1 do do 41 $\frac{3}{4}$  in do ) & not to exceed

)  
4 Jambs do 34 $\frac{1}{2}$  in do ) 1 inch thick

for three ( 2 doz. neat chimney tile 5 inches alike) these may be all of

( )

chimneys ( 2 dz. do do do 5 in. alike) one kind or each room

( )

( 2 $\frac{1}{2}$  dz. do do 4 in. alike ) varied, I prefer

white chocolate, or

marbled to figure

1 dz. Closet fasteners wh ring handles

10 m. 15, 1791, to Samuel Eliot:

I shall be obliged by thy sending me by Wm. Allen who will be in Boston next week 2 ps. good red and 1 ps. green baize — also one large Bible with the Apocrypha.

This fall closes my retail Store that I only want a few things to oblige some of my customers.

11 m. 24, 1791, to Zacchariah Hillman:

Agreeable to our Contract made with me on behalf of myself & Wm. Rotch & Sons of Nantucket thou art requested to proceed

with Capt. Robert Macy to such parts of Georgia as may be thought best or other parts of the Southern States, & there taking the direction of the 4 men who accompany thee namely Nathl Cushing, Edward Dexter, Jonathan Cowing, & Savory Look, proceed to the procuring in the best manner by cutting, Sawing, Hewing or otherwise such parts of the frames for two Ships as will be hereafter described agreeable to dimentions & Moulds deld thee, all of the best Live Oak & red ceder-having regard to the places that it be where vessels can easily command it to take it on board, thy judgment must be used as to the sizes of the timber to have it hewed as near as will answer on acct of the freight.

The first cost we understand is very little, but thou will make thyself acquainted with the customs of the country, & not be imposed upon. Capn Macy will on his return pay for the timber.

Should thou find that the ease of cutting & procuring the timber is such that you will be able to procure much more than for the two frames thou will then consult our Interest, & either cut some suitable for the Savannah or Charlestown Market if it can be freighted there so as to make it worthwhile — Consign H & R Charleston & H. Beetle, Savannah for my acct — thou will be particular to find what is the worth of it at those places & also what kinds & shapes suits best — I understand the price at Savannah has been 10d stg. the cubic foot — if a vessel can be found to frt. timber to this place at half frt. I had rather have it. Observe if on cuttg thou finds much more can be cut & any vessel appears, load off as soon as possible with such timber as G. C. will first want & make up with other suitable for this market for the Brig & sloops Load if no vessel appears thou may for sake of employment have planks sawed for the waist of the Ship, also Garden posts of Cedar & joists for Sills & rails of my walk — also Cedar timber of large for 80 ps. 6 feet & 80 — 4½ for window frames. Should any accident happen to thee send for Beetle if Cushing is not sufficient. If more help is want'g thou must hire it.

11 mo. 24, 1791:

This agreement witnesseth that we the Subscribers have agreed with Wm. Rotch Junr for the Consideration of the monthly Wages affixed to each of our respective names. To accompany Zacchariah Hillman to Georgia or such other part of the Southern States as he shall think best & there under the direction of Said Hillman diligently assist in cutting hewin or sawing or any way he shall think best in procuring a quantity of Ship timber or plank for the said Wm Rotch Junr & Wm Rotch & Sons hereby engaging faith-

fully to discharge the confidence placed in us as honest & industrious labourers upon consideration whereof our Wages are to begin at the time of our Sailing from New Bedford & to continue until our return to said place unless either of us should choose to be discharged after the business may be completed in Georgia. The said Wm Rotch Junr & Wm Rotch & Sons providing necessary Tools & provisions for our business.

<i>entry</i>	<i>Mens names</i>	<i>Wages per Month</i>	<i>advanced</i>
1791			
11 mo. 26	Zaccha Hillman		
do	Nathl Cushing	nine Dollars	11/
do	Jonn Cowins	Six Dollars	36/
do	Edwd Dexter	Six Dollars	36/
do	Savory Look	Six Dollars	36/

1 mo. 20, 1792, to Walter Spooner:

It was my intention to have consulted with thee previous to thy leaving home, upon a subject committed to my care with some of friends, by the representative body of our Yearly Meeting.

The subject is with respect to the late law regulating Schools — It has of late been an increasing Care in our Yearly Meeting, to promote a careful attention in all our Monthly Meetings to this important subject, & our Order requires a strict compliance therewith, in many monthly Meetings. Schools are supported at the expence of Society, & all our Meetings are required to see that proper Schools are encouraged, whereby every person may have it in his power to accommodate his Children with the means of necessary Learning — Our Order likewise requires a strict attention to the qualifications of the Teachers & in a particular manner with respect to their morality — After all this care in a Religious Community there appears to me a want of impartiality in the administration of Government that one of our Monthly Meetings shall not have the liberty of employing a Teacher without his being obliged to produce a Certificate from one or more *Learned* Minister of his ability & qualification — the absurdity of this request I presume would not have passed the Legislature had it happened to have been brought into their view — and although it be but a small matter in itself, to ask of such *Learned* Ministers a Certificate of the qualification, for my own part I can view it but too nearly allied to an infringement upon our Religious Liberties, Liberties which ought to be held dear to every denomination, & consequently ought to be very carefully guarded. There is another inconvenience of different nature, which I have no doubt would have been remedied,

if it had occured to the Legislature — That is where our Meetings have established the necessary Schools, it appears to me as well as many others a hardship that our Members should have in the first place to contribute towards the establishments of their own Schools & yet pay their Tax for the support of the public School without being benefited thereby — Previous to the State Law — Friends were allowed in most places to appropriate their taxes towards the support of their own Schools, which in some instances, I find is yet allowed but in others the selectmen or School committees have not thought themselves warranted so to do.

The law of this State in its nature & intention is undoubtedly very good, & must meet the good wishes of all. But to consider that our friends in the Town of Dartmouth in the capacity of a Monthly Meeting a Meeting of Record, cannot have the liberty of employing Caleb Greene to teach a School for them without his procuring a Certificate from Parson West of his being a man of moral Principles, is irreconcilable with the principles of Civil Government, for as we consider it a part of our Religious duty, to provide Schools for the necessary learning of our Children, and also the Teachers be of such Character as to be qualified to give them Religious educations, hence is it not clear that we alone have right of Judging of such qualifications.

And would it not in its nature be equally as unjust for the Law to require that some Learned Minister of other denominations should judge the qualifications of our Religious School Master as to require they should judge of the Qualifications of one of our publick ministers before he be allowed to preach. Convinced that the Legislature not think it unsafe to the community for our Monthly Meetings to be judges of the Qualifications of our own School masters, I conceive it unnecessary to say much upon the subject, & I already fear I have trespassed upon thy feelings in doing more than nameing the matter, but it is a subject that would admit of so much argument that I have found it difficult to check my pen. I crave thy consideration thereof, & if thou sees an easy way of introducing a bill for accomplishing these Objects thou will much oblige my frds & myself.

I hope thou will excuse the liberty I have taken in troubling thee with this business but I feared it would not be so well attended to nor so well understood by any other person that I could apply to & I doubt not thy readiness to do every service in thy power.

5 mo. 7, 1792, to Uncle Francis Rotch:

Our communication with Boston is much increased of late by

our having a stage goes and returns twice every week, and runs through in one day.

We (W. Rotch and myself) have the last winter sent men to Georgia and cut the most material parts of a ship timber of live oak for two ships. It will cost us more than thrice the common timber. We shall also send to North Carolina for cedar for top timbers. These ships we mean only to frame and timber, and let them stand to season one year.

7 mo. 10, 1792, to Uncle Francis Rotch:

Having pretty nearly wrote what is necessary upon the business I shall take the liberty to give thee hint upon what I have heard was the destination of the *Dauphin* vizt. to carry troops to Hispaniola. However the insurrection in that quarter may be viewed in France, with the thinking people of New England whose minds are unclouded with the dark seeds of slavery, it is looked upon that the struggle on the part of the Negroes & Molattoes is as just as was the American struggle for liberty.

How much then must thy feelings be hurt by taking a step for the sake of gain that will be considered by thy countrymen as unworthy an American, and more particularly of one whose education was with those who have been the most professed friends to the African cause. Thou will I trust excuse this digression when thou hears me say that I have pledged myself a faithful friend to the abolition of the slave trade & slave holding, and am almost daily concerned in protecting the injured Africans and promising their liberation where any pretence can be found to avoid the law & Massachusetts being the only state in the Union where slavery dare not rear her head we have abundance of them seek refuge here.

If the subject hinted had not been a matter that strikes so immediately at the principle known & avowed of the connections here I should not have wrote so warmly upon it but should thee go I shall attribute it more to thy submission to the choice of those connected with thee than to thy own wish.

[He closed with love to his uncle. Francis appears to have been in France in 1792.]

EXTRACTS FROM A JOURNAL KEPT BY ANNE WALN  
MORGAN, WIFE OF FRANCIS ROTCH, DURING A TRIP TO  
ENGLAND IN 1843-4 TO VISIT HER HUSBAND'S FAMILY

"Frank" was Colonel Francis Morgan Rotch, Harvard, 1841. "Maria" was later Mrs. Radcliff Hudson. "Ben" was the writer's brother-in-law, Benjamin Rotch, M. P., "Isabelle," his wife; "Dickason," another brother-in-law, "Catharine," his wife; "Maria" Langston, a sister-in-law. "My Mother" was Elizabeth Barker Rotch, widow of Benjamin, Sr.

Steamer Caledonia, Oct. 4th, 1843.

No. I. To Mrs. E. M. Drinker.

My dear Sister,

Contrary to all hoped expectation, daughter and myself are seated in the ladies' cabin, pen in hand, to begin our promised journals, after a splendid day and sea quiet enough for us to enjoy ourselves. You have probably received my hurried scrawl from Halifax and found from it how thoroughly miserable we had all been, excepting Maria, who, tho' it has blown a gale and the sea been very rough, has been for only a few minutes really sick—and laid in her berth the first day, only because it was so uncomfortable everywhere else, and as she laughingly observed to indulge her own laziness. We exchanged but few sentences, for I found my only security was in perfect stillness—I heard occasionally from my husband, that he was as ill as he could be, and Frank once got into our stateroom and threw himself on the floor, looking as pale as a ghost and declaring himself entirely exhausted. He had found it impossible to eat a mouthful. He said there was a tremendous sea and that it had been raining all day—hardly a creature to be seen—all in their berths. Even Mr. Motley declared he had seldom felt so disagreeably—On Tuesday, we took some sort of breakfast in our saloon and I prepared my homeopathy and took it regularly. The sea had abated the evening before and I staggered into my husband's stateroom—both he and son still in their beds, but the latter with a book in his hand and looking pretty bright—husband dolorous enough. I gave F. his first homeopathic dose, tho' he had no faith to begin with—I had more, as Dr. W's previous prescriptions had been quite successful. In a few hours he was able to go into the gentlemen's saloon, but did not venture to the dinner table. We both of us continued getting better, and I made quite a comfortable meal, and took a walk on the promenade deck with Frank. Mr. Motley and Maria had previously had a long walk.

The weather was not pleasant, a thick fog forbade any observation and kept our Capt'n on the watch all day—he found he must

anchor, as the harbor was too unsafe to enter upon in uncertainty. I was glad to find him so careful, but well pleased when at 4 o'clock the fog lifted and we found ourselves within 20 miles of Halifax. We got in about 7, it was dark and raining, but most of the gentlemen went on shore. Frank trudged a mile thro' the mud, bought a bottle perfume and came back not much edified by his stroll. Mr. M. says half a dozen gentlemen got a wretched supper which distressed them all night, so this was some comfort to those who were confined on shipboard. It is time I told you something of our compagnons de voyage, tho' I pretend not, as yet, to give a hint of their character, and probably have little chance to know more, for in so large a company, they divide off in groups, and with others only exchange the passing compliments. We are not at the table with the Capt'n, but a funny-looking Scotch Lieutenant who has charge of the mails, presides, he has not much to say, carves the head dish, takes wine with the ladies, says grace, a short one I assure you— he honored us the first day with his gold epaulet, but now a coat, rather the worse for wear, adorns his little round figure. We two ladies are on one side and our gentlemen opposite — when Francis does not appear, Mr. Motley takes his place. Our two next neighbors are young men, whose whole thought is upon what they shall eat and drink, and it is really quite disgusting. I believe there are 45 passengers, there are plenty of attendants, but the space for them to move in is so confined that their attention is not the best. The fare is well-cooked, the deserts capital, and everything looks much cleaner than I had expected.

Eating is the chief business of life. There are four regular meals, and supper as it is called for. Francis had cold boiled chicken, to which Frank added ham, and we four partook heartily, but then we do not taste tea. The coffee tempts me now and then, but that, with homeopathy is quite forbidden; we have to deny ourselves many niceties whilst going thro' this regimen. Frank has made some acquaintance with young Whitwell but does not find him very promising, however, people are pretty grave not having fully recovered from their first miseries. Mr. Richards looks full of fun and today gives some evidence of it — he wears a queer-looking pinched-up hat, that gives him a comical air; he was the first to get up shuffle-board, which used to be a great game on board the Napoleon. There are about a dozen, among whom Mr. M. takes his seat, that appear to be well acquainted, most of them younger than he, probably all engaged on similar business and travelling with the same interest. Then there are some Frenchmen and one

who cannot speak English — At dessert today a plate was handed me with one almond. The steward said from this French gentleman — I thought it odd, but laid it on the table taking no further notice of it. There were some merry looks and laughs and by and by came another; we then saw it was a mouse cut from an almond and very well done. This explained, we all duly admired it. I fancy we have not a very genteel set, but people are a good deal disguised in their sea-attire. Our ladies left us at Halifax, but they are no loss, one poor thing did not leave the sofa, the other, Miss H. was totally uninteresting.

Last night, about 12, after I had been asleep, there was a commotion in the cabin and three ladies and gentlemen entered, they were our new passengers from Halifax. Only one has left her berth today and she is on the sofa with a violent headache, so we cannot guess whether we have profited by the exchange. Maria calls me on deck to look at the moon which shines sweetly down upon us.

Thursday Eve. We have called for pen and ink, but the heavy rolling of the vessel makes it doubtful if we can write, but is it not amazing we are not in our berths? Instead of that, we are up at every meal, eat heartily, and walk about, even when the footing is most unsteady, in short, we are all perfectly well, my husband in good spirits, accordingly and hardly believing it is himself. Last evening, he and I walked the lower deck for an hour, while Maria stood leaning over the ship's side, gazing and meditating. We went to the furnaces and looked down on the machinery, truly an appalling sight. I have not yet become used to this propelling power, there is to me something quite awful in it. Man's might seems wondrous as I look upon it, and observe its marvellous effect, but when extending my glance to the illimitable Ocean, the viewless air, and the glorious firmament, it sinks into insignificance, and I feel it can make scarcely a struggle. When the winds and sea assert their dominion, I have constantly a sensation of fear, more so than when we depended solely on sails, and my reflections, consequently are often of a sober character and I dare not look much beyond the present hour, the past, however, is often dwelt on and memory gives me back your loved companionship.

The weather was splendid. Most of the gentlemen in the saloon at cards or reading. Frank at chess. The Capt'n joined us in our stroll and gave us the agreeable intelligence that we were going 9½ knots to the hour, they seldom exceed this, but keeping on at this rate would soon bring us to our destined port. He is bright and pleasant in his countenance and manner, courteous and not

obtrusive. I expected more etiquette in the arrangements, more formality amongst the Officers. They wear a sort of uniform that distinguishes them, but there is nothing of naval strictness. Frank joined us after conquering his opponent. At ten, we came down and as Dickens says; nobody who has been at sea 24 hours, ever thinks of saying, going to bed, we adopt the nomenclature, and turned in. This morning was splendid, and I determined to make my first appearance at breakfast, we were on deck in time for a short walk previous to it. Mr. Motley gave me his arm and we mounted to the promenade deck. It was high enjoyment, so blue the water and so clear the air. After breakfast, we remained in the saloon, listening to the conversation, and I then came down and laid on the sofa and read three hours. Did not go up to lunch. Two of our ladies got into the cabin, miserable enough; one elderly and quite alone, I can tell nothing about the other, she managed to get on deck and there lay motionless wrapped in cloaks. One poor unfortunate has not shown herself. I finished the "President's daughter;" it is pretty, but not comparable to the "Neighbours." I have no expectation of finding anything by the same author, equal to that charming tale. You remember how highly we enjoyed it, I believe, however, its charm was partly in the pleasant group who shared it together.

At one I went upstairs and took a walk with Frank. The wind was increasing and it was good exercise to keep steady. In half an hour I came down, but was soon summoned by Mr. Motley to see a vessel which we were about to speak. This always occasions a little excitement and every one made for the upper deck to wait its approach. She proved a schooner, 30 days from England, and I hope carried the report of us to those, who are giving their anxious thoughts to us. She was, I believe, bound for Halifax. There is no mistaking our big red pipe, an imposing affair to meet on the waters. We were soon far away from the schooner, and it was so cold I had to hurry below. Cold is our chief discomfiture; we can have no fire in our cabin as they forgot their funnels and we are always wrapped in our blanket shawls, I wear my fur shoes, and our Jeannie Deans are truly comfortable. At dinner there was more conversation than usual, people are reviving and the spirits of the young men break forth. Dinner lasts an hour and a half, it is very abundant, first soup, then fish, then meats, then pastry, and finishes with fruit. At breakfast, coffee, tea and chocolate, none of which I have ventured on. Capital bread and good butter, cold and hot meats, eggs and fish. Lunch, cold meats again, roast potatoes,

cheese. Tea, dry toast bread and butter and sweet cakes of various kinds, so you see we have temptations to appetite. After dinner, it is soon dark, and we are then well covered up and take a siesta till 7. Then lights, and here I have brought up my journal. Maria is writing to her sick friend Anna Randall. The dear child's cough continues quite bad, but she has no depression, indeed walks enough to keep it off. She enjoys herself greatly and Frank begins to brighten, and now my dear sisters, goodnight to you.

Friday, Oct. 6th. There is little to recount of today. It has been very cold, and we could only keep tolerably warm by rapid walking, and that soon tired us. My astonishment was great on going on deck this morning to find that we were steaming along shore, and a stern and "rock-bound" coast it was. The Capt'n said he had never been so near before, but as the air was perfectly clear, he tried it, he was not in bed the night before, as he watched our approach to the Banks, and this was N. Brunswick. There is now every prospect we shall only be 8 days of our passage out of sight of land. This is narrowing the "big pond" famously. It is excessively rough from the ground swell, yet none of our party are sea-sick. So adieu to all mention of it, unless some desperate gale await us. Today we had out the buffalo skins, Francis was taking to his brothers, we sat on them and covered our feet with them, and for the first time, have felt entirely warm. Frank played a game of chess with a gentlemanly man, of the name of Coates, residing in London, he plays so well, he has little hope of beating him. We have made acquaintance with the young lady passenger. She and Maria have been on deck since dinner, and I hear Francis, Frank and the Capt'n with them, creating merry laughs with their stories. The lady is English, returning after a three year's absence. Oh these moonlight nights, how fortunate for us. The beauteous orb finds its way even into our saloon, and shines so cheerfully. Do you remember, my dear Susan, how we moaned over the size of our state-room? Well it proves quite abundant by everything having a place, and the drawer holds all we want, and the canvass packets hold everything. Of the berths we do complain, they are very narrow and the mattress as hard as the floor. The pillows have no comfort in them, they are of hair and have no elasticity. We have plenty of water and towels, so are pretty comfortable in all things but sleeping. Happily our capacity for sleep increases; this morning I slept till  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 7.

Saturday, October 7th. Ah me! this will prove but a sorry

attempt at writing, I who had congratulated myself, that the season of misery was over, have been on its verge all day. It is desperately rough, yet with all this tossing, there is not as much pitching as in a sailing vessel. There are creakings and groanings and tremblings, but things are not thrown from one side to the other as I remember them in the Napoleon. It has been foggy with a head wind. I tried twice to walk, but found it out of the question. All the morning, I was fixed in a corner of the dinner saloon, sometimes reading, sometimes with closed eyes. I am now below, and they tell me the wind freshens and the Capt'n predicts a gale. We have gone 210 miles in the last 24 hours, 230 in the previous 24, so have not lost much by the head wind. Maria is perfectly well, She and Miss Jeplin are most of the time together on deck. My husband keeps quiet but is less sea-sick than myself. Frank is done up, and has been on his back in the saloon all day. "Oh dear, these gales are fearful things," the poor lone lady in the cabin, says, "Ah but you have your family with you—I am separated from all mine" She is obliged to be in London by the 1st. She is engaged in a suit in chancery, which has been in progress since 1826, and now they claim her presence. She comes most reluctantly, having left all her friends in Nova Scotia. Oh, I *must* lay down my pen, but you miss nothing, for there is nothing to write.

Saturday, October 14th. For nearly a week I have been unable to touch the pen, oh the forlorness, the misery of those days, for five days we had a head wind, and that blowing almost a gale, part of it really hard. Oh how sick, how horribly we have felt, but is in vain to attempt description. There has been hardly a person that has not given up, and the disconsolate was the prevailing expression. For four days we did not get on deck, and to add to the disheartening effect of these circumstances, we were going very slowly; the sea was so heavy, the engines could hardly work their way, and we were really apprehensive that we should not get in, in time to be reported by the steamer of the 19th, and this we knew would occasion so much disturbance to our friends that it quite depressed us in addition to our own prolonged misery. Thursday night our prospects brightened, and yesterday there was a wonderful enlightening of the company. The wind has been in our favor since, and today we are going right merrily, eleven knots the hour. The gentlemen have been very busy with their hats, and have laughed so cheerfully, we cannot help being animated by it, but alas! we shall make the longest passage that has yet been made. In all probability 18 days. We seem unfortunate, but we must

patiently take what comes; my husband sometimes says, there seems a fate against us, but tho' favorable indications are doubtless agreeable in any undertaking yet we must often be content without a sign, for often none is granted, and if there were, where would be the room for faith.

Maria is perfectly well and says she enjoys herself continually, only in that desperate time she could not be on deck, but has sat up at every meal and has a fine appetite. Of course, Francis has suffered exceedingly, but Frank has been the most outrageously sick, and dares not yet take his seat at table. Maria, happily, has a companion, older than herself and apparently discreet. She has a married gentleman to attend upon her, whose wife is the unfortunate prisoner in her berth. The Capt'n is also much with them, and Frank always lounges by their side of an evening. This is a wretched record, is it not? I wish I could make it more interesting. Both the mocking birds are dead, but Cherry is alive and sociable. Last evening for the first time I came into the dining saloon, I lie on the sofa till bed time, not taking tea or supper. Things are not very inviting in fact. The stewardess is very untidy, cheerful and attentive, but very careless. The sick lady I have only seen once, she was lifted on to the sofa, but was so faint she could scarcely speak, poor creature, how I have pitied her. She crossed to Halifax to see her mother and friend and was so ill, she scarcely lived, but she has seven children in Scotland, and her desire to see them gave her courage to attempt another voyage. She is a little better now we have a quieter sea. Mr. Motley partook of the general depression and could not rally, but now he is very lively and joins in all the gay converse. I was amused last evening to watch the different groups; all were in good humor and mostly at cards, but what would my temperance Sister Drinker say, did she hear the call for drink, for one hour incessant and yet they all say there is very moderate drinking, but they take it pour passer le temps. My son has happily been too miserable to have any inclination, or indeed ability to taste their tempting draughts, but last evening he did make some whiskey punch which we ladies pronounced abominable. I played piquet with my son, for his amusement. Sometimes there has been an attempt to sing, and they say there are fine voices on board, but I have not had energy enough to go where I could hear them.

One little incident gave life to those who saw it. When more than 1000 miles from land, a fish hawk came fluttering round the ship almost exhausted, and after a time, alighted and was taken.

It is a beautiful bird and still retained some of its fierceness, tho' almost worn out. The bets are just determined and we are promised to see Cape Clear before breakfast Monday morning, and then we must reach Liverpool Tuesday afternoon. May the predictions be verified for truly I am tired of this lifeless life. Sometimes I cannot even read, Aye, for a day or two at a time. We occasionally contrast our situation and try to imagine ourselves at our lovely home with its luxuriant quiet, but I confess it has not many charms for me, because I go back to the dreariness and discomfort of the day or two before we left, but by and by I shall recall its more inviting aspect. Often when tossed about on the sofa below, I have cheered myself by recalling the friendly group that surrounded us at the hour of our parting. It was a great satisfaction to have them with us. We could not but help to keep up our cheerfulness, yet I feel as if I had said but little of the much I had to say. Francis says again and again that he shall not come back, but I am not at all alarmed, I am only afraid he will come, short of the time allotted.

It is a clear day with a fair wind. You shall have our party as they present themselves in the saloon; it is after lunch and most are on deck, some walking, some smoking, here are four determined whist players, taking their daily game. Opposite to us, Miss Jeplin reading, husband, Maria and I writing, Frank and Mrs. Coates at chess, and some eight or ten others with their books. You will ask what has become of homeopathy. In fact it has been too much trouble to take it at a time when we were too listless to raise our heads or even extend a hand, so as my faith was not mighty, I have e'en let it go.

Monday, October 16th. Joy, joy, land is in sight. Oh how refreshing to our wearied eyes is Erin's green isle. A high mountainous coast, but it is the signal of approach to England's fertile shores and it is hailed with rapture by all. Smiles deck every face and congratulations are long and loud. Unless very adverse winds should blow, we shall be in Liverpool by 4 o'clock P. M. tomorrow. Oh how enchanting will be the stability of Mother Earth. One gentleman says his first act shall be to seek the very largest bed in Liverpool, and then lie across in perfect contrast to the narrow pent up places we have been sleeping in. No one thinks of any possible calamity now and yet we have dangers still before us, for there are sometimes severe gales in this Channel. We have been on the promenade deck and have seen Bantry Bay and vessels sailing about and have felt the soft land breeze, but there has been a shower, and we have retreated till a more propitious time.

Liverpool, October 18th. I will only add of our safe arrival in "auld countrie" to our great joy and unexpressable relief. All safe, all well, particulars in my next. We reached here last eve. at 9. We are in private lodgings provided by Ben, and have had a night of sound repose. Ben is with us, we leave tomorrow at noon and go as far as Birmingham, and reach Lowlands at dinner next day. We find my mother is still at her cottage at Harrow and quite restored. Maria Langston is with her and Catharine and Dickason, all waiting to receive us. A great deal of love from us all to you all, but they scold if I write another word.

Adieu---

A. W. R.

No. 2. To Mrs. Wm. Rodman.

Birmingham, October 19th, 1843.

If I continue my journal, I must go back several days, so my dear sisters must place us again on board the Caledonia, tho I had announced our arrival, at the end of my first sheet which I hope reached you by the Britannia. They were hurried to the mail last evening, but as there were eight letters and they were conveyed by the Marchioness of the lodgings I am a little uneasy tho' assured by the woman that she was "very smart" and would get them there safely. You will have heard I dare say from the children's letters, of the last day passed in the Caledonia but as I purpose to write a journal, I must give my own account. On Sunday, the only variety, was attending service on board. It was pleasant to see the rough seamen cleaned up for the day assembling in the saloon, the wind was blowing hard and we only made out to hold up our heads. The service was wretchedly read by the Capt'n; when it was over conversation took the usual turn and the only indication of the day I observed was fewer works of fiction. On Monday, (October 16) we were beyond measure cheered by hearing land was in sight; I stole a glance at it before breakfast and as soon as that wretched meal was over I hurried above and oh! how inspiring was the sight, the day was beautiful the finest we had and the rocky coast even looked beautiful in our eyes, but I surely did write of this, and told you we expected to get in Tuesday morning at twelve.

Alas that night the wind changed blew a violent gale and kept us awake more than half the night and before morning I was as sick as ever. I could scarcely get up but at last succeeded rather than remain in that den of misery for such my berth had become. It continued to storm, the hours were creeping on, the pilot station passed and no pilot came out to us indeed it was quite doubtful if

one could get on board so boisterous was it. Everybody was feeling blank enough for the day before had been considered our last, the dinner the best as a finish the Capt'n's health drank with hip hip hurra followed by toasts first "the ladies" with deafening shouts, and Mr. R. called upon to acknowledge for them, which he did very well ending with an appropriate toast, others followed and then songs and a merry hour went over, every one buoyant with hope for the morrow. That morrow had come. The contrast in the weather was as great as possible, and the depression was in proportion. I was stretched on a sofa below, it was cold and comfortless wrapped in my shawl and cloak I thought I could not stir, indeed no one could scarcely maintain a footing it was so tremendously rough. A gentleman came to the door and told us there was a small sloop ahead showing signals of distress still I did not move but by and by there was so much commotion above and word came the sloop was sinking that I could no longer remain quiet, and managed to get up to the saloon. All the gentlemen were on deck, the girls looking out of a window. I took my station at another, and watched with intense anxiety the efforts that were making to save the men in her. It was a perilous attempt, but the sailors of the steamer volunteered simultaneously to go in a boat to the rescue headed by a manly youth the third mate, the expectation was extreme, and I forgot my own misery in sympathy I could have wept with excitement, at last the boat was cleared of the steamer, the passengers thronged the side and promenade deck ready to do what might be required the Capt'n giving his orders through a trumpet as the sea was running mountains high, and the wind roaring through the rigging. You can a little imagine how exciting was the scene, this boat dancing up and down, the sloop rocking until her masts nearly touched the water and the men sitting without another effort as they were almost exhausted with cold and labour. At last the boat was near enough for them to get in, and the sloop was abandoned, then there were fears she would get entangled in our paddles and also we were alarmed for our boat, but at last she reached our ropes and they were pulled in and hoisted up and in a minute our steamer was again in full operation. There were three men saved, they had been out in the gale all night, their vessel was old and leaked, her pumps had become useless, sails rent and the vessel filling. All rejoiced and were thankful. The Capt'n said no sail vessel could have lain to, in such a blow so all were reconciled to our detention, and glad that we had been kept back by adverse gales. We still went on, the wind

becoming more favourable, tho' violent. At last the Capt'n decided he would try and take in the ship himself; he is really a noble energetic young man. The wise ones were a little afraid of the attempt, but when his mind was made up, he consulted no one; it was very dark, but he knew the points well and the lights led him on; at last at nine o'clock the guns were fired; and the anchor dropped, then we were alive again and people began to emerge in their land gear. Every man exchanged his cap for a hat which so altered them, it was quite amusing. By and by, came a small steamer to take off the mails and Mr. Wason appeared in the saloon announcing himself as sent by Ben (he is cousin to Catharine).

Lowlands, Sunday Eve. I give the dates where I am, when able to write but I almost despair of bringing up my journal, and as you may have heard Maria's account, I shall be less particular until I am more nearly up with my time. After some delay from having to wait until the mails were on board, we were safely transferred to the boat, and were soon on shore, but the ground seemed to rock as we walked up to the carriage, still, there was the joyous sensation, that we were actually on land and had left the sea, for a long, long time, and yet, tho' our passage was considered long, it is wondrous to think that only seventeen days took us from the new to the old world, on we drove and soon found ourselves at the door of private lodgings which Ben had secured for us, to save our guineas at the Adelphi, where we expected to go, but which is an expensive hotel. We found a comfortable fire, which was really cheerful and needed, for it was cold and rainy, and we had not had its comfort since we left dear native land. Dear Ben did everything he could to welcome us and has been called much from home. It is still vacation, but soon his leisure will be over and we then must give him up. Our manner of living at lodgings amused us all, and was not quite to Frank's taste; both the children had anticipated meeting several of the passengers at the Adelphi. Mr. Motley was the only one we took leave of, and expected to see him again, he is a fine fellow, and always ready to assist in every time of need, he was very active when the men were taken off. Mr. Wason staid to tea, the little parcels of tea and sugar were brought out, the kettle boiled on the hob, and capital crumpets and muffins on the table, only one or two on a plate however and I knew Frank would be in despair, lest he could not satisfy his appetite, but they came in often enough to satisfy him at last. We did not retire until nearly one. I had for nights anticipated that quiet bed, it was indeed luxurious to stretch one's self upon it, but alas the motion

was still in my nerves, and when I awoke in the morning I hardly knew the difference between the really steady bedroom and the ship and this has continued at intervals even to this day. My head has partaken the whirl so much, that I have been a little uneasy as it was accompanied by the old hum, which tormented me so long after my illness, but tell it not in Gath I am at Lowlands and of course have not escaped the water treatment but I am better, and am in a fair way to become a convert.

Wednesday, October 18th. We rose very late, talked till twelve when Francis and Frank went to see our baggage through the customs they had no trouble whatever, our trunks were only opened not examined. Whilst they were gone we wrote, finished off our first dispatches for America interspersing it with listening to Uncle Ben's stories. He heard from Isabel who told him our mother was not so well, a bilious attack but it had put her into bed. Maria was with her at Woodside cottage, Catharine and Dickason at Sidmouth and anticipating our coming and in a nervous state of expectation. Ben reached Liverpool the 13th determined to be on the spot when we arrived. He has changed a good deal is monstrously fat and entirely bald as agreeable however as ever. When we sallied out in Liverpool, it was first to get bonnet caps he took us to the best shops which are in the principal streets and give us the opportunity of seeing some of the gentry of Liverpool, they did not strike us very favourably, they seemed coarse to our eye and Frank said he saw but one pretty face. Then we went to the town hall, the rooms used for city entertainments are quite splendid, I saw them when in this country before and I presume described them in my former journal. We reached our lodgings at dark, and had a very nice dinner, the only peculiar dish was the far-famed English soles, with shrimp sauce.

What think you was our evening entertainment? a thoroughly successful exhibition of phrenomagnetism, our brother Ben the operator. This singular fellow finds he has this power, he does not use it but at a distance from home, as he would lose caste, in such complete contempt is magnetism held. I was astounded at the results; if the lad was not deceiving us, it was marvellous beyond expression and I was almost awestruck. That there was no collusion was very certain. Ben professes not to believe more than he sees, and we could not satisfy ourselves perfectly that the youth did not know what was going on, and yet the conviction on all, was almost certainty. Ben had seen this boy brought forward once in public, and go thro' some experiments he knew he had the mesmeric power

and wishing to try it further and believing it would amuse us, he appointed him to come to our lodgings, he is about eighteen, a Yorkshire mechanic, apprentice in a brass foundry, his fellow workers having heard in a lecture that all had the influence more or less, tried, found him very susceptible, at first it took him  $\frac{3}{4}$  of an hour to get to sleep, since only a few minutes, thinks his general health better since submitting to magnetism, knows little of phrenology only where the principal organs lie, the only effect observable, after it is over, a deeper sleep at night, he has been mesmerised a dozen times in public, receives half a crown from the mesmeric society for each, but would not take a cent from us though Ben went out with him and told him he ought, for he gave his time, but he said no Mr. R. was the means of his getting the half-crown from the society and he was quite willing for him to experiment upon him, he was very simple, and plain spoken, and there seemed no object in deceiving, but then as Ben said he never forgot the Cariboo humbug, and it was so unaccountable that he could not give his full belief to it, tho' he related to us some most astonishing facts that had come under his own observation. I am afraid I can very poorly convey to you what we saw, so much was in the countenance. [Here follows a detailed account of the experiment.]

Ben says he has no positive proof we were not acted upon and whilst that is the case he cannot give it full credence he thinks Maria would be a subject but not me, she is quite willing for him to try I am not and yet before only father and myself I may consent, in the hope of fathoming this curious subject, "what can it be." Ben often says, he feels nothing in himself but he has long been aware of a peculiar influence he had over the insane, and he is extremely interested, to find out more, that he may make it the means of good to those afflicted ones, for he is truly philanthropic, and does a great deal of good in many ways, he says every man has his own sphere of assisting others, and his inventions which the rich pay well for, enables him to give the poor the benefit of them extra, these hydropathic baths help many in this way. He is wonderfully clever, full of mechanical genius his baths are quite unique, fitted up most comfortably, even elegantly, one could fancy oneself in a foreign land, when first introduced to a room lighted from the top, in the middle of which is apparently a canopied tent, and divers cords and tassels, and gymnastic looking affairs about, in one corner, a high draped box, which proves to be a shower bath, which can be regulated to descend slowly or fast, the large reservoir is over the ceiling, under the tent is a well eight feet deep and six



Francis Rotch  
(1788-1874)

Taken from a miniature in the Old Dartmouth Historical Society, formerly the property of Francis Rotch of Seattle.



Ann Waln Morgan  
(1800-1884)  
Wife of Francis Rotch

Taken from a miniature in the Old Dartmouth Historical Society, formerly the  
property of Francis Rotch of Seattle.

in diameter, which the patient gets into by steps, or if a great invalid is lowered into in a chair adapted to the purpose. The room is twelve feet high, thus he gets a fall of twenty feet, which is varied to less and greater, fine or heavy, narrow streams, and wide streams, regulated by the various cords and pipes traversing the room, the water runs off below, and of course is let off after every patient, the room has moveable carpets, statues and pictures and some odd looking caps and dresses, a comfortable sofa, also a sitting bath or two, which is only a tin box, made comfortable for the sitting posture, they put in about four inches of water, cold or tepid as may be advisable, for I find the quantity and temperature require as much discrimination as so many grains of calomel or rhubarb.

In another room divided by double doors, is a room with toilet tables, and sofas, and pictures, and knickknacks and baths, the room carpeted, but moveable pieces under the baths and the sofas, let down and raised, and have mattresses for the damp sheet, or the wrapping in blankets, until profusely perspiring and then plunging into a cool, or cold bath as may be where they are rubbed industriously, and every thing looked so neat and comfortable and beautiful, that it took from the horror I had conceived of it, excepting indeed the douch, that was tremendous. The cures and cases Ben relates, are almost as wonderful as Mesmerism, we have seen some of the patients who confirm his statements, my own case is too slight to gather proof from tho' my head is cured. My regimen has been two sitting baths, and damp not wet bandages around the stomach as he considered there was the seat of the evil, they are managed in this, the requisite thickness of linen, is squeezed out of cold water, as dry as you can then pinned flat on several thickness more, and over that flannel of course the wet linen is next the body, the clothes over all keep the air from reaching it, it is changed as often as dry in more serious cases the wet linen is thicker, until it reaches the sheet. The greatest objection to the treatment is its trouble, the perpetual dressing and undressing, but then health is to be gained and almost any sacrifice is trivial compared to it, but now to the journal again.

Thursday, Oct. 19th. We packed up and were off by the London train at  $\frac{1}{2}$  past ten. Everything was admirably conducted at the station house, and indeed every where along the road, no crowd, no noise, police and attendants in plenty, the carriages were more comfortable than ours, but the railway itself did not strike me as easier or much quieter than some of ours, but the completeness of all connected with it is very striking, everything is substantially and

handsomely done, every spot of earth cultivated, and flowers and shrubs planted to adorn. We reached Birmingham about three o'clock took our dinner in a fine hotel, at the Queens hotel where the passengers dine. After dinner we decided to stay all night, chose our bed rooms, and a parlour and went out to show the children a button factory, then they saw the whole process of the covered buttons, which you know have taken the place of metal, which we saw when here before, the whole work is by women and children, tho' it is all machine work. We hurried through and then went to a medallists whom Francis wished to consult about Agricultural medals, we saw some that were beautifully done, a great many temperance ones very cheap, but well executed, he gave us each one. Mine is the first two missionaries. We had a good tea tho' not plentiful, but we kept calling until we got enough. After writing in our journals we retired to excellent beds and well furnished apartments, only I was made seasick every time there was any movement in the bed, for it was a spring mattress and too miserably recalled the ship's motion.

We were up early and took a hurried breakfast for the train at seven a. m. but Frank who was not down in time, he had to wait until we reached Wolverton, where he fared well, the entertainment vastly surpassed ours at the depots. The country was more beautiful than the day before, still very green, tho' the trees are putting on their autumn livery, how different from our gorgeous tints, these are mostly brown with now and then a yellow shade. As we approached Harrow it became more populous, cottages, farm houses and villas gave animation to the cultivated landscape. Isabel was at the station in her pony chair, a complete and elegant little establishment. The Tilbury drawn by one horse, was also there, and all safely arrived at sweet Lowlands, Isabel driving me in first rate style, her pony very spirited, but minding her admirably. She seemed as joyous as possible, we paused at the door to look round, the whole is in excellent order, and beautifully arranged. Isabel always chief superintendant. The deer trotted up to us, to the children's great delight, it is really a lovely spot, and very complete, his few acres are turned to good account, the table has been chiefly supplied from them, pork pies, ducks, chickens, rabbits and pigeons, and lamb and mutton too. Isabel is really very competent. I am surprised at her ability, in various ways, for I left her in mind much of a child, she looks older of course but still very pretty and amiable, and is a lovable creature. Frank and Maria are charmed with her.

Before we came in Aunt Maria appeared, and we had a delightful cordial embrace, all around. She is looking very well, not thinner than when we parted, she seems, and says she is as happy as possible. She shewed us one day sketches of all her children, seven of them, she thinks them excellent likenesses and they are a brilliant English group. Her eldest son has been trying the water treatment at Stansted thirty miles off, he was so feeble when he came he had to be lifted out of the carriage, he now walks his two and three miles. Her own children shew nothing of this terrible complaint. Mr. L's daughters have and in consequence have always to be near the seashore. Frank with his Uncle Ben went up to announce our arrival to mother, they had been very anxious and they thought her bilious attack was partly brought on by it. She received them very gaily, tho' in bed and muffled up, they did not stay long but she was made happy, by knowing we were all near. We dined at 3 which allowed us to go to Woodside by daylight. Francis and Maria Langston walked and the servant drove me, the cottage is a wee affair and scantily furnished, it was built by Ben who rents it, it happened to be vacant when my mother was ordered change of air, and not choosing to give Isabelle the care of another invalid, for Isabelle has been a good deal fagged nursing one after another, besides mother preferred a higher situation. She has two maid servants hired for the time and has made out very well, but now wants to get to the comfort of her own home. She was not overcome at meeting us, tho' she overwhelmed her son with caresses, indeed all are devoted to him and it does my very heart good to see him in this atmosphere of family affection; every attention is lavished upon him in especial, but all are received at once into the circle, and there seems no reserve with us, we are completely of them and each one has his confidence to bestow. They will not hear of our going away this winter, and I feel as if I should prefer to cement the family tie by remaining amongst them, it is not however yet settled. We sat about an hour.

We saw too Ann Dumayne, who seems ingrafted into the Rotch tribe all are attached to her; and consider her in the light of a friend not merely as companion to my mother, she seems to be completely on a footing of equality. She is devotedly attached to mother, and willing to do any thing for her to make a pudding or darn a stocking; but as an equal not a dependant. It is under consideration whether Catharine leaves her Maria still with her grandmother, if she do she will probably go to school or have a day governess.

Catharine and Dickason remain a fortnight longer in London to

be with us, lodging opposite to us and taking their meals at No. 8. On our return after leaving Maria with mother we found Dickason at Lowlands. It was singular to find ourselves walking quietly down from Harrow after dark as if we had been years in England, and then to remember that three weeks before, about that hour, we were driving from Boston to Cambridge. Dickason took me more by surprise than any of them, he is enormous almost as large as Swain, less clumsy and so much younger that he does not compare with him, excepting in size, he has a good deal of suavity of manner, and full of laugh, they say he has an excellent disposition. Francis and he have met but 36 hours since he was ten years old, of course they have each other to learn individually, tho' to see them together, you would suppose their separation had been short, the cordiality of manner strikes one forcibly. I presume there is no more real feeling than amongst us but the demonstration is greater, they part and meet night and morning with a shake of the hand or kiss, friends meet with a kiss, tho' they have seen each other the day before, strangers to us shake hands when they leave and if they meet us next day, it is with a warm grasp. Catharine had remained in London because she thought there was no room for her at either house, but they planned a bed on the floor, and Dickason wrote for her to come by the next afternoon train.

Now as to the week passed pleasantly here, I cannot pretend to give a daily detail, for I really should find it difficult to reveal its various little incidents, but I will begin from yesterday, and henceforth may write regularly. We breakfast at nine, and are always over an hour at the meal, for our appetites are famous, and our words not a few. Dickason breakfasted with us, whilst he was at Harrow, he went up to town on Tuesday with Catharine, who came down by the early train Sunday morning. Frank and nephew were kissed heartily and we were soon in full talk as tho' we had parted a month before. Well after breakfast yesterday Frank and Maria went to say goodbye to mother, who was going to town at 1 o'clock, and to report to her something of their day in London. Ben went to attend to his patients, and I sat down to darn stockings, with Francis and Isabelle to talk with, and we had some pleasant family confidences and dissensions for a couple of hours, only interspersed by a call from young Mr. Wason, a hydropathic patient a cousin of Catharine's who with his wife drank tea here the evening before. Frank and Maria came in and reported their Grandmother quite well, and Aunt Catharine arrived. Isabelle went up on her pony a new one, and Ben accompanied her on horseback; Francis walked.

In their absence I wrote and Maria drew, then Maria tried the pony, when she returned, she went to change her dress, and the rest of us sallied out to look about the grounds, Frank was highly diverted with some young donkeys, they are an odd looking animal. Ben declares I must mount one tomorrow.

After a time Frank went home to write again, for we have all been greatly in arrears, and we four proceeded for a walk. I find I can only keep warm by exercise, for the air to me is very chilly, but we have had fine weather ever since we landed, more sunshine than I expected to see in England for so many days in succession, it has often rained sometimes they say quite powerfully but it has always been at night. Clouds frequently flit about, and for an hour or two obscure the sun; but they serve to make the landscape more beautiful, and lovely indeed are its lights and shades, our walk was down a pretty lane, and we enjoyed the smooth road and the pretty scenes continually opening upon us. Dinner at 4 which with the fruit desert lasts until nearly 6, they sit and chat over the table a long time, perhaps the fruit remains untasted before you for a quarter of an hour, and each one helps himself as inclined. We have been eating English walnuts just gathered, they are delightful but tedious to prepare as the thin skin is very bitter when new, then eaten with salt, this picking over spins out the time. When over we took our sewing and again were in the full tide of conversation. The children had been the day before to London. Isabelle drove up, Frank and Uncle Ben and Maria, the latter wanted to have the pleasure of giving them this first night, they accomplished a great deal and in consequence were desperately tired the next day, Maria was therefore ready for bed, as soon as tea was over, half past nine. We got upon family matters and did not retire until after twelve.

Thursday, October 26th. Before breakfast I read Johnson on Hydropathy for I want to understand something of the theory of what I hear so much, and the practice of which I hear constantly. Isabelle seldom gets down till half past nine so I get a little while to go on with my book. I already see a good deal of reason in it, much more than at first appears. We often do not get up from table till nearly eleven. I sewed a little while after Isabelle gave her orders and the others were writing or talking. At twelve Isabelle, Maria and Frank went for a ride, Maria looking droll enough in a ragged old habit of Isabelle's, and her hat a complete man's hat, with tabs of lace. We should not have thought in America, she could have appeared in such a shabby garb, but she was too full of the ride to think of anything else and they thought her sufficiently

attired. I wrote for an hour, and then husband and self, went out for a walk, which was beautiful as all around here is, one cannot go amiss. We returned with fine appetites for dinner, indeed they seldom fail us, we are almost ashamed of eating so heartily, but they tell us it is Lowlands air, and that we shall find it lesser after being a month in England. We regret, that we must leave the sweet spot so soon, but feel on such a truly friendly footing with both master and mistress and believing them sincere in urging this as our second home, we all look forward to frequent visits. There is so much suited to the tastes of our children, that they find everything delightful and manifest no desire even to go to London. Still when there they will have so much novelty and occupation they will not feel the absence of their country pursuits at least for a time.

After dinner we looked over medals and minerals. Isabelle has some little notion of many sciences, a love of everything appertaining to Nat. Hist. and she amused us with an account of her labours, disasters and perseverance in obtaining her fossils and minerals, she cares nothing for society and I suspect does not read, but loves to correct and arrange and investigate, she has a good deal of conversation and shews much good sense. Maria will derive much useful information from being with her. There is nothing frivolous about her, and even her love of pets I consider quite within bounds, we shall all become much attached to her I am sure and Ben is so devoted to us and so entertaining we cannot but love and admire him; after tea, which was after ten (to shew our hours) Ben, Maria and myself adjourned to the breakfast parlour to try the first experiment in mesmerizing. The success was very imperfect, tho' Ben says she certainly was in the abnormal state, which means, I should say, stupified, she declares it was quite different from being sleepy, that she knew the questions that were asked her but was too heavy to answer, hated to be spoken to and yet did not rouse up. Ben expected to find her a good subject but wearied himself to little purpose. Adieu my dear sisters, these journal letters are somehow unsatisfactory so I will at once begin a really familiar letter and will therefore finish my journal sheet with Thursday.

Truly yours,

A. W. R.

London, Dec. 4, 1843. Frank has had two days of unequalled pleasure. On Friday by 8 o'clock he was in my room to shew his hunting toggery. A New Market coat cut rounding from the waist, tight pants, nearly covered up by boots which came two thirds up the thigh, a blue cravat and vest, white gloves and hunting spurs, completed his equipment. He went to breakfast with Young

Verner. Only his grandmother was present, the rest of the family still in the country. We drove Frank and another young man in his dog cart; he was in scarlet coat, leather smalls, and blue velvet vest and handkerchief. They went 20 miles to where their horses had been sent the day before. Frank had hired a fine hunter. They found a crowded field, more than 500 horsemen, some in scarlet others in plain clothes. It was a gay scene. The stag and hounds were off and the crowd rushing thro' lanes previous to a scamper when the poor stag was badly wounded by a shepherd's dog and this putting an end to the day's sport, but Frank had seen enough to be delighted and he and Verner agreed to go the next day in another direction, and accordingly on Saturday Frank was up betimes and off in a cab to meet Verner before it was light. They drove again 20 miles, breakfasted, and then off to the fields. Everything was in the highest degree successful. There were not more than 70. One woman among them, who scampered off with the rest. They had a grand run of 12 miles. Only eight came up with the hounds and Frank was one of them. Only the hunstman was in sight of the stag when he was taken, which he was by some farmers at the proper time. The woman, a Mrs. Theobald, (of course a person of no character) was thrown completely over her horse's head, Frank saw her fall and thought she must be killed, but up she jumped and tho' her habit was completely torn off nearly up to her knees, she got on again, and galloped off, and was one of the 8 in advance. Frank says he was so excited by the scene that he absolutely screamed aloud, he longed to flog his horse with might and main, but the noble animal was going so gallantly he had no excuse for it. His father and Uncles were highly diverted by his account and realized fully their own youthful days. Frank was nearly tired to death, having rode that day 70 miles. I never saw greater delight manifested than in his descriptions.

Wednesday, March 27, 1844. Frank appeared in our room before we were up, as he was again going to try the pleasures of the hunt. He went off by the railroad and had his hunter to meet him near the spot, which was Salt Mill. He had the most glorious sport, was perfectly enchanted with his horse, and was very nearly in at the death, if his stirrup had not broken he thinks he should have been up with the stag. The noble creature had to be killed, as the hounds tore him badly. It was amusing to hear the dear boy's glowing descriptions. His happiness was only not perfect, because he had not a red coat. Francis drove Maria thro' the park, the town is now fast filling and the increase of equipages is evident.

March 30, 1844. Frank has been flying about all day to equip himself in hunting toggery, it seems a useless expense, but he says it is by far the greatest enjoyment he has and he shall probably be here another season. How droll he will look in top boots and smalls. At three, Francis drove me in the dennet to Hyde Park, and we drove thro' as grandly as any in the train, tho' not so comfortably, that is certain, for we were almost perished, the wind blew and the dust flew, and I was obliged to envy the aristocratic loungers of the well padded, covered coaches. Our little blood horse does admirable, tho' old, he is full of spirit but very manageable.

Sunday, March 31st. Frank appointed a Jew man whose Sabbath was over, to bring him some red coats, before grandmother should be up, as she would be rather distressed at such a transaction. Accordingly, when he arrived, the servant smuggled him upstairs with his bags, and Frank made his father laugh heartily, with the Ishmaelite character of the individual. Having bought his coat, Mr. Lazarus descended and drove away in his cab, without arousing grandmother.

Monday, April 1, 1844. A heavy fog, but as Francis and I had arranged to drive to Lowlands, to stay a night, and the red sun, like a ball of fire, shewed himself thro' it, we resolved to go and I set off at eleven. It soon lightened a little and became warmer and we had a delicious drive, and how delightful the country seemed to us as we emerged from the smoke of London, the air so fresh and pure. Previous to our starting, Frank went off by the train in high glee, to where his hunter was to meet him. He looked queer enough, quite in masquerade, but so nice and so bright! He felt that he was at the height of his ambition in the hunting line, and made fun of his own folly. We could not much blame him, yet think he has to feel the uselessness of the expense. We enjoyed all the day out of doors at Harrow.

Tuesday. Again delightful and we hated to go up to town. Every sound was so rural and the sight of grass and flowers so refreshing. At 12, we entered our dennet and departed for home, had a perfect drive enjoying every moment. Frank had returned safely, but had not nearly so fine a time as before, tho' still it was grand sport. He and his sister had gone to the Exhibition of the Society of British Artists.

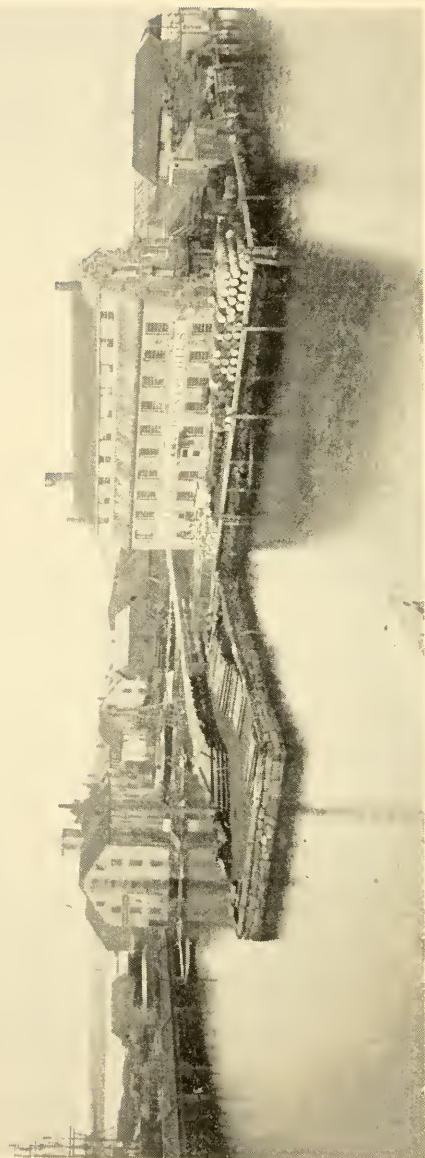
Sunday, April 7, 1844. Frank has not been well for several days,



Francis Morgan Rotch  
(1822-1863)

Painted in Paris in 1844

Taken from a miniature in the Old Dartmouth Historical Society, formerly the  
property of Francis Rotch of Seattle.



Nye's Oil Works on Fish Island in New Bedford Harbor, in whaling days.

but was better this afternoon, and his father drove him down to Lowlands, and Maria and I followed in the pony chair, with Hurdston to drive us. We had letters from both Isabelle and Ben, pressing us to take up our abode at Lowlands, and to make ourselves entirely at home there, and all loving the country so well, we could not resist and the weather was as tempting as possible. While there, we can scarcely bear to be within doors.

Monday. We had arranged to drive to see the hounds throw off and were disappointed to find it would be most prudent for Frank to keep quiet as he has a little fever every day and has not his usual energies. So we were obliged to go without him. We set off early. It was cold and raw but long before we reached our stopping place it had become fine. When we had gone seven miles we came to a small public house, on the roadside, where was to be the "Meet." We got out and were shown into a front room whence Maria and I had a good deal of amusement in watching the assembling of the people, with many of the better class equipages filled with gazers like ourselves. By and by came the box containing the deer. This was a signal for all to move on, so we entered our vehicles and followed in the train. All sorts of machines had been put in requisition and were stationed in rows along the road. The object was to see the deer let out from the cart and the people and dogs start after him. The place was a wide common on each side of the road, the redcoats, scattered thro' the field gave it a gay appearance. Frank was glad he had not gone; to see them without being able to join them would have set him wild, and unfortunately, this is the last stag hunt of the season.

We took a good station and saw the stag take his first bounds. He ran among the carriages, crossed the road and trotted leisurely for a moment or two, then bounded and leaped a high hedge beautifully, where he was lost to our view. A few minutes pause and the plain coats on horseback rushed after him, followed by the reds, more leisurely, all taking the leap in fine style, some came down, but the last had an easy leap, for the gap had become very decided, and now from another part appeared the hounds, too far off for us to see them distinctly, which I regretted, as they say it is quite curious to observe how eager and yet how obedient, they are. At last they were let off and soon got upon the scent. It was an amazingly animated time and I should like to have seen more of the chase. We had a lovely day, and the ride back was charming. Frank was glad to see us, he had begun to tire of solitude. After

dinner we all rambled out, and mounted one of the grassy sides of Harrow Hill to the churchyard, where once again I sat upon the tomb where Byron often reclined, when a boy, to gaze upon the extensive landscape stretched beneath. It was a sunny scene, but not to compare with our Catskill view. Our weather is like June, the leaves are putting out with rapidity and the hedges will be soon quite green.

Tuesday, April 9th. Maria and I walked about the grounds after breakfast, then she and Frank took their drawing materials to sketch a cottage. I took my sewing and went out to a retired seat where I had a pleasant contemplation hour. And here I close my journal for the present, with lots of love to you all from your attached

A. W. Rotch

EXTRACTS FROM  
“THE YOUNG LADY’S FRIEND BY A LADY”  
(Eliza Rotch Farrar)  
Boston 1837

CHAPTER I. INTRODUCTION.

“Now that I have done going to school, I shall be my own mistress, and can do as I please all day long. I can walk out in the morning when the shops and streets are full of people, and, having now no lessons to get, I can go out visiting every evening, if I choose. I mean to keep up my music, and read a little French; but as to history and geography, grammar and philosophy, I have done with them for ever. There are so many really good novels coming out every day, which one ought to be acquainted with, that they will take up all the time I have for reading, so that I shall have employment enough, and that of the most interesting kind. How happy I shall be, now that I have done going to school!”

Such are the feelings and opinions, with which a great many girls regard that epoch of their life, when they cease to attend school, and begin their career as young ladies. Many who read this soliloquy will find in it the echo of what they themselves thought and felt on that occasion. But if such are their views, their school education has failed in what ought to be regarded as its chief purpose, and the years thus spent have been wasted. The great business of early education is to form habits of industry, to train the mind to find pleasure in intellectual effort, and to inspire a love of knowledge for its own sake. If you have attended school merely because it was expected of you; if you have learnt your lessons well for the sake of ranking high among your school-fellows; if you have regarded your studies as daily tasks to be performed till a certain period, when you will be released from them, you are still uneducated; what you have toiled to commit to memory will soon be forgotten, and your intellectual powers, in consequence of having never been properly called into action, will dwindle away, till it will be matter of wonder to yourselves, how you ever performed your school tasks.

This utter waste of the precious morning of life is sometimes the fault of the teacher, sometimes of the scholar; in many cases both are wholly unconscious of the sad mistakes they are making. As the business of education comes to be better understood by parents, by guardians, and by children themselves, such fatal errors cannot be persisted in; and there are already some honorable exceptions.

There are schools, which the scholar leaves with regret, where a true thirst for knowledge has been given, where habits of intellectual labor have been formed, where the principle of emulation never enters, and knowledge is its own reward. The teachers of such schools are worthy of all praise; they should be regarded as the benefactors of their race; the rich and powerful should delight to do them honor; their profession should rank with the other learned ones; and, inasmuch as the influence of mothers is greater than that of fathers in forming the characters of their children, the office of wisely developing the minds of young women should be ranked among the most honorable employments in the land.

But schools the best conducted, and teachers the most competent and beloved, must at last give place to other discipline; a girl cannot always go to school; the time of quitting her daily tasks must come; and when it does, it is an important era in her life. If she belong to the class whom I have first described, it is a season full of danger and temptation; if to the more fortunate class of well-educated girls, it is still a critical period. The salutatory influence of the much loved and honored teacher is withdrawn; the pupil must now depend more on herself than formerly in prosecuting her studies. Self-education begins where school-education ends, and, with this additional responsibility, she is placed in new circumstances of temptation and trial.

A young lady, on leaving school, is expected to take a more important place in her father's house; she must go into society; she must perform her part towards the poor, the sick, and the afflicted; she must assist her mother in domestic affairs, and, with all these added duties, she must continue her own education. When that has been properly begun, the pupil feels that it can never end but with life; she will also feel that what has been done at school is but furnishing her with instruments for carrying on the work. If she has there learnt the French, Italian, and Latin languages, she will consider them as the means, by which she is to enrich her mind with the literature of France and Italy; if she has there read a few abridged histories of various countries, they are to be regarded as a mere introduction to that study of history, which is to enlarge her views of human nature, and give her an insight into the policy of nations and the progress of civilization; if she has read in school the Lives of Plutarch, they are to serve as standards of comparison for other biographies, and to be recurred to in reading the history of the times in which those characters lived; if she has there committed to memory pages of geography, it is that she may have in her

mind sketches of countries, which she is ever after to be filling up with additional details; and so on of all other school exercises, they lay the foundation, on which she must be ever after building. . . . .

Those who are blessed with well-educated, judicious, and experienced mothers, and have been brought up in habits of intimate communion with them, have within their reach the best aid, and need only to be urged to mistrust their own inexperience, and seek frequent counsel from that tenderest of friends, a wise mother. But there is a numerous class, who, either by bereavement or estrangement, are without this maternal aid, and there are others whose mothers are incompetent to the task; both these would gladly take counsel even of a stranger, if she came in the spirit of love and sympathy to offer them the fruits of her experience, and showed them, by her knowledge of their wants, that she had some claim to their confidence.

It is as this friendly stranger, that I propose giving a few hints on the various topics connected with the character of a young woman just entering upon life. I beg my young readers to consider the following chapters as the familiar talk of a friend, who has passed through the scenes she describes, and is still young enough to remember how she felt at their age; of one, who views the true self-discipline she recommends, as added means of enjoyment, and, so far from wishing to abridge the pleasures and privileges of the young, is only desirous of showing them how they may use without abusing them, and so prolong the happiness of their early days.

As I do not wish to address any one class in particular, I shall notice the errors to which all are liable; and, if the town-bred lady finds some advice which does not apply to her situation, she must pass it by and turn to something that does; whilst the belle of a country village must appropriate those hints that suit her condition in life, and not wonder if some temptations are mentioned from which she is happily exempt, and some rules given which are inapplicable to her mode of life.

And now let me premise, that I write for those in whom the moral sense has been developed with the intellectual faculties, for those who feel and acknowledge the duties which grow out of their relation to God and their immortal destiny; for, if I did not take this for granted, I should make the present work a series of homilies, or a book of extracts from all that has been so ably written to urge young people to "seek first the kingdom of God." Fully persuaded as I am, that there is no other foundation for happiness in every stage of existence than that which Jesus Christ has laid, no means of turning this life to its best account, but by making a conscience of all our

ways, and no improvement worth pursuing, but that which educates the soul for eternity, all my hints and instructions must be based upon Christian principles; though it is impossible to combine, in this small volume, the advice which belongs to the teaching of religion with that which concerns the minor morals of life. Enough has been said and written, and is continually offered to the consideration of the young, to convince them of those great truths which lie at the foundation of their happiness in time and eternity; it is the purpose of this little work to enter into details, which cannot be found in the longer and graver treatises on religion and morals; to point out the means of acquiring those lesser graces of character and manners, which adorn and set forth to the best advantage the more solid qualities, and which, though of little value unless they spring from that love to God and man, which is the root of Christian virtue, are not always found growing by its side.

### CHAPTER III. DOMESTIC ECONOMY.

It is worthy of remark, that in this country, where it is so difficult to procure a sufficiency of household labor, the mode of furnishing a house, and conducting the business of a family, is such as to require more attendance, than the same style of living would demand in France and other parts of Europe. The quantity of brass to be kept bright, and of mahogany furniture to be rubbed, is, in a considerable degree, peculiar to this country, and might be easily dispensed with, without any abatement of comfort or neatness; whilst the labor, thus wasted, might be turned to much better account. It is for your own ease and that of your domestics, to abridge the work of the house as much as possible, and, by endeavouring to find out the relative importance of the different branches of household economy, to give to each its due weight and no more. By good management, the use of method, and the habit of moving quickly, all may be done in order and in season, and much of the day left for other things. Let those who find themselves so overloaded with these cares and duties, that they do not find time for cultivating their minds and attending to the claims of benevolence, carefully examine their way of life, and see if they cannot retrench some hours from their every-day occupations. Perhaps they may be doing as a young lady of my acquaintance did, who used to spend two hours every morning in arranging the glasses of flowers that adorned her mother's parlour; and, when asked if she had read such and such books, replied in the negative, and gave as a reason, that she never could find time to read. Better would it have been for her never to have had a flower in the house, than thus to neglect

the more important duties of mental culture. It is well to bear in mind, that there is always time enough for every thing that we ought to do and if any duty is neglected from a supposed want of time, the fault is in our arrangement; we have given too much to some occupation or amusement, and should immediately make a wiser distribution of our hours.

Now, if it is granted by my young friends, that they ought to take a part in domestic affairs, then let them do it with a good grace, and not be ashamed of it. Some persons are very notable, but take the greatest pains to conceal it, as if it were a disgrace rather than a merit; their moral sense is clouded by some false notions of gentility, or their false pride makes them fancy certain occupations to be degrading, as if it were possible that persons should be degraded by doing that which they ought to do.

The young lady who spends two hours a day over her flowers, ought to be ashamed of that; but, if the arrangements of your father's household make it desirable and proper that you should assist at the ironing-table, or in making cake and pies, or in clear-starching your own muslins, or in making preserves, or cleaning silver, or doing any such piece of notable work, you should no more think of concealing it, or being ashamed of it, than you would be of combing your hair, or hemming a pocket handkerchief. This false shame about housewifery adds much to its unpleasantry; whereas a true view of the beauty and fitness of these feminine offices, would invest them with a charm, and recommend them to the most refined. . . . .

If this has been the experience of any of my readers, I would advise them, whilst they love and honor the disinterested affection that has spared them all domestic labor, to change their habits on leaving school, and to make a point of taking care of their own chambers at least, if the arrangements of the family do not render further exertions, in that way, desirable. It is a good plan, to strip the clothes off your bed and shake it up, as soon as you rise from it; by doing it then, your cap protects your hair from any lint or feathers, and being lightly clothed, your movements are perfectly free, and the glow occasioned by the exertion makes you, on a cold morning, feel less dread of cold water. You can finish making your bed and dust your furniture after you are drest and before breakfast, if there is time; but if not, return and do it as soon as possible after that meal is over. . . . .

Bright silver and steel, clear glass, neatly arranged saltcellars and castors, are within the reach of everybody; and it is much more for

the comfort of your guests, and the credit of your housekeeping, than that your tumblers and decanters should be clean and free from lint, than that they should be elaborately cut; that your knife-handles should be perfectly wiped, rather than of a costly material; and so of other things; the enjoyment of a company, at dinner, depending much more on neatness and good order, than on expensive table furniture, on a few dishes well cooked, than a great variety ill served.

When friends come to see you, uninvited, do the best you can to entertain them well, but make no comment or apology; for that always sounds to your guests like a reproach for taking you unawares. . . . .

In no country of the world are fortunes more rapidly made or more suddenly lost than in this; and the female part of a family are peculiarly interested in a prudent line of conduct during prosperity, in order that a decent competence may be secured to them. As daughters arrive at years of discretion, they should be informed of the nature and proceeds of their father's business, or of his income, if a professional man; they should know also the family expenses, and the various claims upon their father's purse, that they may regulate their own expenditure accordingly.

Whatever economy it is right for you to practise, you should never be ashamed of. If at any time you find yourself trying to conceal your thrift, you had better pause and examine your motives; for either you are possessed of that absurd weakness, a desire to appear richer than you really are, or else the piece of economy in question is not necessary, and therefore it is that you are ashamed of. . . . .

#### CHAPTER IV. NURSING THE SICK.

It is the privilege of woman to be the ministering spirit at the couch of the sick. Of all her social duties, none is of more importance, or more frequent recurrence, than this. It recommends itself equally to the young and the old, to the selfish and the generous. As there is no possession more uncertain than that of health, and since the young and vigorous are liable, as well as the aged and the infirm, to be laid upon the bed of sickness, by an epidemic, or by imprudent exposure, or by some accident, you may be called upon at any moment to attend upon your parents, your brothers, your sisters, or your companions; it is therefore very necessary to know how to render such services in an efficient and proper manner.

Those who have warm affections, and ready sympathies, will seek

this duty, rather than avoid it; and, though long-continued efforts are not to be expected from persons who act from impulse, many kind attentions are thus paid; and a little knowledge as to the best manner of performing the service, so readily and generously undertaken, will add much to its value. But it is only such as act in this, as in other things, from the highest principle, who can ever be the ready, cheerful, indefatigable, persevering, and agreeable nurses, that you should aim to be, and may become by habitual self-regulation, together with a little instruction as to the details of a sick chamber, which I here propose to offer. . . . .

Bed linen and body linen should be changed oftener in sickness than in health; and every day, when the patient can sit up long enough to have it done, all the bedclothes should be carried out of the chamber and thoroughly aired, either out of doors or in another room, whilst the bed is shaken up and remains uncovered and the mattress is turned. When the sick person can only sit up a very short time, it is well to have two sets of pillows, blankets, and sheets, and employ them alternately, that one set may be airing whilst the other is in use. . . . .

Personal cleanliness is so important to the sick, and daily ablutions are so necessary, that I shall quote the words of an eminent physician of the present day in favor of it.

"Few nurses are sufficiently scrupulous about the daily ablution of the sick. Their neglect arises from the common fear about applying water to the sick for fear of their taking cold. Instead of washing the patient's hands, face, and neck, and often feet too, with warm soap and water once or twice or three times a day, which should be done, they merely daub them over with a rag dipped in hot rum or vinegar, which leaves on the skin all its impurities, and gets it into a hard, dry, and most uncomfortable state. In this way I have known a lady, in very comfortable circumstances, and not, in health, deficient in personal attentions, go for I think not less than four weeks of a chronic disease, without having her face or hands washed, except with vinegar and rum, till they became actually grim with dirt, when I accidentally discovered the cause of their strange appearance. The fear of taking cold is one of the most pernicious superstitions of the sick chamber. Vastly more hurt is done by the almost insane precautions frequently taken against it, especially among children, than is to be attributed to the thing itself. Patients are debarred from fresh air, fresh water, clean clothes, and almost from the light of heaven, lest they should take cold. Not that there is no fear of taking cold to the sick, or that no

precautions should be taken against it; but that the danger itself is prodigiously overrated, and the means of obviating it are mistaken."

.....  
It is very desirable to have hot water always ready in a sick room; and therefore a little kettle over the fire of the chamber is preferable, in cold weather, to having hot water brought up from the kitchen every time it is needed. There should also be plenty of cold water close at hand, and a supply of fuel within reach. ....

If you are a watcher for the night only, be very particular to get the physician's directions from some competent person, and write them down, that there may be no mistake about the medicine, or food, to be given through the night. If you have no watch, ask for one, that you may administer things at the right hour exactly. A watch with black figures on a white ground is preferable to a gold-faced one. Look carefully round the room and see that you have everything necessary for the patient, before the family retires for the night. Always have a second lamp in the room, in case one fails. Do not refuse all eatables for yourself, but accept of some plain food to be eaten in the night, as it partly supplies the place of sleep, and will aid you in keeping awake. When you watch in cold weather, take care to be warmly dressed, for you will otherwise feel very chilly before the night is over, and may take cold. Some young persons think it generous and spirited to take no care of themselves, when they are in attendance upon others; but this is a great mistake. It is their duty to take all the care they can of their own health, without neglecting their patient. ....

If you have been with persons who were foolish enough to feel any disgust at leeches, do not be infected by their folly; but reason yourself into a more rational state of mind. Look at them as a curious piece of mechanism; remember, that although their office is an unpleasant one to our imagination, it is their proper calling, and that when they come to us from the apothecary, they are perfectly clean though slippery to the touch. Their ornamental stripes should recommend them even to the eye, and their valuable services to our feelings.

To make them take hold in the very spot required, you have only to take a piece of blotting-paper and cut small holes in it where you wish them to bite; lay this over the place, and put the leeches on the paper. Not liking the surface of the paper, they readily take hold of the skin, where it appears through the holes, and much trouble is thus saved. When they are filled, they will let go their hold, and you have only to put them on a deep plate, and sprinkle

a little salt on their heads, and they will clear themselves of blood; then wash them in water with the chill off, and put them away in clean cold water.

A sponge and warm water should be used, to encourage the bleeding of the patient, as long as this is necessary; when it is sufficient, squeeze the sponge dry and keep wiping the bitten places with it. In most cases, the blood soon ceases to flow; when the bleeding is too great, and you wish to stop it, a little lint will sometimes suffice, or the nap off a hat. But if that does not answer, shavings of leather will prove an excellent styptic; they must be applied in a bunch, and held on tight at first. Such alarming consequences have followed from leech-bites, that I have ascertained from an experienced physician the best method of stopping their bleeding; he says, "The only method which I have found infallible, except tying them with a ligature, which a nurse could not do, is to roll up a little cotton, or lint, or hat fur into a very small and hard ball, as large as a small shot, which is to be pushed, with the end of a knitting-needle or bodkin, directly into the hole made by the leech, so as to fill up the cavity entirely and thus produce a compression on its sides." . . . . .

In all your intercourse with a physician, remember that his whole course of study and practice leads him to consider the human body as a curiously complicated machine, all the parts of which are familiar to him, and equally honorable in his view; and that you will best consult your own delicacy, and secure his respect, by speaking of the different functions with the same candor and composure. Answer all the questions asked you freely and directly; and if you cultivate right views of the wonderful structure of the body, you will be as willing to speak to a physician of the bowels as the brains of your patient. The real indelicacy is in that state of embarrassment and difficulty which some feel in mentioning such things where it is necessary and proper to do it; thus calling a person's attention to the subject under a more degrading view of it, than that taken by the physician or philosopher. . . . .

In connexion with the duties belonging to attendance on the sick, we may consider those which belong to the sick persons themselves. In waiting upon a number of different invalids, you will learn, by what troubled you in their behaviour, what to avoid doing when you are so attended yourself; but if it has been your lot to wait only upon the considerate, disinterested, and patient sufferer, you may unconsciously become a very troublesome invalid yourself.

Whatever infirmities of temper are betrayed by the sick, consider

yourself bound by the charities of your office, as nurse, to bear them patiently, and never to speak of them. The only legitimate use to be made of them is that of learning to avoid similar faults, when you are yourself equally tempted.

## CHAPTER VI. DRESS.

In no way has civilized man played more fantastic tricks, and sacrificed his reason more entirely to folly, than in the matter of dress. The clumsy and inconvenient garments of the savage, are attributed to his ignorance of domestic arts; but what can be said in excuse for civilized man, when he wears shoes that project half a yard beyond his feet, or exchanges his own locks for an enormous periwig, filled with powder and pomatum; when the graceful motion of a lady's head is sacrificed to the stiff movements necessary in balancing a tower of linen and wire, half a yard high, with draperies that flow from the top of it to the floor; when the wavy lines of a female form are disguised under a stiff circle of whalebone, which imprisons the body from the hips upward, and a buckram cage so surrounds the lower limbs, that she can with difficulty walk or sit. Some false standard of beauty, invented perhaps to conceal deformity, is set up, and then the very bones and muscles of the perfect body must be made to conform to it. When this is carried so far as it is in the case of small feet in China, its absurdity strikes us at once; but we may find, nearer home, instances of a standard as false, and consequences even more fatal to health and happiness, than the little feet of the Chinese. . . . .

The ladies of Philadelphia are the best dressed in the United States; and may not this be attributable to the influence of the Quaker and the French population of that city? the one tending to moderation from principle, the other from taste.

There is one thing which is never sufficiently taken into account in the fashions of this country, and that is climate. Receiving our models from the more equable temperature of France, they are often unsuited to the scorching suns of our summers, and the severe frosts of our winters. The English ladies set us a good example in this respect; they always accommodate their fashions to the dripping skies of their moist climate, and the chilliness produced by it; accordingly there never has been a winter for thirty years, when muffs were not generally worn. Broadcloth suits their drizzling weather particularly well, and therefore habits made of it, and coats and cloaks to wear in carriages, are always in use. Beaver hats, for riding on horseback, are always in fashion for the same reason; and

so are coarse straw bonnets, particularly in the country, for an undress, and thick leather shoes for walking through the mud. The most delicately bred fine lady in the land puts on cotton stockings and thick shoes to walk out for exercise, and would think it very unlady-like not to be so provided; and on more dressy occasions, when she wears silk hose, she would on no account go out in cold weather without warm shoes, either kid lined with fur, or quilted silk shoes foxed with leather. To walk out, as our young ladies do, in cold and wet weather, with thin-soled prunella or kid shoes, would seem to them very vulgar; as betraying a want of suitability, only to be accounted for by supposing the individual to be unable to provide herself with better . . . . .

Now there are some rules, which, being based on first principles, are of universal application; and one of these belongs to our present subject, namely, nothing can be truly beautiful which is not appropriate; nature and the fine arts teach us this. All styles of dress, therefore, which impede the motions of the wearer, which do not sufficiently protect the person, which add unnecessarily to the heat of summer, or to the cold of winter, which do not suit the age and occupations of the wearer, or which indicate an expenditure unsuited to her means, are inappropriate, and therefore destitute of one of the essential elements of beauty. Propriety of fitness, lies at the foundation of all good taste in dressing; and to this test should be brought a variety of particulars, too numerous to be mentioned, but which may be thus illustrated. The dress that would be very proper on occasion of a morning visit in a city, would be so out of place, if worn by the same person, when making preserves or pastry, or when scrambling through the bushes in a country walk, that it would cease to look well; a clean calico gown and white apron would be so much more convenient and suitable, that the wearer would actually look better in them.

The rich dress and costly ornaments, that become maturer life, and ceremonious parties in large cities, are unsuited to the very young, who need no such "foreign aid," and especially at the more simple assemblies of a country town. Some persons toil early and late, and strain every nerve, to procure an expensive garment, and think, that once arrayed in it, they shall look as well as some richer neighbour, whose style of dress they wish to imitate; but they forget, that, if it does not accord with their general style of living, if it is out of harmony with other things, it will so strike everybody, and this want of fitness will prevent its looking well on them.

Let a true sense of propriety, of the fitness of things, regulate all

your habits of living and dressing, and it will produce such a beautiful harmony and consistency of character, as will throw a charm around you that all will feel, though few may comprehend. . . . .

A woman who does not know how to sew is as deficient in her education as a man who cannot write. Let her condition in life be what it may, she cannot be ignorant of the use of her needle, without incommoding herself and others, and without neglecting some important duties. . . . .

Neat-looking stockings are so indispensable to a lady, and they so soon look shabby, if not taken good care of and well repaired, that your time cannot be better bestowed on any article of dress, than on your hose. This is so well understood in the old countries, that ladies who do no other plain work, mend their own stockings.

. . . . . Although it is a great pity to devote more time to dressing than is actually requisite, it is necessary to punctuality that you should allow yourself as much as it will take. If you cannot learn to quicken your movements, or save time by due preparation beforehand, you must begin earlier; for, by not being ready at the hour appointed, you are guilty of a breach of politeness to all concerned, and you rob them of two most valuable possessions, time and patience. Unpunctual people generally live under a delusion as to the time that it takes them to do things; they wilfully shut their minds to the conviction, that if it took them a whole hour to dress for a party last week, it will probably take as long this. They seem to have a dread of being ready before the time, as if it would do them some harm to be dressed, and in the parlour, ten minutes before the appointed hour; but no dilatory person can become punctual, unless she overcome that repugnance, and make an effort to be ready before the time. . . . .

## CHAPTER VII. MEANS OF PRESERVING HEALTH.

Were this chapter headed with, "The Means of Preserving Beauty," how many eyes, that will now turn away from it with indifference, would then be riveted to it; and yet a better understanding of the subject would make those, who are most anxious to preserve their good looks, seek most eagerly to know how to preserve their health, for without that, no one can long be beautiful, and with it, the plainest person is sure of one kind of comeliness.

We think with horror of that sort of suicide, which is committed by hanging, drowning, or poisoning; but take no note of the more numerous, and more responsible cases that are to be found among

those who destroy their health by inattention to the laws which a wise Creator has affixed to the human constitution. Ignorance, a blamable ignorance, of the structure and functions of those organs on which life depends, has occasioned the death of thousands.

Women study all the arts and sciences which are fitted to embellish life, whilst they fail to become acquainted with that one subject, on which depends the exercise and full enjoyment of all else that they know. They spend years in learning to sing, without devoting one hour's attention to the construction of that wonderful instrument, the lungs. They pursue all other kinds of knowledge, and neglect that which is necessary to the due observance of the laws of their being; and, by ignorantly transgressing those laws, they bring on disease, and are prematurely cut off in the very bloom of life.

On no other subject, connected with their temporal well-being, are persons so blind to their own interests. Suppose, for instance, that you inherited from your parents a valuable piece of mechanism, by means of which the most curious and complicated movements of puppets were performed, the finest music was produced, and a succession of landscapes was presented, in which motion was given to the trees, as if waving in the wind, brooks ran and bubbled, and clouds appeared floating in the air; suppose that the machinery which produced these curious results was all concealed in a closely shut box, which could not be opened without destroying the instrument for ever. You received with the box, a few directions about winding it up, and pulling certain strings and touching certain springs, at stated times, without knowing the connexion between these, and the hidden movements within. This ignorance would inevitably lead to mistakes in its management; and if by chance any part were out of order, your attempts to rectify it would be made at random, and be as likely to do harm, as good. Would you not, in such a case, be very desirous to learn something of the internal structure of this curious and valuable machine, more especially if by a spell your enjoyment of life, and life itself, were made to depend on its being kept in good order? . . . . .

Witness the inroads made on the health and beauty of young girls that have been all winter engaged in the fashionable amusements of a large city. You may read, in those pallid cheeks and hollow eyes, in that languid air and shrunk form, a lesson on the evil influences they have been under. Instead of having been braced by winter frosts, and strong out-door exercise, to bear the east winds and variable temperature of spring, they are so enfeebled as

to become the ready victims of disease. If not fatally attacked, the more active out-door habits of summer restore a portion of their lost vigor; and happy would it be for those of delicate constitutions, if they would profit by this practical lesson, and learn in future to avoid such fruitful causes of disease and death. But, instead of this, the health and strength, acquired in the journeys and rambles of summer, are often lavished on the round of fashionable amusements in winter. . . . .

In the most civilized nations of Europe, great attention is paid to the health of the skin, and all the arrangements of domestic life include the means of copious and constant bathing. There, it is thought more essential to happiness to have a warm and cold bath at command, than to own spacious apartments and costly furniture. Large provision is made for washing in the sleeping-rooms of the English; and travellers are not thought unreasonable if they require more than a quart of water for their morning toilet. The primitive manners of our forefathers (and of the back country at the present day), which required that every one should wash at the pump in the yard, or at the sink in the kitchen, were not favorable to cleanliness and health. Those who labor hard with their hands, and lead rugged, out-door lives, can better dispense with daily ablutions of the whole body than the children of ease and luxury; and yet it is to be feared, that many a young lady who treads on Brussels carpeting, and wipes her hands on damask towelling, does no more daily washing in her china wash-bowl, than does the farmer's daughter at the sink; and the scanty supplies of water and towels at the best hotels in the country show, that the travellers who frequent them do not usually require more. If every town and village were well supplied with warm baths at a cheap rate, this deficiency in the sleeping-apartments would be of less consequence, as is the case in France; but since this is not the fact, it is to be hoped that travellers will, by calling for tubs and water in abundance, teach the people what is necessary to health and cleanliness.

When persons boast how few minutes they require to make their morning toilet, they little think what an unfavorable inference may be drawn from it with regard to their cleanliness. It is not possible for persons to wash themselves thoroughly, and attend properly to their hair, teeth, and nails, and put on the simplest dress, in less than half an hour; and most women will need an hour. There is no merit in making a short and hasty toilet in the morning. An hour is not too much to devote to it; but, if you have to dress a second

and a third time, in the course of the day the less time you give to this the better. Those who spend an hour on their persons in the morning, can dress for a ball in half, or a quarter, of that time; whereas those who take but ten minutes to dress before breakfast, often waste two or three hours over the evening toilet, doing then, as an extra affair, what ought to be done, as a matter of course, every day.

From not attaching sufficient consequence to daily ablutions, the arrangements of a family are often such as to make it very difficult for the grown-up daughters to command the privacy necessary for complete and sufficient washing.

Where two or three occupy the same room, without any dressing-room, or closet, large enough to wash in, it is impossible for the toilet to be properly made. A person must be alone and safe from intrusion for a quarter of an hour, every morning, in order to wash thoroughly; and the heads of families ought to afford every member of them the opportunity of being thus alone. If you are so situated as not to have any privacy in the morning, you may perhaps command it at night, when the eyes of younger sisters are closed in sleep, or by retiring a quarter of an hour earlier than an elder sister, in which case you can make your chief ablutions at night instead of morning. The whole surface of your body may be gone over with one large wash-bowl full of water; and by practice you will become so expert as not to make any slop on the carpet, and thus avoid bringing your ablutions into disrepute with the higher powers.

Many think it impossible to make this thorough washing when the weather is very cold and they must do it in rooms never warmed by a fire. But, in healthy and vigorous young persons, the glow after washing would be so great as to more than compensate for the momentary chill; and a warm doublegown, lined with flannel, would make them comfortable whilst doing up the hair and finishing the rest of the toilet. . . . .

Among those who are convinced of the importance of exercise, some consider the time which it requires a serious objection to it; but if such would narrowly observe their own feelings, they would find that the increased vigor obtained by exercise, more than compensated for the loss of time, by enabling them to accomplish more in what is left. . . . .

Social play and active sports are infinitely preferable to regular and unmeaning walks, and tend in a much higher degree to develop and strengthen the bodily frame, and to secure a straight spine, and an erect, firm, easy, and graceful carriage. A formal walk is odious

and useless to many girls who would be delighted as well as benefited by spending two or three hours a day in spirited exercise.

.....  
There are some games which might be played in the open air by grown-up young ladies with great propriety, if arrangements were made for the purpose; and it is to be hoped that the time will come when every gentleman's seat in the country will be furnished with the means of out-door exercise for ladies, such as bowling-alleys with lighter and smaller balls to suit their little hands, trocogrounds, quoits, bows and arrows for archery, bowls, &c. In stormy weather, the first of these games might be played under cover with a free admission of air, and prove an excellent substitute for outdoor exercise. Battledoor, the graces, and skipping-rope, are also very useful, as, by bringing the arms into play, they exercise the lungs. If, instead of sitting a whole morning over your books and work, you would jump up at the end of every hour or two and play the graces, or skip the rope, for five or ten minutes, it would greatly help to keep your circulation brisk and healthy, and with daily walks might prove sufficient exercise.

Riding on horseback is a very beneficial mode of exercising; and, where the lungs are weak, it is much better than walking, as it does not hurry the breathing. Besides this, it calls into play a greater number of muscles, and is very exhilarating to the spirits. Rowing a light boat with small oars is excellent sport and exercise too, for the young and healthy, and may be indulged in very properly on a safe and retired piece of water. Fishing is often recommended as good for calling into play the muscles of the arms and chest, as well as those of the lower limbs; but it ought to be so repugnant to the feelings of a humane and delicate young woman, to make a pleasure of torturing and killing those pretty, harmless creatures, that I cannot tolerate the practice, much less recommend it. ....

Nothing can be more contrary to common sense, than the practice of swallowing large draughts at the beginning of a meal; to drink at all, before eating, is peculiar to our country. In Europe the business of helping to, and eating solid food, goes on for a considerable time, before any one thinks of drinking; and the last fashion in England is to omit tumblers altogether, and have only wine-glasses on the table, which, as a symptom of diminished draught, may be considered an improvement; and if the wine-glasses were used for water only, it would be a still greater progress in civilization. ....

It seems almost superfluous, in these days of temperance, to say

any thing to the softer sex against the use of ardent spirits and fermented liquors; but, as the subject of preserving the health would be incomplete without it, and as the delicate frames of women have their peculiar temptations, I cannot dismiss the topic of diet without saying that it is the opinion of the wisest and best physicians, that all young persons are better without any stimulating liquors, and that it is a great mistake to resort to them, as a cure for those nervous and debilitating diseases, which have their origin in sedentary habits, hot rooms, tight lacing, late hours, improper diet, want of bathing, &c. The temporary relief, gained by a glass of wine, or cordial, is dearly paid for, by increased debility after the first effect passes off; and the most refined and intellectual women are not safe, if they pursue this course, from becoming a burden to themselves, and the shame of all connected with them. It is therefore best to form a habit of drinking no fermented liquors, unless recommended by a physician, and to take no tonics, unless so prescribed. . . . .

A great deal has been said and written, by medical men, against the unhealthy practice of tight lacing; but, it is to be feared, with very little effect. So long as gentlemen admire small waists, and praise those figures the most, which approach the nearest to the shape of a wasp, or an hour-glass, it is in vain to tell young ladies, that the practice is destructive of health, and that there is no real beauty in the small dimensions at which they are aiming. The taste of the lords of creation must be rectified, and then the evil will correct itself. Let medical men, let painters and sculptors teach young men that all such unnatural compression of the body is deformity; let Grecian models of beauty be studied, till the shape of a modern belle shall no longer command admiration. Let mothers, too, make a stand against this general perversion of the uses of the body; let them keep their daughters without corsets, until they have attained their full development of figure, and then it would be impossible for half the mischief to be done that now is; for, by beginning whilst the bones are soft and pliable, the lower ribs can be compressed into half their natural dimensions.

#### CHAPTER IX. CONDUCT TO TEACHERS.

Nothing can be meaner than the false pride exhibited by some girls towards the ladies who give them lessons in music, drawing, or languages. Some have even been known to pass their instructresses in the street, without acknowledging the acquaintance even by a passing bow; others salute in passing, but would on no account

invite the lady to their house as a guest; and she, whose cultivation and refinement may far exceed that of her pupils, is considered by them of inferior rank, because she has added to her other merits, that of rendering herself independent by the exercise of her talents. Now all this is wrong, entirely wrong, and in this country it has no meaning but one of excessive folly, in those who practise it. Where there are no hereditary distinctions, and no long-established division of society into castes or ranks, the only mode of classification is that of wealth, or individual merit, comprising refinement of manners and cultivation of mind.

If wealth is to be the standard of gentility or importance, in a country where fortunes are often suddenly acquired by persons without any education, or any native refinement, and where the fluctuating nature of property often deprives those, who have been the most luxuriously brought up, of the means of living, we may expect to see the grossest manners prevail and civilization decline. But, much as riches are valued, there is an instinctive homage paid to mental culture and refined manners, beyond what wealth can command; and those who pass by their female teacher in the street, without bowing to her, would yet hesitate to acknowledge that they did so because she had fewer dollars at her disposal, than they had. They probably avoid all scrutiny of their motives, and try to make themselves believe there is a propriety in so doing, which cannot be easily explained. They are right there, it cannot be explained on any principle of justice or sound reason. If a female teacher of unblemished reputation, has a refined and cultivated mind; if she has good manners, and the habits of society which belong to the circle in which she teaches; what should hinder her being received into it on a footing of perfect equality? Certainly not the simple circumstance of her turning her talents to account, in a community of shop-keepers and merchants, lawyers and doctors, bankers, and manufacturers. Why should the lady who makes her living by imparting to others, one of her accomplishments, be less regarded than the man who gains his livelihood by selling goods or manufacturing them? and can there be any sense in the half-educated daughter of a lawyer or merchant, treating her more mature, and more accomplished teacher as an inferior? That such a thing can take place, in a republic like ours, shows how many generations it requires to remove the taint of aristocracy, derived from the mother country. It is to be hoped that the day of its utter extinction is at hand. . . . . .

The important relation which sisters bear to brothers cannot be fully appreciated, without a greater knowledge of the world and its temptations to young men, than girls in their teens can be supposed to possess; and therefore I would beg you to profit by my experience in this matter, and to believe me when I assure you, that your companionship and influence may be powerful agents in preserving your brothers from dissipation, in saving them from dangerous intimacies, and maintaining in their minds a high standard of female excellence. . . . .

Brothers will generally be found strongly opposed to the slightest indecorum in sisters; even those who are ready enough to take advantage of freedom of manners in other girls, have very strict notions with regard to their own sisters. Their intercourse with all sorts of men enables them to judge of the construction put upon certain actions, and modes of dress and speech, much better than women can; and you will do well to take their advice on all such points. . . . .

## CHAPTER XI. TREATMENT OF DOMESTICS AND WORK-WOMEN.

The unexampled prosperity of this great republic makes it so easy for young women to find lucrative employment in the way of trades and manufactures, that the service of private families is less sought than formerly, by the active and industrious; hence arises the scarcity of domestics, and the numerous complaints which we hear from the mistresses of families, whose burdens are much increased by this state of things. Since, however, it is a proof of the flourishing condition of the people at large, let us not groan over it as an unmixed evil, but try to meet it by changes in our domestic arrangements, and by that moral power which goodness and intelligence must ever give. Let us try to make the service of private families more desirable, not by extravagant wages, but by justice and kindness, and a liberal consideration of the convenience and pleasure of those who do the drudgery of our houses. Let us attach them to us by a sincere sympathy in their feelings, interests, and concerns; if we make them see that we are not selfishly bent on getting all the service we can for our wages, but that their happiness is a large item in the account, they will in return consult our interest and convenience, and we shall have the willing labor of love, instead of reluctant eye-service.

In much of the fault-finding that is heard about domestics, may be traced the influence of aristocratic feeling, and that spirit of

domination which invariably accompanies a state of society, in which domestics are numerous, and labor can be commanded at a cheap rate; and though it is long since this was the state of things in the northern and eastern States of America, the feeling is transmitted, and ladies often talk as if they were living in olden times and had a right to govern with absolute sway those whom they hire. They talk of the contracts made with house servants, as if the obligations were all on one side, and as if, in consideration of the wages paid, the hired persons were to lose all free agency; to hold every moment at the command of their employers; to have no will but theirs; to perform the same round of duties, month after month, without relief or variety; to seek no amusements; to gain no further knowledge; but be content to drudge on thus to the end of their days.

Some ladies frown upon all lovers, and consider the indulgence of a matrimonial project in the kitchen, as a wrong done to them. All gay dressing, too, is a sin in their eye, and all visiting a waste of time. Now, when I hear such unreasonable task-mistresses talk of the difficulty of getting good domestics, I cannot help rejoicing, that, in this happy land, there is not a surplus population which makes it necessary for any class of beings to submit unresistingly to this system of domestic tyranny.

The lesson of justice, which housekeepers are so slow to learn from the teachings of religion, is brought home to them by necessity. Those who have long maintained the strict discipline of their grandmothers, find, that unless they relax, they cannot get any one to serve them; and, though they grumble, and reluct, and discourse much of the degeneracy of the times, they are obliged to let their domestics dress, visit, have lovers, and do their work in their own time, or not have it done at all. Thus the scarcity of servants is ameliorating their condition; and when it is made sufficiently desirable, we shall have more respectable young women willing to work in private families instead of factories.

Even now, there are persons who never find any difficulty in being well served; yet it is not because they give extravagant wages, or allow their domestics unwarrantable liberties; that is not the way; it is by following that simple rule, given by our Saviour to his disciples, and which is of universal application, though many do not seem to see its bearing upon this particular social relation; it is by "doing unto others as you would they should do unto you." In families where this broad Christian ground is taken, the domestics feel that their rights are respected and their happiness is cared for;

that though they are expected to do the work, and are to be well paid for it, their labors are to be rendered as easy as possible, and to be relieved by all the recreation and improvement compatible with their performance of it. . . . .

The ringing of a bell is the most imperative command that can be given, and young persons should be very scrupulous about the manner of using it, lest they call the domestics from some important business to answer a trifling demand of theirs. It is well to be in the habit of thinking twice, before you ring once, instead of ringing twice, as some do, before they think once; and when you must ring, do it gently, and think of every thing that you wish to say, that you may not have occasion to ring again soon. It is often much better for young persons to go to the kitchen to see how the domestics are occupied before they make their wishes known, than to sit in the parlour and ring the bell at the risk of doing it at the most inopportune moment; this will often save the feelings of both parties. . . . .

Politeness is as necessary to a happy intercourse with the inhabitants of the kitchen, as with those of the parlour; it lessens the pains of service, promotes kind feelings on both sides, and checks unbecoming familiarity; always thank them for what they do for you, and always ask rather than command their services . . . .

I am aware that there is a large class of readers, to whom the foregoing observations on the treatment of domestics will not fully apply. Persons living in the interior of the country, on farms or in villages, where the population is thinly scattered over the land, generally share in all the labors of their household, and will be under no temptation to commit many of the errors pointed out in this chapter. When the only assistance they receive is from a person who is treated as an equal, and sits at the same table with the family, there will be no room for much of the inconsiderateness here mentioned. To such I would only say, act courteously and generously towards your help; and endeavour, by showing confidence and addressing the best feelings, to procure a willing service, and to excite an honorable desire to act up to the full spirit of the contract, instead of each construing the letter of it to her own advantage. . . .

## CHAPTER XII. FEMALE COMPANIONSHIP.

Make it a rule to have nothing to do with any love affair that is carried on without the knowledge and consent of parents. If you have inadvertently become a confidant of the beginning of any such affair, use all your influence to induce your friend to break it off, or to open her mind to her natural protectors; if you cannot prevail

upon her to do this, refuse any further confidence on the subject, and warn her in the most friendly way of her danger. . . . .

A readiness to take offence is a sign of a narrow mind or a bad temper. The excuses which people make for noticing slight affronts will not stand a moment before the law of Christ, and are brought to nought even by the wisdom of this world; for testy and tenacious persons are always defeating their own ends. I have seen a lady, who would otherwise have appeared very dignified and respectable, become the laughing-stock of a whole company, by tenaciously insisting on her rights.

Nor is such rude play of the hands all that should be avoided; there is a custom among young ladies of holding each other's hands, and fondling them before company, which had much better be dispensed with. All kissing and caressing of your female friends should be kept for your hours of privacy, and never indulged in before gentlemen. There are some reasons for this, which will readily suggest themselves, and others, which can only be known to those well acquainted with the world, but which are conclusive against the practice. . . . .

The desire of entertaining induced you to exaggerate and embellish every story you told; it led you to ridicule those who are really worthy of respect; for the sake of saying something funny, or witty, you sacrificed truth, justice, and charity. The laugh is over, your companions are gone, and you are left alone with a wounded conscience; you repent, and resolve to do better in future; and yet, when the temptation recurs, you sin again. The most gifted in conversation are most liable to the commission of these errors; it is so delightful to be the life of the company, to have all hanging on your lips for entertainment, to make all eyes sparkle, and all hearts bound with merriment. . . . .

Remember the liability of a letter to miscarry, to be opened by the wrong person, to be seen by other eyes than those for whom it is meant, and be very careful what you write to the disadvantage of any one. Praise and admire as much as you please, but beware of blame. Your judgment may be wrong, and you know not when nor where it may come up against you, and make you sorry you ever penned it. . . . .

### CHAPTER XIII. BEHAVIOUR TO GENTLEMEN.

What a pity it is, that the thousandth chance of a gentleman's becoming your lover, should deprive you of the pleasure of a free unembarrassed, intellectual intercourse with all the single men of

your acquaintance! Yet such is too commonly the case with young ladies, who have read a great many novels and romances, and whose heads are always running on love and lovers.

Some one has said, that "matrimony is with women the great business of life, whereas with men it is only an incident;" an important one, to be sure, but only one among many, to which their attention is directed, and often kept entirely out of view during several years of their early life. Now this difference gives the other sex a great advantage over you; and the best way to equalize your lot, and become as wise as they are, is to think as little about it as they do.

The less your mind dwells upon lovers and matrimony, the more agreeable and profitable will be your intercourse with gentlemen. If you regard men as intellectual beings, who have access to certain sources of knowledge of which you are deprived, and seek to derive all the benefit you can from their peculiar attainments and experience; if you talk to them, as one rational being should with another, and never remind them that you are candidates for matrimony, you will enjoy far more than you can by regarding them under that one aspect of possible future admirers and lovers. When that is the ruling and absorbing thought, you have not the proper use of your faculties; you are easily embarrassed, and made to say what is ill-judged, silly, and out of place; and you defeat your own views, by appearing to a great disadvantage. . . . .

Riding on horseback or in a chaise, alone with a gentleman, ought to be a mark of confidence, reserved for your most worthy and approved friends, and not done with every common acquaintance that asks you. The dangers attendant on horseback exercise to a lady, are so numerous, that it is always best to have a female friend in company, and if she has her escort, as well as you, your conversation need not be interrupted; and in case of accident, you will have female assistance, and be saved from very awkward predicaments. . . . .

The offer of a man's heart and hand, is the greatest compliment he can pay you, and, however undesirable to you those gifts may be, they should be courteously and kindly declined, and, since a refusal is, to most men, not only a disappointment, but a mortification, it should always be prevented, if possible. Men have various ways of cherishing and declaring their attachment; those who indicate the bias of their feelings in many intelligible ways, before they make a direct offer, can generally be spared the pain of a refusal. If you do not mean to accept a gentleman who is paying

you very marked attentions, you should avoid receiving them whenever you can; you should not allow him to escort you; you should show your displeasure when joked about him; and, if sounded by a mutual friend, let your want of reciprocal feelings be very apparent.

.....

#### CHAPTER XIV. CONDUCT AT PUBLIC PLACES.

It may be well here to state, what I mean by the terms lady and gentlewoman. In this privileged land, where we acknowledge no distinctions but what are founded on character and manners, she is a lady, who, to in-bred modesty and refinement, adds a scrupulous attention to the rights and feelings of others. Let her wordly possessions be great or small, let her occupations be what they may, such an one is a lady, a gentlewoman. Whilst the person who is bold, coarse, vociferous, and inattentive to the rights and feelings of others, is a vulgar woman, let her possessions be ever so great, and her way of living ever so genteel. Thus we may see a lady sewing for her livelihood, and a vulgar woman presiding over a most expensive establishment. ....

#### CHAPTER XV. DINNER PARTIES.

Having been particularly requested to write a chapter on the manners which belong to dinner and evening parties, I will endeavor to suggest a few rules, which may be of general application; but no precise instructions on points of etiquette can be given, as that varies in different places, and can only be learned by personal observation and inquiry.

Whenever dinners are given to invited guests, civility requires, that an early answer should be returned; for the proper wording of such answers, I must refer you to "The Youth's Letter-Writer," where full directions are given. An acceptance, in such a case, should be as binding as a promissory note; and no slight cause should ever be allowed to prevent your fulfilling your engagement. This occasion is a very different affair from an evening party, where you would not, perhaps, be missed, if you stayed away; only a certain number can be asked to a dinner, and these are carefully selected and assorted, so as to be agreeable to each other; and, if one or more fail at last their places cannot be filled up, and the vacancies at the table mar the completeness of the party, and throw a damp on the spirits of the host and hostess. A dinner engagement should, therefore, be regarded as particularly binding, and as imposing an obligation to be strictly punctual. Want of punctuality,

at a dinner party, is an affront to the whole company, as well as to the gentleman and lady of the house. . . . .

If you should happen to meet with an accident at table, endeavour to preserve your composure, and do not add to the discomfort you have created, by making an unnecessary fuss about it. The easier such things are passed over, the better. I remember hearing it told of a very accomplished gentleman, that when carving a tough goose, he had the misfortune to send it entirely out of the dish, and into the lap of the lady next to him; on which he very coolly looked her full in the face, and with admirable gravity and calmness, said, "Ma'am, I will thank you for that goose."\* In a case like this, a person must necessarily suffer so much, and be such an object of compassion to the company, that the kindest thing he could do, was to appear as unmoved as possible. This manner of bearing such a mortifying accident gained him more credit, than he lost by his awkward carving. . . . .

If you wish to imitate the French or English, you will put every mouthful into your mouth with your fork; but if you think, as I do, that Americans have as good a right to their own fashions as the inhabitants of any other country, you may choose the convenience of feeding yourself with your right hand, armed with a steel blade; and provided you do it neatly, and do not put in large mouthfuls, or close your lips tight over the blade, you ought not to be considered as eating ungenteelly.

[Note by J. M. B. I understand the old custom of eating with a knife arose in America because the early Colonial forks had only two tines and would not hold peas.]

Where champagne is given between the courses, a young lady may very properly take one glass; but, when it comes round a second time, let her cover the top of the glass with her hand, as a signal to the servant that she will take no more. . . . .

Presently, coffee is handed round, and then the gentlemen come dropping in, the young ones first and the politicians last. This end of a dinner party is like any other small assemblage of friends, and unless you have been warned that you were to expect an evening party added to it, the sooner you depart after taking coffee the better.

A dinner, well performed by all the actors in it, is very fatiguing, and, as it generally occupies three hours or more, most persons are glad to go away when it is fairly done. . . . .

\* I have heard that this was none other than the great Daniel Webster.

## CHAPTER XVI. EVENING PARTIES.

Next to great beauty, good manners are the chief attraction in a party; these, combined with good sense and cultivation of mind, generally procure a young lady as much attention as is good for her, as much as she ought to expect. . . . .

There is a charm in mere youth, which is set off to the best advantage by a simple style of dress. Young girls lose a great deal, if they sacrifice their peculiar privileges for the sake of ornament and an elaborate toilet, which would better become them at a later period. The simplest muslin frock, if well made, and accompanied by well-dressed hair, neat gloves and shoes, will become a girl in her teens far better than the richest satins and laces. If you have any doubt as to the size and nature of the party you are going to attend, it is better to be on the safe side, and err by being too little rather than too much dressed.

Whatever the fashions may be, never be induced by them to violate the strictest modesty. No woman can strip her arms to her shoulders and show her back and bosom without injuring her mind and losing some of her refinement; if such would consult their brothers, they would tell them how men regard it.

Do not stake your gentility on going late to parties; but show your love of reasonable hours, by going as early as it will do to go. Late hours are the bane of some of the old countries of Europe; let us beware how we aid in introducing them here. It seems to me that all wise and good people should do their utmost to prevent their countrymen from running into the folly of turning night into day, by midnight revels and morning sleep. . . . .

## CHAPTER XIX. TRAVELLING.

It is for the most part safer to remain in a carriage, when the horses run away with it, than to attempt to get out, whilst it is in motion; and better not to put the head or arms out of the windows, but sit quietly within, with your arms close to your body, and all your muscles relaxed; and then, if the carriage is overturned, you will run less risk of breaking your limbs, than you would, if you were braced and holding on with all your might. I have been overturned so often, that I know exactly how to fall; and when I feel the carriage tipping over, I draw myself all up together and make myself as much like a bag of wool as possible.

The various kinds of danger, to which one is subject, in steam-boat accidents, make it difficult to say beforehand what course is

best; but there is one general rule which may be given, and that is, never to join in a rush to any one part of the boat. By keeping aloof and retaining your self-possession, you will be ready to take advantage of whatever may occur; whereas, by following the crowd, you are liable to be infected by their panic and to be hurried into some imprudent step. . . . .

### CONCLUSION.

I hope that no one can have read the preceding pages, without perceiving, that I consider all true happiness to depend on the faithful performance of duty, and all duty to be based upon love to God and love to man; that, where these affections fill the heart they show themselves in the smallest as well as the greatest affairs of life; that nothing is too trifling to be referred to those two great principles, and that it is with a view to making the most of life, under those influences, that I inculcate the value of time, the advantages of method, the happiness of virtue, the healthfulness of constant, vigorous action, both of body and mind, and the importance of choosing nicely between the various occupations which life presents.

The hints which I proposed giving to young ladies on leaving school, have now filled a volume, the size of which may look sufficiently formidable in their eyes, and yet the half has not been said of what would be useful advice to them. The subject embraces so wide a field, that no single volume can do more than touch a few topics. I have chosen the most obvious because they are of most frequent recurrence, and must leave the rest, in the hope that those whose attention has been arrested by what is here said, will follow out for themselves these suggestions, and that they will apply the principles here laid down, to the thousand other particulars which should be regulated by them.

EXTRACTS FROM "MY LIFE'S ROMANCE" OR "RECOLLECTIONS OF SEVENTY YEARS"  
By Mrs. John Farrar (Eliza Rotch)

CHAPTER I.

When at last my father was established in Dunkirk, the outfit of his whaling ships was the revival of trade in that town, and the inhabitants welcomed the strangers who brought them wealth and prosperity. As the crews and the officers of the whaling ships were from Nantucket, and some of these had their families with them, there was a large number of Americans in Dunkirk. Many English also were attracted thither by the brisk business created by the fishery.

After a separation of two years, my mother resolved, even at the risk of her life, to join her husband in Dunkirk, and his parents and sisters went with her, all strict Quakers, and objects of curiosity to the French, who saw for the first time the peculiarities of that sect, and could not understand either their faith or their scruples.

The residence in a French town of such an exemplary family of Friends, was hailed by the English Quakers as affording an excellent opportunity for promulgating their doctrine, and a succession of preachers came over to Dunkirk for that purpose, and always stayed at our house. As they spake no French, my father used to act as their interpreter, but once, when he could not attend, a person was employed in his stead. The preacher began his discourse with these words, "Job was an upright man;" and they were rendered into a French expression equivalent to "Job was a tall, gentlemanly man," and the rest of the sermon was, probably, no nearer than that to the real meaning.

The peace principles of the Quakers will not allow of any demonstration of pleasure at a victory won by force of arms, in any cause, and when the whole town was in a ferment of joy for the success of the French arms, and was making great preparation for a general illumination, these conscientious Quakers refused to illuminate. The Mayor of Dunkirk was a good friend of my father, and urged him to do it as a mere act of self-preservation, "for," said he, "the people will be so exasperated by your not illuminating, that they will commit some outrageous act of violence, from which I cannot protect you." Fully aware of the danger they would incur, both father and son were resolved, in spite of all the remonstrances of their friends, not to illuminate; they would maintain their principles at all hazards.

When their neighbors were lighting up their houses, they shut their shutters, locked and barred their doors, and retired to a back parlor, to await their fate. It was a very solemn time for them all, and was spent in silent prayer. At the end of an hour, the door-bell rang, and my father chose to answer it, though he expected, on opening it, to be assailed by an angry mob. Instead of this, a friend entered, exclaiming, "I am glad to see that you have illuminated after all." "But I have not done it." "Yes, your house is illuminated, and very prettily done, too." In utter amazement my father went into the street and saw a large frame-work of wood covered with lights, and put up against the front of the house. This was the work of the Mayor to save the good Quakers from destruction.

Though the French could not comprehend the principles of these strange people, they honored them for their adherence to them, and always bore kindly with their peculiarities. Even when the town of Dunkirk was besieged by the English, and all citizens who could bear arms turned out to defend their homes from the invader, my father was excused from the duty of a soldier, and appointed commander of the fire department, a post of danger which he solicited. The firing of hot shot sometimes produced a conflagration, and that spot became the point toward which the enemy directed their guns. It was, of course, a dangerous place to those engaged in extinguishing the fire. My father thus proved that it was not cowardice that prevented his taking up arms.

I will now describe that siege of Dunkirk, as I have heard my father relate it.

One of the numerous acts of the British government to destroy the Revolutionary power in France, was sending a large force, under the command of the Duke of York, son of George III, to besiege and take the city of Dunkirk. He sat down before the town in the most approved manner of those times. The wide plain beyond the city was covered with the tents of the English army, while rows of cannon and mortars seemed to threaten the ancient walls of Dunkirk with certain destruction. The peaceful inhabitants were much alarmed, and every citizen capable of bearing arms was enrolled as a soldier for there was no military force there, and the English might have marched into the town and take it at once; but not knowing its defenceless state, they began to bombard it with hot and cold shot. Orders were given by the Mayor that there should be in every room of every house a pail of water and a pair of tongs, to pick and quench the hot shot; also every closet door must stand open, and all the women and children were advised to

leave the town. All those who could afford it went off to Calais and put up at Dessein's famous hotel. They rushed off in such haste as to be very ill provided with clothes, and some days after that, when my mother and her children arrived with ample wardrobes, her clothes were borrowed by all her friends, and as she wore the Quaker costume, she was amused to see her plain garments on gay, fashionable Frenchwomen.

A courier arrived daily from Dunkirk and proclaimed, from the steps of the Town Hall, the progress of the siege. All the fugitive ladies would run out, without bonnet or shawl, and stand around him to hear the news. There came letters from their husbands, written without any regard to truth, merely to suit the wishes of the writer. If a man had a very timid wife, and was fearful she would fly farther, he would tell her that the town was very quiet, and he was in no danger. If a husband was afraid his wife would return inopportunely, he would write that the enemy was at the gates of the city, half of its inhabitants were killed, and the streets ran blood. These ladies, living together, naturally compared the accounts they received, and finding them so very contradictory, they knew not what to believe; some were very angry, and all were much annoyed. At last one of them said, let us ask Madame Rotch what her husband writes, for the Quakers do not lie. They did so, heard the truth, and ever after relied on her letters for their news of the siege.

A force sufficient to defend the town was soon sent to Dunkirk, and some little fighting took place without the walls, but the cannonading of the town did little damage. The merchants used to dine round at each other's houses, eat up all of their wives' preserves and other good things, and have a jolly time of it. One morning the cannonading did not begin as early as usual, and, on looking through their telescopes, the men on the ramparts could see no movements in the British camp. At last the truth dawned on them, that the English had run away in the night. A visit to the camp showed with what haste they had departed. In the Duke of York's tent were found his watch and all his dressing equipage. This extraordinary retreat excited the utmost contempt of the French, and the indignation of the English people. The Duke of York was deprived of his command, and it was several years before he was again employed.

I have hitherto related only what I remember to have heard from others; but now I come to a period when I can remember what I saw myself, and it is not wonderful that, living in the midst

of a bloody revolution, my earliest recollection should be the sight of the guillotine, erected in the great square of Dunkirk. Sent out to walk before breakfast, with my nurse, we happened to see it just arrived, and in the process of erection. On my return home I told my mother of it, with childish glee, and was astonished at the horror with which she heard my account.

At this time the Revolutionary government decreed that all the British subjects then in France should be imprisoned, and my nurse, being an Englishwoman, was shut up in a nunnery, used as a prison, after the nuns had been liberated. It was in vain to tell her that her life was not in danger; she was extremely frightened, and to calm her fears and make her imprisonment less tedious, my mother sent me every morning to pass several hours with her; so visits to a nun's cell are among my earliest recollections. My mother valued relics so much, that she sent a good chair of her own to be exchanged for the shabby old one of the cell occupied by my nurse, and I have that nun's chair now.

After the imprisonment of the English in France, two American ladies were walking on the ramparts of Dunkirk and conversing together. A sentinel said to his comrade, "All the English are not in prison; shall we arrest those?" On hearing this, one of the speakers said to the soldiers, "We are Americans, and we speak the American language." Both the men applauded them, for the French loved America in those days.

Another instance of female courage occurs to my mind as happening in that same town of Dunkirk.\* Mrs. R., an American lady, was conversing with a gentleman who had some care of her during the absence of her husband in Paris. It was after nine o'clock, and he was preparing to go home, when a servant stole quietly into the room, and whispered to her mistress, that the man-servant had brought two armed men into the house; they were now in his room, and she had no doubt that they would rob the house and murder the family. Mrs. R. tried to allay her fears, by saying those men were probably friends of Joseph, and were merely paying him a visit, and she desired the girl to keep quiet in the kitchen and she would send the soldiers away. Her friend Captain M. offered to speak to the men for her, but she thought it best to try first if she could manage them, and keep the Captain for a reserve force; so she went to the foot of the stairs, leading up from the kitchen to the man's room, and said, "Joseph, it is time for your friends to

\* Mrs. Farrar in another account writes that the heroine of this episode was her mother, Elizabeth B. Rotch.

go home, and for you to shut up the house and go to bed; send them away directly." Joseph made no reply, and she returned to the parlor to wait the effect of her commands. They availed nothing, so she went again, in spite of Captain M.'s remonstrance and wish to go himself. Her objection to his going was, that it would appear as if she were alarmed, and she meant that her authority, as mistress of the house, should prevail.

She told Joseph those men must come down and leave her house directly, and added, "If they do not move at once, I will come up to them." One would suppose that armed men would laugh at such a vain threat, but so far from it, they obeyed at once. To get out of the house they had to pass by the open parlor door, and Mrs. R. placed herself so as to see them pass through an entry in which stood a rocking-horse with a child's hat\* hung on his head. One of the men seized the hat and was carrying it off, when she called to him to let that hat alone, and he threw it back into the entry. "Well done!" said the Captain, "you are a brave woman. I should have let him carry off the hat."

Among the English detenus, as they were called, was the author and poet, Helen Maria Williams, well known in this country as the writer of that beautiful hymn, beginning, "While Thee I seek, protecting Power." She was acquainted with my father, and hearing that he was in Paris, when she was imprisoned, she sent for him, and begged him, as an American, to claim her as his wife and so procure her liberty. The truthful Quaker was not so corrupted by his residence in France, as to be willing to make this false claim; he was however, induced by her eloquent pleading, to promise not to deny what she might say on the subject, unless directly questioned. She succeeded in obtaining her liberty and fled to England. The apparent indifference of the supposed husband threw no discredit on her pretended relation to him.

## CHAPTER II.

I have so often heard my father describe Robespierre that I feel as if I had myself seen that mean-looking little man, with his ruffles, and his hair elaborately dressed. As it was considered, in those days, that to be well dressed was anti-republican, his elaborate toilet was the more remarkable. My father narrowly escaped with his life, after an interview with this worst of tyrants. He was deputed by the American merchants of Dunkirk, who were suffering under an act of embargo, to take up a petition for its removal

\* The child was Francis Rotch.

from vessels belonging to so friendly a power as the United States. He was to read the petition at the bar of the National Convention; a body of men who were supposed to represent the will of the people, but were, at that time, entirely subservient to the will of one man, and that man Robespierre. He allowed the House to appoint only one committee, called the Committee of Public Safety; to that all important cases were referred, and there Robespierre ruled every decision. Over the door of the committee-room was written, "Engrossed by the affairs of the nation, we have no time to consider private claims."

My father was told that he must read his petition to Robespierre, before he attempted to read it in the National Convention; so he sought an interview with that dangerous man at his own residence. He was shown through a suite of shabby rooms, where the family were employed in household work, to a long, unfurnished hall, where he found half a dozen gentlemen waiting to see the despot. There was not a seat in the room, until a door opened and Robespierre entered, in his dressing gown, followed by his hair-dresser, who carried a chair in his hand for his master to sit on whilst he was powdered. When powder was generally worn, it was the custom to put it on in some small room or closet devoted to the purpose, and to powder in the presence of another person was considered an insult. That Robespierre should come into his audience-chamber to perform that part of his toilet was a piece of arrogance and rudeness never to be forgotten. The hair-dresser applied the powder-puff until there was a cloud of powder all around him, and of course the dark coats, in waiting, were none the better for it. When the hair-dresser retired, he carried off the chair with him, and Robespierre went up to a mirror and adjusted every hair around his face. He then exchanged his dressing-gown for a coat which his valet brought, and assisted him to put on. That done, he turned to the knot of gentlemen who were standing at one end of the room, and said he was ready to hear what they had to say. Those who spoke before my father did were very summarily disposed of with negative answers. Then he produced his petition, and asked Robespierre to read it. He did so, and returned it, saying, "That petition cannot be presented to the National Convention, for it contains views to change the government." Such words from such a man were equivalent to a sentence of death. My father knew it, and perceived at once what was the objectionable part. The merchants asked for a committee to be appointed to examine the claims of American ship-owners, and Robespierre had abolished all commit-

tees but the one of which he was the moving power. With wonderful presence of mind my father took out his pencil, struck out that request and showed the paper to Robespierre, who, on seeing the alteration, said *that* might be read the next day at the bar of the National Convention. As my father left the hall, a friend who had accompanied him there, said "We are a head shorter for this." "Never mind," was the reply, "we shall go in good company."

While my father was reading the petition, Robespierre entered one of the galleries, and as soon as it was ended, he moved that it should be referred to the Committee of Public Safety. This quashed it at once, but the reader's life was saved.

Not until after the fall of Robespierre, was my father permitted to leave France; then he embarked with his whole family and all his valuables on board one of his own vessels, and sailed for America. He was aware that a number of persons had secreted themselves on board his ship, in order to escape from France, and as two custom-house officers accompanied the vessel down the harbor, my father was afraid they would discover the fugitives. To prevent this he provided a handsome lunch and plenty of good wine, of which they partook so largely that they forgot to examine the vessel, and left her in high good humor.

Instead of proceeding to the United States, we landed in England, and our arrival was impressed on my memory by my being checked in singing the following words:

"Le Duc de York est un poltron,  
Vive le son, vive le son."

I was told that I was now in the country of the Duke, and must never sing that again. This was unnecessary caution; but we had come from a land where every word must be guarded, lest life should be the forfeit, and it was difficult for us to realize that there was liberty of speech in England.

A suit in chancery to recover the insurance on a vessel burnt at sea, was what took my father to England, and its long duration caused him to settle in that country.

I remember hearing my father say that he was in Paris when the Queen was beheaded, and that he dared not go out of his hotel before the execution, for fear of seeing some part of it; nor after it was over, for fear his countenance should betray his horror of the deed, and cause his arrest as a loyalist. It happened to my father, more than once, to be engaged to dine with a friend, and when he

went to the house, to be told by the servant that his master had been taken the night before to the Conciergerie. Few ever left that prison but to go to execution. It was considered as the next step to the guillotine.

## CHAPTER V.

The great success of the sperm-whale fishery in France, and the manufacturing of the best spermaceti candles ever seen in any country, made my father an authority in such matters. Many merchants consulted him, and some statesmen thought it advisable to retain him in England, and induce him to prosecute the fishing there, instead of returning to America. The suit in chancery still lingered along, and he began to listen to the proposals made to him by the Hon. Charles Greville, who had the care of his uncle Sir William Hamilton's estate on the banks of Milford Haven, in South Wales, and earnestly entreated my father to settle there. A visit to the place satisfied him that the port was well adapted to the purpose; but there was no town there, and there were no mechanics capable of fitting out a whale ship.

Mr. Greville said that if Mr. Rotch would settle there a town would soon be created, and the trades would gather round him, and so it proved. A large hotel was built, and Mr. Greville's influence caused a custom-house and a post-office to be established there. He granted long leases of land, at very low rents, and houses sprang up like magic. My father had all the land he wanted for warehouses and a dwelling-house, for a mere nominal ground-rent, and Mr. Greville obtained for him all the privileges and bounties that he had enjoyed in France. Several new houses were built before he removed his family to Milford, and one of them, though small, was hired for our use until a larger one could be built.

Coopers, and sailmakers, ship-carpenters, and all the other tradesmen necessary to my father's business, came and settled in Milford, on the prospect of the whale-fishery being carried on from that port, and great was the excitement and satisfaction when the first vessel arrived from America loaded with sperm-oil. The cargo was sent round to London in coasting vessels, and the ship was immediately refitted for a voyage to the Pacific Ocean. I have given this account of our settlement in Wales in order to make more intelligible the incidents which linger in my memory and which I am about to relate.

Wales being a conquered country, and the peasantry and yeomen still speaking a different language from their conquerors, their

civilization did not keep pace with that of England. It was allowed to be a hundred years behind, and the manners and customs of all classes were of course very different from those of the English. The Welsh nobility and gentry are very proud of their pedigrees, tracing back their ancestry far beyond the Norman conquest. Many of them have lost much of their ancestral possessions, but none of their pride, and make great efforts to keep up a grand appearance on small means.

It was a great trial to my parents to leave a large circle of congenial friends, and the high state of civilization which London afforded, and plant themselves in a strange land and among such a different kind of people. Mr. Greville gave them letters of introduction to the first families in the country, and wrote to his friends to interest them in us; but still the change was a very painful one.

The Welsh nobility live on large estates and in very stately mansions, and their annual visits to London prevent their being so provincial as those who seldom or never visit the metropolis. The descendants of the most ancient families prided themselves on adhering to the old customs of the country, and disdained the idea of importing London fashions and manners. The introduction of railroads has changed all this, and the long journey of two hundred and seventy miles from Milford to London, which used to take ten days to perform, with our own carriage and horses, is now only one day's journey. The roads were ill made and never kept in repair, and this made riding on horseback a favorite mode of conveyance. I have been one of a large dinner-party, to which every guest went on horseback, and all the ladies dined in the cloth habits and rode home many miles at night. Those who possess large landed estates look down upon the inhabitants of country towns, and consider it a condescension to admit to their houses the lawyer, physician, or merchant, though often much better educated than the country squires.

I am thus particular in describing the social state of South Wales, because it was the scene of many events which will be better understood in consequence.

I have mentioned a visit which my parents made to South Wales, before settling there, and will now relate some particulars of it which are worthy of notice.

It so happened of all the persons who escaped from France, by hiding themselves in the hold of my father's ship, when he sailed in her from the port of Dunkirk, only one of them ever crossed his path again, and that one was a handsome cabin-boy, transformed

into a country squire, married to an heiress, and living on one of her estates. When my father made his tour of observation into Wales, before settling there, he took his wife and his little girl with him, and spent several weeks at the Castle Inn, in Haverfordwest. There he did a great deal of writing, and had letters and papers lying about with his name and his address in Dunkirk on them. These circumstances, with his occasionally speaking to his wife and child in French, raised suspicions that he was a French spy, and a paragraph to that effect appeared in a country newspaper, and fell under the eye of the squire. When he read the names of Rotch, and Dunkirk, he began to think that the supposed spy might be the benevolent Quaker who had helped him to escape from France; so he forthwith mounted his dapple-gray steed, and appeared at the Castle Inn. The recognition was, of course, all on one side, for no trace was left of the young cabin-boy, but the meeting was very pleasant and cordial on both sides. He told my father that he was suspected of being a French spy, and that the country was in such fear of French invasion that he might be arrested, if proper precautions were not taken. The squire, being a well-known magistrate, soon put an end to all the false reports about his benefactor, and persuaded him and his wife to become his guests at his country-seat, where he introduced them to his wife and two maiden sisters, all of whom became, in after years, our dear and intimate friends. Many were the happy Christmas days that we spent under that roof, and when, some years after, by my father's advice, and through his interest, the squire became the collector of customs at Milford, the intercourse between his family and ours was constant and agreeable.

The fear of French invasion was not unfounded. Napoleon kept an army at Boulogne, and a flotilla of boats to bring them across the Channel, and he only waited a favorable opportunity to invade England, march to London, and dictate terms of peace from St. James' Palace. This was his plan, but an English fleet kept in the Channel prevented the attempt for many weeks. At length the fleet sailed out of the Channel, and Bonaparte thought that the long-wished for time had arrived. He had previously despatched a few companies of his poorest soldiers to make a landing in South Wales, in order to test the loyalty of the Welsh peasantry, whom he falsely supposed to be disaffected towards the English government. They were gone long enough to effect their purpose, when a terrible storm arose which drove the English fleet back into the Channel, and made it impossible for the French army to embark. The unfor-

tunate men sent to make friends with the Welsh landed at a small fishing-town called Fishguard, on a little sandy beach, surrounded by high cliffs. The population was small, and not a soldier in the place, but the inhabitants went to the edge of the cliff to look down. Half of these were women, dressed, according to custom, in men's hats and scarlet cloaks. The French, mistaking them for soldiers, thought their case was hopeless, laid down their arms, and surrendered themselves prisoners of war to the women of Fishguard. A militia regiment, under the command of Lord Cawdor, did arrive in time to take their arms, and march them to Milford, whence they were sent by water to one of the prisons used for French prisoners.

The news of the landing of the French spread like wildfire; people ran for miles, screaming it all the way they went; men on horseback galloped through the land to give the alarm; volunteers, who had been drilled into soldiers, for just such an emergency, thought their time was come for deeds of prowess; armed forces of all descriptions rushed to Fishguard, and there learned that a handful of Frenchmen had surrendered to the old women of Fishguard, and their valor was not needed. So ended Napoleon's grand threat of invading England.

## CHAPTER VI.

When Sir William Hamilton returned to England from his embassy at the court of Naples, he determined to visit his large estate on the banks of Milford Haven, and see the new town which had grown up so suddenly under the good management of his nephew, the Hon. Charles Greville. Lady Hamilton chose to accompany her husband. On hearing this, Lord Nelson became very desirous of examining the celebrated harbor of Milford; so a party was formed for a tour in Wales. Lady Nelson was left behind, and her faithless husband devoted himself to the notorious Lady Hamilton, as if he had been her affianced lover.

Lady Hamilton began her career as a poor girl, selling matches in the streets of London. Happening to pass under the window of Sir Joshua Reynolds, he was so struck with her beauty, that he called her in, and engaged her to sit for her likeness the next day. Having made a charming picture of her, in that character, he found her form so faultless, that he made her his model for other pictures, and at last exhibited her to his fellow artists, and even to amateurs and patrons of art, in chosen attitudes of his arranging, and great was the admiration she excited. One of the spectators fell in love with her beauty, and made her his mistress. Intoxicated by the

change from poverty to luxury, she became very extravagant, and the income of her lover would not suffice for her expensive pleasures. He was therefore well pleased when she left him for Sir William Hamilton, then Minister in Naples.

The beautiful match girl now became a very fine lady, and was delighted with the idea of going to Naples and living with a titled ambassador. She had not been long there, when she persuaded her infatuated lover to make her his lawful wife. After this she was presented at that corrupt court, and became the intimate friend of the licentious Queen of Naples. During her residence there, Lord Nelson came, with the English fleet, into that bay so famous for its beauty. The naval hero soon became violently enamored of the charming Lady Hamilton; she too was in love, and for the first time.

Parties and balls on board of Lord Nelson's ship were continually given, to please Lady Hamilton. One day, when she was at a dinner-party there, a naval officer drew his sword, and showing her the spots of blood on it, boasted of how many Frenchmen it had killed. Instead of being disgusted at this brutal conduct, she kissed the sword and passed it round, requesting every one to do the same, but it stopped at a young English traveller, who indignantly refused to touch it.

There was, at this time, a mutiny on board the fleet, and several sailors were hung at the yard-arms of their ships. Lady Hamilton, with a party of her friends, went out in boats to see the executions.

Her amiable old husband had neither eyes nor ears for her intrigues, and always behaved as if he considered her intimacy with Lord Nelson as an affair of pure friendship, in which he participated. He certainly did share in the love-letters, written to Lady Hamilton by Lord Nelson, when he was fighting the French, for he read some of them to my father, and I well remember his repeating the first sentence, in one of them, written the day after a sea-fight. It ran thus: "My dearest, dearest, dearest Emma! last night we sent five hundred Frenchmen's souls to hell." I am not certain of the number specified, but every other word I am sure of. Such was the style of correspondence between the match-girl and the sailor.

When Sir William and his party arrived in Milford, accompanied by the great naval commander, the nobility and gentry for miles round flocked to see him, and pay their respects to the hero of the Nile.

A public dinner was given to him, at which Lady Hamilton chose to be present; she sat next to him, cut up his meat, which the loss

of an arm prevented him from doing, and fed him with tidbits from her own plate. She had a fine voice and would sing sailors' songs and verses written in praise of the great admiral, at public dinners, whilst her doting old husband sat by admiring her. When I saw her in 1802, her face was still beautiful, but she had grown fat and her figure was spoiled.\* Short waists and narrow skirts were then in fashion. The French had introduced the custom of wearing as little clothing as possible and making that little look like the drapery of an ancient Greek statue. The weather was very warm when Lady Hamilton was in Milford, and she walked about the town in two garments only, showing her shape most indecently.

My mother had resolved to take no notice of Lady Hamilton, and being on the eve of her confinement, she excused herself from calling on her. But that bold woman was resolved that it should not be said that Mrs. Rotch would not receive her; so one very warm day, when all our doors and windows stood open, she walked into our drawing-room, where my mother and I were sitting, and greeted us very familiarly. Though I was but a child, I was struck with the coldness of my mother's reception, and wondered that she was not more cordial to such a lovely and fascinating guest.

Lord Nelson was very ordinary in his appearance; lean and sallow, his face much wrinkled and his hair very thin. He was proud of the loss of his arm, and always wore his coat-sleeve empty. When I was one day standing by him, at our house, with my eyes fixed on that empty sleeve, he said, "Look at it well, and then you will always remember me by my one arm." Being in Milford on the first of August, the anniversary of the battle of the Nile, he instituted a boat-race to be held annually on that day, and Lord Cawdor offered to furnish a silver cup to be run for every year. My father's yacht won it three times, and then he withdrew from the contest, to give others a chance of winning. On these occasions our house was filled with company and we had gay times.

Sir William's estates all descended to his nephews, whether by entail or by his own choice, I do not know; but he left very little to his widow, and Lord Nelson did not add to her income, but made himself ridiculous by a request in his will that the government would grant her a pension. The public could see no reason why the mistress of Lord Nelson should be so provided for, but the friends of the admiral said, she deserved it for having obtained, through her intimacy with the Queen of Naples, some valuable political

\* If we can believe "The Divine Lady" by Barrington, Lady Hamilton was on the point of bearing Nelson's child, a circumstance which would account for her figure, but which evidently never reached the ears of Eliza Rotch Farrar.

information for Lord Nelson, when he was commanding a fleet in the Mediterranean. Whether this was true or not, her services were never recognized, and she died, in great poverty, in France.

Lord Nelson gave a full length portrait of himself, in oils, to the hotel at which he stayed in Milford, and which was named for him. The picture hangs there still, though the house has changed hands several times.

Milford enjoyed many years of prosperity under the management of Mr. Greville. Several men-of-war were launched from its dock-yard, daily packets were established between Milford and Waterford, carrying mails and passengers. Militia regiments were quartered there, and the haven was seldom without a vessel of the navy anchored in its roads.

My father was engaged in building a house large enough for his increasing family, when an estate in the neighborhood, of one hundred and eighty acres, with a large house on it, called Castle Hall, was offered for sale, at a very moderate price, and he became the purchaser and removed his family into it. We were all so much pleased with our country life, and my father took so much delight in farming the land, and improving the pleasure-grounds, that the new house in Milford was no inducement to leave it, and we children were rather glad when it was accidentally destroyed by fire.

Seven acres of ornamental grounds and gardens gave my father ample scope for his love of improving and embellishing the place; he made ugly slopes into pretty terraces, formed new land in front of the house, built an orangery eighty feet long and twenty feet high, entirely of iron and glass, and filled it with the finest orange, lemon, and citron-trees from a celebrated orangery in a distant country, sold on the death of the owner. He made pineries too, — three houses, hot, hotter, and hottest — in which three hundred fine large pine-apples were produced in one year. The climate was very mild. We had monthly roses blooming out of doors all winter, and a hedge of laurestine, which enclosed a rose-garden, was always in full bloom in February.

All these improvements, with the high cultivation of English gardening, not usually practised in Wales, made Castle Hall a show place. The orangery and the pinery were a great novelty in Pembrokeshire, and I remember being very tired of showing them to our visitors.

The head-gardener would have complained of the trouble showing the place to strangers, had he not been paid by them for doing

it. We might well keep the grounds in high order, when a woman could be hired to weed all day for twelve cents, and a laboring man for less than a quarter of a dollar.

My father's hospitality knew no bounds, and our house was filled with the greatest variety of visitors. For months together we never sat down to a meal alone. Besides exchanging visits once or twice a year with the gentry and nobility of the country, we had no objection to the society of the best people in the country towns. After the packets ran from Milford to Waterford, we often had the company of the Irish members of Parliament, on their way to and from London. My father had travelled in Ireland and been treated so hospitably, that he was glad to pay every attention to those who brought letters from his friends in that country.

The long war between France and England prevented the English from travelling on the Continent, and a tour through North and South Wales was an agreeable substitute. Many tourists came, introduced to my father by his London friends; those among them who were artists were especially welcome to my brothers, who enjoyed sketching with them the numerous picturesque castles and ruins to be found in our neighborhood. Every Quaker made our house his home, every American traveller was doubly welcome, and many visited us before the war of 1812. Added to all this variety of guests, there was still another set, entirely distinct from them, who were more to us socially than all the rest. These were very genteel, well-bred people, who, for some reason or other, wished to live retired and very economically for a few years. They occupied three cottages belonging to my father, and bordering on our pleasure-grounds, and were, of course, our nearest neighbors, and became our most intimate friends. My father bought these cottages on purpose to prevent their being inhabited by exceptionable characters, and he was very careful as to whom he let them.

EXTRACTS FROM "MEMORIALS OF THE LIFE OF ELIZABETH (BARKER) ROTCH" (WIFE OF BENJAMIN ROTCH), BEING THE "RECOLLECTIONS OF A MOTHER," BY HER DAUGHTER, ELIZA FARRAR. SPRINGFIELD, 1861.

Taken from the original in the possession of Francis Rotch, of Bellevue, Wash., until his death in 1945, and now at the Old Dartmouth Historical Society in New Bedford.

Pp. 7. I do not know at what age my mother was actually engaged to my father, but they seemed to have been always considered as meant for each other, and to have acted as if engaged long before he actually asked her parents' consent to their union. When he was twenty years of age, peace being concluded between England and the United States, he accompanied his father to the mother country, whither they went to make arrangements with the English Government, for sending cargoes of spermaceti oil to England, from Nantucket, and also for establishing the southern whale fishery from that country. My Grandfather had several interviews with the then prime minister, Mr. Pitt, but could not obtain his own terms, and not choosing to alter them, he resolved to carry his proposition to the French government, and left London for Paris without delay, found a Dover packet ready to sail, and crossed the channel before a King's messenger, despatched by Mr. Pitt, could overtake him. Had the magnetic telegraph been then in use my family would never have been settled in France, for Mr. Pitt sent the King's messenger after the American Quaker, to say that he would agree to his terms, and my grandfather would have greatly preferred establishing his son in England.

As it was, however, he proceeded to Paris with him, and there Mons. Neckar granted them all they asked, and was sufficiently enlightened to know that the whale fishery would be a most valuable acquisition to his country, not only on account of the rich cargoes it would bring up from "the vasty deeps," but as a nursery for seamen who were needed in the French Navy. Dunkirk was the port fixed upon; American built vessels were to come full freighted with oil, caught by the enterprising and industrious inhabitants of Nantucket, and admitted duty free; the ships were then to be fitted out from Dunkirk, as French vessels, but with American officers, and a bounty was to be given by the Government, on every one that brought in a full cargo.

Whilst the father was making these advantageous arrangements,

the young son was enjoying to the full all the delights of foreign travel and writing long accounts of them to his lady love on Nantucket. From England he sent her a good selection of books, as the most acceptable present he could make to her, and among them was the newly published poems of Goldsmith, with a mark to draw her attention to the lines,

“Where'er I go, whatever realms I see,  
My heart untraveled fondly turns to thee;  
Still to Eliza turns, with ceaseless pain,  
And drags, at each remove, a lengthening chain.”

These and many other lover-like attentions, were paid to the Island beauty, by her devoted friend, who, soon after his return, asked her in marriage of her parents. They reluctantly consented, fearing that he would separate their only daughter from them, as he was intended by his father to carry on the fishery from France. He treated that as a very uncertain matter, and succeeded in obtaining their consent. His future mother-in-law told him that Eliza would make him a very poor wife, for she had never done any household work, and did not even darn her own stockings. “So much the better,” said he, “I am sick of seeing the backs of chairs covered with stockings to mend.”

As William Rotch was the richest and most influential man on the Island, whatever his family did was matter of interest and comment to the inhabitants. His two elder sons had taken wives from among the pretty Quakeresses of Rhode Island, which gave rise to the observation, that the Rotches thought there was no one good enough for them on the Island; the youngest being now affianced to one of their own town, pleased them greatly and made the young couple very popular.

At the age of twenty-two, they were married in Quaker meeting, and the house, tho' very large, was crowded on that occasion. The bride was dressed in a pale peach-colored silk gown, with the skirt wide open in front, showing through a transparent apron, a quilted satin petticoat of a light blue color. A light drab satin cloak, lined with white, reached nearly to her ankles, and was wide enough to make in after years two mantles, one for each of her daughters. The appearance of my mother, on that occasion, and her admirable manner of performing her part in the service, was long remembered and spoken of. I heard it commended thirty-five years afterward, when I visited Nantucket.

Mrs. Benj'n Rotch was settled in a small house near her parents, and had every aid, in the performance of her new duties, that her

fond mother could give; and I never heard of her failing to be a good house-keeper. Her first child was born about a year after her marriage, and was named for an uncle of his father, Francis.

Meanwhile Wm. Rotch was making the necessary preparations for carrying out his French scheme, and it was decided that his son Benjn. was the proper person to take charge of the business, in Dunkirk. This was a great grief to the parents of his wife, who believed that he had promised them not to expatriate their daughter, and reproached him with breaking his word; some disagreeable feelings were excited on both sides, whilst the wife tried to maintain a neutral position, and to make peace between them.

A year after her son was born, my mother left Nantucket with her husband and child, in a vessel owned by him and his father and brothers. She suffered so violently from sea-sickness, that her husband considered her life to be in danger, and at the end of a fortnight he landed her on her native shores, and went off alone, on his commercial enterprise. It was a great comfort to her mother, to have her thus returned to her, and the patience and cheerfulness with which she bore the separation from her husband made her parents forget that she had any wish to rejoin him. It was therefore a great shock to them when she told them that she intended to try again to cross the ocean. They feared she would die in the attempt, to which she replied, "I cannot live without him, so I may as well die in going to him." Her husband's family encouraged her in this resolution, and determined to accompany her to Dunkirk.

My Grandfather Rotch had one of his largest vessels fitted up for the purpose, and in the summer of 1790, he, with his wife and two young daughters, Lydia and Mary Rotch, his daughter-in-law and her child, between two and three years old, sailed for Dunkirk. They had what was then considered a very favorable passage, of six weeks, and thanks to the good management of my Grandmother, my mother was not dangerously seasick though she suffered much the whole way. When half-way over, they met a vessel which showed signs of wishing to speak to them; so they laid to and my mother was astonished, as she lay in the cabin, to hear herself spoken of through a speaking trumpet. "Is Benjamin Rotch's wife on board?" was the question put, and on hearing that she was, the stranger said he left her husband well, at such a time. What an unexpected pleasure to hear of her beloved in the midst of the ocean! She was much struck by the circumstance of two such small specks happening to meet each other, on that vast space.

Certain signals had been agreed on, by which the expectant

husband was to know whether his wife and child were on board that vessel, so he went off in a pilot-boat to meet them, and was delighted to find so many loved ones had come, to cheer and comfort him in his foreign home, and that his wife's health was not materially injured by the voyage.

Pp. 19. My parents made a visit to England, and their reception among the Quaker aristocracy was so flattering as to leave many agreeable recollections, and led to many life-long friendships. The Gurneys, Barclays, Hoares, Reynoldses, Birkbecks, Woods, Bushes, etc. paid them the greatest attention, and I have often heard those friends speak of the charm of my mother's appearance, manners, and conversation at that time. Nor was my father less liked. His various information and ready flow of conversation, his cordial manners, and generous heart, won him many friends, whilst he was always seeking fresh acquisitions of useful knowledge.

Increasing disturbances in the French government determined my grandfather to leave the country with his family; so passing over to England, he spent a year there, before returning to the United States, and partook largely of the attentions of his son's circle of friends, though he could rarely be persuaded to stay at their houses. His wife preferred living in lodgings, and making short visits, as she had the greatest fear of troubling and burdening her friends.

Pp. 33. At last a rumour reached Dunkirk that Robespierre had fallen; but until quite sure of it, neither my father, nor many other merchants appeared in the street or on 'Change, fearing that if they looked pleased, and he were not fallen, they would be destroyed by his enemies, and if they looked grave and he were really down, they would be treated as his partisans, and killed by his successor to power. Such was the wretched state of affairs there, that my father wished to relinquish his prosperous business and quit France; but he could not get away. Having refused to go to America to serve the Republic, he was not permitted to go, to serve himself.

When at last the reign of Terror was over, my father proposed to leave France, and return to America. He had long before ordered the vessels outfitted from Dunkirk to return to America with their full cargoes, and had only one ship in the port to take him and his family away. Great was the loss of his business to the town, and many sincere lamentations were made over his departure. He and his wife were very much beloved by every class, and among the highest, they had many intimate friends, whose attachment stood the test of years, as we shall see hereafter.

As the French officials could not distinguish Americans from English, many of the latter escaped imprisonment by pretending to be Yankees, and when it was known that Mr. Rotch was going away in his own vessel, he had so many offers of sea-men, wishing to get out of France, that he could have manned his ship twice over with Englishmen. Many begged to be allowed to conceal themselves on board his vessel, but he told them that he could not *give them leave* to do so, in such a manner as encouraged them to do it, unauthorized by him.

At last his affairs were wound up, the packing was all done, his baggage was on board, and he and his family accompanied by a troupe of mourning friends, went down to the quay, where a small boat took them off to the ship. To the last, he dreaded being stopped by the French government, nor could he feel at ease, while the Custom House officers were on board. He had provided a collation for them in the cabin, and plied them so well with good wine, that they omitted to search the vessel for persons not entitled to be on board, and great was the relief to the minds of the owner and Captain of the vessel, when the Frenchmen took their departure amid three hearty cheers.

The ship's papers were all made out for a voyage to the United States, but her real destination was England, and when far enough from land to make it safe, my father ordered all on board to come on deck. About fifteen persons who had hidden themselves, appeared; most of them English sailors, who were delighted to find that the vessel was going to Portsmouth. My father was in partnership with his father and elder brother, and they had a suit pending in Chancery concerning the refusal of Under-writers to pay the insurance on a vessel of theirs that was lost at sea, and he was desired by his partners to go to London to look after their interest in this suit. This it was that took him to England, and kept him there so many years, that the family settled there for life.

Had it not been for that suit in Chancery, he would have returned to America, and established himself at New Bedford, to which place his father and all his family had removed, from Nantucket, and where they were building up a new and flourishing town. What a difference this would have made in the lives of his children! My parents were well received by their large circle of English friends, and made themselves very interesting by their thrilling narration of the events of the French Revolution. I have heard those, who were then young girls, speak, in their old age, of the way in which my mother fascinated them, and of her going with them to their

rooms at night, and entertaining them there, long after the elders of the household were in bed.

Pp. 37. The successful prosecution of the Whale Fishery in Dunkirk, had attracted the notice of the English Government, and had also induced some London merchants to embark in the same business, but they were not so successful as the Americans had been. Some of these merchants sought my father's acquaintance, and tried to learn of him the secret of his success, and several statesmen had interviews with him, and wished him to settle in England; but at that time he was bent on returning to the land of his birth, and living among his own relations.

At last however, the Hon. Charles Greville, of high family and standing, and nephew to Sir William Hamilton, who possessed a large estate on the banks of Milford Haven, in Pembrokeshire, South Wales, talked so much to my father of the capabilities of that port for the whaling business, and offered him so many advantages if he would settle there, that my father began to listen to the proposition. Mr. Greville promised to obtain of the government the same terms that he had had in France, and said he would give him all the land he could want for building on, at a nominal rent, and for a lease of ninety-nine years. These proposals made him write to consult his father about accepting them, and meanwhile he resolved to pay a visit to this famous haven of Milford and see for himself, how desirable it was.

He had also another inducement to make this journey, and to take his wife with him; some of their relations, from Nantucket, were settled there. They were *Tories* during the War of Independence, and had fled to Halifax; but not finding any business that suited them there, they resolved to join my father in France, and were on their way there, when the terrific accounts of the Revolution determined them to stop short of Dunkirk, and they had landed at Milford, as the best port they could make. One small old fishing town, called Hakim, and three or four cottages scattered over the site of the present town, was all they found, and very sad and discouraging was the prospect for four or five families to be able to make a living there. Like true Yankees, they could turn their hands to anything and as bread was a most essential article, Samuel Starbuck established a bakery, and made, besides household bread, the biscuits used at sea; this proved lucrative, and being good unadulterated ship-bread, was eagerly sought by the Captains of vessels that put into the Port. A small shop of drapery and haberdashery supplied the necessities of Daniel Starbuck's family, and a small

pension from the English Government to the parents of these persons, Timothy Folger and wife, and old Sam. Starbuck and wife, enabled them to live. As Quakers, they had received aid from the friends in Wales, and my father had also assisted them. He now determined to pay them a visit, and having placed his elder son at a private boarding school, kept by a Quaker at Guilford, and committed his younger one to the care of an excellent nurse at Newington, and under the supervision of his good friend, Mary Hoare, he prepared to make the journey of 275 miles in a horse chaise, with his wife and daughter.

My father chose this primitive way of travelling, as being more agreeable than coaching over bad roads, and more economical than posting; besides, he was fond of horses and of driving, and the journey proved very agreeable to him and his wife. He stopped by the way to see every worthy of note, and carried letters of introduction to many persons *en route*. Among others, they were introduced to and received much attention from, Lady Mackworth, the widow of a wild young Baronet, who, having drunk himself to death, had left her mistress of a grand establishment and ample fortune. She was living at the Knoll, near Neath, in Glamorganshire, and there my parents were invited to stay, and to bring their little girl with them, but they preferred to remain at the Hotel, and only dine with her Ladyship. She was of a Quaker family, had gained what she married for, title, wealth, and an establishment, and was now enjoying her liberty as a widow. This acquaintance was kept up for many years, and Lady M. was several times our guest at Castle Hall.

My father had a great love of mechanics, and on this journey he inspected with interest all the manufactories that came in his way, as well as the coal and iron mines, and great foundries of Wales. After a long and pleasant journey, he reached Milford Haven, and found his way to the cottages of his relatives. Great was their pleasure, in seeing, in this land of strangers, those whom they had known and loved at home, and they conducted the travellers to a cottage, a mile off, and larger than the rest, where the oldest of these emigrants, Sam. Starbuck, Sen. resided, and where preparations had been made for the reception of my parents. Sam. Starbuck's wife was own aunt to my father, and both these aged relatives were very glad to receive this nephew and his family, and to have their company and sympathy in this banishment from all they held dear. My mother's pleasure in this intercourse, equalled theirs; after passing five years among foreigners, and having seen

few Americans besides the officers of her husband's ships, she enjoyed talking over with these cousins the scenes of her childhood, and the persons familiar to them both.

Being so near to Ireland, my father would not lose the opportunity of visiting that country, and being furnished with excellent letters, he left his wife and child comfortably settled under the roof of his uncle and aunt, and proceeded to make the tour of Ireland, then under the wretched mis-rule of Earl Camden, and on the eve of its sanguinary rebellion of 1797. Besides numerous letters to the first Quaker families, my father brought others to the nobility and gentry of the country, and he was everywhere hospitably entertained, and never allowed to put up at an Inn. He was painfully struck by the tyrannical way of the English over the natives, and heard with horror of the cruelties practised by the conquerors of this unhappy country.

When dining at the table of the Lord Lieutenant, he was questioned by him as to his opinion of the state of the country, and his answer was eagerly looked for by the company who had been discussing it with some warmth. With admirable coolness and tact, he replied, that he should be happy to give his opinion to his Lordship in private, but had rather not enter upon the subject there. The Earl appointed an early hour the next day for hearing what Mr. Rotch had to say, and in that interview the honest American, the truth-telling Quaker, expressed fully the result of his observations, and said that every act of the Government was calculated to exasperate the people, and to bring on a rebellion; when, to his surprise, and indignation, Earl Camden said, that such was the policy of his Government. He knew there was a great deal of discontent, and it was thought best to bring matters to a crisis; make the people rise, and then put them down by an armed force. "If that is the case," replied my father, "I have only to add that your measures are most successful," and he withdrew as soon as he could. Soon after he left Ireland the rebellion broke out, and led to atrocities on both sides, that were a disgrace to human nature.

My mother greatly enjoyed the tranquil life she was leading among her Nantucket relations, and being in the family way, she persuaded her husband to remain there until after her confinement. She observed that her two last children had been born in troubled times, and she should like to have one quiet confinement in this peaceful corner of the world. Soon after this was agreed upon, she and her husband were awakened in the night, by a man screaming out, under their window, "Get up, get up, the French are landed,

and you will all be murdered." My father threw up the window and asked the man what he meant, when he found to his amazement that the man meant what he said; the French had made a landing at Fishguard. "How far off is that?" — "Twenty miles" — On hearing this my father returned to bed — and to sleep, telling his wife that the French would not be there that night and they had better get all the sleep they could, for there was no knowing where they might be the next night. They both slept till their usual hour of awaking, the next morning. As they had no knowledge of the enemy's intended movements, and could not tell what place would be the safest, they determined to keep quiet where they were; and before the end of that day, they heard that the French had laid down their arms, and were all made prisoners.

Pp. 49. The suit in Chancery was still going on slowly, and my father's presence was still needed, so he took a furnished house at Islington, which was then separated from London by green fields, and would therefore give his children the benefit of country air, at the same time that a stage coach would take him every morning to his business in the city. My elder brother came home for his holidays, and the younger one was taken from nurse, so my mother had her four children united around her for the first time, and began to keep house with a regular establishment. I remember that besides the usual number of servants, she had an old-maid housekeeper, a strict Quaker who used to keep us children company when my mother was out, and who was sufficiently refined and educated for my mother to be willing to leave us in her care, when she would not on any account have left us alone with servants, though she never hired any without strictly forbidding them to tell any frightful stories to her children. She would explain to them the danger of exciting young minds by fearful accounts of Giants, and Robbers and Ghosts, and end by assuring them that if they disobeyed her in this, they would lose their places.

An English lady, brought up at Dunkirk, and who had there given lessons in French to my aunts Lydia and Mary, was now engaged as my governess, and came to reside with us at Islington, whilst our family was still further increased by the arrival of a nephew of my father's from New Bedford, who was to go to a boarding school with his son. He was dressed in a complete suit of light drab, and as the English, Quakers and all, were then dressed in dark clothes, his appearance was so singular that the people in the streets of London, turned round to look at him. My mother readily sympathized with the feeling of embarrassment this must occasion to a

shy youth of sixteen, and she persuaded my father to order a suit of dark clothes for his nephew. When attired in these, he looked so handsome, that he still attracted much attention, but of this he was not aware. My father was very kind in taking the two cousins to see many of the sights of London, and many home pleasures were procured for them, by my mother, but at length the vacation ended, and they went off together to a Quaker school, kept at Reading, by William Fardon. [Note: The young cousin was William Rotch Rodman.]

Pp. 53. All Americans of any note, resident in London at this time, were known to my father, and with Mr. Gore, the envoy to the Court of St. James from the United States, he was on the most friendly terms; he and my mother often visited him and his lady, and the first children's party that I was ever at, was on a Twelfth Night, at Mrs. Gore's. A memorable event to me!

Pp. 57. During the two years that we lived at Islington, my parents made a tour to the North of England, visiting the principal Quaker families on their way, and becoming acquainted with Lindley Murray, the grammarian. The iron works at Colebrookdale interested my father very much, as indeed did all sorts of manufactories; he visited many, and made notes of all he saw, thinking they would be of use to his country, when he returned to it, to reside. I well remember how dull our house was, during the absence of my parents, and how much we children missed the sunny presence of our mother; though well treated by our governess and the house-keeper, we were not happy without her, and great was our joy at her return.

The Hon. Charles Greville never gave up his plan for settling my father on his uncle's estate at Milford Haven, and he cultivated his acquaintance very assiduously. He gave conversation parties, and assembled at his house, the principal literary characters of the day, and the Nantucket Quakers were often invited, and sometimes went. It was on her way to one of these parties that my mother's deafness first came on. As she entered the house, she felt as if her ear were suddenly stopped up, and no sound could enter it. It affected her very much, but with her usual self-command, she hid her feelings, and went thro the evening as if nothing were the matter, tho she could not of course converse as much as usual, and was very glad when it was time to go home. It was at this time confined to one ear, and was not very obvious to others, though very unpleasant to her.

At length my father, with the approbation of his family in

America, entered into negotiations for settling at Milford Haven. The English government gave him the same terms that he had had in France, and Sir William Hamilton promised him all the land he wanted, for a peppercorn ground-rent. My mother very much disliked the idea of settling in Wales. She had clung to the hope of soon returning to her native land, and once more beholding her loved parents, and the numerous relations and friends for whom her constant heart knew no abatement of love, and this plan of removing to Milford Haven, and there building and establishing themselves, was such a death-blow to her hopes, that it afflicted her greatly. If she must live far away from her relations, she wished to live in, or near, London, where she possessed a large circle of endeared friends. To quit this charming society to go anywhere but to America, was a great affliction to her, yet, like a dutiful wife, she did not seriously oppose her husband's wishes. One of her playful answers on this subject he always remembered. He had been setting forth all he could think of to make the plan agreeable to her, and said she should come up to London every year if she wished it, to which she quickly replied, "If I may come to London twice every year, and stay six months each time, I shall be quite content."

Having decided to remove his family to Milford, my father went there to make arrangements for their temporary accommodation, until he could build a comfortable mansion. Many houses, and a hotel had been added to the place since he left it, and one of the houses he had built for others, was now vacated for him, but it was so small, that he was obliged to hire bed-rooms in other houses, to make up the number required for his family.

He visited Mr. Leach at Sunnyhill, and became very much acquainted with his two single sisters, Eliza and Mary, and on hearing them express a vehement desire to see London, his benevolent love of giving pleasure, triumphed over all considerations of fitness and convenience, and to my mother's great surprise and discomfort, he returned home accompanied by those two ladies, and devoted much time to showing them the sights of the metropolis. They made themselves as agreeable as they could to my mother, and gave as little trouble as possible; but it was very annoying to have strangers staying in the house, when she was winding up her affairs, and preparing to leave it.

She was moreover, much occupied with changing her governess, and had her feelings greatly tried by the reluctance of Miss Gilman to relinquish the situation. This lady was extremely fond of me, and managed me well, and had taught me a great deal; but she did not

love my younger brother, Ben, and she was continually punishing him, and making him set his will in opposition to hers. She would keep him tied to the bed-post for a whole day, because he would not ask her pardon for something he had done, and in this way was teaching him obstinacy, for he thought his honor required him to persevere, and that it was mean to give in. He prided himself upon his powers of endurance, and when deprived of a meal for some trifling offence, he bore it like a hero, but would not yield. My mother had the sense to see that this treatment was spoiling a good disposition, and resolved to save Ben from it.

I was a great pet of my father's, and seeing the improvement I had made under Miss Gilman, and that I was very fond of her, he did not like to part from her, and it required all my mother's firmness and sweetness to procure her dismission. Happily, her brother, a planter in the island of Tobago, invited her just then, to go and live with him; so she departed, and a very amiable young lady, a Miss Kennedy, took her place, and was introduced to her pupils only a few days before the family set off for Wales.

My father had purchased a chariot in order to travel post, and that with a post chaise accommodated the whole party, including the two Miss Leaches, who always spoke of that journey as a most charming one, and of Mr. Rotch, as the best possible leader and provider. Arrived in Milford, it required all the native ingenuity and clever management of both my parents, to settle themselves comfortably in their small quarters, and to make a respectable appearance. They had so much taste in furnishing that even their small front parlor was so arranged as to call forth the admiration of visitors accustomed to elegant apartments.

I ought to have said that just before leaving London, my parents went, at the urgent invitation of Mr. Greville, to a soiree at his house, and there met Sir William Hamilton and his notorious wife. My mother was shocked to find herself in such bad company, and refused to be introduced to Lady Hamilton, who was the lion of the evening. She was still very handsome, and sang sweetly, and though she saw that she was avoided by the beautiful Quakeress, she was not to be deterred from speaking to her, and when taking leave, she rushed up to her, and said she hoped to see her in Wales that summer, as Sir William and she meant to visit Milford and they should certainly call upon her. My mother was dumbfounded by this impudence, and not choosing to say she should be happy to see her, she said nothing, but secretly resolved to avoid her if possible.

Mr. Greville was an intimate friend of Lord Cawdor, and he wrote to him a full account of my father and requested him, not only to make his acquaintance himself, but to introduce him to the nobility and gentry of Pembrokeshire; so very soon after arrival at Milford, my parents were called upon by Lord and Lady Cawdor, and a great many of the Welsh gentry, and then, before their calls were returned, there came, according to the ancient custom of Wales, a proposal to dine on a certain day with Mr. and Mrs. Rotch. My mother was appalled at the idea of entertaining such guests in her small house, and with her small number of servants, and thought it a most senseless thing for the inhabitants to come upon strangers for a dinner, before the newcomers had visited them, and seen the customs of the place. She meditated excusing herself from this intended honor, but my father hit on a method of receiving it, that would spare my mother all trouble and anxiety. He would give them a dinner at the Hotel, the very best that could be had there, with wines from his own cellar. So when the day came, and the gay equipages drove up to the door of our small dwelling, the company were directed to the hotel, and told that they would find Mr. and Mrs. Rotch there.

This plan answered admirably; the dinner went off well. We children were allowed to join the company at dessert, and the beauty of Maria made a great impression on them. Lord Cawdor took much notice of her, and a week after, came a basket of delicious fruit, directed to her. I think it was in the spring of 1801 that we moved down into Wales, for I well remember being awakened at midnight, on the 1st of January in that year, to hear the old century rung out, and the new one rung in, by the church bells of Islington.

My father began immediately to build stores and a dwelling house, and ships began to arrive from America, full freighted with sperm oil. This business attracted the artisans necessary for carrying it on, and houses sprang up on every side, and Milford became a scene of activity unknown before. The author of so much prosperity was deservedly popular, and his prompt pay secured him plenty of workmen. The oil imported from the United States was all landed, and the casks coopered and then re-shipped in small coasting vessels to London; this with the out-fitting of his ships for the South Seas, made a thriving business for a variety of trades, and introduced some new shops into the town.

Sir William Hamilton, as proprietor of all the land on which this new town was built, was desirous of seeing the improvements made

by his nephew, Mr. Greville, on his estate, so they made a party of pleasure into Wales, of which Lady Hamilton, Lord Nelson, and several others formed a part, and in the month of July 1802, they arrived at the Hotel. Sir Wm. Hamilton and Mr. Greville called immediately on my father, and conversed most agreeably with him. They asked after Mrs. Rotch; my father said she was near her confinement and did not see any company. She meant on this plea to avoid seeing Lady Hamilton, but she was caught unexpectedly in her own drawing room; one warm day, when all the doors stood open, that brasen beauty walked in, without knocking, and greeted my mother as if they had been old friends. She was resolved that it should not be said that she was not received by Mrs. Rotch.

As the 1st of August was the anniversary of Lord Nelson's victory over the French, in the famous battle of the Nile, Lord Cawdor complimented the naval hero, by establishing a boat race on that day, and he gave a silver cup as the prize to be won.

Pp. 105. My father's vessels had been very successful, and the price of oil was high. In 1814 he had three cargoes stored in London, which he was keeping until it should rise still higher. There was very little sperm oil in England, besides his, so by way of commanding the market, he bought up what little the London merchants had on hand. When oil rose to a hundred and twenty pounds per ton, he wrote to his agent, Thomas Dickason, to sell all he could at that price, and if this had been done, my father would have been a rich man instead of a poor one. Mr. Dickason thought he understood the market better than my father did, and would not sell, though repeatedly urged by him to do so.

The sudden pacification of Europe, on the downfall of Napoleon, changed everything from war, to peace prices, and oil went down to sixty pounds a ton, making my father bankrupt. This blow fell on him like a thunderbolt. To find himself when past the meridian of life, thus suddenly hurled down from a state of affluence to one of poverty, and this all owing to the disobedience of his London merchant, was very hard to bear, and it almost overwhelmed him. My eldest brother was in business with his father, and was involved in his ruin; but he forgot his own losses in his concern for his father, and did all in his power to sustain and comfort him.

My mother's brave spirit bore up grandly against this unexpected blow. She thought more of her husband's creditors than of her own privations. There was one class of these for whom both my parents felt acutely, and that was the officers of his ships, who had left their hard earned money in his keeping, considering their employer as

safe as the Bank of England. (Many years after, these were repaid all they had supposed lost, principal and interest.)

My poor father's body sympathized with the sufferings of his mind, and gave him violent neuralgic pains in his hip and leg, but in spite of this he set vigorously to work, to arrange his papers and accounts, and then went up to London to meet his creditors and surrender them all his property. My mother remained at Castle Hall, and was occupied in reducing her establishment; a most painful work, for servants who had lived with her many years, could not bear the idea of leaving so good a mistress. Molly Mathews, who had been nurse, and had taken care of the youngest boys from their birth, and was afterwards made lady's-maid, absolutely refused to go. She would stay without wages, and do any kind of work, rather than leave the family in their misfortunes, and she did remain, as housemaid, on lower wages!

P. 107 But I am anticipating, and must return to the time when my father went to London to meet his creditors. Just before his first interview with them, he received a letter from his son Benjamin, in Bath, telling him that his eldest daughter was ill of pleurisy, and her life despaired of. This news so overpowered him, that he was unfit for business, and his creditors, being for the most part personal friends, urged him to leave directly for Bath, and furnished him with ample means to do so. This sad news reached my mother at Castle Hall, and she set out directly by the mail-coach, for Bath, and arrived before my father. I was so low that Dr. Wilkinson, at whose house I was, doubted whether she ought to be admitted to my room, but without hearing anything said, I perceived that someone had arrived, and asked for my mother, on which she came to me, and found me better. A few hours later my father arrived. My recovery was still very doubtful, and those loving parents united in a vow to God, that if this dear child were spared to them, they would bear with perfect resignation, the loss of property, and I believe they kept it, I am sure my mother did; her cheerful submission to her altered circumstances never failed her.

One kind friend, Mrs. Enderby, had come from London on purpose to nurse me, and had done much to better my condition before the arrival of my mother. My illness had so affected Mrs. Wilkinson that she was confined to her bed in the room next to mine; the enquiries after us both were enough to occupy one servant, and she kept but two, so I had had very little female attendance; my brother Ben had been my nurse day and night for a week. Mrs.

Enderby's aid was therefore very acceptable, and prevented my appearance from frightening my mother.

As soon as I was pronounced out of danger, my father returned to town, and my mother waited for me to be well enough to go home with her. It was the opinion of my three doctors, that I should fall into a consumption, after this severe pleurisy, and all agreed that I must not be taken to so wet a climate as that of Pembrokeshire. This opinion pleased Mrs. Enderby, who wished me to spend the winter with her in London, and my mother's love was too disinterested for her to urge her own need of my society. Ben returned with her, and I went to London, where I was of great use to my father, not only in soothing and comforting him under his great trials, but by meeting refractory creditors whom he dreaded to encounter, and writing letters and notes that he shrank from doing. In the autumn, I went to Wanborough and spent the winter of 1816 and 1817 with the Birkbecks, and remained with them till they embarked for the United States.

My mother was living tranquilly at Castle Hall with Francis, Maria, William and Dickason to keep her company. My father continued in London, making frequent visits to Wanborough, and Ben was settled in South Moulton St. studying law. When the Birkbecks were gone, my father persuaded me to return to Mrs. Enderby in Grosvenor St. at the west end of London, that he might often see me, and make me useful to him, and I know not when I should have returned home, if I had not heard that Maria wished to pay a visit to Mrs. Harward, so to set her free to leave my mother, I resolved to set off for Wales. She left, escorted by Francis, before I could reach Castle Hall. Late in the month of August I arrived there, and was left by the coach on the high road, a mile and a quarter from my home; there stood William to meet me, and a boy to carry my trunk! Then first I *saw* the change in our fortunes; never before did I arrive without either being in our own carriage, or having it to meet me. Now I walked through the muddy lanes, and tried to talk cheerfully with my companion, who was accustomed to the change, and had no idea how it affected me.

I was soon made happy by finding my mother looking remarkably well and cheerful, the house in perfect order, and an air of peace and love pervading it. The rooms were dressed with flowers, and I was surprised to hear my mother say that it was her doing, that *she* had gathered them, for in our palmy days, she never entered the garden or arranged any flowers. Seeing my astonishment, she observed that she now enjoyed Castle Hall as she had never before

done; she used to be so over-tasked with household cares, and with providing for, and receiving so much company, that she never had any time to herself; but now, with a small establishment of servants, and little or no company, she had really enjoyed the pleasure grounds, and was happier than she had been for years.

The bailiff was employed to carry on the business of the farm, for the benefit of the creditors, and they employed me as their agent, to keep the accounts and allow the family their living off of it. Thus everything went on much as usual, except that we had no men servants in the house, no carriages, and no pleasure horses.

The nobility and gentry were full of kind attentions, and when they invited us to their houses, they offered their carriages to bring us there; but my mother declined their invitations, she was only too glad to be excused from the trouble of visiting. I accepted a few of them, to show the Welsh gentry that we were not utterly cast down by the loss of money.

My father's most intimate friend, one whom he always called brother, and whom his children supposed to be their own uncle, until they were grown up, Morris Birkbeck, emigrated with his family to the United States, the year after my father's failure. This induced my eldest brother to emigrate also, and it was deemed expedient for William to accompany him. The separation from those two sons was a heavier trial to my mother than the loss of fortune had been. She almost sank under it, and I well remember how those around her, missed the influence of her fine spirits, and her droll speeches.

The estate of Castle Hall was now advertised for sale, and my mother found wholesome occupation in the necessary preparations for leaving it, while I was busy in winding up the affairs of my eldest brother, who left rather suddenly at last, and I had to dispose of some standing crops, and a yacht that belonged to him.

P. 142. (Letter of Mrs. Rotch to her son-in-law, John Farrar.)

My dear son Farrar,

I thank you most kindly for your last acceptable letter. I believe I have done so before in a long joint epistle to yourself and Eliza, but as there is at present, no act of Parliament, to prevent my expressing the same sentiment twice over, I shall proceed without fear of legal attacks. As Doctor Tackerman kindly called and offered to take any letters from us to our Trans-Atlantic family or friends, I thought it might gratify him to be the bearer of one to you, and as he was unacquainted with its contents, he might fancy himself the bearer of some important commission. I have just

finished a long letter to Eliza, the contents of which she will probably share with you, so I must endeavor to think of something not already detailed in hers. First then, your dear father's law suit, so long pending, and annoying him, is settled in his favor. The lawyers and counsel kept it on, as long as they possibly could, and had it not been for our dear Ben, who watched over his father with great vigilance, he would have given way on many points rather than delay the settlement. At last when the defendants, who knew all along that they had not a foot to stand on, found it must come to issue, they proposed a compromise, which was at last put into a shape that Ben agreed to, they paying all the law expenses on *both sides*, which was no trifle.

We were yesterday rejoiced to read in the newspaper, that the Queen Regent of Portugal has recalled her proscribed and banished subjects, amongst whom is the celebrated General Mina, who has been several years in England, and now resides near us. We sometimes exchange calls, but he can speak no English, and very little French. He is a small man, but full of bravery and patriotism, and deserved a better fate than *banishment*. His little wife, who has I believe followed his fate, is also here with him, and she speaks our language so well, and so fluently, that it quite astonished me to listen to her. She even looks quite English in her dress and manners. I have taken such an interest in their exile, that I am quite elated with the prospect of their restoration to their friends and country, and, I hope, to their confiscated property; for they have sojourned here upon very small means. The General is just recovering from a severe illness, during which many of our great men did not omit the etiquette of sending to inquire after him, and Joseph Bonaparte, now I believe in London, paid him every attention, and sent his own physician to attend him. This, no doubt has soothed the poor General's wounded pride, in some measure, but I have felt much for him and his pleasant wife, since I have known them. The defeat of Don Miguel is also cause of rejoicing amongst us; we hope he is now *finished*. The death of Lafayette, is cause of *regret*; for aged as he was, his energy of mind seemed unimpaired, and France needed his counsels, though she did not, to her cost, always take them for her guide. I expect to hear of his funeral processions in *America* very soon, for they will wish to do him every honor in that land, where he wrought his first military achievements. I have been this morning, to that magnificent building, Exeter Hall, (where no doubt you have been on some public occasions when with us) to witness the distribution of the prizes awarded to different persons,

for different inventions, and for drawings done in various styles. Some of the artists were very young, and there were many young ladies among them. The Duke of Sussex, who is President of the Society of Arts, was to have been in the chair, but ill health prevented, and the Duke of ----- acted for him. I was sorry the Royal Duke was not there, as many of the Artists would have been more gratified to receive a medal from the hand of Royalty, than from only a *noble* Duke. The Duke presented them their medals, and said some civil thing, to which they bowed, and then turning to the gay assembly, bowed again, and then returned to their seats. The young female artists looked very modest and pretty, and the dear children, too young to feel the embarrassment of older years, looked so happy, and bowed so prettily to the company, while their sweet faces beamed with joy, calling forth *two peals* of applause from the spectators, said to be from twelve to fifteen hundred. There were as many ladies as gentlemen, and their gay bonnets of green, yellow, pink, and blue, with their flowers and bows of ribbon, looked from the place I was in like a beautiful bed of tulips.

Isabelle and her sister, Mrs. Nott and myself had tickets from Benjamin for the platform, and that elevated position, gave us a full view of all the company. Benjamin has lately been honored by the appointment of Vice-President to this Society of Arts. As it was an honor he did not seek, nor know of until after the appointment, it was the more gratifying to him to receive it. He and two other Vice-Presidents accompanied the Duke when he entered the room, preceded and followed by several gentlemen with *tip-staffs*, etc.

The Duke gave a short and appropriate address at the conclusion, in compliment to the society, and the great improvement that had taken place in the fine arts within a few years, etc.

I had a very pleasant morning, and enjoyed myself greatly, the Hall not being overheated by the crowd; and I now wish you my dear son, and our dear Eliza had been by my side, and dear Frank, too, he would have been delighted to have seen the youngest artists, dear children! I was so pleased that they had *two peals* of applause, while their elders had only one. Now if I have told you anything in this that I have expressed in Eliza's letter, how she will rally me, let the version be ever so varied. I tremble to think of it, and must trust to you to appease her anger before she replies. I fear she will also be mortified at this scrawl, but having written you one decent letter, to prove my writing abilities, you must now put up with it, though it should look like dead flies in summer. Tell my dear grand-

son I love him very dearly, and accept for thyself, the tender affection of thy mother.

P. 151 My father's business prospered so well, that he was relieved from all anxiety as to the means of living, and his upright conduct in appropriating the property left him by his father, to the payment in full of his Nantucket creditors, (the officers of his ships, who had left their earnings in his hands) made him feel quite easy in his conscience, as to the consequences of his failure. He now lived on a small scale, but very liberally, always open-handed to the needy, and ever ready to help forward young men struggling for a living. My mother liked her present mode of life very much; to be in London suited her exactly; and she enjoyed housekeeping as she did it there, and yet she made it more laborious than was necessary, by choosing to pay for everything as she had it, and keeping an account of every penny-worth spent in the day. Twenty years afterwards, when living with me in Pembridge Place, and seeing how easily and correctly the household expenses were regulated, by letting all the trade men have books, and settling them every week, she adopted that method. A strong proof this of her good sense, which could triumph over her most fixed habits.

P. 158. I should mention that in the early part of the winter, my mother's nephew, George Coffin, paid her a visit which she greatly enjoyed, and for the sake of sharing longer in his society, she agreed to accompany him, with Mr. Farrar and myself, to Brighton. My father did not incline to exchange his comfortable home, for a boarding-house on the sea-shore, so we left him behind, and spent a week in that gay spot, once the summer residence of royalty, but then the resort of invalids in winter and of London citizens in summer. In going by coach, from London to Brighton, my mother was bent on making her companions appreciate the perfection of that mode of conveyance, and was far from satisfied with their slight notice of the beauty of the horses, the celerity with which they were changed, the capital driving of the coachmen, and the smoothness of the roads; but they did show some surprise when told that they had been driven half the way by a nobleman! Farrar could not believe it, because he received their shillings just like the other coachmen; but it was even so. We found a very dull set of people in our boarding-house in Brighton. Even my mother's genial soul could not warm them into interesting companions, and at the end of a week, we were very glad to return to town.

I do not remember hearing anything remarkable of my mother during our absence in Paris, except that she made some preserves

for Catharine when on a visit to her, and that she was often at Leyton. She intended to keep the fiftieth anniversary of her wedding day, and wrote to me, urging Farrar and me to be present on the occasion. She could not assemble the rest of the family for the real wedding day, so she and my father decided to celebrate it later, and on the 30th of June, 1837, they assembled at their hospitable board, Ben and Isabelle, Dickason and Catharine, Maria and Mr. Langston, Sam Rodman, Alfred Starbuck, Mr. Nevitt, Farrar and myself; and a merry time we had of it. Catharine had added another little girl to her family, called Emily Wason, and the baby was christened by Mr. Langston on this memorable day, the other two children being present.

Soon after the Golden Wedding, we were joined by Anna Barker and Charles Homer, and accompanied by them, left London for an extensive tour on the Continent. Most kind and helpful were our dear parents in fitting us off for our tour, and Farrar's health being delicate, my father insisted on his having a two quart bottle of excellent Port wine to take with him. This, however, was left behind in the hurry of departure, and when we reached the packet-boat that was to convey us to Antwerp, we missed it, and I was lamenting it, when a messenger appeared alongside bringing it to us. This was the last act of kindness we received from my father. I never saw him more. After nearly two years spent abroad, we reached Marsailles, on our homeward journey, and there received the news of my father's death.

I had just landed after a very tempestuous voyage of three days on the Mediterranean Sea, with my husband in a dreadful state of nervous depression, and though terribly shocked at this sad news, I managed to conceal it from him, lest it should destroy his night's rest, and when he dropped asleep, I laid awake to weep. I had been looking forward to my father's house, as a haven of rest, and to his counsel and sympathy as balm to my wounded heart, and to hear thus suddenly that I had lost this best of friends and advisers, was an overwhelming affliction. My appearance the next day shocked Mrs. Rogers who was travelling with us. We posted to Paris, my invalid having sleepless nights all the way, and there remained some days for him to consult an American physician then resident there, and highly esteemed. This prevented our being with my family in time for the funeral, and allowed my brother Ben an opportunity of coming to meet us on our landing at Southampton, which was a great relief and comfort to me.

Dickason and Catharine had been absent in Scotland, looking at

an estate they had just purchased, and had reached Liverpool, on their way to London, when they heard of my father's death; they hurried forward, and arrived before the funeral. They found Mrs. Simon with my mother, and Maria Langston, with her sweet little Minny, who was a fresh object of interest to my mother, arrived soon after from Sheffield. About a dozen gentlemen, old friends of my father's, following his remains to Kensall Green Cemetery, and the day after, my mother and Maria went down, with Isabelle, to Lowlands for a few days.

My mother was all her life peculiarly averse to sudden impressions. She always disliked surprises; even the most agreeable ones were painful to her, and she always begged her family and friends to announce their arrival, and give her the pleasure of anticipation; saying, "I never like to be surprised." It may therefore be imagined how much she suffered from the suddenness of her husband's death. Mrs. Simon called at No. 8 the day before the event, and at my father's urgent solicitation, remained there all night. He read the Bible and a prayer before they retired, and went to bed as well as usual. The next morning, a servant called Mrs. Simon into my father's room; there he laid, as one asleep, in his usual attitude; but the seal of death was on his ample brow. She ascertained that life had fled, and bore the sad intelligence to my mother. Mrs. Simon had gone thro a similar experience, when news reached her that her husband was drowned at sea, but she was not prepared to witness the effect of such a shock on her strong-minded friend; to see her so overwhelmed and her nerves so shaken, was really appalling.

My father died on the 30th of March, 1839. My husband and I did not reach Sidmouth Street until the 27th of April. We found my dear mother composed, and able to welcome us cordially, but her dear face bore traces of the shock she had received. Our arrival, and the sad change she saw in her loved son Farrar, seemed to divert her thoughts from her own grief to mine. I found her surrounded by her children and affectionately ministered to by them all. Maria Langston soon returned home, and Dickason and Catharine left for Brussels. Ben and Isabelle were at Denham Park, twenty miles from London, where they were founding and organizing an Asylum for nervous patients of the highest class, giving them the same advantages already enjoyed by pauper invalids, that of being treated by a physician who had no interest in prolonging the malady. This was a truly benevolent project of my dear brother Ben's; he was always deeply interested in diseases of the brain and

nerves, and thought that those who had always been accustomed to live luxuriously, should not, on being obliged to quit their homes for an asylum, be subjected to a total change in their manner of living, be deprived of what seemed to them necessary comforts, and be associated only with uneducated servants. He, with two other gentlemen hired the spacious mansion and beautiful country grounds of Denham Park, placed a good physician there, on a fixed salary, and formed an establishment such as a wealthy country gentleman might own. Besides a good corps of servants, there were several educated gentlemen and ladies, to keep the patients company in their walks and drives, and amuse them indoors. Only half a dozen patients were already there, and as Mr. Farrar could not bear the noise and bustle of London, Ben proposed that he and I should become boarders at Denham Park, and promised that if we would go there, Isabelle should be there with us all the time, and he as much as he possibly could.

TO WILLIAM ROTCH FROM HIS SON BENJAMIN

Castle Hall, 6 mo 18-1819

My Beloved Father;—

It is probable that this is the last time I shall address thee from this place as the 25 inst is fixed for the payment of the purchase money and appraisement of the dead stock of the farm, Gardens and Furniture. I shall probably give possession on the 28 and after selling the live stock, about 40 head of cattle at the next fare in Narbeth, the 5th of next month, I hope to be at liberty to take my wife to Bath & either procure a cheap lodging in Bath or a small cottage in its neighborhood — where it is reported we may live nearly as cheaply as in Wales. There I propose fixing my wife and my two daughters — Dickason is placed as a weekly boarder at a School in the outskirts of Bath — Dear Ben is pursuing his profession in London — and thou wilt be pleased to hear that Ruth the American Minister, to whom I introduced him before I left Town (London) has employed him in some law case from America — & paid him fifty dollars as the first fee. The dear fellow did the business so much to Ruth's satisfaction, that he wrote Ben a flattering letter, on the manner which he had conducted it — which was more to Ben than his fee — and further Ben was given to understand that the minister had much Law business from America, which his business as a minister would not admit of his attending to — and he had determined to put it in Ben's hands as their *Law Agent* — if so it will be a great advantage to Benjamin, as it may throw many Americans in his way who come out for Patents & that of obtaining Patents and drawing specifications of Patents is his particular object while practising under Bar as termed — until he is called to the Bar as a Counsellor for which he has Fees from 5 Guineas to 25 according to the complexity of the machinery he draws. He is not in the way of having much business in that line to do yet — his two severe illnesses having interrupted his pursuits.

Now my dear Father dont let this dear grandson of thine sink in thy estimation from supposing him a Lawyer or Attorney, who do all the dirty work in the Law — No — he possesses an honourable mind, is qualifying himself for the highest and most honourable part of the profession, that of a Counsellor where he can refute all dishonorable cases — he has been offered very profitable concerns as attorney, but he has refused them all for the dignified part of the profession — my friends in that profession tell me that he is well qualified, in abilities, temper and *feeling*. That he is almost sure of

success if his health will admit of the close application it requires I much fear — He struggles hard to pay his way from one Quarter to another, for he will starve rather than run into debt & almost sooner than he would tax me for a pound, that a former friend of his would impose the loan of to him to pay his Fee of Admission to the Law which he knew I was not able to pay.

Thy expression of entire approbation of our dear Francis' choice of a partner for life is highly gratifying & secures to him mine and my dear wife's approbation. — altho a fortnight's Acquaintance is too short a time to decide on so important a choice for life. I have forwarded a Certificate from our mo Meeting, to R. Barker of Philadelphia, and intend forwarding our consent altho he has not thought necessary to ask for it. I notice with gratitude what thou writes about thy benevolent remittance & its application lett me entreat thee not to make any sacrifice of thy Land or Estates to afford me further assistance.

I hope to be able to send out another ship and when that is effected intend to embark for America — perhaps accompanied by my daughter Eliza for the inexpressible satisfaction of embracing my dear — very dear beloved parents & all my family — May it please gracious Heaven to grant us a happy meeting, and perhaps unless business calls me back to Europe I may spend the winter amongst you — I received a letter from Benj. Hussey a few days ago informing of the death of our old friend William Moores on the 5th or 6th of last month after 5 days' illness. B. H. desired that my brother Rodman might be informed of it as soon as possible — he says he has left a Will, copy of which shall be forwarded after the necessary forms are complied with — Tell dear Francis with our love I will send him copy of his bank acct as soon as I can find time to copy them — to save post I must bid adieu, after desiring mine & my wife's affectionate Love to you our Parents, & all the family as tho named

Thy very affectionate & dutiful son —  
B. Rotch

[Benjamin went to U. S. in 1821 and sailed for England the latter part of 1822.]

Extracts from another of Benjamin Rotch's Letters:

No 6 Upper Berkley Place, Bristol,  
6 mo 23rd, 1824.

My Beloved Father:—

Yesterday brought me a letter from my dear son Francis giving

me the afflicting intelligence of my dearly beloved mother's exit (5 mo 14th 1824) and altho I feel no doubt that she has been most happily removed from works to rewards I cannot but sincerely mourn her loss to the living. I also mourn for thy forlorn situation bereaved of a beloved wife, with whom thou hast spent a very long and happy life to live in wedlock — a period of 69 years falls to the lot of very few, a circumstance that cannot fail to make thee feel her loss much more sensibly. But I greatly hope the God of all Mercy will temper this affliction to thy old age and enable thee to fix more steadily if possible thy sole dependence on Him for the greater enjoyment of every comfort remaining. I am convinced that my lamentations for my beloved mother are of a very selfish nature, knowing that it would be wrong to indulge them for her since it has pleased the Almighty after her long well spent life to take her to himself, and that apparently without one pang or struggle with mortality. What a blessing that in the transit from this world of woe to the realms of eternal bliss she was spared all sufferings. I do not recollect to have ever heard of a more peaceful close, a circumstance that claims our warmest gratitude — and yet there is in my nature a regret that I shall never see her more in mutability, a regret that I am convinced is much increased by the sweet enjoyment of her company in my last visit to my native country. I cannot be too thankful for having been permitted to make you all so comfortable, so refreshing a visit, it was a renewal of all the best affections of the heart inasmuch as gratitude to the great Author of every blessing was increased in proportion to the earthly blessing enjoyed. I am suffering from sciatica. I am taking calomel according to Dr. Fothergill's prescription and bathe my legs in Rum as thou used to do. I shall apply this day a blister below the knee. Present my dear Love to all my beloved relatives as tho named, and believe me my beloved father thy very affectionate and dutiful son, Benj. Rotch.

## FROM FRANCIS ROTCH

Addressed 2nd M. 18th, 1819, at English Prairie, Illinois, to Charles Morgan Esq., Care of William Rodman, Esq., N 106 Arch Street, Philadelphia.

English Prairie Feb. 12th, 1819

My dear Friend —

Immediately on rec. of your very acceptable letter of Dec. 2nd I have turned to my writing case to make such reply as I well can without entering into a theological correspondence. For such subjects are difficult of discussion "Viva Voce" and when canvassed by the pen they too frequently give rise to misconceptions and embarrassment.

Without therefor detailing the particulars of my own personal beliefs, it is enough for me to say, that I fully enter into all your anxieties for the well-being of a sister and a Friend — the former is however well under your protection and the latter appreciates with feelings of gratitude the solicitudes of her brother — and respects them.

I am aware of the powerful influence of a Religion Moral and Social seperated, as it is, from all that is mystical and without the ken of human knowledge — its simplicity is beautiful — reason is its foundation, and conscience its approval; but its attainment is comparatively small and unsatisfactory to the Christian who more sensibly feels the connection between the Creator and the created —

A powerful mind early inured to self-control may under the guidance of a quick and delicate conscience be a moralist without the support of Religion; but the culture of such Doctrine must produce on society much anarchy and confusion. Human nature is too prone to error to venture far alone; or long to withstand the contagion of example in those we love and respect.

Rest assured I will never be accessory to my own destruction. I will not risk the purity of the mind whose innocence I hold above all price; nor shall scepticism find through me an entrance into the lovely temple dedicated to the Author its Being. There are other considerations, moral, social and physical, which of themselves render the English Prairie an unsuitable abode for the gentle Anna — A reproach lays on us which turns from our settlement the steps of modesty; which alarms the young and tender mind lest the taint of another's vice sh' rest upon it! And surely Anna shall not be the first to break the spell; neither w' I have her dependent on the society of but one or two individuals, however amiable on whom

she had none but a social claim. Your good Eliza is not ignorant of the high value I place on society and is assured that I w' never consent to its sacrifice.

Such society is not at present here to be found for ladies; and though every post brings advice of families moving out who are both respectable and wealthy yet it will be some time before I could be happy to bring Anna so far from her connections and family — indeed — *never*, unless accompanied by my own brother or sisters. This is the present appearance of things; but so fluctuating is everything in this western world that the things of the day are uncertain; and the promise of the morrow is seldom realized.

In a former letter I mentioned that my interests here w' not suffer my absence, but on the contrary my establishment w' be found at a much easier expence a year or two hence. The repeated anxieties of my friend has induced me to relinquish much of my purchase in lands and to stop for the present all proceed's.

In this distressing uncertainty I have naturally turned my thoughts to the peaceful home of my grandparents and the generous offer of my grandfather to interest me in a whaling outfit. I have thought with gratitude of the tender anxieties of my beloved Aunt Mary, and the interests expressed by my younger relatives — but more especially have I remembered that it was Anna's wish. You are my dr. Charles guilty of a refinement in cruelty when you picture to me the life you anticipated and which you consider open to me in N. Bedford! I feel all its advantages, all its attractions as a residence for a married man. And I do most surely rejoice in your prospects; you will enter on your mercantile career under the auspices and by the advice of those whose support will ensure success; but I am otherwise circumstanced — my uncles have through all this cabal against the settlement and its principles been perfectly silent! I have not rec'd a line from them not even a message! save that from my Uncle William advising me not to attach myself to N. B.'s settlement but to wander yet further in search of a spot to pitch my tents! Of the dangers and privations of a frontier settlement he knew nothing; and therefore counted little else than the cost of distance.

This, my dear friend, has always placed a restraint on my pen when writing of Bedford; and much as I love its society, its achievement, nothing but the happiness of your sister which cannot in this early settlement be ensured w' tempt me to quit my present position — but to it I cannot bring the treasure of my heart and without that treasure life w' lose its best joys — so situated I hold

myself open to any advice or communications my uncles or grandfather may be pleased, as my natural advisers, to offer me; and in every probability I shall make you an early visit in the summer paying my respects to my Uncle Thomas on my way with whom, if invited, I shall leave William as I cannot suffer him to remain here in my absence — I shall then my dr Charles, if not previously determined, make up my mind to remain for a period amongst you and with you, or I shall return to the beauties of Illinois with feelings and under certain impressions of a procrastinated enjoyment I shall never hope to realise.

I will leave you for the present and resume my pen when my mind shall have recovered its elasticity when a more cheerful gleam shall have dispersed the gathering clouds.

This is the third sheet I have placed under my pen in addressing you and had I not a present opportunity of sending it to the office I much doubt if it w' not have been like the others, lain aside as a production of a moody moment rather than bearing to you the well digested sentiments of a reflecting mind —

If you imagine there is anything contradictory in my views of this settlement and its prosperity remember that I sometimes write you as a Colonist without any reference to my personal interests, at other times as a bachelor — in either of those characters I can speak with astonishment of the rapid advances of the settlement and the brightness of its prospects; of its pleasures, its amusements and of my own happiness — but when as now I write of it in connection with my attachment to your sister my spirits sink and I betray to you my conviction that this State cannot be a suitable home for Anna for at least two or three years.

And perhaps not; for a much longer period — And I could not venture a removal to N. Bedford with a view to any mercantile pursuits unless under the approbation and expressed wish of my uncles who are the best able to judge of its advantages.

You must my friend see of how little purpose it is to urge my quitting the Prairies without suggesting in what other way I can employ my little capital and my time without intruding on the interests of others. I have some weeks since written my Aunt, I believe to this effect, and I am certain of her useful and excellent advice.

The freedom Charles, of your pen on this and every other occasion does but assure me of your friendship and of your value — do not detract from either by apology.

When I contract your impatience as regards an almost certain

good, within an affixed period, with what I believe w' be my patience and contentment under the same circumstances, I am ready to question your gratitude! and at the least give you credit for very little philosophy — I am willing to believe our settling in the same neighborhood w' materially contribute to the happiness of each. And believe me Charles I am as anxious as yourself that such sh' be our lot.

A knock at the door announces the arrival of three English labourers two of them consigned to myself! This again embarrasses my intentions of not proceeding on my farm till I am more settled in my plans but I shall endeavor to place them with some of my friends and hold myself disengaged till I can hear again from N. Bedford and from yourself; when if it is to my advantage I will be prepared to make a visit to the East this spring — Indeed, in either case of my remaining or returning, I could not be comfortable, I could not be happy, without again visiting you all and again conversing with my little Anna on those interests so essential to the happiness of both.

I shall write to Bedford and again to my sisters who I suppose are now returned from France where they have been on a tour. This accounts for their long silence. One miserable solitary letter has found its way to me from their pens since we parted; and Eliza's could not have reached them before they left England.

I am indeed sorry to hear your brother's affairs are not freed from their embarrassment and by his late exertions; but I hope he does not sink under their pressure; and that he too may find a shelter in the still waters of Bedford. I think with interest of his wife from the real affection she appeared to entertain for him — her happiness appeared to entirely depend upon his safe return — They have my very best wishes for their future movements, in life which I hope may not again separate them.

I look with some impatience for the letter which will announce to me the marriage of my valuable friend Eliza to Mr. Dunston whom you justly observe I had but little opportunity of knowing or appreciating. They are at an age to enjoy seasonably of the Justice of the past and will not be disappointed as so many are by the gay coloring of anticipation.

Give my love to the several individuals of your family and offer to Anna those sentiments from her absent friend most congenial to her own feelings but I w' suggest the propriety of not raising in her affectionate heart a hope that may be the taunt of disappointment — Adieu my friend. In this maze of uncertainty I leave all

things to work out their own and resting my belief that all things are intended by the great Creator for the good of his creations — Sh' my parents determine on a residence in the English Prairie my way will be cleared and much of my uncertainty laid to rest for I am myself happy as circumstances will allow and I daily become more attached to my new life.

These mails are overdue and cannot arrive in consequence of the flood. William has just crawled home from a hunting expedition in which he has narrowly espaped the loss of his eye — he is in much pain — his medical man who is I now think very clever — English clever — is sent for. — He has seen the eye and thinks all will be well at present it is greatly inflamed. Feb. 15.

William is going on well. Feb. 19, 1819.

LETTER FROM MARY ROTCH TO HER SISTER-IN-LAW,  
CHARITY ROTCH, IN KENDAL, OHIO

(Thomas Rotch, brother of Mary and husband of Charity, had died in Mt. Pleasant, Ohio, 9th mo. 14th, 1823. Lydia Rotch Dean, sister of Mary and Thomas, had died in Salem, 3rd mo. 10th, 1822.)

New Bedford 10th mo 12th, 1823

I hardly know how to address thee my dear sister on the deeply affecting subject of our recent affliction — affliction it may with propriety be termed as regards our aged parents — particularly our dear mother who had dwelt much on the hope of meeting the beloved object again in mutability — but to myself I can truly say as I found it on a preceding event, there seems to be *no separation* — what is it my dear sister but a participation with the spirits of the deceased, that can make me feel as tho' a tenderly beloved sister & brother were not in reality departed — Under this feeling I cannot sorrow — and I trust thou hast known it also, to be thy support, from the short acct. received of thy resignation and acquiescence to the divine will — only 2 short letters have yet come to hand from DG & the friend where you were — when any one can give us more particulars they will be very interesting —

My nephew T. Rotch went with Susan to Phila a few days since — after a short stay there he is going to Kentucky on business and on his return intends going to see thee at Kendal and advise with thee as to the future — It seems very desirable to us if it should appear right to thee, to have thee a resident in our circle at Bedford — perhaps thy health might not suffer much from the change — & if it should rest *peacefully* on thy mind to come & dwell amongst us I think all the consequences may be left to him whose power is sufficient to heal or alleviate our infirmities when we are in our right allotments —

When Thos arrives you can consult together about many things — he feels much for thee as we all do from the oldest to the youngest, & he will do all in his power for thy accommodation — Susan says if it continues so sickly in your neighborhood she shall wish Thos to defer his going till it abates — but they can hear thro' cousin SR Fisher in Philadelphia as some one will probably keep him advised of your situation — A short time before we recd the affecting tidings from Mount Pleasant, I had been to Salem — Brother Dean is very desirous we should continue to visit that spot and I can truly say it is pleasant to do so — My feelings have ever been since that sudden & affecting stroke such as I could not have expected from

the preceding susceptibility of my nature — and it is to me an evidence of that wonder working power wh I crave may more & more work in me — There were certain places where I had generally been with my dear Lydia wh at first I rather shrunk from revisiting — particularly their beautiful garden which was so adapted to her taste & where I had often walked with her — I thot it would be very dreary & very affecting to me to go there — but it was not so — and it has been remarkable to me that on revisiting the places most associated with her idea, & wh I thot would seem most solitary, I have in those very places felt a peculiar holy quietude, a cheerful resignation, and a sweet feeling as if she was present with me — each time that I have been at Salem since the change in her mode of existence took place, I have remarked that it did not seem as if she was gone — she seems to me more peculiarly there than any where else — When we are thus favored to feel our sorrows soothed, and our regrets superceded my dear sister, how is death deprived of its terrors, and the more we live to our God, the more I believe shall we also intimately live in those purified spirits that have become unfettered a little before us, and they live in us —

Tho' I have not written in the usual language of sorrow on these occasions, I trust it will meet a correspondent feeling in thy heart, for I should think it *wrong* with my present feelings wh are compatible with the tenderest & strongest affection for the beloved objects now uncloathed of their clay tenement, to touch the subject in a way that would open the wound wh thy God designs to heal, & call forth those tears wh his gracious influence has wiped I trust from thy eyes — Yes and he will abundantly bless thee my dear sister and cause thee more & more to acknowledge thro' a continual increase of his own presence, that this is not "a vale of tears" to that soul which obeys him and yields all into his hand. — In those feelings & that love wh are beyond expression I am thy unchangeably

affect. sister Mary

LETTER TO ANNA S. ROTCH, PHILADELPHIA, FROM  
HER MOTHER-IN-LAW

New Bedford 2 mo 28 1819.

My dear Anna

As thou art often my mental companion I can address thee with feelings of maternal affection, in considering thy present situation, & contemplating the time that thou wilt probably be separated from many near & dear attachments, I can most tenderly sympathise with thee, having experienced something similar in a removal far from my connexions, immediately after our Marriage, my Mother resided at Leicester & we commenced Housekeeping at Nantucket, it was in the time of the Revolutionary war, when the intercourse was rendered difficult to the Continent, that frequently in the Inclement Season several weeks would pass without hearing from my friends, an inconvenience thou wilt not suffer in changing the place of your abode, tho' many things will be different from what thou hast been accustomed to, yet I hope thou wilt soon become reconciled, & that the blessing of contentment may be the result of your removal. The prospect of having our children settled near us is very pleasant & as far as we are capable it will afford us pleasure to contribute to your comfort. It will be very amusing to have the little ones around us, whose preservation I feel deeply interested in, James Arnold speaks in high terms of Eliz'th & Ben, the latter he thinks the finest child of his age he ever saw. Lydia Rodman was of the same opinion that it will be a gratification to have them with us.

Cornelius Howland has offered his House for sale if Joseph thinks it will answer his Father will purchase it, the rooms are small which is the greatest objection, I suppose it has been kept neat & is in pretty good order. Job Eddy wishes to finish his for you but he has two tenants in it, & Houses are so scarce that it will be difficult for them to get furnish'd.

Wm has concluded to set off in the morning to make his long intended visit to Philadelphia he has been hitherto prevented by his business his Brig sailed this morning for Bremen & he now feels relieved. Thy brother John has been perfectly contented, he has a most excellent disposition & visits us often, as we wish our House to seem like home to him & his company is pleasant to us, we shall encourage his writing by Wm tho he is not very fond of the employment.

Charles Morgan is passing his time very pleasantly here, having

met with a favourable reception from his friend Sarah, & from some intimations we think it probable that this Village will be the place of his future residence. I have had a severe term of the Rheumatism in my shoulder, but have experienced great relief from cupping & am now nearly restored. My husband rec'd a Letter from brother Thomas a few days since who says they are making preparation to cross the Mountains in order to attend your yearly Meeting a circumstance pleasing to his *fr'ds* particularly our aged Parents who have almost despaired ever seeing them again.

I suppose thou hast heard of B Rodman's offering his services to assist in organizing the Yearly Meeting school at Providence, where he is much engaged & a couple of young women from Nantucket have also volunteer'd themselves that at the commencement of the important work they are very well furnished with instructors: they have nearly seventy scholars, & many applications from different Societies that cannot be admitted, if it continues to flourish it will be a useful institution, but such large establishments frequently become burthensome—my confinement has prevented getting something for the dear children which I regret give each of them a kiss for grandmother who is anxious to see them. Please present my love to thy Parents & Hetty, it was very grateful to us to hear that thy dear Father was fully relieved from his afflicting complaint I hope he may be favor'd to enjoy good health the remaining portion of time allotted him.

Mary desires me to say she intends writing thee by C. Morgan.  
accept my dear the love of thy affectionate Mother  
my loye to Joseph

E Rotch Jr

FROM JOSEPH ROTCH, NEW BEDFORD, TO ANNA S.  
ROTCHE, c/o JAMES SMITH, BURLINGTON, NEW JERSEY

New Bedford, S'day evening,  
9 mo. 22, 1818

Ma chere Anna

In my last I mentioned we expected Uncle Ridgeways party the next day (yesterday) they however did not arrive until this afternoon about  $\frac{1}{2}$  after 2:00 (all well) — They expected to meet I. Brewer in Taunton but were disappointed as he is now in Providence engaged in the duties of one of these ministers who wished to travel awhile — It is probable Uncle will return to Boston and place Ben with some one of the tutors of Harvard or get him into College.

I gave thee a pretty detail'd account of my journey etc. to the date of my letter — nothing material has since occurred — I hope that my not securing letters from thee by todays mail has not arisen from any increas'd indisposition on thy own or the childrens part — I feel always anxious to hear from thee, but as the mails from Burlington are somewhat ill-timed I place my disappointment to that cause —

I have been engaged in part in looking a pleasant situation for our future dwelling and have found one as pleasant as any in town to be had, about 10 or 12 minutes walk from fathers which may perhaps be concluded upon — but I shall not hurry my decision — the lot I have in prospect is on the Main Street — fronting South some distance below Allen Russell's and very near (about 2 squares) from the spot designated by James and Sally Arnold for their new house, before I leave I hope to have every necessary arrangement for a house completed for our reception by the time thou wilt be able to come on — my plan is now drawn for one 40 feet front by 48 deep and kitchen about 18 feet by 20, and other out buildings as may afterwards appear convenient — a letter from Thomas informs me of another sea-loss — he alludes I presume to a shipment of oil to the West Indies by Wm. Simmons, Jr. — thou wilt therefore lose my anticipated importation of sweet meats — but we must learn to do without them and therefore may not feel it so much. Thus my dear Anna thou must perceive that loss upon loss and no apparent means of replenishing the almost exhausted treasury demands my removal while I have something left — I am about engaging to build a ship in conjunction with my brother William and others to be ready next summer for the fishery. He has been



The house of Joseph Rotch.  
William Street at Eighth Street, New Bedford.  
Built in 1821.



Thomas Rotch  
(1792-1840)

very fortunate and has I suppose made during the last year above 30,000 Dollars — whilst I have been losing money and time — Thomas has decided me if I have fix'd upon a scite for my own house to show Susan the best situation for his — this I shall commence probably tomorrow and if she likes the one he mentions, ours, James and his will be within *3 or 4 squares* (Phil's squares) of each other and commanding a very fine prospect and on very healthful situations —

Sally Mary's letters have I presume ere this reached thee — She intended to have sent by a vessell, gone to Phila. 2 jars of Grapes (preserv'd) but on sending them down the vessell had gone off — I may take them with me if I go by water — some other trifles by the vessell Thomas will take care — some shell baskets or something like it —

Susan received thy letter here today, she desires me to insert her love and send a kiss to Betty —

I dined sociably with grandparents today and found Uncle's family here on my return — Grandfather with his usual politeness has just called in to see his new relatives —

The family desire the insertion of their love and as tea is announced I must conclude with my usual kisses for my dear little ones whom I hope to meet again, and which I hope to do in 12 or 14 days hence

Affectionately thy  
Joseph.

FROM JOSEPH ROTCH TO ANNA S. ROTCH, CARE OF CW &  
JR SMITH, PHILADELPHIA

New Bedford 5 mo 27 1821  
First day

My dear Anna

From thy last letter it is probable, ere this reaches Phila. thou will have gone to Burlington, still as it may find thee there, I shall direct as usual

Thou mayst inform thy Brothers, that thy trunk with curtains &c is shiped per Sloop Aurora Cap. Hussey from Nantucket, & request them to notice her arrival. The *freight* of it, *I have paid*

Daniel B. Mack is now here, & tomorrow or next day, I expect he will commence the instruction of A Robeson's & C Grinnell Jr.'s children, with Ben & Eliz Arnold — Ben has within a few days improved a great deal, under his Aunt Mary's care. I wish Eliz was here, to accompany him to his school — she has lost too much time —

Father continues convalescing — he had a mind to go to meeting this morning, but as we had yesterday a great deal of rain, he was dissuaded for fear of too much dampness.

The plasterers go on well — all the back buildings, I wrote thee was done — as is now the Nursery & thy *dressing* room. The Cornice is on the S. W. front Chamber & nearly finished on the N. W. back chamber — I shall have Cornice on our room the S. E. — (which makes 3 Chambers) & on the entry above & below, & the two parlours. —

The front stairs are nearly completed — & when done will be by far the handsomest flight in town — & I think the handsomest I have ever seen — Dudley has taken much pains with it —

All the mantles are up except in the dining room — which as yet has no plaster on — (I shall have Seven of marble in all) about the first of next month we shall commence rough-casting the house, so that the inside must remain till after that is done — & I am in hopes to have all the plastering done by the *middle* of the *Seventh Month*.

Tom, last evening gave a Supper, to a party of gentlemen, — I was there, — his rooms looked *quite-splendid*, & the chandelier (which was lighted) gave good effect —

The chairs are I suppose by this time all painted that I sent — so that they will probably be quite dry before we want to use them — I sent to Harrison all the rush bottom and one of the Kitchen chairs —

Ben is with me at present in the camping room — he is busy with

his boat & I shall put his letter which he wants to send upon the opposite page —

I should like to see Willy & Lulla — Kiss the whole for Papa  
Affectionately thine  
Joseph

Enclosure in letter to Anna S. Rotch of 5 mo 27 1821  
Ben's letter to Sister —

The Kittens are named Mary, Ben, Jenney & Sister & they are grown quite big — Ben, is almost all white — Ask Willy if he wants one of them — I want to see Willy — There are a great deal of blocks in the New House — I have learnt all the lakes Superior, Michigan, Erie, Ontario, Huron & Niagara falls — I know the vowels — a-e-i-o-u & I spell in four letters feet & dish — I can count fine — Tell Willy the horses are well & they draw shavings from Papa's new House to fill up the holes in the road, for Papa's new Carriage to come along — Tell Mama I'll be glad to have the map she sends me by cousin Francis — I have a light when I go to bed & I go to sleep as soon as I go to bed — when papa comes to bed he blows out the light & then I don't care any thing about it — I am going fishing next Summer — Now has thee got the rheumatism — when thou comes on here thou mayst go sail with me in the little *Sophia* — Dear Sister, I want to see thee very much — I want to know whether Hannah is coming on here with Sister — I dont know any more now — farewell dear Sister & kiss Willy & Lulla & Mamma — nothing else bye & bye I'll know something more —

Benj'n S. Rotch

5 Mo 27 1821

FROM JOSEPH ROTCH TO ANNA S. ROTCH, CARE OF  
JAMES SMITH, BURLINGTON, NEW JERSEY

New Bedford, 7 mo. 1821.

My dear Anna —

I have this morning thine of the 27th — In my last I mentioned my preference for Boston Oil Carpets — I feel obliged to thy brother and as soon as I learn thy wishes as to the pattern for the nursery and library I will have them made.

Ben's cough now seems to have arrived at the crisis — he does not cough so frequently as before, and does not appear to suffer as much from the effect —

The person first had the shawl or handkerchief I mentioned to thee was Sally, our chamber maid. She promised it to Jane, our last cook (as Jane said) for \$1/4. — but there was no mark upon the one I heard of —

Thou wishes more particulars of Ben's "Several Complaints" he has but the one, cough — otherwise he is very well and after a spell of coughing, resumes his play as if in usual health.

I have not much time (as usual) before G. Obl'n. my duty at the New Insurance Office, of which I am a director calls me in the evening for about one hour and my previous letters have informed thee that my business day is no day (for writing.)

Susan told me P. Barker's cook wanted to come here to live — I know of course nothing about her but as *no* cooks worth having can be had here I mention it for thy own preferance —

I have not time to say anything respecting my Christian faith — I may perhaps hereafter give thee a full detail of my belief — I will however say thou dost injure me in thy quotation and that, I do believe the Almighty, our God is and always has been, our "only Saviour and through his spirit our only Redeemer" —

I have but just time to say I am most sincerely and affectionately thine

Joseph.

Please say in thy next letter what colours thou wouldst prefer for the dining room, Parlour and entry as I am making some economical and beautiful experiments in the colouring of rooms etc. — which is put on with the last coat of plastures and will bear washing, and even should I fail in the end, I can afterwards paint the walls.

FROM JOSEPH ROTCH TO ANNA S. ROTCH, CARE OF  
JAMES SMITH, BURLINGTON, NEW JERSEY

New Bedford 7Mo. 15, 1821

My dear Anna

Last evening's mail brot me thy letter of 8th — Ben's cough subsides gradually, he coughs but seldom during the day & three or four times at night — It is said to be six weeks in getting to the height & the same time in going off —

I wrote thee my ideas of vaccination, as it respects Rodman, from some inquiries, I have made, I find, that it is not of the same utility, with all cases of whooping cough in children, to some, it is of no benefit, — while to others it is of very great use — As I before wrote, was Rodman here I should try vaccination, after the first weeks of the Cough, but as I also then wrote, as your Physicians appear to pay attention to the Subject, I leave to thee to decide — I did not consult any Physician for Ben's cough — to keep his bowels in order, I gave him Molasses & water (very sweet) & squills for emetic (occasionally) perhaps every other day & sometimes not for 3 or 4 ds. according to the appearance of phlegm —

When I wrote thee respecting the coloring of the entry & rooms at our House, I believe I mentioned, that it would make no difference in painting them afterwards — We shall *not be* able to *paint* the walls *this year*, & I wanted thy ideas of Colours, to mix in the last Coat of Lime — which would look very well for one year at least — Our Library I have coloured *light blue*, & the Kitchen light yellow & the walls can be washed —

Thou asks, "When will the house be habitable?" As far as I can now judge it may be ready to live in, in *all the ninth month*, — I am obliged to be there constantly now, as the workmen are finishing off — & unless I attend closely, they make great mistakes —

I hope therefore thou will make all thy purchases, of carpet curtains &c before I leave here to go on for there (which will not be probably for two more months) & make all the visits thou would suit to, for when I do come on, I must not stay but a few days — There will a Sloop sail from here to Phila in a day or two/*The Spartan Capn Gibbs/* That if thou had any large packages ready to come on, she can bring them on her return, & if my Hall Stove has not been sent, please ask Jacob or Chls. to send it by *Spartan* —

The plasterers have yet both parlours, & the front entry (down stairs) to finish — all the rest is done & some of the doors are hung in the back buildings —

Wm. & Caroline I believe expect to set off for Princeton in about two weeks —

I doubt not Jacob's establishment, is very neat & elegant, I hope John will not have another attack of Chills & fever, poor fellow he must have had a sad time —

I often think of the little "Coughers" — I kept Ben, in the air as much as I could, & particularly while coughing. I was not *over particular*, whether it was dry or damp weather — The stable is a good place for them sometime to *take the horses' breath* & has been found of great use — When Thos. Rotch had the cough, he was very young & had it very hard — he was taken to the stable & one of the horses taken out and rode very fast, (so as to make him blow a good deal) & then Thos. was held up to his head so that the horse breathed into his face — & much benefit was thot to result from it — But as you have so many good nurses in Burlington, I doubt not thou will get along with the *petites*, as well as any one, & I have had too little experience, to give much advice at this distance —

Little Mary Rodman (Cousin HHR's) has the Whooping Cough (Cousin Sam told me to say) — it is very prevalent — I mentioned to him the remedies, thou informed me were in use with you. I have as yet heard nothing further about the hano--, I wrote about. — I shall endeavour to get light of it — But I cannot do as thou requests in *searching Sally's things*, as our Laws do not permit such doings, except where strong suspicion rests, & the Articles stolen defined —

As thou has not in thy letters said anything like a wish to return *home*, I presume thou doth not think of it, untill our house is completed for the reception —

Kiss all the children for papa, who thinks of them almost every hour in the day — who will come for them as soon as his business will, with propriety allow. In fact my dear Anna I am almost tired of my Batcheloristic way of living —

I shall order the Oil Cloths, as soon as I can fix upon patterns —

I am pleased to hear Father & James have recovered — Has the latter heard *anything yet from Brussels?*! or is it not time! —

Thine affectionately Joe

During the present week, I hope to have all the rooms up-stairs cleared out & the floors Scrubbed, after that the Carpenters have to finish putting on the mouldings & then come painters —

FROM JOSEPH ROTCH TO ANNA S. ROTCH, CARE OF  
JAMES SMITH, BURLINGTON, NEW JERSEY

New Bedford, 8 mo 5 1821

First Day -----

My dear Anna-----

Thy letter of 31 Ultimo I rec'd last evening. Thy account of the continued indisposition of Rodman renders/in my view/his recovery more doubtful — He has been the frequent companion of my thoughts for several days past, & I should not be surprised, if the next mail informed me of the return of his spirit to its God — To know, that state of dependance upon the Creator, in which we feel a union of spirits, is a situation, that I believe I may say, I sincerely desire, however contrary my life may have been, & continues to be, apparently, thought. I know that dependant feeling, in which, to all his dispensations, the soul can truly *feel* the language, "Thy will be done." — And under these desires, I do not now know, if I have any choice, as to the event of little R's late or present indisposition.—

I wrote thee on fifth day evening, in considerable haste, as the stage arrived late, owing to the heat — The Mercury (in a Thermometer) placed in as eligible & proper a situation as perhaps is in town) has for the 4 or 5 last days ranged from 80-86-88° — & in the sun, it has been very hot. — Our situation on the hill however, has been quite comfortable, & I think we may calculate upon, experiencing (comparatively) but little inconvenience from our Summer when there. — The plasterers finished the S. W. Parlour yesterday, which completes all but one coat on the cellar — & cementing the underpinning walls outside — that I am in hopes to have it partly near finished (inside) in the course of the month — It will be some time before the fences & ground around the house, are in order — It is so bad a month for painting that I think of having only part done now —

I have been *talking* now & then, of leaving here, perhaps 10 or 12 days earlier (than if I went on to Burlington direct) & go through North Hampton, & the western part of our State, thro' Connecticut etc., to the *falls of Niagara* — But as it has only been *talk*, & if it is thy wish for me to be in Phila as long as "*two or three weeks*," to assist thee in thy purchases, I shall abandon the idea. —

The shawl given to Willy by his Aunt Rebecca, I found in the Box, as thou directed, so that I shall give up the one, I have been keeping for "*adjudication*." — But from its quality, there seem'd but little doubt, of its having been taken from some one, without leave.

In my opinion, it is not advisable to take any pains, to look up the black Cook, thou mentions; if her husband sails from Nantucket, it is not likely she would like to come here, & I have just now such a dislike to *common* black Servants, that if she were ever so good, I should hardly want her. — I have some prospect, of having a man from England, as *waiter*, & who is also a *profess'd cook*, if He comes out to me, we may do very well with some white woman, which may be found in some of the neighboring towns —

The Trees thou speaks of, in front of thy fathers house in Phila. are (I presume) the Linden Trees, and are a very handsome kind, I shall endeavour to get some in the autumn —

Thos & Susan returned from Boston on 5 day — S. says she does not aim again to visit it in Summer, as it was the hottest town she was ever in —

Our oil cloth carpets are ordered —

In one of thy late letters thou asked about my shirts, — I have the 16 & paid \$16. for making —

It is the Sloop *Henry*, which is about going to Phila. She will probably sail this week — I am anxious the *Carriage* should be sent by her — as well as the *Stove* — If thou canst get *any one* to attend to the business, — Russell is here yet — were he in Phila I would not trouble any one else with my concerns — Both the Sloops I previously have written about, have got back, (as I mentioned in 5 day evening,) & I expected the Stove was in one of them, but on inquiry the next day found it was not. — Ben is well, he is now with me/in my Camp house/at play with his *Anchor* etc. He coughs but very seldom & goes constantly to school —

Kiss all the petites for Papa & Ben — & Ben says give my love to them, & tell them "I want to see them & wish they were here, to eat water melons with me." — We have had a cargo of melons from Norfolk which were very *large* & very *good*

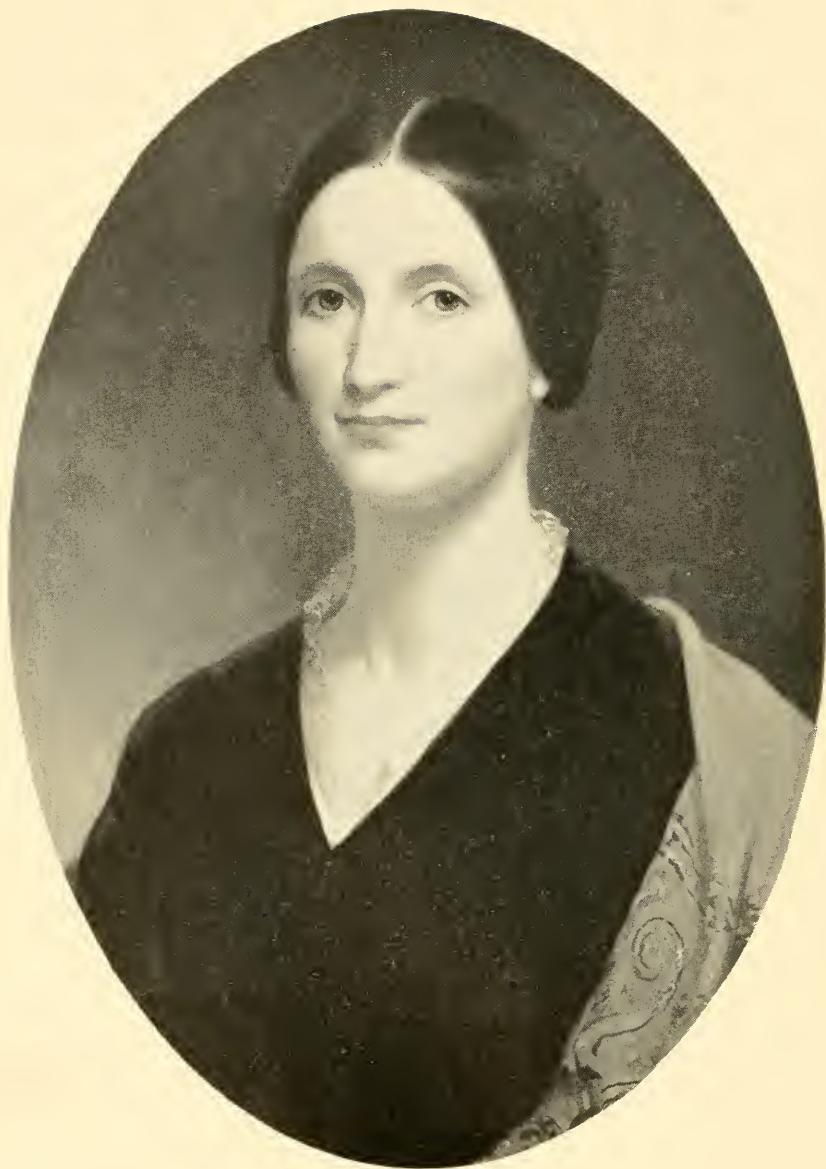
Affect'ly Thy Joe

*In pencil on the back:*

The Sloop *Henry*/mentioned on another page will not probably be many days in Phila — that if thou find any one willing to attend to our *Carriage* & *Stove*, it should be done immediately/ that is the carriage be packed.



William J. Rotch  
(1819-1893)



Emily Morgan  
(1821-1861)  
Wife of William J. Rotch  
From a portrait belonging to Emily M. R. Bullard

LETTER FROM ANNA RODMAN ROBESON TO CHARITY ROTCH IN KENDAL, OHIO, DATED AT NEW BEDFORD 12TH MO 23RD 1821, AS TO BIRTH OF EMILY MORGAN (MRS. WILLIAM J. ROTCH) AND OTHER FAMILY MATTERS

[Lydia Rodman later married Micah Ruggles. Uncle Francis was Francis Rotch the first. The grandparents are William Rotch, Sr., and Elizabeth Barney Rotch. Uncle Ben Rotch had come from England on a visit.]

I little thought my dear Aunt when we parted last Spring my first letter would have been the intelligence of our S Morgan being the mother of a fine little girl — born on 5th day afternoon the 13th of this month — her sufferings at the time were not very severe (or not as much so as many have to bear) & she has since been uncommonly well — she now sits up in the morning and again in the evening — & has every day with the exception of the one following her confinement sat up to have her bed made — they call the child Emily & it is a very pretty little creature — I called there after meeting this morning & think I never saw a more promising nursery, & unless she should have some drawback the prospect is bright for her soon being downstairs — she has a good nurse from Providence & Lydia makes her home there at present merely as company, as her strength is not sufficiently restored for her to be able to make much exertion — nor is it at all necessary with such good domestics as Sarah has in her kitchen — thou probably knew of her long visit in Salem & indisposition soon after her return thro' the medium of other letters —

I saw my grandparents about a week since — grandmother's health is about as usual, but she does not get out much since the cold weather — Grandfather looks feeble — his leg was more troublesome a little time past than it had previously been — & quite confined him to the house, or nearly so — Uncle Benn is also considerably indisposed & gets out but little — I had a visit last second day from Aunt Molly — she was very pleasant & seemed particularly pleased with little Martha whom she had not seen before — She spoke of Thankful's as a pleasant home & I suppose it is as much so as any one she could have — Brother Saml & Sister Hannah returned from Long Island about two weeks since — they went soon after the death of their little Mary, which was a very severe thing as might be supposed, & still continues to be very deeply felt by poor Sister who was devotedly attached to her — brother came home in the time & returned accompanied by sister Eliza in season to attend the marriage (which was the 22nd of last M) of Betsy (Uncle Priors

youngest daughter) with John Barrow Junr — his father I think its probable thou know'st, he lives at Manhattanville — the connection is a very pleasant one to the families. Phebe Prior is now with Sister Hannah — who perhaps thou recollects seeing here last winter —

You have no doubt heard of the death of Sophia Ruggles, a few weeks after giving birth to a little boy which lived but a short time — her health had been very poor several months previous to her confinement, & she was impress'd with a belief that she should not long survive that period — her only daughter aged 2 years died before the infant, that she has left only two little boys, to feel the want of a mother's affectionate attention — Micah feels his loss tho' he bears it with resignation — she was very tranquil during her illness & resigned to the event — I dont know that thou knew her, but some knowledge of him might excite a feeling of interest in what so nearly concerns him. — Benn & Susan are pleasantly settled at house-keeping, which reduces father's family to the number of 4 at the most, & as one of the girls is often absent, Lydia now wholly so they are few indeed — Elizabeth tho' a little creature when thou saw her is now an uncommonly large child — I think I never saw one more fleshy — she is much heavier than our little Martha who is several months older — Our children all had the hooping cough this summer — Thomas and Wm so lightly that it scarcely affected their health, but our little Andw. & Martha suffer'd so severely with it as to occasion us much anxiety — I was wholly unacquainted with the disease & tho' I always dreaded it, it was much worse than I had anticipated — Uncle Wms family are well — as several of them write thee any particulars of them from me would be unnecessary.

Uncle Francis continues to suffer much with his face — the swelling increases & he is obliged to take paregoric several times in the course of 24 hours — Thomas & Wm are sitting by me & desire their love to thee & Uncle Thomas — Lydia Macy also desires hers to you both, & her brothers & sisters whn oppy offers — she is in good health — she had a pleasant visit of a few weeks from her sister Sarah this fall — she was at her cousin Paul's this afternoon — he has a son three weeks old named George — Rebecca was very well — she has not yet been out of her room — she also called at cousin Peter's, he & wife were well — If thou shouldst feel like writing me my dear aunt it would be very pleasant I can assure thee to hear from thee not that I think this really worth a reply — such as it is I send it in the belief that thou will make all allowance for its being written in the midst of conversation — with love to dear Uncle in

which my husband unites as well as to thyself I am thy very afft  
niece

A Robeson

(Written across the top)

Father has been much afflicted lately with biles — I believe at present he is free — mother & he in usual health — Eliza made her home at Uncle Hazard the five days she was in New York & had a very pleasant visit — she spent part of a day with each of our cousins Sarah & Eliza.

LETTER FROM SARAH ROTCH ARNOLD TO CHARITY  
ROTCHE IN KENDAL, OHIO, JUST AFTER SHE MOVED INTO  
HER NEW HOUSE, LATER THE HOME OF WILLIAM J.  
ROTCHE AND NOW THE WAMSUTTA CLUB. TELLS OF NEW  
BATHING ROOM

New Bedford, 16th of 1st Month, 1823

I intended writing thee again my dear Aunt, immediately after my return from Providence, but quarterly meeting coming on, & having from my long confinement omitted furnishing my chambers with curtains, carpets &c., I was necessarily pretty busy in preparing for the reception of Father A's family. A severe snow storm on 3rd day so blocked the roads that very few country Friends, mostly representatives, attended & Father came alone to us. — Since that time I have been out more & have had most of my acquaintances to dine or take tea with me — I make one more party of elderly people, our neighbors Russells &c, &c. — & then my "*house warming*" will be over, & since I am upon the subject of warmth, I recollect Father desired me to inform Uncle Tho's how our entry stove proved & I gladly testify to its being the greatest comfort to our house it warms it throughout. The change both above & below is really wonderful — Jos. fitted his with the pipe leading into the cellar & my husband prepared our chimneys in the same way, but theirs would never draw and is perfectly useless — ours is a handsome column standing on a neat free stone hearth with the pipe leading to the cornice where a piece of white marble is inserted and it passes thro' that into my three closets into our breakfast room chimney. The pipe is of handsome Russia iron, reeded, so that it is rather ornamental than otherwise.

My parents dined with us last 5th day, thermometer at 6 degrees & wind high, when I believe none felt that it was colder than our usual autumn weather. When the parlor doors were open, the heat from the entry was felt very sensibly — I am thus minute because I was desired to be. We sleep in a very large chamber over our back parlor which we cannot warm these short mornings from the fire place, but by opening our door into the entry we feel a warm current from the stove below & another door by my side of the bed opens into the most complete little bathing room thou canst conceive of. Here we have a little stove that heats the air to 60 degrees in 15 minutes & there I dress and undress, wash &c. The boiler lined with tin holds water enough for 3 baths & heats in 20 minutes. A pump leads up into it from a cistern in the cellar supplied

by pipes either from our rain or well water pumps. The latter is both soft to wash with & good to drink — a large stone sink is inserted in the floor at one end of which is our shower bath — This is the greatest luxury of our establishment; & has been just what was necessary for my comfort, bathing having been very salutary & recommended by all our physicians.

I am now trying a sulphur bath 3 times a week — recommended by our consul at Marseilles who lately dined with us & evinced very great sympathy & interest in my lameness, having been for 6 years in the same way himself, and finally restored by this application in the south of France. I lie in the bath from  $\frac{1}{2}$  to  $\frac{3}{4}$  of an hour letting in warm water to keep the temperature the same, which I try with a thermom, dipping a piece of coarse crash in the sulphur with which I rub the limb constantly — from which it appears I have already derived much strength — so that I walked upon my crutches to meeting today — this is deemed rather adventurous, but I feel no fears from it. If you build this bathing room my dear aunt is just the thing for thee.

Wm. Foster has been in town & spent one First Day. I saw him a few minutes & enquired after you. He said he did think uncle would build, & he tho't it *quite time*, tho' he was made very comfortable at your house. Yet he said he must acknowledge he did expect to find *Thomas Rotch* in a different house. I think I can see my uncle smile at this----- Father says he thinks when he hears you have got into your new house & the canal is nearly finished, he shall put his contemplated journey into operation, visiting his salt establishment at Salina, the Falls of Niagara, & his dear brother and sister at Kendal----- I will now give thee some tidings of the various branches of our families. I regret I cannot tell thee I have seen my grandparents, a thing I should have done but for the last week being either too wet or too cold for me to go out. I hear they are very much as usual. Grandfather has escaped his cough so far, & I hope may continue to. Aunt M. spent the 3 first weeks of Francis's housekeeping with them. They are very snugly settled. The baby had become a great pet with the old people, but it was time they removed as another pet will claim the mother's care in 5th month next. Poor cousin Hannah Rodman's prospects are repeatedly blasted. She is now just recovering from an illness which has proved fatal to a 3 month's *hope* — This is the second instance of the kind since she lost her lovely little Mary. Cousin Anna Robeson was confined on the 6th (I think) of this month, with a fine looking boy. The poor child has however but *one hand*. This is a sore trial to

my cousin who has not as yet been able to reconcile her mind to it sufficiently to bear the sight of her own family except those who were with her at the time.

I will now proceed to inform thee of an event likely to take place which I think will surprise thee as much as it has us — In preparative meeting today we were informed that Micah H. Ruggles & Lydia Rodman proposed laying their intentions of marriage before the next Mo. Meet'g. I imagine it is a very sudden thing. I never had an item of it until 3 days ago, & I know poor Jeremiah's case was not decided in the negative until about the middle of last month---- My husband has just entered quite weary from his 2nd day's labor at filling the ice house. They have just finished and he needs his tea to refresh him. He desires his love to you. I have been interrupted by company since I began, which prevents my giving thee so long a letter as I intended—tho' thou wilt think after getting thro' this that it is quite long enough I dare say--

With much love to you both

Your S. R. Arnold

I have lately read an account given by Sam'l Philbrick to B. Rodman of the treatment of Friends at Lynn with him which ended in disownment, it fills a large folio sheet. Sam'l is a very candid man & I should like very much for you to see this — I will enquire & if B. can grant the liberty of transcribing it, I will with pleasure copy it for you. It would be a satisfaction to me to know my letters were burned we never know into whose hands such things may fall into.

[Note, by J. M. Bullard: Sarah Arnold's bedroom was the southwest room on the second floor. I remember it when it was my Grandmother Rotch's room. The bathing room, removed when the building became a club, was west of the bedroom, reached by a door near the northwest corner of the room. It was an old fashioned bathroom when I knew it, but unfortunately had none of its original fixtures.]

LETTERS FROM WILLIAM J. ROTCH WHILE A STUDENT  
AT HARVARD TO HIS MOTHER

[He was only fifteen and a half at the time of the first.]

Cambridge Oct. 17th 1834.

Dear Mother,

Wm Robeson thinks of going to New Bedford tomorrow and I thought I would write thee a few lines to let thee know how we are. I received thy letter but was a little surprised to find that it came by *Mr. Emerson*. He seems to be rather more attentive than *Mr. Grant*, of whom I have not heard *one word* since I have been here, but I think *Mr. Grinnell* will make a very good husband for sister as he is esteemed by *all who* know him. When does thee think of coming down here? I hope very soon for thee must feel very lonely now that Father & Sister have gone to Philadelphia. I have had a letter from the former in which he says all sisters friends like her engagement very much.

Ben & I went to see Mrs. Farrar the other evening and it seems she heard the *news* as soon as we. She has been taking a short journey with Mr. Farrar. Cousin Anna Robeson was here the other day, but I did not have the pleasure of seeing her as she was here only a short time. We are very *well* and should feel quite at home if thee was here. How is Hannah give my love to her and also to little Joanna and tell her I was very glad to receive her letter. When does thee expect Father home? for then I hope thee will come down here as thee seems rather *low spirited* from thy letter. Thee need not be uneasy about us. *6 o'clock*. I have just been to see the President in order to find out what my rank was and he told me he was very glad to find I stood so well.

As it is rather uncertain wether Wm Robeson will go tomorrow or not he desired me to leave the letter in his room so that he might get it, for if he receives a letter from home tonight he will leave at 2 in the morning so that I must finish this now. Give my love to Roddy & all the family and believe me

thy affectionate son Wm —

P. S. Tell Joanna I shall answer her letter very soon, and remember me to Horatio if he is in New Bedford.

Mrs. Farrar wished me to give her love to thee when I next wrote.

Cambridge April 26th 1835

My Dear Mother

The cake and chest arrived safely, and I wish thee would tell

Hannah I am *very much obliged* to her for making it and hope she will not get sick on that account. I suppose Father has arrived at home before this and given thee an account of our new habitation. Lenox moved all our things, and put the carpets down (after beating them) in half a day, so that we did not have much trouble about that. I like the rooms much better than those we had before as the bed room is quite large enough for two beds and bureaus, and joins the sitting room, which is much more convenient than having to go up stairs as we did before. There is a garret over the bed room in which we put the chest, but I hope to see thee here this term so that thee may inspect all the arrangements for thyself.

Rebecca looks very well and seems very happy. She likes Mrs. Farrar very much and is delighted with the idea of taking Music Lessons. She asks very often about thee and Sister and wishes you would write to her.

Yesterday Abner Shepherd's prediction was fulfilled, as we had a violent snow storm which lasted all day, so that I did not go to town. Mr. Prescott called here on Friday and offered to take anything we had to send. Rebecca went with Mrs. Farrar on Monday to hear Mr. Everett deliver his address at Lexington, which was very good. Mr. Quincy also made a speech.

There is to be an exhibition of the senior class next Tuesday in the chapel, which will be very well attended I suppose — I hope thee will decide to come to Cambridge this term as it is the most pleasant in the year. Give my love to all

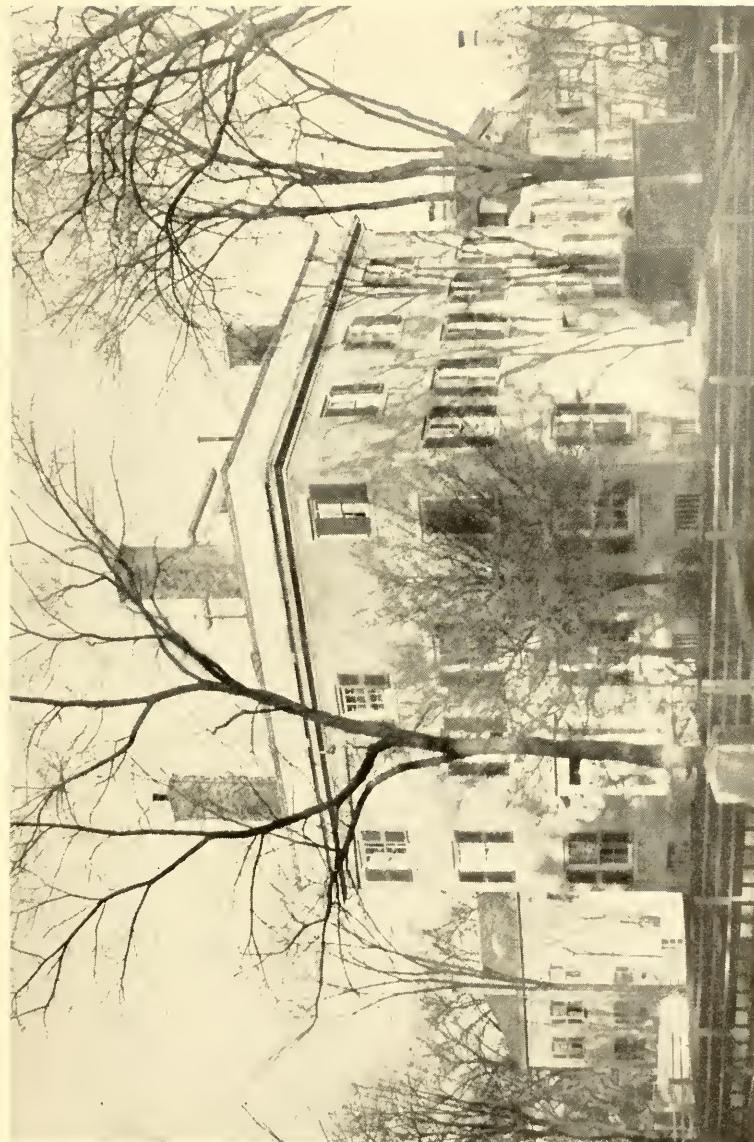
thy affect. Son Wm

Cambridge Jan. 17th 1836

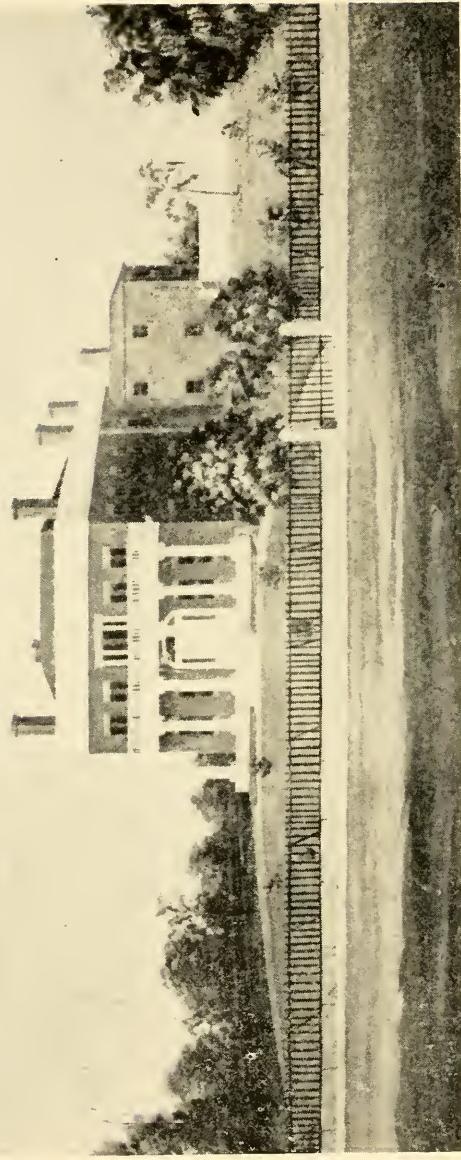
My Dear Mother,

Ben, I suppose, informed thee of our safe arrival. We have both been very well since our return. I suppose thee knows, that we have changed our boarding place, and now take our meals with Miss Cabbot. I like this arrangement much better than boarding at Mrs. Newell's. Ben and I are the only students at the table, except one Freshman (a relation of Miss Cabbots) who also rooms in the house. Mrs. Adam with her children complete the number. Tell Annie that there is one little girl, the youngest daughter of Mrs. A— who is very droll, and keeps us laughing nearly the whole time.

Ben and I went last Tuesday evening to see Mrs. Farrar and gave her the present which we bought in New Bedford. She seemed very much gratified with the attention. Mr. F— is not very well now, and the evening we were there was unable to be in the room. I



Residence of Samuel Rodman, Junior.  
County and Spring Streets, New Bedford.  
Built in 1827.



Residence of James Arnold.  
County Street at head of Spring Street, New Bedford.  
Built in 1822. Now the Wamsutta Club.

went into town yesterday to see Aunt Mary, and took dinner and tea with her. She asked after thee and Sister. Horatio was there and I gave him the package which Aunt Cary sent by us, and which I have not had the opportunity of delivering before. I saw Wm Robeson in town on Friday but as he had just come from Fall River, he could not tell me how you all were at home. I have paid all *my bills*; as thee desired in thy letter to Ben and intend to get my writing desk as soon as I can. Little Lucy Emerson has entirely recovered from her sickness and is now down stairs again, but looks very pale and thin. Mrs. Newell did not seem offended at our leaving her, and said she hoped we would return, when we left Miss Cabbot, an event which she thought would take place very soon; as she does not have much opinion of Miss Cabbot's management. However we have nothing to do with that, and if she makes out this Winter, I shall not care; as I had just as leave go out to my meals in Summer as not.

How is thy health now dear Mother? I hope thee will take good care of thyself this Winter and get entirely well by Spring. Ask Annie to write to me if she has time and tell me how she gets on with her studies.

The Weather has been very pleasant for the last week, but it is snowing now very fast, and I expect there will be good sleighing before morning. Ask Sister to write to me soon. Give my love to Father and all the family and remember me to Mary Ann.

thy affectnt son Wm J. Rotch

Cambridge Jan. 31st 1836

My Dear Mother,

I am sorry to hear that thee is not so well as usual, and hope thee will soon entirely recover. We are both very well and continue to like boarding at Miss Cabbot's as well as ever. She has not been well for the last week; but is getting better now. Mrs. Adam's children come up to see us quite often. They are all up here now with the exception of the eldest. They are very fine children, and the youngest is the queerest little girl I ever saw.

I suppose thee knows that their Mother is the Lady who came from Calcutta to educate her children and left her husband there. I like her very much.

We had quite an amusing time in chapel this afternoon. Mr. Lothrop agreed to exchange with Mr. Henry Ware *Jun.* but owing to an accident which happened to the college bell, on account of which they could not ring it, the hour for beginning the services

was made a quarter of an hour earlier, but Mr. Lothrop was not informed of this, and therefore was not there. After waiting some time Dr. Ware (who was in the gallery) rose and read the hymn from his pew; which seemed rather ludicrous. After they had finished this, as Mr. Lothrop did not come, the Dr. went down stairs and made a prayer. While he was doing this, Mr. Lothrop came in and went up into the pulpit which unfortunately was not *large enough to hold them both* and The Doctor was obliged to retreat, and after cruising about the church at length took his seat among the Law Students, but as the Fates seemed opposed to the services proceeding in a proper manner; when Mr. Lothrop was reading the last hymn, he lost his place and in attempting to supply the additional line from memory, he did not get it right. To cap the whole, two young Ladies (having mistaken the hour) came in just as Mr. L. was pronouncing the benediction. As thee may suppose the Students did not witness all these events in *silence* but laughed repeatedly and that so loud that they were heard all over the chapel.

We have had a great deal of snow and the sleighing has been very fine ever since we returned. It is snowing again to day and makes the walking very bad.

Tell Annie that I showed the pen wiper which she made for me and the cloth for the Astra Lamp to the little girls and they thought they were made very well indeed; and asked many questions about her; and said they should like to see her very much and wished she would come to Cambridge. I hope thee will take good care of thyself Dear Mother and try to get well soon.

I should be very glad to hear from Joanna when she feels inclined to write. Give my love to her. Ask Sister to write also. Give my love to Father and Roddy and remember me to Mary Ann —

Thy affectionate son Wm —

I hope thee will excuse both the writing and contents of this letter, as the Children make so much noise and Little Helen asks so many questions that I hardly know what I am writing.

Cambridge March 13th 1836

My Dear Mother,

I received thy letter and also the others which were sent by Aunt Mary. The one respecting Miss Quincy and myself is very amusing. I suspect Mr. Page wrote it as it sounds very much like him. I am very much obliged to Sister for the purse she sent me. It is very pretty. Ben received Father's letter containing the money.

Tell Roddy I am very glad to receive his epistle short as it is, and will answer it soon, but I have a *theme* to write this week and therefore must postpone the pleasure until some other time.

Thee has often asked me, in thy letters, whether I wished to go to Philadelphia in our next vacation or not. But I should prefer to remain at home with thee, and defer the pleasure of a visit there until some other time, when perhaps thee may be well enough to go with me. Ben intends to go I believe, and I think as Father does, that it would be better for us to go at different times.

Mrs. Adam has taken rooms in Boston and intends to move to them this morning. She will have a bad time of it however, as it is raining and snowing very fast.

Ben and I return again to Mrs. Newell's tomorrow. Miss Cabot has acted *abominably* both with regard to Mrs. Adam and us. For we might have remained the rest of this term as well as not if her *Old Maidish* whims had not interfered. However it is all over with now as far as regards us, but I pity Mrs. A— who is compelled to move into Boston at this most unpleasant season of the year.

I wish to tell thee one thing, Dear Mother, but hope thee will not mention it to any one, as it would injure Miss Cabot very much if it were known. She had a party on the fourth of this month in honour of Ben's birthday and also of Mrs. Adam's. All this would have been very well if she had acted as a Lady ought, but unfortunately for *her retaining the Character of a Lady* in my opinion at least: She asked me to get her some *Champagne* for this same party. I did it of course, for how could I do otherwise when a person calling herself a Lady and considered so by those *who do not know her* asked me? What does thee think of this, and how does this comport with thy ideas of what a Lady ought to be? Thank fortune I have now done with her and I hope she will be the last Old Maid that ever crosses my path, either while I am in College or when I have left it. But I have said enough about her and I will now leave the subject.

I did not go to town on Saturday and therefor did not see Aunt May. Ben went however and brought out the letters. I went to see Mrs. Farrar last evening. She asked after thee. They intend to leave this country for Europe in August.

I hope thee will soon get well Dear Mother and be able to go down stairs as we shall be at home in about three weeks from tomorrow. How is Annie? and does she study as much as ever? Give her a kiss from me. Give my love to Father, Sister and Roddy and remember me to Mary Ann.

We are very well and entirely free from colds, or anything of  
that sort.

thy affectionate Son William

LETTER FROM ANNE S. ROTCH TO HER SON, WILLIAM  
J. ROTCH, ON HIS 17th BIRTHDAY

May 2nd 1836.

My dear Wm

I cannot let this anniversary of thy life pass unmarked by an offering of affection from me, tho' weakness precludes the expression of all a Mothers love — yet when I trace thy mind unfolding in the past, and view the promise of future excellence, how ardently do I desire that every virtue may be matured, that each action of thy life may be a progressive step in high moral rectitude of conduct, in that firm reliance upon the Providence of God, which will support thee amidst every trial — There is much in the path of life to damp our ardour, yet if undeviating rectitude of conduct is adhered too, we shall be able to perform every duty tho' it may be seemingly difficult in our future anticipations — Form for thyself my dear son a high standard of virtue, and seek to attain it — The more thee is able to live up to its teachings, the higher will be thy enjoyment here — View life thro' its proper medium, as a blended scene of joy and sorrow and tho' the former may often be crossed by dark clouds, yet there will be a ray of light to guide thee safely thro' the gloom, if thy confidence is in God — the journey of life is short, and eternity is endless — Let us bear this in mind when disappointment and trial assail us, and by submission to the divine will, peace will attend us here, and as we approach a better land, there will be an assurance given us, if we have been faithful to every requisition of duty, that our confidence has not been in vain.

I sincerely hope dear Wm thy studies may be pursued with increasing interest, and that success may crown thy every effort — Seek for qualification to fulfill every duty, and independent of every other object, walk blamelessly in the light of truth —

It is impossible for me to express all the deep interest of my heart for thee — I would bless thy birth day with the fervent prayers of maternal Love, and if they may not again be poured forth on another anniversary of thy life, may I be permitted in a brighter sphere, to become thy guardian Angel, and by the unseen influences of devoted love, lead thy mind from earth to Heaven that we may there be reunited in a world where change and time are unknown, and where the presence of the Most High shall become the only life of the soul — ever in truest affection thy Mother.

Ben is recovering slowly from his attack of mumps, and thinks he shall be in Cambridge the last of this week — thee will be glad

to hear I have decided to leave here, on Thursday for fall river, and expect to take the boat on Friday to proceed to New York — I trust this change will be serviceable to me — for your sakes I am anxious to preserve my life, that I may in every possible way contribute to your comfort — Joanna will go with me and Ben thinks of returning to Cambridge by the way of Providence on Friday — that thee will learn every particular of the effect of my journey thus far —

Aunt Arnold left here yesterday morning — I expect to see her in N York before she sails — There were but three pr of new cotton stockings in thy trunk, as I presumed thee had many more at Cambridge — do not forget to send home the silk hdkf, and the towel that was over the cake by sister — I will write from Philada dear Willy and shall hope to hear from thee, & shall be anxious to know if the mumps make their appearance — be careful to guard against cold — I hope thee has remembered to pay the bill for my *slippers* and all thy college bills — *punctuality is a great virtue.*

LETTER FROM ANNE W. ROTCH TO HER BROTHER  
CHARLES W. MORGAN ABOUT THE ENGAGEMENT OF HIS  
DAUGHTER, EMILY, TO WILLIAM J. ROTCH, WITH  
COMMENTS ON BENJAMIN RODMAN'S SOJOURN IN JAIL

The Grove Septemr 8th 1840.

My dear brother,

Having a little business to transact with you I will e'en make a letter of it — instead of sending to you a message — tho' really my correspondents are so numerous that my pen is put in requisition every few days — but as I have leisure a rare commodity in these times of bustle and doing — I ought to avail myself of it — when it may promote the family affection and interest I so highly value — It is always pleasant to hear from you my dear Charles and I cannot but regret that your letters must be so short — I know how many of them you have to write — and what a busy man you are — therefore will not complain glad as I should be to receive now and then from you a well filled sheet.

I have been rejoiced to hear how well you continue and trust that with care your own delightful well warmed house — will give you so mild a temperature — that you will not be obliged to leave your home in search of a more genial clime. Tho' as Francis often says — it is not that another climate is necessary — but the mildness and shortness of a southern winter would be desirable as securing a delicate constitution from the variableness and duration of the tedious northern winters — I too feel myself entirely well — since my return from N. B. I have had no cough and that was the only thing that I gave any serious thought to — about that too I felt easy when sister B. told me our grandfather had a cough twenty years! I trust my dear brother neither of us may have the trial of seeking health away from our homes and families — I have not heard particularly, lately, of Isabelle and Bessie. I hope therefore both are improving. I suppose you will soon have Rodman with you — tho' John Henry has already forgot when the vacations are. I think one was in this month.

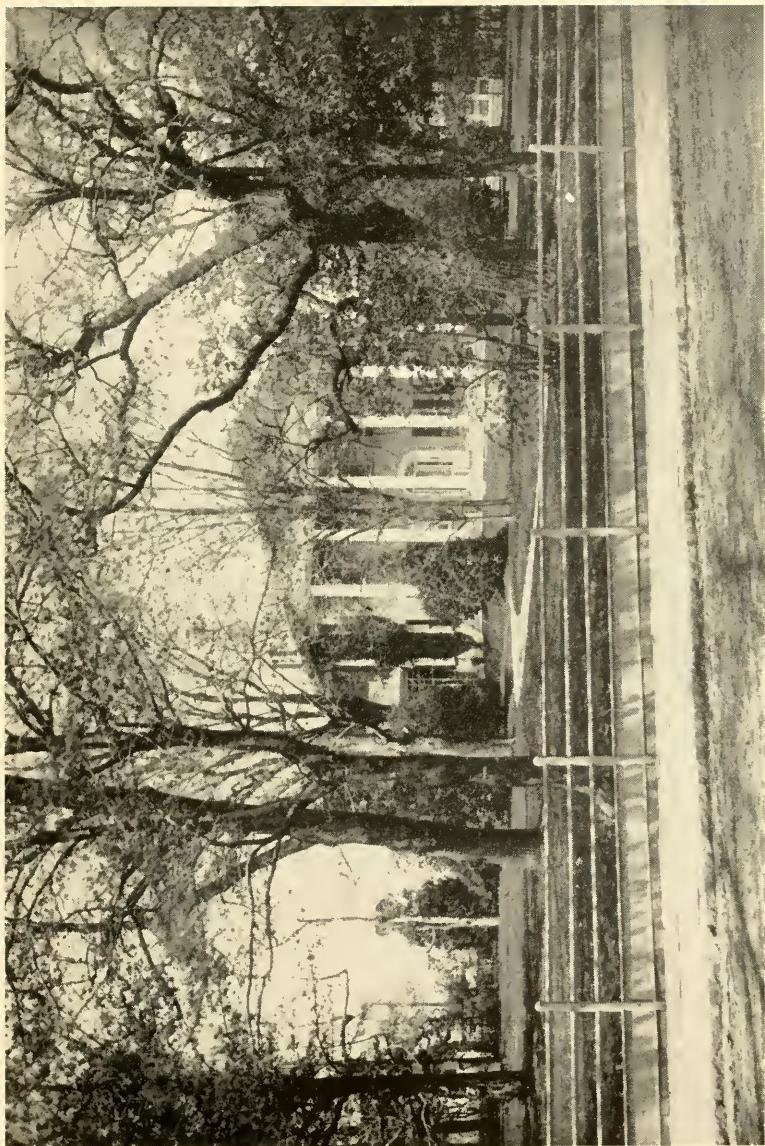
I have had a hint of a very interesting event about occurring or which has occurred in yr. family — with a promise that it will soon be made known to us, but I am charged even to keep the hint secret — still when writing to you I can not refrain from expressing my congratulations — how happy that dear child now is — what a world of hope and joy before her. It is delightful and refreshing to witness such young happiness — and I trust, as I believe, that she has the

full approbation of her parents. I never heard but one opinion of W. R. — that altogether favourable — his appearance and manners are very prepossessing and I am quite glad that I had some opportunity of becoming a little acquainted with him — his friend J. Ware was so enthusiastically attached to him — that he could never mention him without praise — Now my dear brother I hope I have not been premature — and that you will not blame my source of information — I have mentioned it to no one here — waiting the time of its announcement as I was bidden —

O Charles how grandly the *Hector* has done — one such arrival to us *small owners* is a great affair. how amazingly this sperm oil does mount up. You would have laughed to have heard Francis' first rough estimate — so characteristically below. I was as usual elated and exclaiming what fine profits when he took me down sadly, enumerating insurance and interest and outfit 'till I thought nothing wd. be left. however Frank and myself sat him down — to make the statements one by one. and when he added up — he made it something nearer my estimate — now do, just to satisfy me and let me compare, send me your estimates. Francis is almost incorrigible — however he is well pleased in this instance as you may believe — he put her oil at 90 cts. then not knowing how it was — but we hear today it has brought 97 — that would make quite a difference — I felt *rich* at once — for my views you know are *comparatively* humble — It has troubled me a good deal — to think of brother Tom having to screw himself down to \$1200 a year, tho' I knew it was right and proper, and indeed that it ought not to be otherwise — and now dear husband joins me in a plan to help it out a little this year — I want to send the children \$100 each — and this is my business — Will you as soon as you can conveniently send brother for them \$600 —

How is brother getting on with his business. does he remain moderate in his intentions? will he persevere in maintaining them? Anna writes as if he still preferred the country and made himself entirely contented there — I never knew a family who so easily bent to circumstances — it is however easier for them to give all up than to continue a course of *moderation*.

I hope Duncannon prospects continue good — And so dear Ben remains *status quo* — well every thing has been said by his friends that could be — every expedient presented — he has chosen to stand alone — to place himself separate from the help of any one. he has no doubt a powerful support within himself and I trust it may not fail him — tho' I have great confidence in his motives of action — I



The Home of Charles W. Morgan.  
County Street at head of William Street, New Bedford.  
Built about 1825.



The ship *Charles W. Morgan*. Built in 1841.  
Shown when enshrined at Round Hill, South Dartmouth, Mass., 1926-1941.  
Now at Marine Museum, Mystic, Conn.

have for a good while felt as if he had fettered himself by making the appearance of his pamphlet the arbiter of his liberation — what in the world makes Lindsey so slow. I feel so much for Susan — that I am provoked at him. It would have been a great comfort to me to have been near her at this time of trial — it is so painful to think of her loneliness — and to know one has no power to alleviate her feelings — you can at least manifest your interest by seeing her frequently — it is a hard case — and were Bens being in prison a mere matter of opinion I should wage unconditional war against it — but as it is on the ground of duty — no one has a right to controvert it — may he continue to find it a recompense for the privation and suffering which he necessarily inflicts on others — that to a feeling mind must be a cause of regret. —

Wednesday Morng — I left my letter last evening and becoming engaged this morning I have forgotten it until it is time to send to the office — Francis and Maria have gone for a ride on business — I have many such quiet hours now. John as usual at the farm — he and all are well — tell Sister E. with my love I received yesterday her, as they ever are, acceptable letter — now fare thee well — My love very affectionately to sister Sarah, Emily and the children — How comes on Alice?

Ever in much love — thine affectionately

A. W. Rotch

You will attend to my business as soon as possible will you not — I shall write to Anne M. by next mail — .

WRECK AND RESCUE  
BY CAPTAIN GARLAND ROTCH  
WITH FOREWORD BY NORMAN A. HARRIS  
REPRINTED BY COURTESY OF THE *Atlantic Monthly*

"WRECK AND RESCUE," a saga of the seas which has seldom been paralleled in human experience, is a record written by a young man of twenty-five years of age to his mother without thought that the outside world would wish to read it.

The chief actor of this stirring drama of the sea, Capt. Garland Rotch, first went to sea on a wind-jammer when fourteen years old and served his time before the mast. Christmas, 1915, he was given his captain papers and a few months later shipped aboard the ill-fated *Admiral Clark*, of the Admiral Line, now the Pacific Steamship Company, which was wrecked off the coast of Cuba August 16, 1916.

A copy of the original letter found its way into the hands of the novelist, Mrs. Kathleen Norris, who forwarded it to the editors of the *Atlantic Monthly*, through whose kind permission this reprint has been made possible.

Capt. Rotch is now designing and building yachts and has established headquarters at 7 Front Street, San Francisco.

NORMAN A. HARRIS.

On Board Swedish Bark *Tana* Bound for New Orleans

Dear Mother:—

Well, Mother, the Black Sheep came very near to going for good this time, but, as is usually the case, the bad penny turns up but the good honest dollar is lost.

I suppose you know by this time that the *Clark* foundered in a hurricane off the coast of Cuba. To the best of my knowledge there were but six of us saved. Until we arrive at New Orleans we shall not know for sure. I don't see how there was any chance for the rest, but after you have heard my tale you will see that you never can tell.

We jumped as the ship sank, caught a raft, and were adrift on it for seven days, without anything to eat or drink, before we were picked up by the *Tana* two days ago in pretty bum shape. I feel pretty well now, though still very weak. My feet are badly burned from exposure to the action of the sun and salt water. I cannot walk very well or wear shoes, but they are doing nicely. I will try and give you a more detailed account of what happened.

On the morning of Wednesday the sixteenth, I came on deck at four and found that the wind was blowing fresh from the northeast, though not hard enough to warrant calling the Captain. By seven it had reached the strength of a strong wind and I called the Old Man. He had a great dread of a hurricane and always was imagining that there was one brewing, and as soon as he came on deck he was

sure that we were going to encounter one of those dreaded storms. Don't construe this to mean that the Skipper was at all afraid, as he sure had more nerve than most men, and did not know the meaning of fear for himself, though he was always afraid of losing his ship through one of these storms. I told him when he came on deck that I did not think we were going to encounter a hurricane, as there were none of the signs which usually precede these storms. Nevertheless he fished out all the charts and books that had any bearing on hurricanes and started to study the weather carefully.

The Skipper always took me into his confidence a great deal, and this day he asked me to stay on deck after I had had my breakfast and help him decide what it was we were running into. At eight o'clock it was blowing a moderate gale and the sky had a hardy, windy look. The barometer had fallen a bit, but not more than would be expected for the weather we were in then. There are certain signs which usually give warning of the approach of a hurricane, but this morning there were none of these. The weather indications were the same as those of an ordinary heavy gale of wind. By ten-thirty the wind had not shifted and the glass had started to fall very rapidly, and after arguing the pro and con we decided that it was a hurricane that we were running into, and that we were in the track of the centre, the worst place to be. Our only hope lay in letting her go off and run before the wind, and endeavoring to cross the storm's path. This we did. By noon it was blowing very hard and a heavy sea was starting to run. We had five hundred barrels of fuel oil stowed on deck and the seas had started this several times, but each time we had relashed it, only losing a few barrels. We had a good dinner under difficulties and everyone felt confident.

At one, I went to the chart room and the Skipper asked me if I could get some oil on the water, as the seas were starting to roll dangerously across the decks. I called Johnson, the second mate, and taking axes we crawled down on the deck load and stove in the heads of two barrels on each side of the deck load. This allowed the oil to run over the side to the water, where we noticed it spread out and gave good results. The results to Johnson and myself were far from good, since, as soon as the head of the barrel was stove in and the oil exposed, the wind caught it up and blew it all over us, until we were just covered with oil from head to foot. We did not get it off until we were taken on board the *Tana*.

After that, we kept barrels stove in and oil running into the water until the seas were breaking over the ship so that we could not get

down to the decks to break in any more barrels. We then started pumping it overboard from our own fuel tanks. We had splendid results from this oil, and I am firmly convinced that this was the only thing that kept the *Clark* afloat as long as she was.

By three, the hurricane was at its height. Mother, I wish that I could describe it to you, but I can't. I don't believe that any man could describe it so as half to do justice to the scene. The wind was terrific; that God could turn loose such a burst of fury was unbelievable. You could not face it and breathe. The wind would force the breath back into your body. To move without holding on to something was impossible. In going along the decks it was necessary to hold on to something all the time. The wind would pull and haul at you like a thousand demons trying to pull you away from your hold and drag you overboard. You could not see a hundred feet for the spray, which would whip from the crests of the waves and hurl through the air with the speed of rifle bullets. The force of the flying spray was such that it appeared to be lying in layers or a sort of strata in the air. The seas were like mountains, and it seemed as they towered above the little *Clark* that they were huge overhanging cliffs of water that would cave down and overwhelm the little ship. They were of such size that the ship would be on one side of a sea at a time — that is, you could look ahead and see the trough ahead of the ship and then look back and see the crest of the same sea far astern. The little boat rode them wonderfully; the oil on the water kept them from breaking dangerously, and the *Clark* would seem to slide out from under the towering masses of water just in time. It was wonderful to watch her. Many times I held my breath thinking that surely one of the seas must break entirely over her. She was taking very heavy water during this time. The deck load was a jumbled mass of flying barrels and it was impossible to get down to try to do anything in the way of securing it. The water would make a clean sweep over the decks, hiding the entire forward end of the ship from view, then the bow would clear itself and the stern would submerge.

The ship was rolling terribly, and everything that was not secure in the rooms was on the floor and banging from side to side with each roll of the ship. The galley and mess rooms were a wreck. About three Johnson and I were going aft over the top of the house, and when passing the galley skylight we thought a cup of coffee would warm us up a little. As, with all the water on the decks, it was impossible to go through the doors on the main deck, we decided to go down through the skylight. A ventilator had fallen

on the skylight and we had quite a time removing it. While we were working removing the ventilator we thought we heard someone calling. After we had the skylight opened what do you think we saw? The colored steward and the three colored cooks all on top of the galley stove and praying just as hard as they could. The galley was half full of water and everything in it was adrift except the stove. Such a mess — pots and pans, tables, bits of wood and other debris. And amid all this, the darkies on the stove with their life preservers on. I couldn't help it, and neither could Johnson — we just roared. It was so funny.

The condition of the galley doomed our hopes for hot coffee, so we hauled the blacks out of the galley and put them in the wheelhouse, still with the life preservers on, as they refused to part with them.

At four, we were in the centre of the hurricane, the most dreaded part, and rightly so. There was no wind and a blue sky overhead. The sea was terrible. A confused, mountainous mass of jumbled water. There was no direction to the waves; they seemed to come from everywhere. Sometimes they would come together with an awful roar and a mountainous mass would drop bang. The poor little *Clark* was under water all the time. She had no chance. There was no way for her to ride seas coming from all four or five different directions at once. She did very well and struggled manfully to keep above water.

Just as we started to enter the other side of the storm, to fight our way out of what we had just come through, the steering engine blew a flange and we had to steer by hand. It was a hard job, as the hand gear was on top of the after house and exposed to the weather. There was no compass aft at the hand gear, and we steered the ship by the sheets of spray that the wind whipped from the crests of the waves. We just kept these sheets at a certain angle with the ship. She did fine, and in about a half-hour we had the engine fixed and were steering by steam again.

The trip out through the storm was terrible. It seemed as if every storm in creation was blowing against us, and instead of the regular sea which we had before, we had this awful confused sea. It made even the stoutest hearts sink a little as we thought that we had to go all through what we had already been through, though worse, and by this time the *Clark* was in a pretty badly crippled condition from the effects of the hard struggle she had had to get this far in the storm.

Things did not look very bright when we gathered in the wheel-

house for a supper of canned salmon and crackers. No one spoke about the outlook; the only conversation was a few jokes about what had happened during the day. At six o'clock the water was coming into the engine room in streams and had started to gain, as one of the pumps had got plugged and the other one and the siphon were unable to keep the water down. At about eight the engineers got another pump going and managed to hold their own till about nine, when a sea stove in the door to the sailors' mess room and a ventilator which passed through this room to the engine room. About this time she smashed the shutters on the Chief Engineer's room, which allowed his room to fill up and run over into the engine room. At this rate it would not take long for the engine room to flood.

I took two men forward with me to try and get a spare door aft for the sailors' mess room. To bring it back, we had to bring it along the booms, as the decks were continually being swept with heavy seas. We had got about halfway aft when a heavy gust of wind blew it from our hands, knocking one of the men down on the decks, where he was washed overboard before he could get to his feet. The other man and I took the Captain's bedding and went into the mess room to try and plug the hole in the ventilator with the bedding, but it was impossible. The mess room was full of benches and barrels. Every time a sea would come over, it would fill this little room full of water. There we would be — barrels, men, bedding, benches, and the place full of water. We were washed out twice. The third time I was washed right around the stern of the ship, and climbed up from the decks on the other side of the ship. The sailor I never saw again. I don't know what happened to him. It was impossible to fix the windows in the Chief Engineer's room. I tried, but could not stand on the decks, as the seas were coming over one right after another. We had no material to use to board up or plug them.

At ten-thirty the water was up to the dynamos and the lights all went out. Just previous to this, I had been down in the engine room, and I wish that I could describe the sight to you as I saw it. There was about six feet of water in the engine room. It was washing from one side to the other, with the roll of the ship. The engineers, stripped to the waist, were working around one of the pumps. I remember just as I came down the first assistant engineer was diving down under water to get at some part of the pump. The heavy rods and cranks of the engine were running in the water, churning and splashing the water all over; bits of board and refuse

would float in to the engine and be smashed to pieces and thrown all over. The noise was deafening. When the propeller would lift out of the water, the engine would go at an awful speed and by the noise would appear to be going to pieces. It was a sight I shall never forget.

When the water had reached the dynamos the pumps were also covered, and there was nothing more that the engineers could do in the engine room. They came out on deck, but left the engines running. They were a brave lot and stuck by their posts as long as they could. At a quarter to eleven a fusible plug blew out on the port boiler and the steam was shut off the engine. She was settling fast by the stern and everyone knew it was all over. A heavy sea swept over the whole after house, taking both boats.

The little Skipper was game to the core. He and I went into the chart room. I lighted my pipe and he a cigarette, and then he turned to me and said, "This is hell, Rotch, isn't it? Just as we start to get out of the gale, the ship goes down." I wasn't going to let him have anything on me, so I took a couple of puffs of my pipe and said, "Yeah," just as unconcerned as I could. It was funny I didn't feel the least bit worried or afraid. I told the Skipper that I thought the best thing to do would be to go forward, and if the bulkheads would hold she might float with her bow out of water. This was the only chance we should have, as the boats were gone. He could not think of anything better, so he ordered all hands forward. Going forward we had to climb along the booms, as the decks were impossible, with the remains of the deck load and the heavy seas washing over. It was hard work going along the booms. The man ahead of me was washed overboard. What was left of us got forward all right. The sailors put on their life preservers. The officers had none, as theirs were in their rooms aft, which were under water, the sailors and firemen being berthed forward.

The Old Man was pretty badly broken up and stood off to one side looking aft all the time. I mustered what was left of us and gave them a talking to. I told them if the ship started to go to watch and jump before she went too far and they were caught in the rigging. Those who had no life preservers on would have to trust to catching some bit of floating wreckage. Those that had life belts on, if they saw anything floating on the water, were not to catch it, as it might be the means of someone else being able to find something to support him.

The Skipper called to me then and said that he thought he heard someone calling from aft. I could plainly hear it then. The Old

Man and I went as far aft as we could, and found that the second engineer and the cook had not got forward. I don't know how we missed them, as we went all over the after house before we left to make sure that everyone had gone forward. We could not get to them, as she had settled too far for us to get back as we had come. A minute after we went aft a big sea swept the after end and we heard them no more. It must have washed them overboard.

We stayed aft, as far as we dared, watching the after hatch to see how it was holding. The Old Man kept asking, "Is she holding, Rotch?" It appeared to be holding all right and all there was to worry about was the number three bulkhead.

All of a sudden, we felt her start to go down under our feet. We turned and ran forward. We had gone as far as the foremast when a big sea swept over us. I clung to the winches around the foremast while the Skipper ran on a little further and jumped up on number one hatch and held on to the booms. After the sea had passed, we started forward again with the Old Man a little ahead of me. He ran around to the port side of the ship to go up the port ladder to the forecastle head, as the starboard ladder had been washed away earlier in the day. By the time I reached the break of the forecastle head the water was so close to me that I did not have time to run around to the port side, so jumped up and caught the rail and pulled myself up on to the forecastle head. All of the crew were on the port side except Johnson, the second mate. He and I were the only ones on the starboard side.

By this time the ship was fast getting to a position nearly vertical. I looked over to the other side and could see them starting to jump over the side. I shouted to Johnson that I guessed it was time for us to go as well, so we kicked off our boots and jumped.

On deck we had had a raft that we used for painting the side of the ship. As soon as I struck the water, I started to swim for the surface. As soon as I reached the surface the first thing that I saw was something dark on the water, and reaching out I put my hand on this raft. Johnson came up close beside me and we both climbed on to the raft. I did not have to swim.

After I had climbed on to the raft, I turned to have a last look at the *Clark*. She was standing on end, perfectly upright in the water. Her bow was about thirty feet out of the water. She seemed to hang that way for a minute or two, then, with a sort of sigh, made by the noise of the air rushing out of her, she very slowly sank out of sight. Mother, it was a weird sight to see that little boat sink, and it hurt. She was a good little boat and I had had some good times on her.



Captain Garland Rotch  
(1888-1943)



We had a fine crowd of men, as they showed when it sank. There was no excitement. Those that went went as a sailor should go.

After the little boat had gone, I turned around to see who else was on the raft with us, as when I climbed on I noticed that there were two others already on. They proved to be the third assistant engineer and an oiler. The oiler had on a life preserver, and it made me so darn mad that I just kicked him off the raft. I thought of all those who had no life belts, and here was one of the men I had told not to use anything that was floating around, but to leave it for someone without a life belt. I shook my fist at him and told him not to come anywhere near the raft. He floated around for a while and once when my back was turned Johnson let him on, and when I discovered it, there was no chance for anyone else to be around, so I let him stay.

We had not been on the raft long when we heard someone shouting and could see someone in the water. Johnson and I swam out and picked up the colored steward. He was just about all in. Soon we heard another call and we swam out again, and picked up a sailor. He, too, was just about all in and was very hard to help back to the raft. He had on oilskins and sea boots and they were full of water. We kept a sharp lookout for anyone else, but we could see or hear no one. Once we saw something black on the water and we swam out and found it was only a barrel. The wind and sea were drifting us fast from the scene of the wreck.

After Johnson had let the oiler back on, that left six of us on the raft. Johnson (the second officer), the third assistant engineer, the steward, the oiler, a sailor, and myself. Now, Mother, to appreciate our position you must picture our raft, which was nine feet long by four feet wide. Not as wide as your bed and only three feet longer, with six men on it. Nothing to eat, nothing to drink; in fact there was nothing on the raft but ourselves and what we stood in, which was not very much. None of us had on shoes except the sailor, who had boots. The most of us were clad in only shirts and trousers. There was just room for four to lie down at a time, and they had to fit right in. The others had to sit way on the end. There was no turning in your sleep unless everyone turned at the same time. The raft was only four inches out of the water, so the water was washing over it all the time. We were never dry at any time that we were on the raft. If anyone did any restless tossing in his sleep at night, overboard he would go. The steward did go overboard one night.

About an hour after the ship sank, Johnson and I put our backs together and, propped up this way, went off to sleep. The first

thing I knew the raft was straight up on edge and then over, and we were all in the water. We had not gotten used to our raft and a sea turned it over. We soon got the knack of keeping her from tipping over. Every time a big sea would come we would all lean toward it and balance the raft. I can hear that cry now, "Look out, here she comes!" and every one would start up and lean over toward the sea just as it broke. We had to hang on tight as well, to keep from being washed off the raft. There was no more sleep for anyone that night. A short cat nap and the cry of "Hang on!" would wake you up.

Thursday morning broke, and we were all glad to see the sun and feel its warmth. It was still blowing pretty hard and quite a high sea was running. About all we did that day was to hang on and to keep the raft from turning over. We saw a good many sharks swimming by the raft. They did not stop at all, and it was easy to guess where they were going and the awful end that the poor fellows who were floating around in life belts had met. It was not a very pleasant thought and I banished it from my mind. Everyone must have had the same thought and no one mentioned it at all, though everyone was very quiet.

Nothing happened of note that day, and during the night in our exhausted state we all caught cat naps even though the water was washing over us all the time and the side of the body which was down was wet all the time.

Friday morning at daybreak we all started to keep a good lookout for ships, as the question of getting picked up was starting to come home. We saw nothing that morning. Sitting around doing nothing, I commenced to brood over our outlook, and, catching myself, I thought that would soon raise Cain with our spirits, so decided to put everyone on watch, and try to give everyone something to do. There was a little breeze and it would blow us on the Mexican coast, if we could last that long. I figured that it was about two hundred and fifty miles away. We took the cover off the life belt that the oiler had on and decided to use it for a sail. We tore some strips from the raft and made a small mast and yard to spread the sail on. The blocks of cork that were in the life belt we used for paddles to steer by. This kept two of the men busy all the time steering and was something on their minds. The trousers of the suit of oilskins that the sailor had on we used to make caps to protect our heads from the strong sun. To make these we just cut off sections from the legs.

This kept us busy all day and it was wonderful how fast the time

passed, and everyone was in good spirits. It was a woefully small sail and did not move the raft very fast, but it was more for the moral effect that it had that I had it done. We were now divided into three watches of two men each, so that two men were always doing something and the others were resting. The two men were paddling and steering. We kept time by the sun in the day and the position of the stars at night.

After we had torn the piece off the side of the raft for our mast and sail, we found that it reduced the area so much that we decided to turn the raft over and use the other side. We spent quite a while making preparations, as we were very particular in saving every bit of wood and rope for some future use. This was very safely accomplished except that one of the men was afraid to let go of the raft as it turned over and went right around under water with it.

Friday night the men on watch called me and told me that they could see a light flashing in the sky and they thought it was a lighthouse. I jumped up, and off to the northward there was a flash of light as from a lighthouse. We all took to our cork paddles and started to paddle toward it. Suddenly it went out and we did not see it for quite a while, and then we could see that it was the searchlight of a vessel. It only showed for a short while and then went out. It was a great disappointment, but still it was cheering to know that there was someone around anyway. I did not see how it could have been a lighthouse, as I figured that we were about a hundred and twelve miles from Cape San Antonio just before the *Clark* sank. But still in a heavy gale of wind one is apt to be out in his reckoning.

Saturday at day break we saw a large steamer heading to pass close to us. We all got excited and happy with large visions of food and drink. We started to paddle toward where she would pass us. We figured that it was about six in the morning and that they would have fresh coffee made, and we made joking remarks about it. She passed about half a mile from us and kept going right on. They had not seen us. She passed so close to us that we could see the man at the wheel. We whistled and would all get together and holler at once. I don't see how they missed us, as we had a man waving a shirt all the time. She was an old tramp, and the officer was down having his coffee, I suppose. Her name was painted out, or we could have read it. It was a keen disappointment, as the pangs of hunger and thirst were beginning to make themselves felt. Our bodies were lame from sleeping on the bare boards, and sore from the

saltwater sores which were commencing to come out all over our bodies, and especially on our feet.

You see, I had read somewhere that the pores of the skin would absorb water into the system and that people without water should keep their body wet and that the skin would absorb a lot. We kept our bodies wet with salt water all the time we were on the raft, and I think that this is the only thing that saved our lives. Whenever a man saw another's clothes starting to get dry he would sprinkle water over him until he was wet. The action of the salt water and sun, though, sure raised Cain with our skin, as we were all covered with small dirty yellow sores which had started to fester. Our lips had begun to crack, and the salt had gotten into the cracks and our mouths were nothing but yellow rings.

Saturday we had a small rain squall. It did not last very long, but we all opened our mouths and tried to catch what we could. We spread out the oilskin coat and caught just enough for a mouthful apiece. It was dirty and oily, but it did taste good. That was all the nourishment that we had all the time we were on the raft.

Sunday morning we saw the smoke of a steamer, but it did not come anywhere near to us. Later we saw something black on the water quite a way from the raft, so we paddled over to it, and found that it was one of the barrels that had been our deck load. It was the only bit of wreckage that we saw. There was no way that we could burst it open so that we could get the staves, so we looked it over and then proceeded on our way.

While we knew that the coast of Cuba was closer to us than the Mexican coast, I knew that we could never make headway against the Gulf Stream and that if we were to make any place it would be the coast of Mexico. That was a very slim chance, but I did not say anything and everybody was working with the idea of making Mexico, and so we let it go at that.

The waters around the raft were alive with fish, and we used to use all our spare time trying to catch them with our hands.

The nights were the worst part of all. When we lay down to sleep the water would be washing over us all the time. Those that had the weather side had the water splashing in their faces all the time. Imagine trying to sleep with water splashing in your face. Though the night air was warm and so was the water, the drying effect made it very cold to the body. One could only sleep a short time and then would wake up cold and cramped. You could not turn over until everyone else turned over, as there was not room to lie back to back if one was at all curved. The two men nearest to

the end of the raft used spare blocks of cork for pillows, and the other two used the first pair's hips for pillows.

Monday we started in to fish in earnest. By luck we caught two. One of them jumped right on to the raft and we caught it before it could flop back into the water. These we skinned and hung up on our raft in the sun. In the afternoon we had quite an exciting time. Some large fish started to chase the dolphin which were swimming around the raft. I don't know the name of the fish; we call them bottlenoses from the shape of their snouts. They are about fifteen to twenty feet long. They had no respect whatever for our raft, and gave it several hard bumps while they were chasing the dolphin, and for a while I was afraid that they would break up the raft. They played around for about a half-hour and then went off. While they were not harmful, we were not sorry to see them go, as they had us guessing for a while.

During the afternoon it was very warm and we suffered a great deal from the heat and thirst. Hunger by this time had ceased to bother us at all. Only the first two days did being hungry bother us. Of course we would not have turned down a turkey dinner. They say, though, that hunger ceases as soon as thirst sets in. I guess it does. We kept our clothing good and wet and that helped some. The men wanted to eat the fish, but I would not let them, as eating would increase the desire for water. We were watching for rain closely, and if we had had a good rain squall and could have caught some rain we would have eaten them. Several rain squalls passed us, but none came near the raft.

Monday night the steward and the oiler were on watch for the middle of the night. I guess the steward felt pretty sleepy, for he dozed off to sleep and toppled over backward into the water. The sound of his splashing woke me up. Seeing the oiler reach out to help him back, I called to him to look out for the fish that were hanging on a stick close to where he was. The poor steward thought that I meant for him to look out for a fish and thought fish could only mean shark. The way he came out of the water was not slow. He came out just as a seal does.

Tuesday morning I was sitting in the bow of the raft looking aft and thinking. Everyone else was asleep except the steward and the oiler; they were paddling at the stern. My eyes happened to look astern and I saw a great big shark following us. He was swimming up to the raft. He looked to me to be about fifty feet long, but afterwards when I compared his length to the raft he must have been between fifteen and twenty feet long. I did not

say anything to the men, as I hoped he would go away and not be seen by them, as a shark at that time was not the best thing to keep up the spirits of the men. When he reached the end of the raft he curved in and passed close to the side where the oiler was paddling. When he saw the shark he was just putting his paddle into the water and could have touched it. He gave a cry of terror and, jumping up, rushed for the other side of the raft. It was fortunate that I was awake and watching, because I jumped for the opposite side just in time to balance the raft. He would have overturned it and had us all in the water at the mercy of the shark. The shark swam around the raft for about half an hour, and we kept very quiet, you may be sure. Once when it passed me it was so close I could have touched it. He was partly on his side and his mouth was open in a sort of fiendish grin as much as to say, "I will get you yet." His eyes seemed to be staring into mine. I stared right back at him and said to myself, "Well, old man, you may think that you are going to have me, but you are not." The sight of him did not make me feel any too good. I could feel funny little chills going up my spine. Everyone sighed a big sigh of relief when he was gone for good.

About noon we saw the smoke of another steamer. We watched it for quite a while, but it died away.

The afternoon was very hot, and thirst started to tell severely. Our mouths and tongues were badly swollen and we could only talk with an effort. I had to watch the steward and the oiler. They were dipping their fingers in the water and sucking them. That was the worst thing they could do, as it made them worse and was liable to drive them insane. I had spoken to all the men about this when we first were on the raft. As soon as I caught them doing it, I told them plainly that I was not going to jeopardize the lives of everyone on the raft by having one of them go insane. I told them that the first man I caught doing it I would throw overboard as protection for the rest. That kept them in their place for a while. Then the oiler thought that I was asleep and I saw him dip his hand into the water and drink out of it. It made me mad, and I jumped up and started for him. He went down on his knees and whimpered like a dog and begged that I give him another chance. I told him I would give him one chance, but that was all; then he would go overboard. That kept him straight; I did not see him do it any more. About three the steward gave out on us and we had quite a time getting him around.

When evening brought cooler weather we were all in more or less trouble with thirst. It was plainly to be seen that the end of

another day would see some changes on the raft. I think Johnson and I were in the best shape.

The night relieved us a lot. A breeze sprang up and cooled the air a lot, though it kicked up a little chop which made it awfully sloppy on the raft. I remember how mad I got at Johnson. He was sleeping huddled close up to my back, the sailor and engineer sleeping with their heads on our hips. I had the weather side and every little chop would go right into my face. I stood it as long as I could, and when I woke the others up so we could turn over there was an awful holler.

Wednesday morning we saw a sailing ship heading to pass not far from us. Everyone woke up and we started to paddle for her. My, how we worked with only those small pieces of cork for paddles. In our exhausted condition it seemed as if they weighed a ton. It was discouraging work, as the raft barely moved. She passed about two miles from us and continued on her way. They had not seen us. Mother, I shall never forget that hopeless feeling that came over me, and I guess it came over the others. We just lay down in a heap too exhausted to move. The steward had not been paddling; we had had him waving a shirt for a flag. He still continued to wave this shirt. I lay where I could watch her. Mother, probably you can imagine some of the thoughts that were passing through my mind. Suddenly I saw her start to haul up one side of her mainsail, and, having been in sailing ships, I knew that that meant she was going to turn around. That meant another chance for us, even if they had not seen us. They would pass near to us again. We kept the steward waving the shirt and we started again to paddle. It was soon apparent that they had seen us, for they were heading right for us. When she came close they called to us and asked who we were. I stood up and tried to tell them, but I could not talk; my mouth and throat were too swollen. I only made a sort of gurgling sound. They hove to and threw us a line and put a ladder over the side. Two of the men we had to have them hoist up; the rest of us climbed up the ladder.

I was the last to leave the raft. I cast off the line and then climbed half-way up the ladder and turned around and had a last farewell look at the old raft. I had a tender thought for it as I watched it drifting astern. Just as I reached the top and was putting my leg over the rail, I gave out, and if there had not been two men there to grab me I should have fallen back into the water. It was funny; my legs just were no good; I was conscious, but I could not walk. They helped us all to the cabin, where they gave us a small glass

of water to wash our mouths with; then they gave us a small cup of coffee and a small square of bread and butter.

They let us rest a while. We could talk then, as the first bit of water loosened up our tongues right away. After a while they took us out on deck and scrubbed us in a big tub. Scrubbed us with regular scrubbing brushes like you use on the floor. Mother, you should have seen Johnson, and I guess I was as bad. They took us out in twos and Johnson and I were taken out together, and as I looked at him standing up in that tub he was a sight. First he was covered with crude oil and looked like a black man. His head was all blistered from the hot sun, and the salt water had made the blisters into sores which were full of yellow matter. His lips were the same; they were just yellow. Then he was so thin I could count every rib in his body. Where his stomach should have been there was only a hollow. He was a terrible-looking thing.

After they had washed us and bandaged our feet, which were the worst part of us, they put us to bed. None of us slept very long; we were too lame and sore and excited. When we got up, they gave us another small cup of coffee and a small piece of bread. That is all they would give us all that day, and yesterday until supper time. They would give us this bread and either coffee or water every hour or so, but no more. Last night we had our first meal.

Our feet are in very bad shape. The engineer's are the worst; he cannot get out of bed. The rest of us hobble around without shoes or socks. Our bodies are all covered with little bubbles. They don't itch, but if you break them they are all full of water.

The Captain is splendid, very simple and religious, and does everything possible for him to do for us.

Well, Mother, luck does not seem to run my way. I have nothing in the world but a shirt and a pair of trousers; even the chronometer is gone. I don't know what I shall do when I arrive in New Orleans.

Don't know yet where you can write me.

Well, good-bye. This little picture shows how we looked to one of the sailors on the *Tana* when they were picking us up. I took in six inches in my belt the six days and twelve hours that we were on the raft.

Lovingly,

GARLAND.

## PART THREE

GENEALOGY OF THE ROTCH FAMILY,

including all known descendants of Joseph  
and William Rotch and many descendants  
of Joseph's brother, Benjamin

*Compiled by*  
William M. Emery and John M. Bullard

with sketches of some individuals  
by Mr. Emery



## Rotch Ancestry

1. WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> ROTCH, called a weaver and born probably about 1650, is found at Salem, Mass., before 1692, where he had married Hannah Potter, born March 27, 1665/6, daughter of Nicholas and Mary (Gedney) Potter of Salem. Her father was a bricklayer. William Rotch's estate was administered June 28, 1705, by his widow Hannah. Inventory £ 153 12 s. The widow married March 15, 1717, Daniel Darling, cordwainer, whose deeds to her son establish the identity of the Rotches of Cape Cod and Nantucket as descended from William of Salem. Children:

1200. i. WILLIAM ROTCH, b. Aug. 12, 1692; d. c. 1746.
1201. ii. HANNAH ROTCH, b. Oct. 12, 1694; m. Nathaniel Jackson of Plymouth.
1202. iii. ELIZABETH ROTCH, b. April 16, 1697; m. David Webb.
1203. iv. MARY ROTCH, b. Oct. 26, 1699; m. Samuel Symonds.
1204. v. BENJAMIN ROTCH, b. c. 1702; d. 1758.
2. vi. JOSEPH ROTCH, b. March 6, 1704; d. Nov. 24, 1784.

Foregoing from "History of Martha's Vineyard," by Colonel Charles E. Banks, M.D.

2. JOSEPH<sup>2</sup> ROTCH (*William<sup>1</sup>*), son of William and Hannah (Potter) Rotch, was born probably in Salem, Mass., March 6, 1704, and died in Dartmouth, Mass., Nov. 24, 1784. He married (1) in Nantucket, Mass., 12 mo. 21 ("called February") 1733/4 (Nantucket Friends' Records), Love Macy, born 4 mo. 20, 1713, died Nov. 14, 1767, daughter of Thomas 2d, and Deborah (Coffin) Macy of Nantucket; (2) Dec. 29, 1768, Mrs. Rebecca (Vaughan) Cornell, born in Newport, R. I., Nov. 30, 1715, died after 1784, daughter of Daniel and Rebecca Vaughan of Newport and widow of Gideon Cornell.

Children, born in Nantucket:

3. i. WILLIAM ROTCH, b. 10 mo. 4, 1734; d. May 16, 1828.
4. ii. JOSEPH ROTCH. Unmarried. b. 10 mo. 27, 1743; d. 1772 or 1773.
5. iii. FRANCIS ROTCH, b. 9 mo. 30, 1750; d. May 20, 1822.

REBECCA VAUGHAN, second wife of Joseph Rotch, married (1) Feb. 22, 1732, Gideon Cornell of Newport, R. I., Lieutenant Governor and Chief Justice of Rhode Island. Children:

- i. GIDEON CORNELL, b. Oct. 10, 1740; d. young.
- ii. REBECCA CORNELL, b. Feb. 17, 1755; m. Aug. 18, 1774, Colonel Clement Biddle of Philadelphia, b. May 10, 1740, d. July 14, 1814. He was a merchant and importer, an officer in the Revolutionary War, and a close friend of George Washington. There were thirteen children, of whom five died before reaching maturity. Colonel Biddle and wife

Rebecca were lineal ancestors of Francis Biddle, Attorney General in the cabinet of President Franklin D. Roosevelt.

3. WILLIAM<sup>3</sup> ROTCH (*Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Joseph and Love (Macy) Rotch, was born in Nantucket 10 mo. 4, 1734, and died in New Bedford May 16, 1828, in his ninety-fourth year. He married in Nantucket 10 mo. 31, 1754, Elizabeth Barney, born in Nantucket 4 mo. 3, 1735, died in New Bedford May 14, 1824, in her ninetieth year, daughter of Benjamin and Lydia (Starbuck) Barney of Nantucket.

Children, born in Nantucket:

- 6. i. WILLIAM ROTCH, b. Aug. 24, 1755; d. Feb. 7, 1757.
- 400. ii. ELIZABETH ROTCH, b. Dec. 9, 1757; d. Aug. 2, 1856; m. Samuel Rodman.
- 7. iii. WILLIAM ROTCH, b. Nov. 29, 1759; d. April 17, 1850.
- 299. iv. SUSANNA ROTCH, b. April 10, 1762; d. Sept. 7, 1762.
- 300. v. BENJAMIN ROTCH, b. Sept. 12, 1764; d. March 30, 1839.
- 396. vi. THOMAS ROTCH, b. July 13, 1767; d. Sept. 14, 1823.
- 397. vii. LYDIA ROTCH, b. Oct. 29, 1770; d. March 10, 1822.
- 398. viii. MARY ROTCH, b. Oct. 9, 1777; d. in New Bedford Sept. 4, 1848.  
Unmarried.

4. JOSEPH<sup>3</sup> ROTCH, JR., (*Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Joseph and Love (Macy) Rotch, was born in Nantucket Oct. 7, 1743, and died in England in 1772 or 1773. Unmarried.

5. FRANCIS<sup>3</sup> ROTCH (*Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Joseph and Love (Macy) Rotch, was born in Nantucket 9 mo. 30, 1750, and died in New Bedford, May 20, 1822. He married (1) in England, Deborah Fleeming; (2) Dec. 21, 1815, Nancy Rotch (see No. 1403), born Oct. 26, 1776, died in New Bedford April 23, 1867, daughter of Captain Joseph and Jane (Alline) Rotch. No children.

## Descendants of William Rotch, Junior

7. WILLIAM<sup>4</sup> ROTCH, JR. (*William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of William and Elizabeth (Barney) Rotch, was born in Nantucket Nov. 29, 1759, and died in New Bedford April 17, 1850, in his ninety-first year. He married (1) at Leicester, Mass., July 17, 1782, Elizabeth Rodman, born March 3, 1759, died in New Bedford Jan. 30, 1828, daughter of Captain Thomas and Mary (Borden) Rodman of Newport, R. I.; (2) in North Providence, R. I., April 25, 1829, Lydia Scott, born in September, 1782, died in Waltham, Mass., July 18, 1863, daughter of Job Scott.

Children, by first marriage; first born in Nantucket, others in New Bedford:

8. i. SARAH ROTCH, b. June 3, 1786; d. May 9, 1860.
9. ii. WILLIAM RODMAN ROTCH, b. Nov. 1, 1788; d. Sept. 18, 1860.
10. iii. JOSEPH ROTCH, b. Nov. 30, 1790; d. Nov. 10, 1839.
11. iv. THOMAS ROTCH, b. Sept. 14, 1792; d. Oct. 1, 1840.
12. v. MARY ROTCH, b. Nov. 18, 1793; d. Aug. 13, 1878.
13. vi. MARTHA ROTCH, b. April 5, 1797; d. June 6, 1798.
14. vii. EDMUND ROTCH, b. Nov. 18, 1798; d. Nov. 29, 1798.

8. SARAH<sup>5</sup> ROTCH (*William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of William and Elizabeth (Rodman) Rotch, was born in Nantucket June 3, 1786, and died in New Bedford May 9, 1860. She married at New Bedford, Oct. 29, 1807, James Arnold, born in Providence, R. I., Sept. 9, 1781, died in New Bedford Dec. 3, 1868, son of Thomas and Mary (Brown) Arnold.

James Arnold came from Providence to New Bedford to enter the counting room of William Rotch, Jr., whose business partner and son-in-law he eventually became. As one of the city's leading whaling merchants Mr. Arnold amassed a large fortune. He purchased a tract of eleven acres, bounded by County, Arnold, Cottage and Union Streets, whereon, in 1821, he built an attractive residence, later much changed by his nephew William J. Rotch and again when it became the Wamsutta Club. The grounds were converted into a fine garden with fruits and flowers, winding walks, open bits of lawn, shrubs and plants, shady bowers and rustic seats, and this garden, thrown open to the public, became the chief show place of the town, to which all distinguished visitors first of all were taken. By his will Mr. Arnold bequeathed his mansion and grounds to his nephew, William J. Rotch (see No. 20), who made his home there until his death, and it was subsequently occupied by his widow until sold to the Wamsutta Club on her death.

Mr. and Mrs. Arnold in 1850 deeded the first residence of her father, William Rotch, Jr., (see No. 7) to the New Bedford Port Society. It was removed from the corner of North Water and William Streets to Johnny-cake Hill, where it has since been utilized as the Mariners' Home. Mr. Arnold was an early president of the New Bedford Port Society, and Mrs. Arnold was the first president of the Ladies' Branch of that organization.

Mr. Arnold served in the Executive Council during the administration of Governor George N. Briggs. He was liberal in his charities, and during the anti-slavery agitation was a great friend of runaway slaves, whom he aided with money and in other ways.

His will made a bequest of \$100,000 for the benefit of the poor and needy of New Bedford. It also provided that a portion of his residuary estate, which materialized at about \$100,000, should be devoted to some project for the advancement of agriculture and horticulture, at the discretion of his trustees. At the suggestion of George B. Emerson (see No. 12), one of the trustees, the bequest was paid to Harvard University, which agreed to devote to the project a part of the Bussey farm in West Roxbury (now Jamaica Plain), which had been bequeathed to the college. In 1872 one hundred twenty acres were set apart, whereon should be grown a specimen of every tree and shrub that could endure in this climate. Thus was established the famous Arnold Arboretum. Subsequently the City of Boston added other lands.

Daughter:

15. i. ELIZABETH ROTCH ARNOLD, b. Jan. 17, 1809; d. Oct. 26, 1860.

9. WILLIAM RODMAN<sup>5</sup> ROTCH (*William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), eldest son of William Rotch, Jr., and wife Elizabeth (Rodman) Rotch, was born in New Bedford Nov. 1, 1788. He was the first male in the Rotch family to be born in New Bedford.

As early as 1810, when twenty-two years old, he was an owner in New Bedford shipping with his father and brothers, his brother-in-law, James Arnold and other New Bedford investors, and during his career as a whaling merchant had an ownership in thirty-two vessels, not all of which indeed were engaged in the whaling industry, some being employed in mercantile voyages. He formed the firm of William R. Rotch & Co., whaling merchants, his partner being Joseph R. Anthony, who named a son William Rotch Anthony. Mr. Rotch also was a merchant on his own account. In thirteen of the vessels in which he was interested his brother Joseph was a joint owner. Mr. Rotch likewise was a large landholder. In 1825 he was one of the incorporators of the Merchants Bank, later the Merchants National Bank of New Bedford.

In 1820, the year of his marriage, he purchased the residence of Gilbert Russell on County Street, at the head of Walnut Street, where he lived for the remainder of his life. There were nearly 300 rods of land. On the north side of the grounds, on Granite Street (now Clinton Street), was a small

schoolhouse where Miss Martha Russell was permitted to keep a private school, free of ground rent.

Mr. Rotch married in New York July 17, 1820, Caroline Stockton, born in 1800, daughter of Hon. Richard and Mary (Field) Stockton of "Morven," Princeton, N. J. Her father was eminent at the bar, and served as a Member of Congress and United States Senator. He owned large tracts of land in North Carolina and Oneida County, New York. Mrs. Rotch's grandfather, Judge Richard Stockton, was a signer of the Declaration of Independence.

Mrs. Rotch died in New Bedford Dec. 14, 1856. Mr. Rotch died in his seventy-second year on Sept. 18, 1860, in St. Catharine's, Canada West, where he had gone for the benefit of his health. Interment was in New Bedford, funeral services being held at his late home.

Children:

16. i. HORATIO STOCKTON ROTCH, b. July 22, 1822; d. July 2, 1850. Unmarried.
17. ii. MARY STOCKTON ROTCH, b. Oct. 30, 1823; d. Nov. 23, 1873.

10. JOSEPH<sup>5</sup> ROTCH (*William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of William and Elizabeth (Rodman) Rotch, was born in New Bedford Nov. 30, 1790, and died there Nov. 10, 1839. He married in Philadelphia June 2, 1814, Anne Smith, born in Philadelphia June 2, 1795, died in New Bedford Nov. 6, 1842, daughter of James and Anne (Ridgway) Smith of Philadelphia.

Children:

18. i. ELIZABETH ROTCH, b. May 13, 1815; d. Jan. 14, 1884.
19. ii. BENJAMIN SMITH ROTCH, b. March 4, 1817; d. Aug. 14, 1882.
20. iii. WILLIAM JAMES ROTCH, b. May 2, 1819; d. Aug. 17, 1893.
21. iv. RODMAN ROTCH, b. Sept. 19, 1820; d. March 17, 1854.
22. v. JAMES SMITH ROTCH, b. Aug. 30, 1822; d. Sept. 11, 1822.
23. vi. JOANNA ROTCH, b. June 14, 1824; d. Aug. 8, 1824.
24. vii. JOANNA ROTCH, b. Sept. 3, 1826; d. Nov. 28, 1911. Unmarried.

11. THOMAS<sup>5</sup> ROTCH (*William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of William and Elizabeth (Rodman) Rotch, was born in New Bedford Sept. 14, 1792, and died at Clermont, Penna., Oct. 1, 1840. He married May 8, 1816, Susan Ridgway of Philadelphia, born Sept. 25, 1797, died Feb. 25, 1885. She married (2) Dr. John Rhea Barton of Philadelphia, born April, 1794, died Jan. 1, 1871. No children by either marriage.

Mr. Rotch built and occupied a residence at the southeast corner of William and County Streets, facing Eighth Street, and opposite the residence of his brother, Joseph Rotch, on William Street. It was subsequently the home of Sylvia Ann Howland, aunt of Mrs. Hetty Green. In later years it was turned about to face County Street, and eventually was moved away.

Like others of the Rotch family Mr. Rotch was a friend of the slave, and took part in the days of the anti-slavery agitation in aiding fugitive slaves who came to New Bedford. At one time he took an active part in rescuing a

fugitive who had fallen into the hands of a Virginia agent who was hunting refugees. A chronicler of this affair wrote as follows of Mr. Rotch:

"He was a son of the late venerable William Rotch, was in the prime of manhood, and the noblest looking man ever born here. He married the lovely Miss Ridgway of Philadelphia, now the noble-hearted widow of the late Dr. Barton of that city. Mr. Rotch died not long after this occurrence in Philadelphia."

Mr. and Mrs. Rotch are said to have given the first dancing party ever held in a private house in New Bedford.

Dr. John Rhea Barton was a distinguished surgeon of Philadelphia. His widow gave the University of Pennsylvania \$50,000 to establish in his memory a chair of surgery in the Medical School.

12. MARY<sup>5</sup> ROTCH (*William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of William and Elizabeth (Rodman) Rotch, was born in New Bedford Nov. 18, 1793, and died Aug. 13, 1878. She married (1) in New Bedford Aug. 1, 1823, John William Charles Fleeming, stepson of Francis Rotch (No. 5) by his first marriage, born in England 1781, died at Key West, Fla., Dec. 18, 1832; (2) in New Bedford Nov. 24, 1834, George Barrell Emerson of Boston, born in Wells, Maine, Sept. 12, 1797, died in Newton, Mass., March 4, 1881, son of Dr. Samuel and Olive (Barrell) Emerson. She is buried in the Arnold lot in New Bedford.

Following his graduation from Harvard in 1817 Mr. Emerson was a school teacher for a long period. He conducted a private school for girls in Boston for many years. The remainder of his life was chiefly passed as a naturalist, although during and after the Civil War his interests were in the education of the freedmen of the South. He was instrumental in organizing the American Institute of Instruction and the Boston Mechanics Institute. He was president of the Boston Society of Natural History. Mr. Emerson wrote several books, including an authoritative work on the trees and shrubs of Massachusetts. It was due to his suggestion that the Arnold Arboretum was founded by Harvard University with the bequest of James Arnold.

#### Children:

##### By first marriage:

25. i. CAROLINE FLEEMING, b. Dec. 22, 1825; d. Jan. 3, 1893.

##### By second marriage:

26. ii. WILLIAM ROTCH EMERSON, b. 1836; d. young.

Mr. Emerson had four children by a previous marriage.

15. ELIZABETH ROTCH ARNOLD<sup>6</sup> (*Sarah<sup>5</sup> Rotch, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of James and Sarah (Rotch) Arnold, was born in New Bedford Jan. 17, 1809, and died there Oct. 26, 1860. She married in New Bedford March 17, 1859, Dr. Charles M. Tuttle, born in Canada East, son of Horatio and Elizabeth Tuttle. No children.

17. MARY STOCKTON<sup>6</sup> ROTCH (*William R.<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of William R. and Caroline (Stockton) Rotch, was born in New Bedford Oct. 30, 1823, and was lost at sea with her husband and daughter Caroline in the sinking of S.S. *Ville de Havre* Nov. 22, 1873. She married in New Bedford March 30, 1848, Lieutenant (afterwards Captain) Charles Hunter, United States Navy, born June 19, 1813, died Nov. 22, 1873, son of William and Mary (Robinson) Hunter of Newport, R. I.

Children:

27. i. KATE HUNTER, b. in New Bedford Feb. 9, 1849; d. July 1, 1930.
28. ii. CAROLINE STOCKTON HUNTER, b. in Newport, R. I., June 13, 1850; d. Nov. 22, 1873, lost in wreck of *Ville de Havre*.
29. iii. MARY ROTCH HUNTER, b. in Newport, R.I., March 8, 1854; d. March 22, 1936.
30. iv. ANNA FALCONNET HUNTER, b. in Newport, R. I., Dec. 24, 1855; d. there June 4, 1941. With her sister Mary she was saved from the *Ville de Havre* wreck. She always made her home in Newport, unmarried.

18. ELIZABETH<sup>6</sup> ROTCH (*Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Joseph and Anne (Smith) Rotch, was born in New Bedford May 13, 1815, and died at Milton Hill, Mass., Jan. 14, 1884. She married in New Bedford April 25, 1836, Rev. Joseph Angier, born in Durham, N. H., April 24, 1808, died at Milton Hill April 12, 1871, son of Dr. John and Rebecca Angier. He was a Unitarian clergyman in New Bedford and Milton, Mass.

Children:

31. i. WILLIAM ROTCH ANGIER, b. March 9, 1837; d. Sept. 4, 1880.
32. ii. JOSEPHINE ANGIER, b. March 25, 1840; d. Aug. 9, 1914.

19. BENJAMIN SMITH<sup>6</sup> ROTCH (*Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Joseph and Anne (Smith) Rotch, was born in Philadelphia March 4, 1817, and died in Milton, Mass., Aug. 19, 1882. He married in Boston Jan. 22, 1846, Annie Bigelow Lawrence, born April 18, 1820, died Aug. 26, 1893, daughter of Hon. Abbott and Katharine (Bigelow) Lawrence of Boston. Mr. Lawrence was a Representative in Congress, and Minister to the Court of St. James. He founded the Lawrence Scientific School at Harvard.

Benjamin S. Rotch was graduated at Harvard in 1838, he and his brother William being the two marshals of the class. After his marriage to the eldest daughter of Hon. Abbott Lawrence he accompanied the latter to England when he was appointed Minister to the Court of St. James. It was during this and subsequent trips to Europe that he had the opportunity to improve and cultivate that interest in the fine arts which rendered his influence in artistic matters most valuable. His careful study of foreign collections, supplemented by practical work, made him a competent and fastidious critic, as well as a painter whose landscapes were shown to advantage in many local exhibitions. He was a trustee of the Boston Athenaeum and of the Museum

of Fine Arts, and chairman of its committee. He also filled most successfully many other offices, and was a Representative in the Massachusetts Legislature in 1843 and 1844, and in 1845 was an aide-de-camp on the staff of Governor George N. Briggs of Massachusetts. He established the Rotch Travelling Scholarship at Harvard, to provide two years' study abroad for young architects.

Children:

33. i. EDITH ROTCH, b. July 30, 1847; d. April 30, 1897. Unmarried.
34. ii. ARTHUR ROTCH, b. May 13, 1850; d. Aug. 15, 1894.
35. iii. AIMEE ROTCH, b. June 16, 1852; d. April 15, 1918.
36. iv. KATHARINE ROTCH, b. March 9, 1856; d. March 12, 1856.
37. v. ANNIE LAWRENCE ROTCH, b. Feb. 14, 1857.
38. vi. WILLIAM ROTCH, b. Nov. 27, 1858; d. Oct. 3, 1859.
39. vii. ABBOTT LAWRENCE ROTCH, b. Jan. 6, 1861; d. April 7, 1912.

20. WILLIAM J.<sup>6</sup> ROTCH (*Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Joseph and Anne (Smith) Rotch, was born in Philadelphia May 2, 1819, and died at Beverly Farms, Mass., Aug. 17, 1893. He married in New Bedford (1) May 24, 1842, Emily Morgan, born in New Bedford Dec. 13, 1821, died there June 13, 1861, daughter of Charles W. and Sarah (Rodman) Morgan of New Bedford (see No. 964); (2) Jan. 11, 1866, Clara Morgan, born Dec. 1, 1836, died Aug. 24, 1919, sister of Emily Morgan. (See No. 968.)

Children, born in New Bedford:

By first marriage:

40. i. CHARLES MORGAN ROTCH, b. March 6, 1843; d. Jan. 16, 1845.
41. ii. WILLIAM ROTCH, b. July 22, 1844; d. Aug. 14, 1925.
42. iii. HELEN ROTCH, b. July 15, 1846; d. Sept. 3, 1914; m. Dr. Thomas Morgan Rotch. (See No. 50.)
43. iv. MORGAN ROTCH, b. April 8, 1848; d. Jan. 30, 1910.
44. v. ISABEL MORGAN ROTCH, b. May 30, 1850; d. Nov. 21, 1921.
45. vi. SARAH RODMAN ROTCH, b. April 5, 1854; d. June 14, 1936.
46. vii. EMILY MORGAN ROTCH, b. Feb. 3, 1860.
47. viii. ANNA SMITH ROTCH, b. April 30, 1861; d. Oct. 21, 1934.

By second marriage:

48. ix. MARY RUSSELL ROTCH, b. Jan. 9, 1873; d. in Boston Feb. 19, 1917. Unmarried.

### THE MORGAN FAMILY

Thomas and Ann (Waln) Morgan, Philadelphia Quakers, were the parents of eight children, all but two of whom came to live in New Bedford. A son married a New Bedford Rodman; two sisters married two Rodman brothers; another sister married a Rotch; and several Morgan grandchildren married Rotches, creating a most extraordinary family connection.

The Morgans came of Welsh stock. Although Rev. Abel Morgan was a Baptist preacher of heretical tendencies, his son Thomas Morgan became a member of the Society of Friends. Tradition has it, according to Rev. Alfred

Rodman Hussey, that "in the Morgan background lurks the gallant figure of Henry Morgan, the buccaneer."

The Walns were a Quaker family, whose most distinguished member was Nicholas Waln, prominent in Pennsylvania during the Revolution.

The children of Thomas and Ann (Waln) Morgan were:

- i. ROBERT WALN MORGAN, b. Aug. 25, 1787; d. Feb. 21, 1803, in his sixteenth year.
- ii. ELIZA MORGAN, b. Sept. 4, 1789; d. April 2, 1851 in New Bedford. Lived at 46 William Street, south side, east of Purchase. Married John Drinker. Children: Annie Morgan Drinker, 1819-1854, unmarried; John Henry Drinker, 1822-1859.
- iii. THOMAS WALN MORGAN, b. June 16, 1791; d. March 15, 1854; did not live in New Bedford. Married Hannah Griffitts and had:
  - a. SAMUEL GRIFFITTS MORGAN, b. 1816; d. Sept. 23, 1893. Lived in New Bedford.
  - b. HELEN MORGAN, b. Jan. 23, 1822; d. April 29, 1890.
  - c. CHARLES WALN MORGAN, b. March 20, 1825; d. Nov. 20, 1896.
    - a. S. GRIFFITTS MORGAN married Caroline Hathaway, whose brother Horatio married Ellen Rodman.
    - b. HELEN MORGAN married Rodman Rotch. Their son Dr. Thomas Morgan Rotch married his double cousin Helen Rotch, daughter of William J. Rotch.
    - c. CHARLES W. MORGAN married Anne Rotch Hudson, daughter of his cousin Maria Rotch.
- iv. REBECCA WALN MORGAN, b. Aug. 11, 1794; d. June 18, 1848. Married William Rotch Rodman.
- v. CHARLES WALN MORGAN, b. Sept. 14, 1796; d. April 7, 1861. Married Sarah Rodman. Their daughters Emily and Clara married William J. Rotch.
- vi. WALN MORGAN, b. May 28, 1798; d. Sept. 12, 1815 in New Bedford, aged seventeen years, three months.
- vii. ANNE WALN MORGAN, b. June 4, 1800; d. Jan. 30, 1884. Married Francis Rotch. Their granddaughter Anne Hudson married Charles W. Morgan.
- viii. SUSAN WALN MORGAN, b. Sept. 5, 1802; d. Nov. 11, 1871. Married Benjamin Rodman.

21. RODMAN<sup>6</sup> ROTCH (*Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Joseph and Anne (Smith) Rotch, was born Sept. 19, 1820, and died in Louisville, Ky., March 17, 1854 (then a resident of Dartmouth, Mass.). He was entombed in Oak Grove Cemetery, New Bedford. In July, 1913, the body was removed to Mount Auburn Cemetery, Cambridge, Mass. He married in Philadelphia May 15, 1843, Helen Morgan, born Jan. 23, 1822, died in Louisville, Ky., April 29, 1890, daughter of Thomas Waln and Hannah (Griffitts) Morgan of Philadelphia.

Children:

49. i. ANNA MORGAN ROTCH, b. Feb. 28, 1844; d. Sept. 27, 1901. Unmarried.
  50. ii. THOMAS MORGAN ROTCH, b. Dec. 9, 1849; d. March 9, 1914.
25. CAROLINE FLEEMING<sup>6</sup> (*Mary<sup>5</sup> Rotch, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>,*

*William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of John W. C. and Mary (Rotch) Fleeming, was born Dec. 22, 1825, and died Jan. 3, 1893. She married Aug. 28, 1845, Robert Harford Hare, born in Philadelphia Sept. 19, 1820, died there May 3, 1887, son of Robert and Harriet (Clark) Hare of Philadelphia.

Children, born in Philadelphia:

- 51. i. MARY FLEEMING HARE, b. June 17, 1846; d. March 20, 1885.
- 52. ii. HARRIET HARE, b. July 23, 1847; d. Oct. 23, 1928.

27. KATE HUNTER<sup>7</sup> (*Mary S.<sup>6</sup> Rotch, William R.<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Charles and Mary S. (Rotch) Hunter, was born in New Bedford Feb. 9, 1849, and died in Katonah, N. Y., July 1, 1930. She married in Newport, R. I., Oct. 7, 1873, Thomas Dunn, born Oct. 10, 1834, died May 24, 1916, son of Dr. Theophilus C. and Elizabeth (Potter) Dunn of Newport.

Children, born in Newport:

- 53. i. CHARLES HUNTER DUNN, b. Dec. 21, 1875. Unmarried. Residence, Katonah, N. Y.
- 54. ii. ROBERT STEED DUNN, b. Aug. 16, 1877.
- 55. iii. ANNA CAROLINE ROTCH DUNN, b. Dec. 8, 1879. Unmarried. Residence, Katonah, N. Y.

29. MARY ROTCH HUNTER<sup>7</sup> (*Mary S.<sup>6</sup> Rotch, William R.<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Charles and Mary S. (Rotch) Hunter, was born in Newport, R. I., March 8, 1854, and died in New York City March 22, 1936. She married (1) in Newport Oct. 17, 1877, Walter Langdon Kane, born in New York May 10, 1843, died in Newport Sept. 19, 1896 son of Delancy and Louisa (Langdon) Kane; (2) in New York City April 28, 1900, William E. Glyn, born in England 1859, died 1939.

Children, born in Newport:

- 56. i. CAROLINE HUNTER KANE, b. March 10, 1880.
- 57. ii. HELEN DOROTHEA KANE, b. Aug. 4, 1886; d. 1938; m. 1915 Seymour Johnson of New York; no children.

31. WILLIAM ROTCH ANGIER<sup>7</sup> (*Elizabeth<sup>6</sup> Rotch, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Rev. Joseph and Elizabeth (Rotch) Angier, was born March 9, 1837, and died Sept. 4, 1880. He married in Philadelphia June 1, 1859, Mary Jane Smith, daughter of Robert Smith of Philadelphia. No children.

32. JOSEPHINE ANGIER<sup>7</sup> (*Elizabeth<sup>6</sup> Rotch, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Rev. Joseph and Elizabeth (Rotch) Angier, was born March 25, 1840, and died Aug. 9, 1914. She married in Milton, Mass., April 19, 1871, Hon. William Binney of Providence and Newport, R. I., born in Philadelphia April 14, 1825, son of Hon. Horace and

Elizabeth (Cox) Binney of Philadelphia. No children. Mr. Binney married (1) Charlotte Hope Goddard of Providence, who died April 26, 1866. There were four children by this marriage.

34. ARTHUR<sup>7</sup> ROTCH (*Benjamin S.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Benjamin S. and Annie B. (Lawrence) Rotch, was born in Boston May 13, 1850, and died in Beverly, Mass., Aug. 15, 1894. Harvard, 1871. He married Nov. 16, 1892, Lisette (Eliza) De Wolf Colt, daughter of George De Wolf and Ellen (Brewer) Colt of Bristol, R. I. No children. She married (2) Ralph Curtis.

Mr. Rotch studied architecture at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology, and the Ecole des Beaux Arts in Paris. He passed seven years abroad in the study of architecture and painting. In 1880 he formed a partnership with George T. Tilden in Boston, and they became one of the leading architectural firms in the country, designing many large residences, churches, college buildings and public libraries. Mr. Rotch was also an accomplished water colorist. Influential in founding the Rotch Travelling Scholarship endowed by his father he was likewise a patron of the architectural library of the Massachusetts Institute of Technology. By his will he left \$40,000 to the School of Architecture, M. I. T., and \$25,000 to the Boston Museum of Fine Arts, of which he was a trustee. "His most important contribution was to the taste of his time and to architectural education," wrote T. F. Hamlin in the "Dictionary of American Biography," analyzing Mr. Rotch's work.

35. AIMEE<sup>7</sup> ROTCH (*Benjamin S.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Benjamin S. and Annie B. (Lawrence) Rotch, was born in Paris June 16, 1852, and died at White Sulphur Springs, W. Va., April 15, 1918. She married Winthrop Sargent, who died Sept. 16, 1916. No children.

37. ANNIE LAWRENCE<sup>7</sup> ROTCH (*Benjamin S.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Benjamin S. and Annie B. (Lawrence) Rotch, was born in Boston Feb. 14, 1857. She married in Mattapan, Mass., April 14, 1890, Horatio Appleton Lamb, born in Boston Jan. 11, 1850, died there May 2, 1926, son of Thomas and Hannah Dawes (Eliot) Lamb of Boston. She built and presented to the parish the Episcopal Church of the Holy Spirit, Mattapan, Mass., in 1886. Residence, Boston.

Children, born in Boston:

58. i. THOMAS LAMB, b. Jan. 19, 1892.
59. ii. AIMEE LAMB, b. May 23, 1893. Unmarried.
60. iii. BENJAMIN ROTCH LAMB, b. Jan. 7, 1895; d. Feb. 22, 1895.
61. iv. ROSAMOND LAMB, b. Dec. 17, 1898. Unmarried.
62. v. ANNIE LAWRENCE LAMB, b. Dec. 17, 1898; d. Dec. 6, 1899.
63. vi. EDITH DUNCAN LAMB, b. July 15, 1901; d. Aug. 12, 1928.

39. ABBOTT LAWRENCE<sup>7</sup> ROTCH (*Benjamin S.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Benjamin S. and Annie B. (Lawrence) Rotch, was born in Boston Jan. 6, 1861, and died there April 7, 1912. M. I. T., 1884. He married Nov. 22, 1893, Margaret Randolph Anderson, of Savannah, Ga., daughter of Colonel Edward Clifford and Jane Margaret (Randolph) Anderson, and a descendant of Thomas Jefferson. She married (2) Nov. 1, 1919, Henry Parkman, Jr., of Boston; divorced. She died in Milton, Mass., May 3, 1941.

Distinguished as a meteorologist Mr. Rotch was professor of meteorology at Harvard. His efforts to advance man's knowledge of the atmosphere were lifelong. Even while an undergraduate at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology he conceived plans for the Blue Hill Observatory in Milton, Mass., for the study of weather phenomena, and was its founder. He maintained it at his own expense and endowed it with a bequest of \$50,000 in his will.

He was an extensive traveller and mountain climber. His work was known and greatly appreciated abroad, resulting in the conferral of decorations by foreign governments. Harvard honored him with the degree of Master of Arts in 1891.

Deeply interested in aeronautics Mr. Rotch made balloon ascensions in Europe. He was a firm believer in man's ultimate conquest of the air, and was one of the founders of the Aero Club of America. He wrote two books on his favorite subject, and contributed many papers to scientific periodicals. His bibliography comprises 183 titles. He was a member of many scientific societies in this country and Europe. A biographical sketch appears in the "Dictionary of American Biography."

Children, born in Boston:

- 64. i. ELIZABETH ROTCH, b. June 12, d. June 29, 1895.
- 65. ii. MARGARET RANDOLPH ROTCH, b. June 14, 1896; d. March 19, 1945.
- 66. iii. ARTHUR ROTCH, b. Feb. 1, 1899.
- 67. iv. KATHERINE LAWRENCE ROTCH, b. May 26, 1906.

41. WILLIAM<sup>7</sup> ROTCH (*William J.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of William J. and Emily (Morgan) Rotch, was born in New Bedford July 22, 1844, and died there Aug. 14, 1925. He married in New Bedford Sept. 6, 1873, Mary Rotch Eliot, born in New Bedford Oct. 9, 1847, died in Boston Nov. 21, 1929, daughter of Thomas Dawes and Frances Lincoln (Brock) Eliot of New Bedford.

After attending Friends Academy Mr. Rotch was graduated from Harvard in 1865. In 1869 he received the degree of Ingenieur Civil at the Ecole Imperiale Centrale des Arts et Manufactures at Paris, ranking ninth in a class of 225. During the years 1871-74 he had a part in the construction of the Fall River Water Works system as assistant engineer, and from 1875 to 1880 was chief engineer and superintendent. Subsequently he was consulting engineer or otherwise concerned in an official capacity for various railroads and other corporations, in some of which he served as a director.

He was a director of the Walker Company, which installed the complete electric set-up in the Waldorf-Astoria Hotel in New York, then termed the finest electric lighting plant in America.

In 1881 Mr. Rotch was appointed by Governor John D. Long of Massachusetts as engineer of the commission which finally established the boundary line between Massachusetts and Rhode Island, which had been in dispute for more than 200 years.

He gave much attention to the affairs of the Alliance Francaise of Boston and Cambridge, of which he was elected president. He was also a member of the Association des Anciens Eleves de l'Ecole Centrale of Paris. Deeply interested in community welfare he served in 1870 as the first president of the New Bedford Union for Good Works, and subsequently as a trustee of the Friends Academy, New Bedford, and was also a director of Boston hospitals. He was likewise a trustee of the Rotch Travelling Scholarship for Architects.

Mr. Rotch was the author of various reports on water works and railways. For many years he made his home in Boston, and was one of the oldest summer residents of Nonquitt.

Children:

68. i. EDITH ELIOT ROTCH, b. Aug. 11, 1874. Unmarried.
69. ii. WILLIAM ROTCH, b. Aug. 17, 1876; d. Boston Nov. 16, 1912. Unmarried.
70. iii. CHARLES MORGAN ROTCH, b. May 19, 1878.
71. iv. MARY ELIOT ROTCH, b. Dec. 6, 1879; d. Dec. 9, 1879.
72. v. CLARA MORGAN ROTCH, b. Feb. 17, 1881.

43. MORGAN<sup>7</sup> ROTCH (*William J.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of William J. and Emily (Morgan) Rotch, was born in New Bedford April 8, 1848, and died there Jan. 30, 1910. Harvard, 1871. He married in New Bedford Dec. 4, 1879, Josephine G. Grinnell, born in New Bedford June 6, 1856, died in Lakeville, Mass., July 1, 1939, daughter of Joseph G. and Lydia Williams (Presbury) Grinnell of New Bedford.

Mr. Rotch was engaged in the insurance business in New Bedford for many years. Entering politics, he served in the New Bedford Common Council and later was a Colonel on the Military Staff of Governor Oliver Ames. For four years, 1885-1888, he was Mayor of New Bedford and gave the city a progressive administration. Subsequently, he was State Senator and a member of the New Bedford Board of Public Works. He was a director in various cotton mill enterprises and other corporations. For three years he was president of the Wamsutta Club.

He was very fond of animals and for many years raised trotting horses. He was a familiar figure on County and Hawthorn Streets with a racing sleigh and a fast trotter. He was a member of the Brookline Country Club in the days when racing was carried on there, and for many years drove from New Bedford to Brookline for the races.

He bought a farm in Lakeville, Mass., about 1889 and raised horses and

Jersey cows. This farm after his death became the property of his son, Arthur G. Rotch.

Children, born in New Bedford:

- 73. i. ARTHUR GRINNELL ROTCH, b. Nov. 22, 1880.
- 74. ii. EMILY MORGAN ROTCH, b. March 21, 1882.

44. ISABEL MORGAN<sup>7</sup> ROTCH (*William J.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of William J. and Emily (Morgan) Rotch, was born in New Bedford May 30, 1850, and died there Nov. 21, 1921. She married in New Bedford May 9, 1883, Pierre Clarke Severance of Boston, born in Cleveland, Ohio, Sept. 16, 1849, died in Boston April 20, 1890, son of Theodoric Cordenio and Caroline Maria (Seymour) Severance of Los Angeles, Calif.

Children, born in Boston:

- 75. i. EMILY MORGAN SEVERANCE, b. Oct. 11, 1884.
- 76. ii. WILLIAM ROTCH SEVERANCE, b. Oct. 17, 1886.

45. SARAH RODMAN<sup>7</sup> ROTCH (*William J.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of William J. and Emily (Morgan) Rotch, was born in New Bedford April 5, 1854, and died there June 14, 1936. She married in New Bedford July 8, 1876, Frederick Swift, born in New Bedford Dec. 12, 1852, died there Dec. 16, 1915, son of William Cole Nye and Eliza Nye (Perry) Swift of New Bedford.

Children, born in New Bedford:

- 77. i. HELEN ROTCH SWIFT, b. June 12, 1877.
- 78. ii. FREDERICK ROTCH SWIFT, b. July 21, 1878; d. Jan. 22, 1940.
- 79. iii. RODMAN SWIFT, b. Feb. 15, 1880.

46. EMILY MORGAN<sup>7</sup> ROTCH (*William J.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of William J. and Emily (Morgan) Rotch, was born in New Bedford Feb. 3, 1860. She married in New Bedford June 18, 1889, Dr. John Thornton Bullard, born in Boston March 31, 1864, died in New Bedford Feb. 23, 1927, son of John Lincoln and Sarah Walter (Spooner) Bullard.

Coming from Boston to New Bedford in early life Dr. Bullard was educated at the Friends Academy and Harvard, being graduated A.B. in 1884 and M.D. in 1887. Subsequently he took courses at Heidelberg and Vienna. He began practice in New Bedford in 1889, and became one of the city's leading physicians and surgeons. For many years he was a member of the surgical staff of St. Luke's Hospital, resigning in 1909, when he was elected a member of the consulting staff. He was also a trustee of the Hospital corporation. Dr. Bullard was for three years a member of the New Bedford Board of Health, and also served as port physician and associate medical examiner.



Emily Morgan Rotch  
and her husband  
Dr. John Thornton Bullard  
March 1, 1908



Catherine C. and John M. Bullard  
At Morris Gray's wedding September 16, 1944.

He was a director in the Pierce Manufacturing Company, the Potomska Mills, and the Pairpoint Corporation. He was president of the Board of Trustees of the Friends Academy, and first president of the New Bedford Country Club, which he was instrumental in organizing.

After he retired from the active practice of his profession in 1910 Dr. Bullard and his family spent the winters for the next fifteen years in Boston, returning to New Bedford or Nonquitt for the balance of the year. After 1924 he spent the whole year in New Bedford in the house on the northeast corner of County and Spring Streets, the northerly part of which was originally probably built in the very early eighteen hundreds by William Rotch as a cottage, enlarged a decade or so later by James Arnold for his mother by the addition of the southerly part, and much altered by the Bullards and moved a bit to the south in 1896.

Children, born in New Bedford:

80. i. JOHN MORGAN BULLARD, b. June 7, 1890.
81. ii. HELEN ROTCH BULLARD, b. Jan. 25, 1892.
82. iii. WILLIAM ROTCH BULLARD, b. Oct. 16, 1893.
83. iv. EMILY BULLARD, b. July 20, 1895.
84. v. LYDIA GARDNER BULLARD, b. Nov. 3, 1896.

### THE BULLARD FAMILY

Although these notes will be of no interest to most members of the Rotch family, they are inserted to preserve the information for the descendants of Emily Morgan Rotch (No. 46) and of Henry Rice Guild (No. 570).

Robert Bullard (b. abt. 1600—d. 1639. ae. 40), who was in Watertown, Mass. in 1638, was the son of William Bullard of Barnham, St. Martin, in England. This William's four sons all came to Massachusetts. William, the oldest son, and John, the third son, settled in Dedham; Robert, the second son, and George, the youngest, in Watertown. Their great-great grandfather was John Buller of Barnham, (b. abt. 1485) whose son, John Buller (b. abt. 1510) married Margaret. Their son, Henry Buller (b. abt. 1535), also married a Margaret. Their son, William, the first to spell his name Bullard, (b. abt. 1562) married in 1587 Grace Bignette. They were the parents of five daughters and the four American sons.

Robert Bullard married Anna and had a son, Benjamin (b. abt. 1630—d. Sept. 27, 1689), who settled Sherborn, Mass. and married in 1677 Elizabeth Thorpe (d. 1719). Their son, John Bullard (b. March 7, 1678—d. after Sept. 27, 1753 and before April 11, 1754), lived in Medway and married January 7, 1702 Abigail Leland (b. Feb. 17, 1683—d. 1761). Their son, Henry Bullard (b. Oct. 1, 1723—d. April 30, 1799), also of Medway, married March 14, 1745-6 Jemima Pond (b. June 3, 1727—d. May 19, 1766).

Rev. John Bullard (b. Nov. 28, 1756—d. Sept. 18, 1821), a son of Henry and Jemima, received his A.B. degree from Harvard in 1776, was at the battle of Bunker Hill, and was ordained Oct. 18, 1779. His church was at Pepperell, Mass. He married Oct. 16, 1779 Elizabeth Adams (b. Aug. 2, 1754—d. 1827), daughter of Rev. Amos Adams. They had four sons, John,

Henry Adams (Harvard 1807), Charles Adams (Harvard 1819), Royal, and some daughters.

John Bullard (b. March 5, 1784—d. 1871), married in 1808 Sarah Parker (b. 1786—d. July 15, 1813), also of Pepperell. Their child, John Parker Bullard, (b. Nov. 30, 1809—d. Jan. 29, 1845) Harvard A.B. 1829, LL.B. 1836, married August 19, 1839 Lucy Forbes Brigham, and practiced law in Clinton, Louisiana, in which state his Uncle Henry Adams Bullard was a judge of the Supreme Court.

John Lincoln Bullard was born August 17, 1840, and when his father died five years later at the comparatively early age of thirty-five, was brought to New Bedford by his mother to spend much of his boyhood and youth with her brother, Lincoln Flagg Brigham, a member of the law firm of Clifford and Brigham, which has become the firm of Crapo, Clifford, Prescott & Bullard. John L. Bullard graduated from Harvard in 1861, served as a captain in the commissary department of the United States Army, and married in New Bedford June 10, 1863, Sarah Walter Spooner (b. Sept. 7, 1841—d. June 1, 1866), daughter of Walter Sprague Spooner (b. 1816—d. Oct. 4, 1841) and Lydia Hussey Gardner (b. April 23, 1818—d. Oct. 18, 1902) who had married Nov. 12, 1840. She was the daughter of Captain Edmund Gardner of Nantucket, who once was badly bitten by a whale. Walter S. Spooner, only son of Dr. Paul Spooner (1786-1862) of New Bedford and Sarah H. Grinnell (1789-1855), daughter of Capt. Moses Grinnell, was a great grandson of Walter Spooner (1720-1803), who was a member of the Council in the first Provincial Government of Massachusetts during the Revolution and of the Constitutional Convention, and his wife, Alathea Sprague (1726-1789). John Alden and Priscilla Mullins of Mayflower fame were Alathea Sprague's great-great grandparents. Sarah H. Grinnell also had a Mayflower ancestor, Richard Warren.

John Lincoln Bullard and Sarah Walter Spooner had two children, John Thornton Bullard who married Emily M. Rotch (No. 46) and Sarah Spooner Bullard (b. May 20, 1866—d. Dec. 23, 1941) who on June 18, 1895, married Charles H. L. Delano and had no issue.

On the death of their mother the two Bullard children were brought back from Boston to New Bedford to be with their Grandmother Spooner, who ever since her husband's early death had made her home with her sister-in-law, Sophia B. Spooner, and the latter's husband, John R. Thornton. Walter Thornton (1836-1905) and his cousin, Sarah Spooner, had grown up in this household practically as brother and sister. He was known to the young Bullards as "Uncle" Walter, and his father, who can be identified in his pictures by a black patch always worn on his forehead to cover a scar where a horse's kick had broken his skull in his youth, was, naturally, Uncle John.

John L. Bullard had had no means of caring for his babies when his first wife died and had little to do with their upbringing, but he remained on the best of terms with them and the Thornton household. His business as a cotton broker took him to New York and he made his home in Brooklyn and

later Short Hills, N. J. On Nov. 5, 1868 he married Charlotte Haskell (1845-1898) of New Bedford or Acushnet, daughter of Elisha Haskell and his wife, Alice Hathaway. They had one daughter, Lucy Forbes Bullard, who married Louis Pintard Bayard and had three children, Louis, Jr., Alice Hathaway Bayard, and Martha Pintard Bayard, who married Henry R. Guild (No. 570).

47. ANNA SMITH<sup>7</sup> ROTCH (*William J.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of William J. and Emily (Morgan) Rotch, was born in New Bedford April 30, 1861, and died in South Dartmouth, Mass., Oct. 21, 1934. She married in New Bedford June 11, 1887, Francis Hathaway Stone, born in New Bedford Dec. 27, 1856, died there Feb. 27, 1941, son of Joshua Clapp and Elizabeth (Hathaway) Stone of New Bedford and Boston.

Son:

85. i. FRANCIS HATHAWAY STONE, b. in New Bedford July 3, 1888.

50. DR. THOMAS MORGAN<sup>7</sup> ROTCH (*Rodman<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Rodman and Helen (Morgan) Rotch, was born in Philadelphia Dec. 9, 1849, and died in Boston March 9, 1914. Harvard, A.B., 1870; M.D., 1874. He married June 4, 1874, Helen Rotch, born July 15, 1846, died Sept. 3, 1914, daughter of William J. and Emily (Morgan) Rotch of New Bedford. (See No. 42.)

After studying abroad, 1874-1876, Dr. Rotch began the practice of pediatrics in Boston, and became a leader in that field. In 1881 he established and became director of the West End Nursery and Infants Hospital. In 1914 a new building was completed on the grounds of the Harvard Medical School by means of a fund raised by his friends, and the institution was renamed, in honor of his deceased son, the Thomas Morgan Rotch, Jr., Memorial Hospital for Infants.

Dr. Rotch was for many years professor of pediatrics in the Harvard Medical School. Through his efforts the feeding of infants was placed on a scientific basis. He published two books which won him recognition abroad, and in 1903 he was appointed consulting physician to St. Francis Hospital for Infants in London. A sketch of Dr. Rotch and his work appears in the "Dictionary of American Biography."

Son:

86. i. THOMAS MORGAN ROTCH, JR., b. May 21, 1878; d. March 13, 1902. Harvard, 1901. Unmarried.

51. MARY FLEEMING HARE<sup>7</sup> (*Caroline Fleeming<sup>6</sup>, Mary<sup>5</sup> Rotch, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Robert H. and Caroline (Fleeming) Hare, was born in Philadelphia June 17, 1846, and died there March 20, 1885. She married in Philadelphia Feb. 12, 1874, Sussex Dela-

ware Davis, born in Wilmington, Del., Dec. 30, 1838, died in Philadelphia March 5, 1924, son of Samuel Boyer and Sally B. (Jones) Davis of Wilmington. He was graduated at Princeton, admitted to the bar Jan. 11, 1862, and practiced law in Philadelphia.

Children:

- 87. i. SAMUEL BOYER DAVIS, b. March 9, 1875; d. Feb. 17, 1947.
- 88. ii. CAROLINE HARE DAVIS, b. July 20, 1876; d. Sept. 2, 1942.
- 89. iii. ROBERT HARE DAVIS, b. Aug. 16, 1877.
- 90. iv. SUSSEX DELAWARE DAVIS, b. Oct. 30, 1881; d. Feb. 25, 1883.

52. HARRIET HARE<sup>7</sup> (*Caroline Fleeming*<sup>6</sup>, *Mary*<sup>5</sup> Rotch, *William*<sup>4</sup>, *William*<sup>3</sup>, *Joseph*<sup>2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Robert H. and Caroline (Fleeming) Hare, was born in Philadelphia July 23, 1847, and died there Oct. 23, 1928. She married June 25, 1873, Dr. George McClellan, born in Philadelphia Oct. 29, 1849, died there March 29, 1913, son of Dr. John Hill Brinton and Maria (Eldredge) McClellan of Philadelphia, and a nephew of General George B. McClellan of Civil War fame. No children.

Dr. McClellan studied at the University of Pennsylvania, and was graduated from Jefferson Medical College in 1870. He was a practicing physician in Philadelphia for many years and a surgeon in the Philadelphia and Howard Hospitals; lecturer on Anatomy at the Pennsylvania Academy of Fine Arts; a fellow in the College of Physicians; and author of "Regional Anatomy, in its Relation to Medicine and Surgery," two volumes.

54. ROBERT STEED DUNN<sup>8</sup> (*Kate Hunter*<sup>7</sup>, *Mary S.*<sup>6</sup> Rotch, *William R.*<sup>5</sup>, *William*<sup>4</sup>, *William*<sup>3</sup>, *Joseph*<sup>2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>), son of Thomas and Kate (Hunter) Dunn, was born in Newport, R. I., Aug. 16, 1877. Harvard, 1898. Newspaper correspondent, explorer and author, he has had a varied career as a globe traveller. He was a war correspondent on the Russian-Japanese front in 1904, and was with Pershing's expedition into Mexico in 1916. During World War I he was a Lieutenant (j.g.) United States Navy, serving abroad 1917-19, and was with the United States High Commission in Constantinople, 1919-22. He headed the first ascent of Mount Wrangel, Alaska, in 1908. Mr. Dunn is the author of "The Shameless Diary of An Explorer;" "The Youngest World;" "Five Fronts;" "Margery Nawn;" "Horizon Fever;" and "Least Love." He is unmarried. Residence, Katonah, N. Y.

56. CAROLINE HUNTER KANE<sup>8</sup> (*Mary R. Hunter*<sup>7</sup>, *Mary S.*<sup>6</sup> Rotch, *William R.*<sup>5</sup>, *William*<sup>4</sup>, *William*<sup>3</sup>, *Joseph*<sup>2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Walter Langdon and Mary R. (Hunter) Kane, was born in Newport, R. I., March 10, 1880. She married in New York City April 21, 1900, Edgar Morris Phelps, born Sept. 4, 1876, son of Henry Delafield and Catharine A. (Morris) Phelps of New Rochelle, N. Y. Residence, Newport, R. I.

Children, born in New Rochelle:

91. i. WALTER KANE PHELPS, b. March 21, 1901.
92. ii. HENRY DELAFIELD PHELPS, b. Oct. 6, 1902.
93. iii. ROBERT MORRIS PHELPS, b. May 8, 1910. Unmarried. In World War II he served nearly five years in the United States Navy, retiring as Lieutenant. Residence, Newport, R. I.

58. THOMAS LAMB<sup>8</sup> (*Annie L.<sup>7</sup> Rotch, Benjamin S.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Horatio A. and Annie L. (Rotch) Lamb, was born in Boston Jan. 19, 1892. He married in Chicago May 12, 1923, Lillian W. Strauss, born in Chicago April 26, 1893. He was Second Lieutenant in the United States Tank Corps in World War I. Residence, Waban, Mass.

Son:

94. i. THOMAS LAMB, JR., b. in Boston March 14, 1928.

65. MARGARET RANDOLPH<sup>8</sup> ROTCH (*Abbott L.<sup>7</sup>, Benjamin S.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Abbott L. and Margaret R. (Anderson) Rotch, was born in Boston June 14, 1896, and died there March 19, 1945. She married in Boston June 21, 1916, James Jackson Storrow, born in Boston Nov. 20, 1893, son of James Jackson and Helen (Osborne) Storrow of Boston. She was in the Red Cross Motor Corps during World War I. Mr. Storrow married (2) Jan. 17, 1946, Mrs. Rosamond Benson Whitmore of Marblehead, Mass., widow of John T. Whitmore.

Son:

95. i. JAMES JACKSON STORROW, JR., b. May 7, 1917.

66. ARTHUR<sup>8</sup> ROTCH (*Abbott L.<sup>7</sup>, Benjamin S.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Abbott L. and Margaret R. (Anderson) Rotch, was born in Boston Feb. 1, 1899. Harvard, S.B., 1921. He married in Needham, Mass., April 30, 1935, Alice Gedney Storrow, born Nov. 23, 1900, daughter of Edward Cabot and Caroline M. (Richardson) Storrow of Dedham, Mass. In World War II he was a temporary member of the United States Coast Guard Reserve, June, 1943-September, 1945. Residence, Milton, Mass.

Children, born in Boston:

96. i. ANNE STORROW ROTCH, b. Jan. 28, 1937.
97. ii. ABBOTT LAWRENCE ROTCH, b. March 8, 1939.
98. iii. EDWARD CABOT ROTCH, b. July 9, 1941.

67. KATHERINE LAWRENCE<sup>8</sup> ROTCH (*Abbott L.<sup>7</sup>, Benjamin S.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Abbott L. and Margaret R. (Anderson) Rotch, was born in Boston May 26, 1906. She married in Boston June 17, 1925, Malcolm Whelen Greenough, born in Philadelphia Jan. 22, 1904, son of Malcolm Scollay and Violett (Whelen) Greenough of Cleveland, Ohio. Residence, Boston.

Children, born in Boston:

99. i. MALCOLM WHELEN GREENOUGH, JR., b. June 11, 1926.
100. ii. LAWRENCE ROTCH GREENOUGH, b. Dec. 13, 1930.

70. CHARLES MORGAN<sup>8</sup> ROTCH (*William<sup>7</sup>, William J.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of William and Mary R. (Eliot) Rotch, was born in New Bedford, May 19, 1878. Harvard, 1901. He married (1) in Boston Jan. 1, 1925, Helen Bradley, born in Boston Feb. 25, 1895, died there Jan. 11, 1939, daughter of Richards Merry and Amy (Aldis) Bradley of Milton, Mass.; (2) Mrs. Louise Sprague. Residence, Milton, Mass.

Children, by first marriage:

101. i. HELEN ALDIS ROTCH, b. in Boston Jan. 26, 1926.
102. ii. EDITH ELIOT ROTCH, b. in Boston Feb. 23, 1928.
103. iii. WILLIAM ROTCH, b. in Cambridge, Mass., Nov. 19, 1929.

72. CLARA MORGAN<sup>8</sup> ROTCH (*William<sup>7</sup>, William J.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of William and Mary R. (Eliot) Rotch, was born in Boston Feb. 17, 1881. Attended Radcliffe. She married in Boston March 2, 1907, Dr. Channing Frothingham, born in Brooklyn, N. Y., May 10, 1881, son of Channing and Elizabeth (Gerrish) Frothingham of Brooklyn, N. Y. Residence, Boston.

Children, born in Boston:

104. i. CHANNING FROTHINGHAM, JR., b. Dec. 18, 1907.
105. ii. MARY ELIOT FROTHINGHAM, b. Feb. 8, 1909.
106. iii. JOSEPH ROTCH FROTHINGHAM, b. Sept. 21, 1910.
107. iv. TIMOTHY GERRISH FROTHINGHAM, b. Dec. 12, 1913; d. Jan. 4, 1919.
108. v. WILLIAM ROTCH FROTHINGHAM, b. May 20, 1920. In World War II he served in the Army Air Force, 1942-1945; participating in European and African Campaigns, and receiving middle Eastern Theater Campaign Ribbon.
109. vi. VIRGINIA FROTHINGHAM, b. Aug. 14, 1922.
110. vii. THOMAS ELIOT FROTHINGHAM, b. June 21, 1926. In World War II he was an apprentice seaman, United States Naval Reserve, July, 1944-September, 1945, studying at Harvard during this period.

73. ARTHUR GRINNELL<sup>8</sup> ROTCH (*Morgan<sup>7</sup>, William J.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Morgan and Josephine G. (Grinnell) Rotch, was born in New Bedford Nov. 22, 1880. He married Sept. 30, 1907, Helen Gilman Ludington, born in Lyme, Conn., May 5, 1882, daughter of Charles Henry and Josephine Lord (Noyes) Ludington of Lyme.

Mr. Rotch was educated at Friends' Academy and at Milton Academy, and entering Harvard in 1899 was graduated in 1903. For two years thereafter he studied landscape architecture at the Landscape School at Harvard. In 1905 he took a position as landscape architect in the office of Edward

Bennett in New York and practised his profession there until 1911, when he returned to Boston and opened an office together with the late Hallam Movius, working in Boston and New York.

In 1917 when this country entered the first World War, he volunteered his services to the New England Division of the American Red Cross, and in 1919 became Division Manager until the Division office was closed in 1924. Through this experience he became interested in philanthropic and social work; and was elected to the boards of a number of social agencies. He became president of the Boston Dispensary and in 1930 was instrumental in forming the New England Medical Centre composed of the Boston Dispensary-Floating Hospital and Tufts Medical School. Since that date the Bingham Associates of Massachusetts have joined the Centre. He became vice-president of the Boston Chapter of the Red Cross, president of the Infants Hospital, vice-president of the Charlesbank Homes, vice-president of the Boston Council of Social Agencies and a member of many other boards.

In 1931 foreseeing great difficulties for the charities because of the depression he was a leader in the movement to form an emergency organization to collect money for many of the charities and became the chairman of a citizens' committee. This emergency effort finally developed into the Greater Boston Community Fund. Mr. Rotch has been on the board and executive committee since its formation and is chairman of the Central Budget Committee.

In 1934 he was appointed by Harry Hopkins as Emergency Relief Administrator for Massachusetts and later became the first W.P.A. administrator. In 1938 Governor Saltonstall appointed Mr. Rotch as chairman of the State Unemployment Compensation Advisory Committee, and in October of that year the Governor appointed him Commissioner of Public Welfare, holding that office until July, 1945.

Mr. Rotch was instrumental in forming the Massachusetts Council National War Fund and served on the state committee during its existence. He also served on the Allocation Committee of the National Clothing Collection and the Food Collection for the relief of people in allied countries. He is a director at large of the National Social Welfare Assembly; and vice-chairman of the Budget Committee of National Community Chests and Councils, Inc.

At present he is Secretary Treasurer of the Committee of the Permanent Charity Fund, Inc. He is a member of the Board of Trustees and Executive Committee of the Children's Hospital of Boston, chairman of the Board of the New England Medical Centre; a trustee and member of the Executive Committee of Tufts College, a trustee and member of the Executive Committee of the Boston Floating Hospital, a trustee of the Bingham Associates of Massachusetts, of the Rotch Travelling Scholarship, a director of the Bay State Schools, Inc., trustee and member of the Board of the Greater Boston Charitable Investment Trust.

He is a trustee of the estate of Thomas M. Rotch, a trustee of the Thomas Morgan Rotch, Jr., Memorial Fund, trustee of the estate of Arthur C. Lud-

ington, a director of Willard Helburn, Inc., president of Pinewoods Institute.

He received the Honorary A.M. degree from Tufts College in 1931.  
Children:

111. i. JOSEPHINE NOYES ROTCH, b. in New Bedford July 3, 1908; d. Dec. 10 1929; m. Albert Smith Bigelow.
112. ii. LYDIA WILLIAMS ROTCH, b. in New Bedford July 20, 1910. In World War II she was a pilot in Civilian Air Patrol, and was employed by Wiggins Airways, Inc. She holds a pilot's, commercial, and instructor's license.
113. iii. KATHARINE LUDINGTON ROTCH, b. in New Bedford Feb. 15, 1913. In World War II she was a Sergeant, W. A. C., serving from Feb. 9, 1943, to Nov. 23, 1945.
114. iv. HELEN MORGAN ROTCH, b. in Boston Jan. 20, 1919.
115. v. PHOEBE RODMAN ROTCH, b. in Boston Feb. 22, 1924.

74. EMILY MORGAN<sup>8</sup> ROTCH (*Morgan<sup>7</sup>, William J.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Morgan and Josephine G. (Grinnell) Rotch, was born in New Bedford March 21, 1882. She married in New Bedford April 9, 1910, Thomas Charles Knowles, born in Brooklyn, N. Y., Oct. 15, 1881, son of Sidney Williams and Georgianna Perry (Sullings) Knowles of New Bedford. Residence, New Bedford.

Children, born in New Bedford:

116. i. LOUISE KNOWLES, b. March 16, 1911.
117. ii. SIDNEY WILLIAMS KNOWLES, b. Jan. 31, 1913.
118. iii. JOSEPHINE GRINNELL KNOWLES, b. April 16, 1919.

75. EMILY MORGAN SEVERANCE<sup>8</sup> (*Isabel M. Rotch<sup>7</sup>, William J.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Pierre C. and Isabel M. (Rotch) Severance, was born in Boston Oct. 11, 1884. She married in South Dartmouth, Mass., Oct. 3, 1907, Lawrence Grinnell, born in Warwick, R. I., June 18, 1885, son of Frederick and Mary Brayton (Page) Grinnell of Providence and New Bedford. Residence, South Dartmouth, Mass.

Children:

119. i. LAWRENCE GRINNELL, JR., b. in Lancaster, Mass., Sept. 19, 1909
120. ii. SYLVIA GRINNELL, b. in South Dartmouth, Mass., March 18, 1911
121. iii. PETER SEVERANCE GRINNELL, b. in South Dartmouth, Mass., Oct. 28, 1912.
122. iv. EMILY MORGAN GRINNELL, b. in South Dartmouth, Mass., July 23, 1916.
123. v. BARBARA GRINNELL, b. in New Bedford April 2, 1920.

76. WILLIAM ROTCH SEVERANCE<sup>8</sup> (*Isabel M.<sup>7</sup> Rotch, William J.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Pierre C. and Isabel M. (Rotch) Severance, was born in Boston Oct. 17, 1886. Harvard, 1909. He married in New Bedford Feb. 18, 1911, Susan Williams Grinnell, born

in New Bedford Jan. 15, 1888, daughter of Edmund and Jenny Gibbs (Swift) Grinnell of New Bedford. Residence, Palm City, Calif.

Children:

124. i. RACHEL LEE SEVERANCE, b. in Redlands, Calif., Nov. 3, 1911.
125. ii. WILLIAM ROTCH SEVERANCE, JR., b. in San Bernardino, Calif., Feb. 21, 1913.
126. iii. ISABEL PIERRE SEVERANCE, b. in Los Angeles, Calif., July 28, 1916.
127. iv. PETER GRINNELL SEVERANCE, b. in Redlands, Calif., May 2, 1919.

77. HELEN ROTCH SWIFT<sup>8</sup> (*Sarah R.<sup>7</sup> Rotch, William J.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Frederick and Sarah R. (Rotch) Swift, was born in New Bedford June 12, 1877. She married in New Bedford Oct. 16, 1900, William Mansfield Scudder, born July 19, 1876, son of William Mansfield and Mary (Arnold) Scudder of Chicago. Divorced, 1917. Residence, Washington, D. C.

Children, born in Chicago:

128. i. HELEN ROTCH SCUDDER, b. Nov. 29, 1901.
129. ii. SARAH RODMAN SCUDDER, b. March 15, 1904.

78. FREDERICK ROTCH SWIFT<sup>8</sup> (*Sarah R.<sup>7</sup> Rotch, William J.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Frederick and Sarah R. (Rotch) Swift, was born in New Bedford July 21, 1878, and died in New York City Jan. 22, 1940. Harvard, A.B., 1899; LL.B., 1902. He married (1) Nov. 23, 1903, Eliza Morgan Bates, born Oct. 11, 1879, died April 11, 1923, daughter of Alfred Eliot and Caroline E. (McCorkle) Bates of Washington, D. C.; (2) Feb. 21, 1925, Mary Louise Ross, born Oct. 9, 1890, daughter of William James and Mattie (Miller) Ross of Montreal, Canada.

Children, by first marriage:

130. i. CAROLINE WATERMAN SWIFT, b. June 4, 1905.
131. ii. RODMAN MORGAN SWIFT, b. June 30, 1907; d. June 20, 1919.

79. RODMAN SWIFT<sup>8</sup> (*Sarah R.<sup>7</sup> Rotch, William J.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Frederick and Sarah R. (Rotch) Swift, was born in New Bedford Feb. 15, 1880. Harvard, S.B., 1904. He married June 1, 1907, Elizabeth Townsend Foote, born Sept. 9, 1882, died Nov. 9, 1942, daughter of Arthur DeWint and Mary Ann (Hallock) Foote of Hingham, Mass. Her mother was a writer of some distinction. Residence, Gay Head, Mass.

Children:

132. i. AGNES SWIFT, b. in Grass Valley, Calif., May 14, 1908.
133. ii. SARAH RODMAN SWIFT, b. in Hingham, Mass., April 20, 1913.

80. JOHN MORGAN BULLARD<sup>8</sup> (*Emily M.<sup>7</sup> Rotch, William J.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Dr. John T. and Emily

M. (Rotch) Bullard, was born in New Bedford June 7, 1890. Harvard, A.B., 1913; LL.B., 1915. He married Oct. 10, 1919, Catherine Crapo, born in Saginaw, Mich., July 23, 1897, daughter of Stanford Tappan and Emma Caroline (Morley) Crapo of Detroit, Mich. In World War I he served as Captain, 302 F.A., American Expeditionary Force. This regiment had American-made 4.7-inch guns, and was the only regiment that fired American-made field artillery guns at the front. In World War II he was Lieutenant Colonel, Second Division Headquarters, Massachusetts State Guard. He is an attorney at law and practiced in Boston for two years before World War I and two years after. Since then he has been a member of the firm of Crapo, Clifford, Prescott & Bullard in New Bedford. In the past he has served as president of the Potomska Mills and the Gosnold Mills Corporation and of Greene & Wood, Inc., a lumber corporation. He has also been president of the Old Dartmouth Historical Society which maintains the Bourne Whaling Museum. He is now vice-president of the New Bedford Five Cents Savings Bank and president of St. Luke's Hospital in New Bedford. Residence, South Dartmouth, Mass.

Children:

- 134. i. JOHN CRAPO BULLARD, b. in Boston Feb. 6, 1921.
- 135. ii. SARAH BULLARD, b. in New Bedford July 27, 1924; d. in Boston May 4, 1942.

81. HELEN ROTCH BULLARD<sup>8</sup> (*Emily M.<sup>7</sup> Rotch, William J.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Dr. John T. and Emily M. (Rotch) Bullard, was born in New Bedford Jan. 25, 1892. She married Sept. 16, 1916, Francis Calley Gray, born Jan. 22, 1890, son of Morris and Flora (Grant) Gray of Chestnut Hill, Mass. Residence, Boston.

Children, born in Boston:

- 136. i. MORRIS GRAY, b. June 19, 1921.
- 137. ii. FRANCIS CALLEY GRAY, JR., b. Jan. 25, 1924. In World War II he was an Ensign in the United States Naval Reserve, serving for a year in the Pacific on U.S.S. Livingston.
- 138. iii. JOHN BULLARD GRAY, b. Oct. 9, 1927. In World War II he served eight months in China as a private first class, in the United States Marine Corps Reserve.

82. WILLIAM ROTCH BULLARD<sup>8</sup> (*Emily M.<sup>7</sup> Rotch, William J.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Dr. John T. and Emily M. (Rotch) Bullard, was born in New Bedford Oct. 16, 1893. Harvard, 1916. He married Nov. 11, 1920, Hilda Greenleaf, born April 1, 1895, daughter of Lyman B. and Ellen M. (Browning) Greenleaf of Boston. In World War I he served with the Norton Harjes Ambulance Service with French Army Section 5, July, 1916, to June, 1917, and with Section 61, Chefadjoint, June to October, 1917. He was wounded at Verdun Aug. 20, 1917. He served with the French Army on Verdun, (1916), Champagne, Chemin des Dames and Verdun (1917) fronts. He was commissioned Second Lieutenant

ant, Field Artillery, Nov. 20, 1917, in France, and served with the 65th Artillery in the St. Mihiel and Meuse-Argonne offensives. He was promoted First Lieutenant Oct. 11, 1918. He was awarded the Croix de Guerre with the following citation:

"Sur le front Francaise depuis 1916, a pris part, comme conducteur aux evacuations de Verdun en Decembre dernier; chef adjoint d'une nouvelle section, n'a fait qu' affirmer ses qualités d'audace et de sang-froid. Blessé le 20 aout 1917, a refuse d'arreter son service, continuant a payer de sa personne aux postes les plus perilleux."

Residence, Chestnut Hill, Mass.

Children:

139. i. LYMAN GREENLEAF BULLARD, b. in Springfield, Mass., May 5, 1922. Harvard, 1944. In World War II he was a Lieutenant in the United States Naval Reserve, commissioned May 27, 1943. He served aboard U.S.S. New Jersey from June 14, 1943 to April 15, 1946. Participated in various Pacific engagements from Marshall Islands campaign to occupation of Japan. Discharged June 5, 1946.
140. ii. WILLIAM ROTCH BULLARD, JR., b. in Springfield, Mass., June 4, 1926. Harvard, 1947. In World War II he was a Corporal in the Army Air Forces from Aug. 4, 1944, to Oct. 2, 1946, and was in service with the Fifth Air Force in Japan and Korea.
141. iii. PETER BULLARD, b. in Boston Sept. 16, 1931.

83. EMILY BULLARD<sup>8</sup> (*Emily M.<sup>7</sup> Rotch, William J.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>; William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Dr. John T. and Emily M. (Rotch) Bullard, was born in New Bedford July 20, 1895. She married Sept. 20, 1917, Robert Codman Cobb, born Nov. 11, 1893, son of Charles Kane and Susan (Wheelwright) Cobb of Chestnut Hill, Mass. Residence, Littleton, Mass.

Children, born in Boston:

142. i. LYDIA BULLARD COBB, b. March 22, 1920.
143. ii. EMILY MORGAN COBB, b. Dec. 16, 1923.
144. iii. ROBERT CODMAN COBB, JR., b. June 12, 1926. He attended Harvard, and in World War II served in the Navy for two years.

84. LYDIA GARDNER BULLARD<sup>8</sup> (*Emily M.<sup>7</sup> Rotch, William J.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Dr. John T. and Emily M. (Rotch) Bullard, was born in New Bedford Nov. 3, 1896. She married April 21, 1927, Charles Weston, born Sept. 25, 1891, son of Robert Dickson and Anstiss (Walcott) Weston of Cambridge, Mass. Residence, Brookline, Mass.

Children, born in Boston:

145. i. LYDIA WESTON, b. March 14, 1929.
146. ii. EMILY WESTON, b. March 7, 1930.
147. iii. CAROL WESTON, b. Oct. 29, 1934.

85. FRANCIS HATHAWAY STONE, JR.<sup>8</sup> (*Anna S.<sup>7</sup> Rotch, William J.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Francis H. and Anna S. (Rotch) Stone, was born in New Bedford July 3, 1888. Harvard, 1911. He married in New Bedford Oct. 24, 1914, Lydia Almy Stetson, born April 5, 1892, daughter of Eliot Dawes and Emily Almy (Cummings) Stetson of New Bedford. Lieutenant (j.g.) United States Navy (T), in World War I. Residence, Providence, R. I.

Children, born in Providence, R. I.:

148. i. EMILY ALMY STONE, b. Oct. 8, 1916. In World War II she enlisted in the Women's Naval Auxiliary (WAVES) in September, 1942, when the organization was formed. She was sent to Radio Training School at the University of Wisconsin, from which she was graduated with the rate of RM3/C. She was ordered to duty at the San Diego Naval Air Station, Coronado, Calif., where she remained until the fall of 1944. She was then sent to Midshipmen's School at Smith College, Northampton, Mass., was graduated in November, 1944, with the rank of Ensign (U. S. N. R.), and was assigned to duty at the Twelfth Naval District Communication Office, San Francisco, where she remained until November, 1945, when she was put on inactive duty with the rank of Ensign.
149. ii. BARBARA ELIOT STONE, b. Feb. 9, 1918.
150. iii. HENRY BALDWIN STONE, b. Sept. 10, 1920. In World War II he entered the Naval R. O. T. C. at Harvard in his freshman year and was graduated in 1942 with the rank of Ensign (U. S. N. R.). He was assigned to duty aboard U. S. S. *J. Fred Talbot*, then operating in Caribbean waters. In the fall of 1943 he was ordered to join the ship's company of U. S. S. *Bearss*, a new destroyer then building at Chickasaw, Ala. After commissioning, the ship was ordered to the Aleutian Islands with the Fifth Fleet, where she was based until after the surrender of Japan. She then went with occupation forces to the Ominato Naval Base and the Tsugaru Straits. The ship returned to the United States in December, 1945, and he was put on inactive duty in February, 1946, with the rank of Lieutenant.
151. iv. LYDIA HATHAWAY STONE, b. Nov. 28, 1928.

87. S[AMUEL] BOYER DAVIS<sup>8</sup> (*Mary F. Hare<sup>7</sup>, Caroline Fleeming<sup>6</sup>, Mary<sup>5</sup> Rotch, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Sussex D. and Mary F. (Hare) Davis, was born in Philadelphia March 9, 1875, and died in Bryn Mawr, Penna., Feb. 17, 1947. Princeton, 1896, Harvard, LL.B., 1899. He married (1) at Woods Hole, Mass., Sept. 26, 1900, Ruth Harding, born Jan. 15, 1880, died June 29, 1942, daughter of Edgar and Sarah (Robinson) Harding of Boston; (2) Aug. 9, 1945, Caroline French Rulon Miller, born March 25, 1892, daughter of John Rulon and Margaret (French) Miller of Philadelphia. Residence, Rosemont, Penna.

Children, by first marriage:

152. i. PRISCILLA DAVIS, b. in Boston Sept. 26, 1902.
153. ii. MARY HARE DAVIS, b. in Boston, Jan. 28, 1906.
154. iii. S[AMUEL] BOYER DAVIS, JR., b. in Marblehead, Mass., Aug. 15, 1913.
88. CAROLINE HARE DAVIS<sup>8</sup> (*Mary F. Hare<sup>7</sup>, Caroline Fleeming<sup>6</sup>, Mary<sup>5</sup>*

*Rotch, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Sussex D. and Mary F. (Hare) Davis, was born at Cape May, N. J., July 20, 1876, and died in Philadelphia Sept. 2, 1942. She married in Philadelphia Oct. 8, 1904, William Penn-Gaskell Hall, born in San Antonio, Texas, Jan. 16, 1873, died in Paoli, Penna., July 28, 1927, son of Colonel Peter Penn-Gaskell and Amelia (Mixsell) Hall of Villa Nova, Penna. Residence: Paoli, Penna.

Children:

155. i. MARY FLEEMING HARE HALL, b. Dec. 30, 1905.  
156. ii. WILLIAM PENN-GASKELL HALL, b. Oct. 9, 1908.

89. ROBERT HARE DAVIS<sup>8</sup> (*Mary F. Hare<sup>7</sup>, Caroline Fleeming<sup>6</sup>, Mary<sup>5</sup> Rotch, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Sussex D. and Mary F. (Hare) Davis, was born Aug. 16, 1877. Princeton, 1898. He married (1) June 3, 1916, Kate Furness Jayne, born July 29, 1895, daughter of Dr. Horace and Caroline (Furness) Jayne of Philadelphia; and granddaughter of Dr. Horace Howard Furness, Shakespearean scholar; divorced; (2) June 14, 1934, Virginia Preston Miller, born June 26, 1902, daughter of Dr. Caspar Wistar and Virginia (Preston) Miller of Wallingford, Penna. In 1918 he was Assistant Director of the American Red Cross in Washington, D. C. Residences, Stevensville, Mont., and Ithan, Penna.

Children, by first marriage:

157. i. ELIZABETH JAYNE DAVIS, b. in Philadelphia Jan. 5, 1919.  
158. ii. KATE FURNESS JAYNE DAVIS, b. in Wallingford, Penna., July 7, 1920.

By second marriage:

159. iii. CAROLINE DAVIS, b. in Bryn Mawr, Penna., May 24, 1935.  
160. iv. CASPAR WISTAR DAVIS, b. in Bryn Mawr July 2, 1939.

91. WALTER KANE PHELPS<sup>9</sup> (*Caroline H. Kane<sup>8</sup>, Mary R. Hunter<sup>7</sup>, Mary S.<sup>6</sup> Rotch, William R.<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Edgar M. and Caroline H. (Kane) Phelps, was born in New Rochelle, N. Y., March 21, 1901. Harvard, 1923. He married in New York City Feb. 16, 1939, Constance Miller, born Jan. 4, 1913, daughter of Nathan L. Miller, former Governor of New York, and wife Elizabeth Davern. Residence, Newport, R. I.

Children:

161. i. RICHARD STOCKTON PHELPS, b. in Providence, R. I., March 24, 1940.  
162. ii. WALTER KANE PHELPS, Jr., b. in Newport, R. I., June 14, 1941.

92. HENRY DELAFIELD PHELPS<sup>9</sup> (*Caroline H. Kane<sup>8</sup>, Mary R. Hunter<sup>7</sup>, Mary S.<sup>6</sup> Rotch, William R.<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Edgar M. and Caroline H. (Kane) Phelps, was born in New Rochelle, N. Y., Oct. 6, 1902. He married (1) at Manhassett, N. Y., Sept. 11, 1931, Muriel Vanderbilt [Church], daughter of William Kissam, II and Virginia

Graham (Fair) Vanderbilt. Divorced, June, 1936; (2) in Providence, R. I., May 30, 1942, Harriet Dean Jackson, born Aug. 2, 1915, daughter of Donald Eldredge and Rachel (Smith) Jackson of Providence. In World War II he saw more than four years' active service (1941-45) as a Lieutenant, United States Naval Reserve, and was administrative officer in the Air Branch. Residence, Middletown, R. I.

Children:

163. i. HENRY DELAFIELD PHELPS, JR., b. April 6, 1945; d. May 1, 1945.  
163a. ii. CAROLINE KANE PHELPS, b. Aug. 8, 1946.

95. JAMES JACKSON STORROW, JR.<sup>9</sup> (*Margaret R.<sup>8</sup> Rotch, Abbott L.<sup>7</sup>, Benjamin S.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of James J. and Margaret R. (Rotch) Storrow, was born May 7, 1917. Harvard, 1940. He married June 26, 1940, Patricia Blake, born April 13, 1918, daughter of Dr. Gerald and Edna (Malone) Blake of Brookline, Mass. In World War II he served as a "Seabee," United States Naval Reserve, 1943-1945, in the South Pacific. Residence, Brookline, Mass.

Sons, born in Boston:

164. i. GERALD BLAKE STORROW, b. July 15, 1944.  
165. ii. PETER STORROW, b. Sept. 26, 1946.

104. CHANNING FROTHINGHAM, JR.<sup>9</sup> (*Clara M.<sup>8</sup> Rotch, William<sup>7</sup>, William J.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Dr. Channing and Clara M. (Rotch) Frothingham, was born in Boston Dec. 18, 1907. Harvard, B.S., 1931, M.B.A., 1938. He married in Boston July 24, 1937, Rose Farwell Whitman, born Nov. 19, 1913, daughter of Hendricks Hallett and Adelaide Chatfield (Chatfield-Taylor) Whitman of Boston. Divorced, 1944. In World War II he served, 1942-1945, in the United States Naval Reserve, being successively Lieutenant, Lieutenant-Commander, and Commander. Residence, Boston.

Son:

166. i. CHANNING FROTHINGHAM, III, b. in Boston April 5, 1939.

105. MARY ELIOT FROTHINGHAM<sup>9</sup> (*Clara M.<sup>8</sup> Rotch, William<sup>7</sup>, William J.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Dr. Channing and Clara M. (Rotch) Frothingham, was born in Boston Feb. 8, 1909. Bryn Mawr, A.B., 1931; A.M., 1937. She married June 16, 1939, Charles Jackson, Jr., born Jan. 5, 1910, son of Charles and Elizabeth Bethune (Higginson) Jackson. Residence, Dover, Mass.

Children, born in Boston:

167. i. MARY ELIOT JACKSON, b. Oct. 8, 1940.  
168. ii. SARAH ANN JACKSON, b. Oct. 30, 1943.  
169. iii. REBECCA JACKSON, b. Aug. 25, 1946.  
170. iv. DEBORAH JACKSON, b. Aug. 25, 1946.

106. JOSEPH ROTCH FROTHINGHAM<sup>9</sup> (*Clara M.<sup>8</sup> Rotch, William<sup>7</sup>, William J.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Dr. Channing and Clara M. (Rotch) Frothingham, was born in Boston Sept. 21, 1910. Trinity College, B.S., 1933; Harvard, M.D., 1937. He married in Milton, Mass., Aug. 17, 1940, Janet Forbes, born Dec. 14, 1916, daughter of Alexander and Charlotte Irving (Grinnell) Forbes of Milton. In World War II he was a Captain in the Medical Corps, 1942-45. Residence, South Dartmouth, Mass.

Children:

171. i. JOSEPH ROTCH FROTHINGHAM, Jr., b. in Boston Jan. 21, 1942.  
172. ii. MARTHA FROTHINGHAM, b. in New Bedford Aug. 13, 1946.

109. VIRGINIA FROTHINGHAM<sup>9</sup> (*Clara M.<sup>8</sup> Rotch, William<sup>7</sup>, William J.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Dr. Channing and Clara M. (Rotch) Frothingham, was born in Boston Aug. 14, 1922. Vassar, 1944. She married in Boston Jan. 11, 1947, Dr. George Guest Haydock, born Jan. 9, 1919, son of Robert and Ruth (Harrington) Haydock, of Hewlett, Long Island. Harvard, A.B., 1941, M.D., 1945. She worked in the Underwater Sound Research Laboratory connected with Harvard University, 1944-46.

114. HELEN MORGAN<sup>9</sup> ROTCH (*Arthur G.<sup>8</sup>, Morgan<sup>7</sup>, William J.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Arthur G. and Helen G. (Ludington) Rotch, was born in Boston Jan. 20, 1919. Attended Bennington College. She married in Middleboro, Mass., Sept. 3, 1938, Dr. Charles Lee Buxton, born in Superior, Wis., Oct. 14, 1904, son of Edward Timothy and Lucinda (Lee) Buxton, of New Canaan, Conn. In World War II he served with rank of Commander, United States Naval Reserve. Residence, Riverdale, N. Y.

Children:

173. i. KATHERINE LEE BUXTON, b. in New York March 27, 1940; d. there June 14, 1940.  
174. ii. TIMOTHY LEE BUXTON, b. in New York June 11, 1942.  
175. iii. ANTHONY MORGAN BUXTON, b. in Annapolis, Md., May 20, 1944.  
176. iv. EDWARD ROTCH BUXTON, b. in New York May 15, 1945.

115. PHOEBE RODMAN<sup>9</sup> ROTCH (*Arthur G.<sup>8</sup>, Morgan<sup>7</sup>, William J.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Arthur G. and Helen G. (Ludington) Rotch, was born in Boston Feb. 22, 1924. She married Dec. 11, 1943, Henry Natsch Furnald, Jr., born Jan. 13, 1917, son of Rev. Henry Natsch and Ethel Helena (Budington) Furnald of New York City; Princeton, 1939; Fletcher School of Law and Diplomacy, Medford, Mass., M.A., 1940. In World War II he served as a Lieutenant in the United States Naval Reserve, 1942-1946. Residence, Riverdale, N. Y.

## Children:

177. i. RODMAN ALLYN FURNALD, b. March 17, 1945.  
 177a. ii. LINDSEY LUDINGTON FURNALD, b. Nov. 14, 1946.

116. LOUISE KNOWLES<sup>9</sup> (*Emily M.<sup>8</sup> Rotch, Morgan<sup>7</sup>, William J.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Thomas C. and Emily M. (Rotch) Knowles, was born in New Bedford March 16, 1911. She married in New Bedford Dec. 9, 1933, Henry Clark Holcomb, born in New Bedford Dec. 2, 1904, son of Clark William and Clara Belle (Murphy) Holcomb of New Bedford. Residence, South Dartmouth, Mass.

117. SIDNEY WILLIAMS KNOWLES<sup>9</sup> (*Emily M.<sup>8</sup> Rotch, Morgan<sup>7</sup>, William J.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Thomas C. and Emily M. (Rotch) Knowles, was born in New Bedford Jan. 31, 1913. Attended Harvard. He married in Washington, Conn., Sept. 14, 1940, Katherine Shedd Dutcher, born in Milwaukee, Wis., Nov. 23, 1912, daughter of Pierpont Edwards and Katherine (Gold) Dutcher of Washington, Conn. Residence, Old Lyme, Conn.

## Children:

178. i. THOMAS CHARLES KNOWLES, II, b. in New York City, April 22, 1942.  
 179. ii. DAVID DUTCHER KNOWLES, b. at Glen Cove, L. I., Jan. 1, 1945.

118. JOSEPHINE GRINNELL KNOWLES<sup>9</sup> (*Emily M.<sup>8</sup> Rotch, Morgan<sup>7</sup>, William J.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Thomas C. and Emily M. (Rotch) Knowles, was born in New Bedford April 16, 1919. She married in New Bedford March 23, 1946, Lincoln Davol Brayton, born Oct. 20, 1905, son of William Lawton Slade and Mary Easton (Ashley) Brayton of Fall River, Mass., Harvard, A.B., 1928, LL.B., 1931. In World War II he served three and a half years in the United States Naval Reserve, retiring as Lieutenant Commander. Residence, Fall River, Mass.

## Son:

- 179a. i. STEPHEN KNOWLES BRAYTON, b. in New Bedford Jan. 12, 1947.

119. LAWRENCE GRINNELL, JR.<sup>9</sup> (*Emily M. Severance<sup>8</sup>, Isabel M.<sup>7</sup> Rotch, William J.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Lawrence and Emily M. (Severance) Grinnell, was born in Lancaster, Mass., Sept. 19, 1909. Harvard, A.B., 1931; Harvard Business School, M.B.A., 1933. He married in Dedham, Mass., Feb. 15, 1936, Elizabeth Butler, born July 4, 1914, daughter of Morgan and Bernice (Fisher) Butler, and granddaughter of William Morgan Butler, United States Senator from Massachusetts; divorced, 1941; (2) at Las Vegas, Nev., Sept. 19, 1942, Frances Marian Ryall, born Aug. 10, 1909, daughter of Lucius Clark and Alice M.





Dr. John Crapo Bullard  
Katherine Kilburn Bullard  
October 1, 1946

(Strickland) Ryall of El Cajon, Calif. Residence, San Mateo, Calif.

Children, by first marriage, born in Boston:

180. i. ELIZABETH SPOONER GRINNELL, b. Dec. 27, 1936.

181. ii. LAWRENCE GRINNELL, III, b. Nov. 20, 1939.

By second marriage, born in San Mateo, Calif.:

181a. iii. RICHARD GRINNELL, b. May 28, 1947.

120. SYLVIA GRINNELL<sup>9</sup> (*Emily M. Severance<sup>8</sup>, Isabel M.<sup>7</sup> Rotch, William J.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Lawrence and Emily M. (Severance) Grinnell, was born in South Dartmouth, Mass., March 18, 1911. She married in Brookline, Mass., March 30, 1935, William Almy, Jr., born in Boston Nov. 30, 1900, son of William and Elsie Hillman (Pierce) Almy of Boston. Residence, Quansett Farm, South Westport, Mass.

Children, born in New Bedford:

182. i. SYLVIA AUDREY ALMY, b. Jan. 7, 1936.

183. ii. SUSAN GRINNELL ALMY, b. Dec. 28, 1945.

By his first marriage to Emily C. Stetson Mr. Almy had a son, William Almy, III.

121. PETER SEVERANCE GRINNELL<sup>9</sup> (*Emily M. Severance<sup>8</sup>, Isabel M.<sup>7</sup> Rotch, William J.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Lawrence and Emily M. (Severance) Grinnell, was born in South Dartmouth, Mass., Oct. 28, 1912. He married in South Dartmouth Sept. 23, 1933, Katherine Alexander, born in Cleveland, Ohio, July 31, 1914, daughter of Henry Morgan and Katherine (Harter) Alexander of Cleveland. Residence, Scarsdale, N. Y.

Children, born in Bronxville, N. Y.:

184. i. PETER SEVERANCE GRINNELL, JR., b. Feb. 17, 1937.

185. ii. ALEXANDRA GRINNELL, b. April 15, 1940.

123. BARBARA GRINNELL<sup>9</sup> (*Emily M. Severance<sup>8</sup>, Isabel M.<sup>7</sup> Rotch, William J.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Lawrence and Emily M. (Severance) Grinnell, was born in New Bedford April 2, 1920. She married at South Dartmouth June 20, 1942, Camillo Frederick Petri, son of G. Hector and Gertrude (Bement) Petri. Residence, Brookline, Mass.

Children:

186. i. MARK SEVERANCE PETRI, b. at Ann Arbor, Mich., Sept. 20, 1944.

187. ii. FREDERICK GRINNELL PETRI, b. in Boston Feb. 10, 1946.

124. RACHEL LEE SEVERANCE<sup>9</sup> (*William R. Severance<sup>8</sup>, Isabel M.<sup>7</sup> Rotch, William J.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*),

daughter of William R. and Susan W. (Grinnell) Severance, was born in Redlands, Calif., Nov. 3, 1911. She married in San Diego, Calif., Feb. 25, 1935, Malcolm Ozber Whitt, born at Cloudcroft, N. M., Feb. 11, 1916, son of Jesse Ozber and Abbie Marie (Campbell) Whitt, of Chula Vista, Calif. Residence, Palm City, Calif.

188. i. MALCOLM LEE WHITT, b. in San Diego, Calif., Oct. 24, 1935.

125. WILLIAM ROTCH SEVERANCE, JR.<sup>9</sup> (*William R. Severance<sup>8</sup>, Isabel M.<sup>7</sup> Rotch, William J.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of William R. and Susan W. (Grinnell) Severance, was born in San Bernardino, Calif., Feb. 21, 1913. He married in Los Angeles, Calif., April 4, 1935, Virginia Margaret Staples, born in Los Angeles, Calif., Sept. 30, 1913, daughter of Harry Roderick and Ada (Jobson) Staples of Oxnard, Calif. Residence, Los Angeles, Calif.

Daughter:

189. i. SUSAN SEVERANCE, b. in Los Angeles, Sept. 30, 1942.

126. ISABEL PIERRE SEVERANCE<sup>9</sup> (*William R. Severance<sup>8</sup>, Isabel M.<sup>7</sup> Rotch, William J.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of William R. and Susan W. (Grinnell) Severance, was born in Los Angeles, Calif., July 28, 1916. She married at Tijuanaabana-Calif, Mexico, Aug. 8, 1934, Joseph Jesse Whitt, born at Cloudcroft, N. M., Aug. 28, 1912, son of Jesse Ozber and Abbie Marie (Campbell) Whitt, of Chula Vista, Calif. Residence, San Miguel, Calif.

Children:

190. i. WILLIAM JOSEPH WHITT, b. in San Diego, Calif., May 20, 1935.

191. ii. JOHN WESLEY WHITT, b. in San Diego, Calif., Feb. 4, 1939.

192. iii. JAMES LEE WHITT, b. in Atascadero, Calif., May 21, 1943.

192a. iv. KATHERINE MARIE WHITT, b. in Chula Vista, Calif., Jan. 6, 1947.

127. PETER GRINNELL SEVERANCE<sup>9</sup> (*William R. Severance<sup>8</sup>, Isabel M.<sup>7</sup> Rotch, William J.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of William R. and Susan W. (Grinnell) Severance, was born in Redlands, Calif., May 2, 1919. Attended California College of Agriculture. He married Nov. 6, 1941, Geraldine Winifred Corbett, born June 26, 1921, daughter of Joseph Bailey and Mattie Severina (Hall) Corbett of San Ysidro, Calif. In World War II he was a Lieutenant Commander, United States Naval Reserve, serving from July, 1940 to December, 1945. Residence, Imperial Beach, Calif.

Children, born in San Diego, Calif.:

193. i. PETER GRINNELL SEVERANCE, JR., b. Dec. 15, 1944.

194. ii. WILLIAM CORBETT SEVERANCE, b. Oct. 1, 1946.

128. HELEN ROTCH SCUDDER<sup>9</sup> (*Helen R. Swift<sup>8</sup>, Sarah R.<sup>7</sup> Rotch, Wil-*

liam J.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), daughter of William M. and Helen R. (Swift) Scudder, was born in Chicago Nov. 29, 1901. She married Oct. 13, 1927, Dr. Alec A. Preece, born March 3, 1901, son of Ambrose Duncan and Edith (Clay) Preece, of London, England. Divorced, 1939. No children. Residence, Washington, D. C.

129. SARAH RODMAN SCUDDER<sup>9</sup> (*Helen R. Swift<sup>8</sup>, Sarah R.<sup>7</sup> Rotch, William J.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of William M. and Helen R. (Swift) Scudder, was born in Chicago March 15, 1904. Vassar, 1925. She married (1) June 1, 1926, Lieut. Francis John Clark, U.S.A., born July 12, 1900, son of Abraham and Martha (Kavanaugh) Clark of Astoria, Oregon; divorced, 1931; (2) March 16, 1932, Clifford Warren Ashley, born in New Bedford Dec. 18, 1881, died in Westport, Mass., Sept. 18, 1947, son of A. Davis and Caroline (Morse) Ashley of New Bedford. Residence, Westport, Mass.

Mr. Ashley was a leading marine artist. He studied under prominent masters, and his work has found place in permanent collections. He was the author of several books, including "The Yankee Whaler," "The Sailor and His Knots," "Whaleships of New Bedford," and "On Knots," the latter a large and authoritative work.

Children:

By first marriage:

195. i. PAULINE CLARK, b. in San Francisco, Oct. 31, 1927. Name changed to Pauline Clark Ashley. Vassar, 1949.

By second marriage:

196. ii. PHOEBE WARREN ASHLEY, b. in Washington, D. C., May 5, 1933.

197. iii. JANE RODMAN ASHLEY, b. in Washington, D. C., Feb. 16, 1935.

130. CAROLINE WATERMAN SWIFT<sup>9</sup> (*Frederick R. Swift<sup>8</sup>, Sarah R.<sup>7</sup> Rotch, William J.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Frederick R. and Eliza M. (Bates) Swift, was born in Washington, D. C., June 4, 1905. She married in New York City Feb. 16, 1927, Charles Winslow Farnsworth, born in Colorado Springs, Col., March 30, 1904, son of Charles and Edith (Winslow) Farnsworth of Colorado Springs. Residence, Concord, Mass.

Children, born in New York City:

198. i. EDITH ELIZA FARNSWORTH, b. Dec. 18, 1927.

199. ii. RONALD CHARLES FARNSWORTH (adopted), b. Oct. 8, 1933.

134. JOHN CRAPO BULLARD<sup>9</sup> (*John M. Bullard<sup>8</sup>, Emily M.<sup>7</sup> Rotch, William J.<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of John M. and Catherine (Crapo) Bullard, was born in Boston, Feb. 6, 1921. Harvard, 1943, M.D., 1945. He married at Malone, N. Y., Oct. 1, 1946, Katharine Kilburn, born at Malone Oct. 29, 1922, daughter of Clar-

ence Evans and Anne (Crooks) Kilburn of Malone. Mr. Kilburn is a Member of Congress. In World War II Dr. Bullard was a private, first class, A.U.S., assigned to Harvard Medical School, 1943-1945, and First Lieutenant, Medical Corps, A.U.S., assigned to the Veterans Administration, in Illinois and Massachusetts, 1946.

Child:

200. i. JOHN KILBURN BULLARD, b. in New Bedford Aug. 21, 1947.

136. MORRIS GRAY<sup>9</sup> (*HeLEN R. BULLARD<sup>8</sup>, EMILY M.<sup>7</sup> ROTCH, WILLIAM J.<sup>6</sup>, JOSEPH<sup>5</sup>, WILLIAM<sup>4</sup>, WILLIAM<sup>3</sup>, JOSEPH<sup>2</sup>, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>*), son of Morris and Helen R. (Bullard) Gray, was born in Boston June 19, 1921. He married Sept. 16, 1944, Keturah Gorgas Irwin, daughter of Robert Forsythe, Jr., and Keturah Thomas (Smucker) Irwin of Germantown, Philadelphia. In World War II he was a Lieutenant, (j.g.), in the United States Naval Reserve, serving two years and six months on the U.S.S. *New York*, including the Iwo Jima and Okinawa campaigns. Residence, Boston.

Son:

201. i. MORRIS GRAY, JR., b. in Boston Aug. 18, 1946.

142. LYDIA BULLARD COBB<sup>9</sup> (*EMILY BULLARD<sup>8</sup>, EMILY M.<sup>7</sup> ROTCH, WILLIAM J.<sup>6</sup>, JOSEPH<sup>5</sup>, WILLIAM<sup>4</sup>, WILLIAM<sup>3</sup>, JOSEPH<sup>2</sup>, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Robert C. and Emily (Bullard) Cobb, was born in Boston March 22, 1920. She married Sept. 9, 1944, John Allen Perkins, born Sept. 13, 1919, son of Ralph Chamberlain and Louise Bartlett (Allen) Perkins of South Dartmouth, Mass. During World War II she served as a registered occupational therapist in Halloran General Hospital, Staten Island, New York, January to July, 1944; and in Cushing General Hospital, Framingham, Mass., October, 1944 to June, 1945. Residence, Dedham, Mass.

Son:

202. i. JOHN ALLEN PERKINS, JR., b. in Concord, Mass., March 28, 1946.

149. BARBARA ELIOT STONE<sup>9</sup> (*FRANCIS H. STONE<sup>8</sup>, ANNA S.<sup>7</sup> ROTCH, WILLIAM J.<sup>6</sup>, JOSEPH<sup>5</sup>, WILLIAM<sup>4</sup>, WILLIAM<sup>3</sup>, JOSEPH<sup>2</sup>, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Francis H. and Lydia A. (Stetson) Stone, was born in Providence, R. I., Feb. 9, 1918. Vassar, 1939. She married in Providence Oct. 5, 1946, Richard Gwyn Boyer, born in Denver, Col., Aug. 28, 1913, son of John St. Aubyn and Mary Alethia (Spicer) Boyer of Savery, Wyo. She joined the American Red Cross Recreation Service for World War II in October, 1944, and was sent after a short training to Kilauea Military Camp on the island of Hawaii to assist in operating a recreation hut. Shortly afterward she was put in charge of a hut in the rest area of the Fifth Marine Division, at that time just back from Iwo Jima. She continued with this assignment until the surrender of Japan, after which she was reassigned to Kilauea Military Camp

until her return to the United States and release from service in February, 1946. Residence, Savery, Wyo.

152. PRISCILLA DAVIS<sup>9</sup> (*Samuel B. Davis<sup>8</sup>, Mary F. Hare<sup>7</sup>, Caroline Fleeming<sup>6</sup>, Mary<sup>5</sup> Rotch, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of S. Boyer and Ruth (Harding) Davis, was born in Boston Sept. 26, 1902. She married at Paoli, Penna., July 6, 1923, William James Baird, born in Philadelphia March 25, 1899, son of William James and Maria Uytendale (Hendrickson) Baird of Philadelphia. Residence, Devon, Penna.

Children:

203. i. WILLIAM JAMES BAIRD, b. in Philadelphia June 5, 1924.  
204. ii. SAMUEL BOYER DAVIS BAIRD, b. in Paoli, Penna., Sept. 5, 1926.

153. MARY HARE DAVIS<sup>9</sup> (*Samuel B. Davis<sup>8</sup>, Mary F. Hare<sup>7</sup>, Caroline Fleeming<sup>6</sup>, Mary<sup>5</sup> Rotch, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of S. Boyer and Ruth (Harding) Davis, was born in Boston Jan. 28, 1906. She married (1) Thomas Price Mikell; (2) James C. Megargee. Residence, Phoenixville, Penna.

Son, by first marriage:

205. i. WILLIAM EPHRAIM MIKELL, b. in Bryn Mawr, Penna., July 25, 1927.  
In World War II he was a seaman first class, United States Naval Reserve, serving in the Pacific area.

154. S[AMUEL] BOYER DAVIS, JR.<sup>9</sup> (*Samuel B. Davis<sup>8</sup>, Mary F. Hare<sup>7</sup>, Caroline Fleeming<sup>6</sup>, Mary<sup>5</sup> Rotch, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of S. Boyer and Ruth (Harding) Davis, was born in Marblehead, Mass., Aug. 15, 1913. Princeton, A.B., 1936. Harvard, M.A., 1942. He married Sept. 2, 1938, Janet Wesbrook, born in Minneapolis, Minn., June 10, 1920, daughter of Donald McDermid and Elizabeth (Barney) Wesbrook of Montreal, P. Q. In World War II he served as Ensign and Lieutenant, United States Naval Reserve. Residence, Dunlap, Calif.

Children:

206. i. SAMUEL BOYER DAVIS, III, b. in Pittsfield, Mass., Nov. 7, 1941.  
207. ii. MICHAEL HARDING DAVIS, b. in West Chester, Penna., March 22, 1944.

155. MARY FLEEMING HARE HALL<sup>9</sup> (*Caroline H. Davis<sup>8</sup>, Mary F. Hare<sup>7</sup>, Caroline Fleeming<sup>6</sup>, Mary<sup>5</sup> Rotch, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of William P-G. and Caroline H. (Davis) Hall, was born in Philadelphia, Dec. 30, 1905. She married at Paoli, Penna., Jan. 5, 1927, Courtland Yardley White. Residence, Narberth, Penna.

Children:

208. i. COURTLAND YARDLEY WHITE, JR.  
209. ii. GULIELMA GASKELL HALL WHITE.

156. WILLIAM PENN-GASKELL HALL, JR.<sup>9</sup> (*Caroline H. Davis<sup>8</sup>, Mary F. Hare<sup>7</sup>, Caroline Fleeming<sup>6</sup>, Mary<sup>5</sup> Rotch, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of William P.G. and Caroline H. (Davis) Hall, was born in Atlantic City, N. J., Oct. 9, 1908. M.I.T., 1932. He married in Philadelphia Sept. 19, 1936, Annah Colket McKaig, born in Radnor, Penna., March 26, 1917, daughter of Edgar Stanley and Annah Colket (French) McKaig of Radnor. He was a member of the 1940 Olympic figure skating team. In World War II he served as a Major in the Coast Artillery Corps, 1942-1946, being a member of the staff and faculty of the Coast Artillery School, and member of the Coast Artillery Board, at Fort Monroe, Va. Residence, Berwyn, Penna.

Daughter:

210. i. JOANNAH COLKET HALL, b. at Bryn Mawr, Penna., Sept., 23, 1941.

157. ELIZABETH JAYNE DAVIS<sup>9</sup> (*Robert H. Davis<sup>8</sup>, Mary F. Hare<sup>7</sup>, Caroline Fleeming<sup>6</sup>, Mary<sup>5</sup> Rotch, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Robert H. and Kate F. (Jayne) Davis, was born in Philadelphia Jan. 5, 1919. She married at Media, Penna., April 19, 1941, William Appleton Stavers, born May 15, 1917, son of Howard B. and Gertrude Louise (Oat) Stavers of Moylan, Penna. Residence, Concord Township, Penna.

Children, born in Wilmington, Del.:

211. i. WILLIAM APPLETON STAVERS, JR., b. Dec. 12, 1941.

212. ii. ROBERT HARE STAVERS, b. June 27, 1943.

213. iii. JOSEPHINE BOYD STAVERS, b. March 28, 1947.

158. KATE FURNESS JAYNE DAVIS<sup>9</sup> (*Robert H. Davis<sup>8</sup>, Mary F. Hare<sup>7</sup>, Caroline Fleeming<sup>6</sup>, Mary<sup>5</sup> Rotch, William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Robert H. and Kate F. (Jayne) Davis, was born in Wallingford, Penna., July 7, 1920. She married at Ithan, Penna., June 11, 1943, John Nicholson Stull, born July 20, 1918, son of George R. and Eleanor (Nicholson) Stull of Moylan, Penna. Residence, Brooklyn, N. Y.

## Descendants of Benjamin Rotch of England

300. BENJAMIN<sup>4</sup> ROTCH (*William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), second son of William and Elizabeth (Barney) Rotch, was born in Nantucket Sept. 12, 1764, and died in London, England, March 30, 1839. He married in Nantucket March 29, 1787, Elizabeth Barker, born in Nantucket Nov. 3, 1764, died in England Dec. 4, 1857, in her ninety-fourth year, daughter of Josiah and Elizabeth (Hussey) Barker of Nantucket. The family went to France in 1789 and 1790, and subsequently settled in England.

### Children:

301. i. FRANCIS ROTCH, b. in Nantucket, Jan. 16, 1788; d. in Morris, N. Y. Jan. 19, 1874.
302. ii. WILLIAM ROTCH, d. in infancy.
303. iii. ELIZA ROTCH, b. in Dunkirk, France, July 12, 1791; d. in Springfield, Mass., April 22, 1870.
304. iv. BENJAMIN ROTCH, b. in Dunkirk, France, Nov. 29, 1793; d. in London Oct. 31, 1854.
305. v. MARIA ROTCH, b. in Milford Haven, Wales, May 20, 1797; d. Nov. 30, 1874.
306. vi. WILLIAM BARKER ROTCH, b. in Milford Haven, Wales, Aug. 29, 1802; d. in New Bedford Oct. 5, 1826. Unmarried.
307. vii. CAROLINE ROTCH, b. in Milford Haven, Wales, Jan. 5, 1804; d. there Jan. 28, 1805. "Peace be to her gentle spirit," was the entry on the Friends' Records.
308. viii. THOMAS DICKASON ROTCH, b. at Castle Hall, near Milford Haven, Wales, June 14, 1807; d. April 1, 1861.

301. FRANCIS<sup>5</sup> ROTCH (*Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), eldest son of Benjamin and Elizabeth (Barker) Rotch, was born in Nantucket Jan. 16, 1788, and died at Butternuts, Morris, N. Y., Jan. 19, 1874. Coming to America as a young man he married in Philadelphia Dec. 1, 1819, Ann Waln Morgan, born in Philadelphia June 4, 1800, died in Versailles, France, Jan. 30, 1884, daughter of Thomas and Ann (Waln) Morgan of Philadelphia. She was a sister of Charles W. Morgan of New Bedford who married Sarah Rodman (q.v.) Mr. Rotch cultivated a large stock farm at Morris.

### Children, born in New Bedford:

309. i. FRANCIS MORGAN ROTCH, b. Feb. 20, 1822; d. Nov. 28, 1863.
  310. ii. CHARLES MORGAN ROTCH, b. May 12, 1823; d. "of scarlet fever in school," Jan. 28, 1840. Buried at Cooperstown, N. Y.
  311. iii. MARIA ROTCH, b. May 18, 1826; d. April 15, 1854.
303. ELIZA<sup>5</sup> ROTCH (*Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter

of Benjamin and Elizabeth (Barker) Rotch, was born in Dunkirk, France, July 12, 1791, and died in Springfield, Mass., April 22, 1870. She was married at the home of her aunt Mary Rotch in New Bedford, by Rev. Orville Dewey, Unitarian clergyman, on Oct. 10, 1828, to Professor John Farrar, born in Lincoln, Mass., July 1, 1779, died in Cambridge, Mass., May 8, 1853, son of Samuel and Mary (Hoar) Farrar of Lincoln. It was his second marriage. Dr. Farrar, a graduate of Harvard, was for nearly thirty years Hollis Professor of Mathematics and Natural Philosophy at Harvard. "My cousin has for a husband a man of deep science and great moral worth," wrote Samuel Rodman in his diary on the night of the wedding. No children. She was the author of a considerable portion of Part II of this book.

304. BENJAMIN<sup>5</sup> ROTCH (*Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Benjamin and Elizabeth (Barker) Rotch, was born in Dunkirk, France, Nov. 29, 1793, and died in London, England, Oct. 31, 1854. He was a barrister in London, Member of Parliament, and Deputy Lieutenant of Middlesex. He married in York in 1827, Isabelle Anne Judd, born Oct. 10, 1808, died April 22, 1909, aged 100 years, 6 months, 12 days. No children.

305. MARIA<sup>5</sup> ROTCH (*Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Benjamin and Elizabeth (Barker) Rotch, was born in Milford Haven, Wales, May 20, 1797, and died Nov. 30, 1874. She married July 28, 1834, Rev. Stephen F. Langston, who died March 15, 1878.

Children:

- 312. i. MARIA LANGSTON, b. Sept. 1, 1837; d. Dec. 22, 1863.
- 313. ii. GERTRUDE LANGSTON, b. May 18, 1840.
- 314. iii. HERBERT W. D. LANGSTON. About 1865 he came to America. Married in Mexico. Lived in Galveston, Texas. Died in England. Is said to have left descendants. If so, they are the only group of Joseph Rotch's descendants of whom nothing has been learned.

308. THOMAS DICKASON<sup>5</sup> ROTCH (*Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Benjamin and Elizabeth (Barker) Rotch, was born at Castle Hall, near Milford Haven, Wales, June 14, 1807, and died April 1, 1861. He married (1) Catherine Elizabeth Wason, b. 1800, d. Sept. 1, 1852; (2) Mrs. Sarah (Hampden) Wason of Barbadoes, who had one son by her first marriage.

Children, by his first marriage:

- 315. i. CATHERINE ELIZA ROTCH, b. April 1833; d. Aug. 1833.
- 316. ii. CATHERINE MARIA ROTCH, b. Aug. 1834; d. April 5, 1886. Unmarried.
- 317. iii. ELIZA S. ROTCH, d. April 16, 1878. Unmarried.
- 318. iv. EMILY WASON ROTCH, d. Sept. 1, 1910. Unmarried.
- 319. v. WILLIAM DICKASON ROTCH, b. Nov. 13, 1840; d. Oct. 24, 1908.

309. FRANCIS MORGAN<sup>6</sup> ROTCH (*Francis<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Francis and Ann W. (Morgan) Rotch, was born in New Bedford Feb. 20, 1822, and died in Morris, N. Y., Nov. 28, 1863. Harvard, 1841. He married May 6, 1862, Catherine W. Gilbert, daughter of Samuel Cotton Gilbert of Gilbertsville, N. Y.

Son:

320. i. FRANCIS ROTCH, b. Feb. 15, 1863; d. May 25, 1918.

311. MARIA<sup>6</sup> ROTCH (*Francis<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Francis and Ann W. (Morgan) Rotch, was born in New Bedford May 18, 1826, and died in Morris, N. Y., April 15, 1854. She married in Morris Sept. 20, 1849, Colonel Radcliff Hudson, born Sept. 14, 1819, died July 6, 1904, son of Henry and Maria Theodosia (Holly) Hudson of Hartford, Conn. He married (2) in 1882 Eliza Holly.

Children:

321. i. ANNE ROTCH HUDSON, b. June 14, 1850; d. Feb. 6, 1947.

322. ii. FRANCIS ROTCH HUDSON, b. March 9, 1854; d. Aug. 8, 1863.

312. MARIA LANGSTON<sup>6</sup> (*Maria<sup>5</sup> Rotch, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Rev. Stephen F. and Maria (Rotch) Langston, was born Sept. 1, 1837, and died Dec. 22, 1863. She married Sept. 20, 1859, James F. Cobb.

Children:

323. i. ERNEST COBB, b. Oct. 8, 1860; d. Feb. 14, 1910.

324. ii. CYRIL [STEPHEN] COBB, b. Oct. 6, 1861; d. March 8, 1938.

325. iii. AMBROSE COBB, d. in infancy.

313. GERTRUDE LANGSTON<sup>6</sup> (*Maria<sup>5</sup> Rotch, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Rev. Stephen F. and Maria (Rotch) Langston, was born May 18, 1840. She married Feb. 18, 1864, Henry Maynard.

Son:

- 325a. i. HENRY LANGSTON MAYNARD, b. Feb. 16, 1865; d. April 16, 1940.

319. WILLIAM DICKASON<sup>6</sup> ROTCH (*Thomas D.<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Thomas D. and Catherine E. (Wason) Rotch, was born Nov. 13, 1840, and died in Liverpool Oct. 24, 1908. Barrister at Law. He married Oct. 10, 1865, Florence Mary Sandys, who died Oct. 24, 1913 in Teddington, Middlesex, England, second daughter of Rev. Charles Sandys, H.E.I.

Children:

326. i. FLORENCE HELEN ROTCH, b. Jan. 1, 1867; d. Dec. 16, 1943.

327. ii. WILLIAM ROTCH, b. June 13, 1869; d. 1869.

328. iii. SYDNEY FRANCIS SANDYS ROTCH, b. Jan. 24, 1873; d. Nov. 29, 1932.

329. iv. FRANCIS ROTCH, b. Aug. 29, 1874; d. March 1, 1876.  
 330. v. CLAUDE DICKASON ROTCH, b. Aug. 27, 1878.  
 331. vi. JULIAN ROTCH, d. in infancy.

320. FRANCIS<sup>7</sup> ROTCH (*Francis M.<sup>6</sup>, Francis<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Francis M. and Catherine W. (Gilbert) Rotch, was born in Albany, N. Y., Feb. 15, 1863, and died in Honolulu, H. T., May 25, 1918. Was graduated from Johns Hopkins University. He married in Bloomer, Wis., Dec. 3, 1884, Mary Garland, born in Meridean, Wis., Nov. 16, 1864, died in Bellevue, Wash., Sept. 22, 1945, daughter of Jerome Bonaparte and Harriet (Nichols) Garland, natives of New York State.

Children:

332. i. FRANCIS ROTCH, b. Oct. 20, 1885; d. Nov. 1, 1945.  
 333. ii. GARLAND ROTCH, b. Feb. 5, 1888; d. May 11, 1943.

321. ANNE ROTCH HUDSON<sup>7</sup> (*Maria<sup>6</sup> Rotch, Francis<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Radcliff and Maria (Rotch) Hudson, was born in Hartford, Conn., June 14, 1850. She married in New Bedford Oct. 6, 1881, Charles W. Morgan, II, born in Philadelphia, March 20, 1825, died at Versailles, France, Nov. 20, 1896, son of Thomas W. and Hannah (Griffitts) Morgan, and nephew of Charles W. Morgan of New Bedford, who married Sarah Rodman. They had no children.

Mr. and Mrs. Morgan lived for some years at Versailles, France. Subsequently Mrs. Morgan became, in March, 1907, Sister Anne Monica, of Ste. Dominic's Priory, Stone, Staffordshire, England, where she died Feb. 6, 1947, in her ninety-seventh year.

Mr. Morgan married, first, in 1848, Eloise Tevis of Philadelphia, and subsequently they were divorced. By this marriage was a daughter, Mary, born in 1849, who married Hon. Francis Plunkett of Kaleen Castle, Ireland, son of the Earl of Fingal. They were married at Berne, Switzerland, Aug. 22, 1870. Mr. Plunkett died in Paris Feb. 28, 1907. There were two children, Norah, born June 19, 1871, and Helen M. (Nelly) born April 25, 1877. Norah married at Berne, Switzerland, Aug. 21, 1891, Count August Ferron Guldenstolpe of Sweden, afterwards Swedish Ambassador in Paris, who died June 30, 1928. No children.

323. ERNEST COBB<sup>7</sup> (*Maria Langston<sup>6</sup>, Maria<sup>5</sup> Rotch, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of James F. and Maria (Langston) Cobb, was born Oct. 8, 1860, and died Feb. 14, 1910. He married at Leamington Spa, England, Feb. 20, 1900, Eleanor Walker, daughter of Rev. F. I. Walker. No children.

324. SIR CYRIL COBB<sup>7</sup> (*Maria Langston<sup>6</sup>, Maria<sup>5</sup> Rotch, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of James F. and Maria (Langston) Cobb, was born Oct. 6, 1861, and died in London March 8, 1938. He was edu-

cated at Newton Abbott College, and at Merton College, Oxford, receiving the degrees of M.A. and B.C.L., and became a barrister at law in London. In 1913 and 1914 he was chairman of the London County Council, and served as a Member of Parliament, 1918-1919, and 1930-1938.

In 1918 he was created a Baronet. Sir Cyril was a Knight Commander, Order of the British Empire, and a Member of the Royal Victorian Order. He was unmarried.

325a. HENRY LANGSTON MAYNARD<sup>7</sup> (*Gertrude Langston*<sup>6</sup>, *Maria*<sup>5</sup> *Rotch*, *Benjamin*<sup>4</sup>, *William*<sup>3</sup>, *Joseph*<sup>2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>), son of Henry and Gertrude (Langston) Maynard, was born Feb. 16, 1865, and died April 16, 1940. He married in December, 1891, Ethel Maud King, born Jan. 25, 1864, daughter of William Thackrah and Frances (Poole) King of Wimbledon, London.

Rev. Mr. Maynard was a scholar at Pembroke College, Cambridge. He served as master at Uppingham School, 1889-1894; master of United Service College, Westward Ho, Devon, 1894-1898; master of Bath College, 1898-1902; curate of Bath Abbey, 1902-1909; vicar of Tiverton-on-Avon, Bath, 1909-1920; vicar of Milverton School, 1920-1940; Prebendary and Treasurer of Wells Cathedral.

#### Children:

- 333a. i. JOYCE CONSTANCE MAYNARD, b. in Westward Ho, Devon, Nov. 9, 1896.
- 333b. ii. MARJORIE FRANCES GABRIELLE MAYNARD, b. in Bath Sept. 18, 1899.  
She served in the A.T.S. 1939-1946, and attained the rank of Chief Commander. Was awarded O.B.E. in June, 1946, for service in World War II.

326. FLORENCE HELEN<sup>7</sup> ROTCH (*William D.*<sup>6</sup>, *Thomas D.*<sup>5</sup>, *Benjamin*<sup>4</sup>, *William*<sup>3</sup>, *Joseph*<sup>2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>), daughter of William D. and Florence M. (Sandys) Rotch, was born in England Jan. 1, 1867, and died Dec. 16, 1943. She married July 30, 1891, William Albert Boswell, who died Jan. 8, 1933. Residence, London, England.

#### Sons:

- 334. i. GERALD BOSWELL, b. June 29, 1892; d. July 28, 1916, as result of wounds received in World War I. He was Captain of the Second Battalion, Rifle Brigade. Unmarried.
- 335. ii. DENNIS BOSWELL, b. Dec. 2, 1893; d. of fever in Greece Oct. 1918, while serving in World War I. He was Major of the Second Battalion, Duke of Cambridge Light Infantry, and also commanded the 82d Machine Gun Company. Unmarried.
- 336. iii. LENNOX ALBERT KNOX BOSWELL, b. May 18, 1898.

328. SYDNEY FRANCIS SANDYS<sup>7</sup> ROTCH (*William D.*<sup>6</sup>, *Thomas D.*<sup>5</sup>, *Benjamin*<sup>4</sup>, *William*<sup>3</sup>, *Joseph*<sup>2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>), son of William D. and Florence M. (Sandys) Rotch, was born in London Jan. 24, 1873, and died Nov. 29, 1932. He married Nov. 8, 1910, Maria Sarah Evelyn Driver, daughter of Dr.

Frederick John Driver of Southsea, Hants. No children. Commander Royal Navy.

330.<sup>1</sup> CLAUDE DICKASON<sup>7</sup> ROTCH (*William D.<sup>6</sup>, Thomas D.<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of William D. and Florence M. (Sandys) Rotch, was born Aug. 27, 1878. He was a rubber grower in Ceylon for some years, and returning to England became director of several rubber companies. He also bred chow dogs, which he exhibited successfully, and likewise is an expert on antique furniture. In World War I he served in the A.S.C., and was present at the retreat from Mons. Unmarried. Residence, London, England.

332. FRANCIS<sup>8</sup> ROTCH (*Francis<sup>7</sup>, Francis M.<sup>6</sup>, Francis<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Francis and Mary (Garland) Rotch, was born in Bloomer, Wis., Oct. 20, 1885, and died at Fiddlers Green, Bellevue, Wash., Nov. 1, 1945. He married (1) Dec. 26, 1919, Frances Maree Crowell, born June 7, 1885, died Jan. 26, 1943, daughter of John Reid and Mary Isabelle (Parker) Crowell, natives of Michigan; (2) Aug. 31, 1944, Mrs. Helen (Samson) Boyce, daughter of Charles W. and Adelaide (Gel-latty) Samson. There were no children.

333. GARLAND<sup>8</sup> ROTCH (*Francis<sup>7</sup>, Francis M.<sup>6</sup>, Francis<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Francis and Mary (Garland) Rotch, was born in Bloomer, Wis., Feb. 5, 1888, and died in San Francisco May 11, 1943. He married (1) April 16, 1912, Gussie Farrar of Redwood City, Calif., who died in Seattle Nov. 20, 1916; (2) Aug. 20, 1921, Myrtle Rita Stryker, born April 16, 1900, daughter of William H. and Ada (Barrett) Stryker of Staten Island, N. Y. She married (2) Hugo Mencke of San Francisco and died in 1946. No children.

333a. JOYCE CONSTANCE MAYNARD<sup>8</sup> (*Henry L. Maynard<sup>7</sup>, Gertrude Langston<sup>6</sup>, Maria<sup>5</sup> Rotch, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Rev. Henry L. and Ethel M. (King) Maynard, was born in Westward Ho, Devon, England, Nov. 9, 1896. She married Sept. 12, 1926, John Henry Churchill Liddon, a Captain in the British Army, born Dec. 15, 1896, son of Edward and Jessie (Stevens) Liddon. Residence, Blundells, West Monkton, Taunton, Somerset, England.

Children, born in London:

333c. i. EDWARD MAYNARD LIDDON, b. June 13, 1928.

333d. ii. HENRY JOHN LIDDON, b. April 20, 1932.

336. LENNOX ALBERT KNOX BOSWELL<sup>8</sup> (*Florence H.<sup>7</sup> Rotch, William D.<sup>6</sup>, Thomas D.<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of William

Albert and Florence H. (Rotch) Boswell, was born in London May 18, 1898. He attended the Royal Naval College, Dartmouth, 1913-1914, and joined the Royal Navy. In World War I he served as midshipman and sub-lieutenant in H.M.S. *Queen Elizabeth*, Admiral Beatty's flagship.

In World War II, as Captain, he commanded H.M.S. *Pelican*, 1939-1940. He was senior officer, escort FN. 1 (first convoy of war) and took part in Norwegian operations in April, 1940. Assisted in the evacuation of the British army from Dunkirk. Commanded escort carrier H.M.S. *Dasher* in 1943, which was sunk, with heavy loss of life, due to an internal explosion. In 1943-1944 he commanded H.M.S. *Biter*, escort carrier, taking part in anti-submarine operations in the Atlantic and Bay of Biscay. Fighters shot down J U 290's while with Gibraltar convoy.

Captain Boswell in 1940 was awarded the D.S.O. for distinguished services. Residence, Funtington House, near Chichester, England.

He married Sept. 3, 1942, Diana Joan Barker, born Jan. 26, 1908, daughter of Geoffrey Claud and Dorothy (Lynch) Barker of Pontrilas, Herefordshire. She is a granddaughter of General Lynch.

Children, born in Lynchmere:

337. i. WILLIAM BOSWELL, b. July 25, 1943.
338. ii. JULIA BOSWELL, b. Sept. 14, 1944.

## Thomas Rotch

396. THOMAS<sup>4</sup> ROTCH (*William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of William and Elizabeth (Barney) Rotch, was born in Nantucket July 13, 1767, and died at Mount Pleasant, Ohio, Sept. 14, 1823. He married May 6, 1790, Charity Rodman, born Oct. 31, 1766, died in Kendal, Ohio, Aug. 8, 1824, daughter of Captain Thomas and Mary (Borden) Rodman of Newport, R. I. For a time they lived at the northwest corner of Water and William Streets, New Bedford, in a house subsequently occupied by the family of Mrs. Rotch's brother, Samuel Rodman. Mr. Rotch and wife eventually removed to Hartford, Conn., and later to Kendal, Ohio.

Son:

339. i. THOMAS ROTCH, JR., b. July 29, 1791; d. Nov. 19, 1791.

## Lydia (Rotch) Dean

397. LYDIA<sup>4</sup> ROTCH (*William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of William and Elizabeth (Barney) Rotch, was born in Nantucket Oct. 29, 1770, and died in Salem, Mass., March 10, 1822. She married in September, 1811, William Dean, a merchant of Salem, born in Swansea, Mass., in 1775, died Nov. 3, 1846, son of John and Rebecca Dean. There were no children. He married (2) in 1824, Lydia Rowell of Boston, born May 15, 1796, died July 18, 1863, daughter of Philip Rowell of Salisbury, Mass. She married (2) Feb. 27, 1850, Rev. Thomas Worcester, son of Rev. Dr. Noah Worcester, the lexicographer.

Rev. Benjamin Worcester, born Oct. 31, 1824, son of Rev. Thomas Worcester by his first marriage, married in 1847 Mary C. Ruggles, daughter of Micah H. and Lydia (Rodman) Ruggles. She was a grand-niece of Mrs. Lydia (Rotch) Dean. (See No. 806.)

## Elizabeth (Rotch) Rodman and Descendants

400. ELIZABETH<sup>4</sup> ROTCH (*William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of William and Elizabeth (Barney) Rotch, was born in Nantucket Dec. 9, 1757, and died in New Bedford Aug. 2, 1856, in her ninety-ninth year. She married in Nantucket June 1, 1780, Samuel<sup>5</sup> Rodman (*Thomas<sup>4</sup>, Samuel<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>*), born in Newport, R. I., Nov. 11, 1753, died in New Bedford Dec. 24, 1835, son of Captain Thomas and Mary (Borden) Rodman of Newport, R. I.

Samuel Rodman's father perished at sea, leaving the widowed mother with seven children, of whom Samuel, then thirteen years old, was the eldest. His early life was spent in the home and counting room of Abraham Reveira, a rich Jewish merchant of Newport, R. I., but he subsequently removed to Nantucket, where he became in succession a member of the two whaling firms of William Rotch & Sons. On the dissolution of the partnership Mr. Rodman was thereafter in business by himself, engaged largely in the whale fishery, first at Nantucket and later at New Bedford, whence he removed with his family in 1798, and where he had extensive interests. He left a large estate, the accumulation of which was in a great degree due to his trained mercantile ability.

Mr. Rodman owned a residence at the northwest corner of North Water and William Streets, New Bedford, directly opposite the mansion of his brother-in-law, William Rotch, Jr. Not long before his death he began the erection of a mansion of granite on the western portion of his estate, facing what is now North Second Street, just north of William Street. This was completed by his widow, and remained long in the occupancy of the family. It is still standing. The original residence was sold, to be incorporated in a mercantile plant, and the entire structure eventually was demolished.

Seeking to diversify his investments Mr. Rodman became interested in cotton manufacturing in Fall River. He was one of the eight original stockholders in the Pocasset Manufacturing Company, incorporated in 1822 with \$100,000 capital, and as the principal owner was elected president. This was the third large cotton corporation formed in Fall River. In the center of that city Mr. Rodman had previously purchased a huge farm, extending from the waterfront to North Watuppa Pond. On this tract is located one of the city's breathing places, Ruggles Park. Mr. Rodman also supplied some of the capital with which his son-in-law, Andrew Robeson, established the Robeson Print Works in Fall River about 1825. He was one of the board of directors of the Bedford Commercial Bank of New Bedford.

Mr. Rodman was a birthright member of the Society of Friends, and served as clerk of the Yearly Meeting. One of the original Board of Trus-

tees of the Friends Academy he contributed \$2,000 towards its endowment. He was a man of great intelligence, of education superior to that of most of his contemporaries, and of upright and benevolent character. Following a severe illness in 1829, when seventy-six, his mental faculties became clouded. Death ensued at the age of eighty-two.

Children, born in Nantucket:

401. i. MARY RODMAN, b. June 14, 1781; d. June 4, 1813.
402. ii. ELIZA RODMAN, b. Sept. 24, 1782; d. May 25, 1864. Unmarried.
403. iii. THOMAS RODMAN, b. June 21, 1784; d. March 7, 1809. Unmarried.
404. iv. WILLIAM ROTCH RODMAN, b. April 24, 1786; d. March 26, 1855.
405. v. ANNA RODMAN, b. Nov. 5, 1787; d. June 17, 1848.
406. vi. LYDIA RODMAN, b. Sept. 15, 1790; d. April 14, 1869.
407. vii. SAMUEL RODMAN, b. March 24, 1792; d. Aug. 1, 1876.
408. viii. SARAH RODMAN, b. Oct. 31, 1793; d. Sept. 26, 1888.
409. ix. BENJAMIN RODMAN, b. Nov. 25, 1794; d. Sept. 28, 1876.

## Descendants of Mary (Rodman) Fisher

401. MARY RODMAN<sup>5</sup> (*Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Samuel and Elizabeth (Rotch) Rodman, was born in Nantucket June 14, 1781, and died in New Bedford June 4, 1813. She married in New Bedford Nov. 25, 1802, William Logan Fisher, born Oct. 1, 1781, died Sept. 24, 1862, son of Thomas and Sarah Logan Fisher of Philadelphia. He married (2) March 20, 1817, Sarah Lindley, born June 23, 1785, died in 1865, daughter of Jacob and Hannah (Miller) Lindley of New Garden, Chester County, Penna.

Mr. Fisher was a manufacturer of woolens, but in 1836 he started the Duncannon Iron Works, on Sherman Creek, Perry County, Penna. He was soon joined in this enterprise by Charles W. Morgan of New Bedford, and the partnership of Fisher & Morgan was formed. The iron works were operated for many years, for a long period controlled by the Fisher family.

A voluminous writer he published numerous pamphlets regarding the Quaker faith and social questions. He was a member of the Society of Friends. Residence, Wakefield, Germantown, Philadelphia.

Children of William L. and Mary (Rodman) Fisher:

410. i. THOMAS RODMAN FISHER, b. Oct. 28, 1803; d. Nov. 11, 1861.
411. ii. SARAH LOGAN FISHER, b. May 18, 1806; d. Dec. 26, 1891.
412. iii. ELIZABETH RODMAN FISHER, b. Sept. 9, 1810; d. Feb. 6, 1875. Unmarried.

Children of William L. and Sarah (Lindley) Fisher:

- i. LINDLEY FISHER, b. Nov. 20, 1818; d. Feb. 3, 1852. Unmarried.
- ii. CHARLES WILLIAM FISHER, b. July 19, 1820; d. Dec. 28, 1857. Unmarried.
- iii. MARY RODMAN FISHER, b. Feb. 11, 1822; d. May 26, 1903. (See post for descendants.)

410. THOMAS RODMAN FISHER<sup>6</sup> (*Mary Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of William L. and Mary (Rodman) Fisher, was born in New Bedford Oct. 28, 1803, and died at Wakefield, Penna., Nov. 11, 1861. He married in Baltimore Nov. 27, 1829, Letitia Harvey Ellicott, born July 27, 1803, died at Little Wakefield, Penna., May 23, 1881, daughter of Jonathan and Sarah (Harvey) Ellicott of Ellicott's Mills, Md.

Children:

413. i. SARAH ELICOTT FISHER, b. Oct. 4, 1830; d. Feb. 3, 1832.
414. ii. WILLIAM LOGAN FISHER, b. July 4, 1832; d. Dec. 8, 1858. Unmarried.
415. iii. GEORGE LOGAN FISHER, b. May 17, 1835; d. July 2, 1836.

416. iv. MARY RODMAN FISHER, b. Aug. 20, 1838; d. Oct. 9, 1899.  
 417. v. ELLICOTT FISHER, b. May 3, 1840; d. 1908; m. Oct. 28, 1897, Mrs. Mary Tyler Gatchell. No children.  
 418. vi. HARVEY FISHER, b. Nov. 4, 1843; d. in Atlantic City, N. J., Aug. 31, 1885. Unmarried. Served in the 150th Regiment Pennsylvania Volunteers ("Bucktails") in the Civil War.

411. SARAH LOGAN FISHER<sup>6</sup> (*Mary Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of William L. and Mary (Rodman) Fisher, was born in New Bedford May 18, 1806, and died in Germantown, Penna., Dec. 26, 1891. She married in Germantown, Sept. 26, 1826, William Wister, born Feb. 3, 1803, died Nov. 19, 1881, son of John and Elizabeth (Harvey) Wister of Germantown.

Children, born in Germantown:

419. i. WILLIAM ROTCH WISTER, b. Dec. 7, 1827; d. Aug. 21, 1911.  
 420. ii. JOHN WISTER, b. July 15, 1829; d. June 4, 1900.  
 421. iii. HARVEY LANGHORNE WISTER, b. July 17, 1831; d. Aug. 24, 1832.  
 422. iv. LANGHORNE WISTER, b. Sept. 20, 1834; d. March 19, 1891.  
 423. v. ELIZABETH HARVEY WISTER, b. July 20, 1836; d. Feb. 15, 1838.  
 424. vi. JONES WISTER, b. Feb. 9, 1839; d. Aug. 31, 1917.  
 425. vii. FRANCIS WISTER, b. June 2, 1841; d. Nov. 22, 1905.  
 426. viii. RODMAN WISTER, b. Aug. 10, 1844; d. Aug. 4, 1913.

416. MARY RODMAN FISHER<sup>7</sup> (*Thomas R. Fisher<sup>6</sup>, Mary Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Thomas R. and Letitia H. (Ellicott) Fisher, was born in Germantown, Penna., Aug. 20, 1838, and died there Oct. 9, 1899. She married in Germantown Feb. 1, 1860, George Washington Carpenter of Germantown, born in Philadelphia Oct. 22, 1837, died there Feb. 12, 1921, son of George Washington and Anna-bella (Wilbank) Carpenter of Germantown.

Children:

427. i. LETITIA ELLICOTT CARPENTER, b. April 7, 1861; d. Sept. 3, 1933.  
 428. ii. ELIZABETH RODMAN FISHER CARPENTER, b. Feb. 17, 1870.

419. WILLIAM ROTCH WISTER<sup>7</sup> (*Sarah L. Fisher<sup>6</sup>, Mary Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of William and Sarah L. (Fisher) Wister, was born in Germantown, Penna., Dec. 7, 1827, and died in North Kingstown, R. I., Aug. 21, 1911. University of Pennsylvania, 1848. He married March 4, 1868, Mary Rebecca Eustis, born in Boston Oct. 5, 1844, and died in Philadelphia Feb. 29, 1944, in her one hundredth year, daughter of Frederick Augustus and Mary Ruth (Channing) Eustis of Boston. Mrs. Eustis was a daughter of Rev. Dr. William Ellery Channing, famous Unitarian clergyman. Mr. Wister was a Lieutenant-Colonel, Twentieth Pennsylvania Cavalry, Pennsylvania Volunteers, in the Civil War.

## Children:

429. i. MARY CHANNING WISTER, b. March 30, 1870; d. Aug. 24, 1913.  
430. ii. WILLIAM WISTER, b. Oct. 22, 1871; d. July 23, 1872.  
431. iii. FRANCES ANN WISTER, b. Nov. 26, 1874. Unmarried.  
432. iv. ELLA EUSTIS WISTER, b. Aug. 30, 1879.  
433. v. JOHN CASPAR WISTER, b. March 19, 1887. Unmarried.

420. JOHN WISTER<sup>7</sup> (*Sarah L. Fisher<sup>6</sup>, Mary Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of William and Sarah L. (Fisher) Wister, was born in Germantown, Penna., July 15, 1829, and died June 4, 1900. He married Oct. 19, 1864, Sarah Tyler Boas, born March 1, 1842, died March 22, 1922, daughter of Daniel D. and Margaret (Bates) Boas of Harrisburg, Penna. Resided at Duncannon, Penna. Ironmaster for fifty years, and president of the Duncannon Iron Company for twenty-seven years.

## Children, born in Duncannon, Penna.:

434. i. JANE BOAS WISTER, b. March 28, 1866; d. Jan. 12, 1869.  
435. ii. ELIZABETH WISTER, b. Sept. 1, 1870.  
436. iii. SARAH LOGAN WISTER, b. Dec. 7, 1873.  
437. iv. MARGARET WISTER, b. Jan. 13, 1882.

422. LANGHORNE WISTER<sup>7</sup> (*Sarah L. Fisher<sup>6</sup>, Mary Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of William and Sarah L. (Fisher) Wister, was born in Germantown, Penna., Sept. 20, 1834, and died there March 19, 1891. In his youth, with his brother John Wister he managed the business of the Duncannon Iron Works. At the outbreak of the Civil War, in 1861, he recruited a company of which he was commissioned Captain, joining the famous Bucktail Regiment. This command participated in a series of fierce battles, in one of which he was wounded. Later he was promoted to be Colonel of the 150th Regiment, Bucktail Brigade, which formed a part of the right wing of Meade's army at Gettysburg in July, 1863. On the first day, the brigade commander being wounded, Colonel Wister assumed command of the brigade, which won its objective after hard fighting. Colonel Wister was severely wounded. For gallantry he was brevetted Brigadier General. In 1864 he resigned his commission and returned to the iron business. General Wister never married.

424. JONES WISTER<sup>7</sup> (*Sarah L. Fisher<sup>6</sup>, Mary Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of William and Sarah L. (Fisher) Wister, was born in Germantown, Penna., Feb. 9, 1839, and died on a train between Glacier National Park and Chicago Aug. 31, 1917. He married (1) Oct. 6, 1868, Caroline de Tousard Stocker, born in Philadelphia June 24, 1846, died in Germantown June 18, 1884, daughter of Dr. Anthony E. and Jane (Randolph) Stocker of Philadelphia; (2) June 20, 1895, Sabine d'Invilliers (Mrs. William Weightman).

Children, by first marriage:

- 438. i. ELLA MIDDLETON MAXWELL WISTER, b. July 13, 1870; d. Feb. 15, 1871.
  - 439. ii. ALICE LOGAN WISTER, b. Dec. 9, 1871; d. Dec. 1, 1881.
  - 440. iii. ANNE WISTER, b. Aug. 28, 1874.
  - 441. iv. ETHEL LANGHORNE WISTER, b. June 12, 1881.
425. FRANCIS WISTER<sup>7</sup> (*Sarah L. Fisher<sup>6</sup>, Mary Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of William and Sarah L. (Fisher) Wister,, was born in Germantown, Penna., June 2, 1841, and died in Philadelphia Nov. 22, 1905. University of Pennsylvania, A.B., 1860; A.M., 1863. He married Feb. 29, 1880, Mary Tiers, daughter of Joseph and Hannah Chancellor (Twells) Tiers. No children. In the Civil War he served four years as a Captain of Infantry, Colonel of a volunteer Pennsylvania regiment, Brevet Major, U.S.A., and Brevet Lieutenant Colonel, U.S.A.

426. RODMAN WISTER<sup>7</sup> (*Sarah L. Fisher<sup>6</sup>, Mary Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of William and Sarah L. (Fisher) Wister, was born in Germantown, Penna., Aug. 10, 1844, and died in Philadelphia Aug. 4, 1913. He married in Pittsburgh, Penna., April 17, 1872, Eliza Irwin Black, born in Pittsburgh Sept. 1, 1850, died in Philadelphia Feb. 8, 1930, daughter of Colonel Samuel Wylie and Eliza Anne (Irwin) Black of Pittsburgh. In the Civil War he served in a battery of artillery in the Pennsylvania Volunteer Emergency Militia, and contracting typhoid fever was obliged to leave the service.

Children, born in Philadelphia:

- 442. i. EMILY BLACK WISTER, b. Dec. 10, 1885; d. April 30, 1886.
- 443. ii. LANGHORNE HARVEY WISTER, b. April 12, 1887; d. May 2, 1928.
- 444. iii. RODMAN MIFFLIN WISTER, b. June 20, 1890; d. Dec. 23, 1922.

427. LETITIA ELICOTT CARPENTER<sup>8</sup> (*Mary R. Fisher<sup>7</sup>, Thomas R. Fisher<sup>6</sup>, Mary Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of George W. and Mary R. (Fisher) Carpenter, was born in Germantown, Penna., April 7, 1861, and died in Ambler, Penna., Sept. 3, 1933. She married April 18, 1881, William Redwood Wright, born Dec. 16, 1846, died in Germantown Dec. 3, 1914, son of Robert Kemp and Henriette Hoskins (Price) Wright of Philadelphia. He was Captain of the Sixth Pennsylvania Cavalry, Lancers. City Treasurer of Philadelphia.

Children, born in Germantown:

- 445. i. LETITIA ELICOTT WRIGHT, b. March 4, 1882; d. Ambler, Penna., April 12, 1936. Unmarried.
- 446. ii. MARY FISHER WRIGHT, b. May 25, 1884.
- 447. iii. WILLIAM LOGAN FISHER WRIGHT, b. March 1, 1886; d. Sept. 6, 1903.
- 448. iv. HANNAH PRICE WRIGHT, b. Jan. 5, 1888.
- 449. v. ELIZABETH RODMAN WRIGHT, b. July 14, 1890.

450. vi. REDWOOD WRIGHT, b. July 4, 1892; d. April 16, 1903.  
 451. vii. SYDNEY LONGSTRETH WRIGHT, b. Oct. 9, 1896.  
 452. viii. ANNETTE NEWHALL WRIGHT, b. July 14, 1903.

428. ELIZABETH RODMAN FISHER CARPENTER<sup>8</sup> (*Mary R. Fisher<sup>7</sup>, Thomas R. Fisher<sup>6</sup>, Mary Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of George W. and Mary R. (Fisher) Carpenter, was born in Paris, France, Feb. 17, 1870, and died Oct. 12, 1942. She married Sept. 17, 1894, Robert Glendinning, born in Philadelphia Aug. 10, 1867, died at Chestnut Hill, Philadelphia April 19, 1936, son of Robert and Ellen Elizabeth (Butcher) Glendinning of Philadelphia. Residence, Chestnut Hill, Philadelphia.

Children, born in Philadelphia:

453. i. ELIZABETH CARPENTER GLENDINNING, b. July 16, 1897; d. Dec. 28, 1898.  
 454. ii. MARY FISHER GLENDINNING, b. Aug. 14, 1899.  
 455. iii. ELLEN GLENDINNING, b. Oct. 2, 1900.  
 456. iv. ROBERT GLENDINNING, b. April 20, 1903.

429. MARY CHANNING WISTER<sup>8</sup> (*William R. Wister<sup>7</sup>, Sarah L. Fisher<sup>6</sup>, Mary Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of William R. and Mary R. (Eustis) Wister, was born in Germantown, Penna., March 30, 1870, and died in North Kingstown, R. I., Aug. 24, 1913. She married April 21, 1898, Owen Wister, born in Philadelphia July 14, 1860, died in North Kingstown, R. I., July 21, 1938, son of Dr. Owen Jones and Sarah (Butler) Wister of Philadelphia. She was a member of the Board of Public Education of the School District of Philadelphia. Was a founder, in 1894, of the Civic Club of Philadelphia, and was twice its president.

Owen Wister, grandson of Fanny Kemble, distinguished American actress and author, who married Pierce Butler, was graduated from Harvard, A.B., 1882, and from Harvard Law School in 1888. He was admitted to the Philadelphia Bar in 1889, but after two years devoted himself to literary work, and became one of America's best known novelists. The most famous of his writings was "The Virginian."

Children:

457. i. MARY CHANNING WISTER, b. Sept. 20, 1899.  
 458. ii. FRANCES KEMBLE WISTER, b. Sept. 20, 1901.  
 459. iii. OWEN JONES WISTER, b. Sept. 20, 1901. In 1925 he became a member of the First Troop, Philadelphia City Cavalry, a part of the National Guard of Pennsylvania. In World War II he had nearly four years' service, 1941-1944, in the United States Cavalry forces. For three years overseas he participated in the North African campaigns, and subsequently was with General Mark Clark's Fifth Army in Italy.  
 460. iv. WILLIAM ROTCH WISTER, b. Feb. 18, 1904.  
 461. v. CHARLES KEMBLE BUTLER WISTER, b. Jan. 21, 1908.  
 462. vi. SARAH BUTLER WISTER, b. Aug. 24, 1913; d. Dec. 30, 1935. Unmarried.

Children born in Philadelphia, except the first and last, who were born in North Kingstown, R. I.

430. ELLA EUSTIS WISTER<sup>8</sup> (*William R. Wister<sup>7</sup>, Sarah L. Fisher<sup>6</sup>, Mary Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of William R. and Mary R. (Eustis) Wister, was born in Milton, Mass., Aug. 30, 1879. She married in Germantown, Penna., Oct. 20, 1904, Diedrich Jansen Haines, born in Cheltenham, Penna., April 4, 1871, son of Robert Bowne and Margaret Vaux (Wistar) Haines of Cheltenham. Residence, Chestnut Hill, Philadelphia.

Children, born in Des Moines, Iowa:

- 463. i. CASPAR WISTAR HAINES, b. Oct. 18, 1905.
- 464. ii. WILLIAM WISTER HAINES, b. Sept. 17, 1908.
- 465. iii. DIEDRICH JANSEN HAINES, JR., b. March 9, 1911.
- 466. iv. JOHN WISTER HAINES, b. May 19, 1912.

435. ELIZABETH WISTER<sup>8</sup> (*John Wister<sup>7</sup>, Sarah L. Fisher<sup>6</sup>, Mary Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of John and Sarah T. (Boas) Wister, was born in Duncannon, Penna., Sept. 1, 1870. She married in Germantown, Penna., Oct. 20, 1892, Charles Stewart Wurts, born in Philadelphia March 8, 1869, died March 10, 1933, son of Charles Stewart and Minnie Stuart (Wood) Wurts of Philadelphia. Residence, Philadelphia.

Children, born in Germantown, Penna.:

- 467. i. MARY STUART WURTS, b. June 19, 1896.
- 468. ii. CHARLES STEWART WURTS, JR., b. May 27, 1901.
- 469. iii. JOHN WISTER WURTS, b. Oct. 3, 1907.
- 470. iv. ELIZABETH FISHER WURTS, b. Oct. 22, 1912.

436. SARAH LOGAN WISTER<sup>8</sup> (*John Wister<sup>7</sup>, Sarah L. Fisher<sup>6</sup>, Mary Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of John and Sarah T. (Boas) Wister, was born in Duncannon, Penna., Dec. 7, 1873. She married in Germantown, Penna., Oct. 15, 1901, James Starr, born in Philadelphia April 6, 1870, son of James and Mary (Emlen) Starr of Philadelphia. He received the degrees of B.S. and E.M. from the University of Pennsylvania. Mrs. Starr was president of the Women's Medical College of Pennsylvania from 1923 to 1941. She received the degree of LL.D. from Ursinus College in 1931 and the degree of M.A. from the University of Pennsylvania in 1941. She compiled the book, "American War Songs." Residence, "Belfield," Germantown, Penna.

Daughter:

- 471. i. SARAH LOGAN STARR, b. June 13, 1903.

437. MARGARET WISTER<sup>8</sup> (*John Wister<sup>7</sup>, Sarah L. Fisher<sup>6</sup>, Mary Rod-*

*man<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of John and Sarah T. (Boas) Wister, was born in Duncannon, Penna., Jan. 13, 1882. She married June 8, 1910, Dr. Edward Browning Meigs, born Sept. 10, 1879, died Nov. 5, 1940, son of Dr. Arthur Vincent and Mary Roberts (Browning) Meigs of Philadelphia. Residence, Washington, D. C.

Children, born in Philadelphia:

- 472. i. ARTHUR VINCENT MEIGS, b. Feb. 3, 1912. Princeton, 1933; Harvard Law School, L.L.B., 1937.
- 473. ii. JOHN WISTER MEIGS, b. Jan. 10, 1915.
- 474. iii. SARAH TYLER MEIGS, b. April 27, 1917.
- 475. iv. MARY ROBERTS MEIGS, b. April 27, 1917. Bryn Mawr, 1939. Lieutenant (j.g.), W.A.V.E.S., United States Naval Reserve, in World War II.

440. ANNE WISTER<sup>8</sup> (*Jones Wister<sup>7</sup>, Sarah L. Fisher<sup>6</sup>, Mary Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Jones and Caroline (deT. Stocker) Wister, was born in Germantown, Penna., Aug. 28, 1874. She married in Philadelphia Oct. 19, 1897, William Lyttleton Barclay, born Feb. 12, 1868, died Feb. 12, 1938, son of A. Charles and Henrietta Chauncey (Savage) Barclay of Philadelphia. Residence, Chestnut Hill, Philadelphia.

Children, born at Chestnut Hill:

- 476. i. CAROLINE STOCKER BARCLAY, b. Sept. 12, 1898.
- 477. ii. WILLIAM LYTTLETON BARCLAY, JR., b. Dec. 29, 1899.
- 478. iii. ANNE WISTER BARCLAY, b. Aug. 30, 1901.
- 479. iv. CHARLES WALTER BARCLAY, b. Dec. 30, 1905.

441. ETHEL LANGHORNE WISTER<sup>8</sup> (*Jones Wister<sup>7</sup>, Sarah L. Fisher<sup>6</sup>, Mary Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Jones and Caroline (deT. Stocker) Wister, was born in Harrisburg, Penna., June 12, 1881. She married in Philadelphia April 23, 1908, Arthur Mason Chichester, Jr., born in Leesburg, Va., Feb. 26, 1867, died Jan. 27, 1927, son of Arthur Mason and Mary (Beverley) Chichester of Leesburg. No children. Residence, Washington, D. C.

443. LANGHORNE HARVEY WISTER<sup>8</sup> (*Rodman Wister<sup>7</sup>, Sarah L. Fisher<sup>6</sup>, Mary Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Rodman and Eliza I. (Black) Wister, was born in Philadelphia April 12, 1887, and died in Florence, Italy, May 2, 1928. He married April 29, 1922, Gertrude M. Morrow, daughter of Judge Morrow of Belvidere, N. J. No children. In World War I he served in the 154th Depot Brigade and the Field Artillery in 1918.

444. RODMAN MIFFLIN WISTER<sup>8</sup> (*Rodman Wister<sup>7</sup>, Sarah L. Fisher<sup>6</sup>, Mary Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of

Rodman and Eliza I. (Black) Wister, was born in Philadelphia June 20, 1890, and died there Dec. 23, 1922. He married April 26, 1922, Helen Bowden. No children. In World War I he was an officer in the Army Ambulance Service, for two years and served overseas with the American Expeditionary Force.

449. ELIZABETH RODMAN WRIGHT<sup>9</sup> (*Letitia E. Carpenter*<sup>8</sup>, *Mary R. Fisher*<sup>7</sup>, *Thomas R. Fisher*<sup>6</sup>, *Mary Rodman*<sup>5</sup>, *Elizabeth*<sup>4</sup> *Rotch*, *William*<sup>3</sup>, *Joseph*<sup>2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>), daughter of William R. and Letitia E. (Carpenter) Wright, was born in Logan, Penna., July 14, 1890. She married in Germantown, Penna., Dec. 18, 1915, Edward Fenno Hoffman, Jr., born in West Chester, Penna., July 27, 1888, son of Edward Fenno and Elizabeth (McCall) Hoffman of Philadelphia. Residence, Villa Nova, Penna.

Children, born in Philadelphia:

480. i. EDWARD FENNO HOFFMAN, III, b. Oct. 20, 1916.

481. ii. REDWOOD WRIGHT HOFFMAN, b. Jan. 12, 1918.

451. SYDNEY LONGSTRETH WRIGHT<sup>9</sup> (*Letitia E. Carpenter*<sup>8</sup>, *Mary R. Fisher*<sup>7</sup>, *Thomas R. Fisher*<sup>6</sup>, *Mary Rodman*<sup>5</sup>, *Elizabeth*<sup>4</sup> *Rotch*, *William*<sup>3</sup>, *Joseph*<sup>2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>), son of William R. and Letitia E. (Carpenter) Wright, was born in Germantown, Penna., Oct. 9, 1896. He married Feb. 28, 1925, Catharine Wharton Morris, born Jan. 26, 1899, daughter of Harrison Smith and Anna (Wharton) Morris of Branchtown, Philadelphia. Residence, Glenside, Penna.

Children, born in Philadelphia:

482. i. ANNA WHARTON WRIGHT, b. Dec. 25, 1925.

483. ii. WILLIAM REDWOOD WRIGHT, b. Sept. 17, 1927.

484. iii. HARRISON MORRIS WRIGHT, b. Oct. 6, 1928.

485. iv. ELLICOTT WRIGHT, b. Oct. 6, 1928.

452. ANNIE NEWHALL WRIGHT<sup>9</sup> (*Letitia E. Carpenter*<sup>8</sup>, *Mary R. Fisher*<sup>7</sup>, *Thomas R. Fisher*<sup>6</sup>, *Mary Rodman*<sup>5</sup>, *Elizabeth*<sup>4</sup> *Rotch*, *William*<sup>3</sup>, *Joseph*<sup>2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>), daughter of William R. and Letitia E. (Carpenter) Wright, was born in Germantown, Penna., July 14, 1903. Wellesley, 1924. She married in Gwynedd Valley, Penna., Nov. 8, 1930, Dr. Benjamin Smith Wood, son of Dr. Henry Austin and Anna Wharton (Smith) Wood of Waltham, Mass. Divorced. Residence, Abington, Penna.

Children:

486. i. BENJAMIN SMITH WOOD, JR., b. in Boston March 30, 1932.

487. ii. THOMAS RODMAN WOOD, b. in Boston March 9, 1934.

488. iii. LETITIA ELLICOTT WOOD, b. in Waltham, Mass., July 27, 1936.

454. MARY FISHER GLENDINNING<sup>9</sup> (*Elizabeth R. F. Carpenter*<sup>8</sup>, *Mary R. Fisher*<sup>7</sup>, *Thomas R. Fisher*<sup>6</sup>, *Mary Rodman*<sup>5</sup>, *Elizabeth*<sup>4</sup> *Rotch*, *William*<sup>3</sup>,

*Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Robert and Elizabeth R. F. (Carpenter) Glendinning, was born at Chestnut Hill, Philadelphia, Aug. 14, 1899. She married at Chestnut Hill April 23, 1924, Jay Cooke, born at Chestnut Hill April 2, 1897, son of Jay and Nina Louise (Benson) Cooke of Chestnut Hill. Residence, Chestnut Hill, Philadelphia.

Children, born at Chestnut Hill:

- 489. i. NINA COOKE, b. Sept. 3, 1925.
- 490. ii. MARY ELLEN COOKE, b. July 5, 1930.

455. ELLEN GLENDINNING<sup>9</sup> (*Elizabeth R. F. Carpenter<sup>8</sup>, Mary R. Fisher<sup>7</sup>, Thomas R. Fisher<sup>6</sup>, Mary Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Robert and Elizabeth R. F. (Carpenter) Glendinning, was born in Philadelphia, Oct. 2, 1900. She married Oct. 16, 1920, Persifor Frazer, born April 8, 1900, son of Persifor and Mary (Welsh) Frazer. Divorced, 1933. Residence, Chestnut Hill, Philadelphia.

Children, born in Philadelphia:

- 491. i. PERSIFOR FRAZER, IV, b. Aug. 20, 1921.
- 492. ii. ELIZABETH CARPENTER FRAZER, b. June 4, 1923.
- 492a. iii. ROBERT GLENDINNING FRAZER, b. Jan. 4, 1925. In World War II he served overseas for a year with the American Field Service. At Anzio Beach Head, in March, 1944, he was badly wounded in the left leg by a machine gun bullet, and was discharged in September, 1944. Residence, Philadelphia.

456. ROBERT GLENDINNING<sup>9</sup> (*Elizabeth R. F. Carpenter<sup>8</sup>, Mary R. Fisher<sup>7</sup>, Thomas R. Fisher<sup>6</sup>, Mary Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Robert and Elizabeth R. F. (Carpenter) Glendinning, was born in Philadelphia April 20, 1903. He married (1) Oct. 2, 1926, Lily MacLeod; (2) Feb. 19, 1934, Katharine Wentworth Boykin, born Jan. 17, 1907, daughter of Thomas Wentworth and Maria Pinckney (Norris) Boykin of Baltimore, Md. Residence, Whitemarsh Island, Ga.

Children:

By first marriage:

- 493. i. ELIZABETH CARPENTER GLENDINNING, b. Nov. 2, 1930.

By second marriage:

- 494. ii. KATHARINE WENTWORTH GLENDINNING, b. June 9, 1937.

457. MARY CHANNING WISTER<sup>9</sup> (*Mary C. Wister<sup>8</sup>, William R. Wister<sup>7</sup>, Sarah L. Fisher<sup>6</sup>, Mary Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Owen and Mary C. (Wister) Wister, was born in North Kingstown, R. I., Sept. 20, 1899. She married at Bryn Mawr, Penna., March 5, 1933, Andrew Michel Dasburg, born May 4, 1887, son of Michel and Margarethe (Orhvald) Dasburg, of the Duchy of Luxembourg. No children. She is author of several volumes of verse, "Helen and Others," "Night

in the Valley," and "Fantasy and Fugue." Residence, Taos, New Mexico.

458. FRANCES KEMBLE WISTER<sup>9</sup> (*Mary C. Wister*<sup>8</sup>, *William R. Wister*<sup>7</sup>, *Sarah L. Fisher*<sup>6</sup>, *Mary Rodman*<sup>5</sup>, *Elizabeth*<sup>4</sup> *Rotch*, *William*<sup>3</sup>, *Joseph*<sup>2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Owen and Mary C. (Wister) Wister, was born in Philadelphia, Sept. 20, 1901. She married in Bryn Mawr, Penna., May 21, 1928, Walter Stokes, born in Germantown, Penna., May 11, 1886, son of Thomas P. C. and Ellen (Welsh) Stokes of Germantown. Residence, St. Davids, Penna.

Children:

495. i. MARY CHANNING STOKES, b. in Bryn Mawr May 19, 1929.  
496. ii. JOHN WELSH STOKES, b. in Philadelphia June 7, 1931.

460. WILLIAM ROTCH WISTER<sup>9</sup> (*Mary C. Wister*<sup>8</sup>, *William R. Wister*<sup>7</sup>, *Sarah L. Fisher*<sup>6</sup>, *Mary Rodman*<sup>5</sup>, *Elizabeth*<sup>4</sup> *Rotch*, *William*<sup>3</sup>, *Joseph*<sup>2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>), son of Owen and Mary C. (Wister) Wister, was born in Philadelphia Feb. 18, 1904. He married in Philadelphia Frances Kearsley Mitchell, born in Philadelphia July 15, 1910, daughter of J. Kearsley and Frances B. (Stotesbury) Mitchell of Villa Nova, Penna. In World War II he served as a Lieutenant Commander, United States Naval Reserve, and took part in battles in the Pacific area. Residence, New York City.

Children, born in New York City:

497. i. WILLIAM ROTCH WISTER, JR., b. Sept. 20, 1933.  
498. ii. FRANCES STOTESBURY WISTER, b. Nov. 27, 1935.

461. CHARLES KEMBLE BUTLER WISTER<sup>9</sup> (*Mary C. Wister*<sup>8</sup>, *William R. Wister*<sup>7</sup>, *Sarah L. Fisher*<sup>6</sup>, *Mary Rodman*<sup>5</sup>, *Elizabeth*<sup>4</sup> *Rotch*, *William*<sup>3</sup>, *Joseph*<sup>2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>), son of Owen and Mary C. (Wister) Wister, was born in Philadelphia Jan. 21, 1908. Attended Harvard, Class of 1930. He married Dec. 8, 1945, Alta Dorothy Eisenhauer, daughter of Elmer and Ada (Behney) Eisenhauer of Myerstown, Penna. In World War II he served in the United States Army from February, 1941 to October, 1945. He was in combat in the Tenth Armored Division in France, Luxembourg and Germany, 1944-1945. Cited for heroic achievement and awarded Bronze Star Medal, A.S.N., for going back to bring ammunition from behind enemy lines under enemy artillery fire. Residence, Bryn Mawr, Penna.

463. CASPAR WISTAR HAINES<sup>9</sup> (*Ella E. Wister*<sup>8</sup>, *William R. Wister*<sup>7</sup>, *Sarah L. Fisher*<sup>6</sup>, *Mary Rodman*<sup>5</sup>, *Elizabeth*<sup>4</sup> *Rotch*, *William*<sup>3</sup>, *Joseph*<sup>2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>), son of Diedrich J. and Ella E. (Wister) Haines, was born in Des Moines, Iowa, Oct. 18, 1905. He married in Des Moines Feb. 2, 1934, Clara Jane Goddard, born in Bowie, Tex., June 8, 1910, daughter of Herbert and Mary (Ayres) Goddard of Des Moines. No children. Residence, Chestnut Hill, Philadelphia.

464. WILLIAM WISTER HAINES<sup>9</sup> (*Ella E. Wister*<sup>8</sup>, *William R. Wister*<sup>7</sup>, *Sarah L. Fisher*<sup>6</sup>, *Mary Rodman*<sup>5</sup>, *Elizabeth*<sup>4</sup> *Rotch*, *William*<sup>3</sup>, *Joseph*<sup>2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>), son of Diedrich J. and Ella E. (Wister) Haines, was born in Des Moines, Iowa, Sept. 17, 1908. University of Pennsylvania, 1930. He married in Old Greenwich, Conn., Sept. 17, 1934, Frances Tuckerman, born in Washington, D. C., Dec. 1, 1908, daughter of Wolcott and Lilia (McCauley) Tuckerman of Carpinteria, Calif. He is the author of novels, "Slim," "High Tension," and "Command Decision," and has contributed short stories to magazines. Scenarist for moving pictures. In World War II he served as intelligence officer in the United States Air Force for nearly five years, entering as Lieutenant and retiring as Lieutenant Colonel. He was at Air Headquarters in London for thirty-three months. Residence, Laguna Beach, Calif.

Children:

499. i. WILLIAM WISTER HAINES, JR., b. in Hollywood, Calif., Sept. 15, 1937.  
500. ii. LAURA WOLCOTT HAINES, b. in Easton, Md., Sept. 25, 1939.

465. DIEDRICH JANSEN HAINES, JR.<sup>9</sup> (*Ella E. Wister*<sup>8</sup>, *William R. Wister*<sup>7</sup>, *Sarah L. Fisher*<sup>6</sup>, *Mary Rodman*<sup>5</sup>, *Elizabeth*<sup>4</sup> *Rotch*, *William*<sup>3</sup>, *Joseph*<sup>2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>), son of Diedrich J. and Ella E. (Wister) Haines, was born in Des Moines, Iowa, March 9, 1911. University of Iowa, M.D., 1934. He married in Des Moines Sept. 29, 1934, Elizabeth Leland Hintz, born April 23, 1910, daughter of Dr. Charles August and Florence Kivill (Leland) Hintz of New Ulm, Minn. In January, 1938, he received a fellowship diploma for three years' service at the Mayo Clinic, Rochester, Minn. In World War II as a reserve officer he was called to service at Fitzsimmons General Hospital in Denver in August, 1942, and served at various stations in the Pacific from August, 1943, to November, 1945. Was in the Luzon Campaign with General MacArthur's forces, and thence to Japan. Residence, Des Moines, Iowa.

Children, born in Des Moines:

501. i. ELIZABETH LELAND HAINES, b. July 27, 1935.  
502. ii. MARY WISTER HAINES, b. July 27, 1935.  
503. iii. VIRGINIA EUSTIS HAINES, b. Aug. 22, 1941.

466. JOHN WISTER HAINES<sup>9</sup> (*Ella E. Wister*<sup>8</sup>, *William R. Wister*<sup>7</sup>, *Sarah L. Fisher*<sup>6</sup>, *Mary Rodman*<sup>5</sup>, *Elizabeth*<sup>4</sup> *Rotch*, *William*<sup>3</sup>, *Joseph*<sup>2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>), son of Diedrich J. and Ella E. (Wister) Haines, was born in Des Moines, Iowa, May 12, 1912. Drake University, 1933. University of Iowa, M.D., 1937. Unmarried.

Dr. Haines entered the United States Army Medical Corps in November, 1940, for World War II. After duty in the United States he embarked from San Francisco for the Philippine Islands, approximately March, 1941. He served there continuously on Corregidor until the island fell in May, 1942.

He then became a prisoner of the Japanese Army and was moved about the Philippines until October, 1944. At that time he was placed on a prison ship bound for the mainland of China or Japan. This ship was torpedoed by American submarines and was sunk. There were only seven or nine American survivors. Of these some were recaptured by the Japanese and, as nearly as known, three survived. Dr. Haines, in the grade of Captain at the time, was lost.

467. MARY STUART WURTS<sup>9</sup> (*Elizabeth Wister<sup>8</sup>, John Wister<sup>7</sup>, Sarah L. Fisher<sup>6</sup>, Mary Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Charles S. and Elizabeth (Wister) Wurts, was born in Germantown, Penna., June 19, 1896. She married (1) in Philadelphia July 10, 1917, Samuel Grey Dayton, born Jan. 15, 1892, died Nov. 1, 1927, son of William Clarke and Julia Ridgeway (Grey) Dayton of Moorestown, N. J.; (2) in Philadelphia Jan. 11, 1933, George Sydney Godolphin Cavendish, born Dec. 3, 1895, son of Henry Francis Compton and Harriet Castalia (Osborn) Cavendish of England. Residence, Media, Penna.

Children, by first marriage:

504. i. MARY STUART DAYTON, b. June 23, 1918.  
505. ii. SAMUEL GREY DAYTON, JR., b. Feb. 3, 1921.

468. CHARLES STEWART WURTS, JR.<sup>9</sup> (*Elizabeth Wister<sup>8</sup>, John Wister<sup>7</sup>, Sarah L. Fisher<sup>6</sup>, Mary Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Charles S. and Elizabeth (Wister) Wurts, was born in Germantown, Penna., May 27, 1901. Princeton, C.E., 1923. He married July 6, 1946, Barbara Gerhard, born June 29, 1911, daughter of Albert Pepper and Emilie C. (Fitch) Gerhard of Philadelphia. In World War II he served as Lieutenant Commander, United States Naval Reserve, 1942-1946, with service in North Africa and England. Received two Commendation Ribbons. Residence, Philadelphia.

469. JOHN WISTER WURTS<sup>9</sup> (*Elizabeth Wister<sup>8</sup>, John Wister<sup>7</sup>, Sarah L. Fisher<sup>6</sup>, Mary Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Charles S. and Elizabeth (Wister) Wurts, was born in Germantown, Penna., Oct. 3, 1907. Princeton, B.S. in Engineering, 1931, C.E., 1932. He married in Philadelphia May 12, 1934, Mary-Vaux Buckley Zantzinger, born Feb. 15, 1910, daughter of Clarence Clarke and Margaret Shippen (Buckley) Zantzinger of Philadelphia. In World War II he was Colonel of Field Artillery, United States Army, serving for five years. He was attached to General Headquarters of the Army, and later was chief of the ground statistics section at Headquarters of the Army Ground Forces for four years. He holds the Legion of Merit. Residence, Blue Bell, Penna.

Children, born in Philadelphia:

506. i. JOHN WISTER WURTS, JR., b. May 24, 1936.  
507. ii. CLARENCE ZANTZINGER WURTS, b. Sept. 27, 1940.

470. ELIZABETH FISHER WURTS<sup>9</sup> (*Elizabeth Wister<sup>8</sup>, John Wister<sup>7</sup>, Sarah L. Fisher<sup>6</sup>, Mary Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Charles S. and Elizabeth (Wister) Wurts, was born in Germantown, Penna., Oct. 22, 1912. She married (1) in Philadelphia Oct. 22, 1932, Brinton Page Roberts, born Nov. 17, 1902, died Oct. 22, 1934, son of George Brinton and Alice (Butcher) Roberts, of Bala, Penna.; (2) at Gwynedd Valley, Penna., June 10, 1938, Boyd Lee Spahr, Jr., born in Ardmore, Penna., June 3, 1910, son of Boyd Lee and Katharine (Febiger) Spahr, of Haverford, Penna. In World War II he was a Lieutenant (j.g.), United States Naval Reserve, 1943-1945, and served overseas. Residence, Blue Bell, Penna.

Children, by second marriage:

508. i. BOYD LEE SPAHR, III, b. Aug. 20, 1940.  
509. ii. CHARLES STEWART WURTS SPAHR, b. Aug. 11, 1945.

471. SARAH LOGAN STARR<sup>9</sup> (*Sarah L. Wister<sup>8</sup>, John Wister<sup>7</sup>, Sarah L. Fisher<sup>6</sup>, Mary Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of James and Sarah L. (Wister) Starr, was born in Germantown, Penna., June 13, 1903. She married in Germantown Oct. 15, 1936, Dr. Daniel Blain, born Dec. 17, 1898, son of John Mercer and Claudia (Grier) Blain of Lexington, Va., and Hangchow, China. He was in the Public Health Service, and was loaned to the United States Navy during World War II. With rank of Captain he was Chief of Neuro-Psychiatry for the Veterans Administration, and for several years was medical director of R.M.D. of the War Shipping Administration. Residence, Washington, D. C.

Son:

510. i. DANIEL BLAIN, II, b. in Philadelphia April 27, 1938.

473. JOHN WISTER MEIGS<sup>9</sup> (*Margaret Wister<sup>8</sup>, John Wister<sup>7</sup>, Sarah L. Fisher<sup>6</sup>, Mary Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Dr. Edward B. and Margaret (Wister) Meigs, was born in Philadelphia Jan. 10, 1915. Princeton, 1936; Harvard, M.D., 1940. He married at Woods Hole, Mass., July 6, 1940, Camilla Kidder Riggs (Bryn Mawr, 1940), born March 10, 1918, daughter of Lawrason and Dorothy Laura Maynard (Kidder) Riggs of New York City. In World War II he served as Captain in the Medical Corps, A.U.S. Residence, Washington, D. C.

Children:

511. i. ANNE LAWRAZON MEIGS, b. in Philadelphia July 21, 1941.  
512. ii. PATIENCE WISTER MEIGS, b. in Washington Nov. 22, 1945.

474. SARAH TYLER MEIGS<sup>9</sup> (*Margaret Wister<sup>8</sup>, John Wister<sup>7</sup>, Sarah L. Fisher<sup>6</sup>, Mary Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Dr. Edward B. and Margaret (Wister) Meigs, was born in Phil-

adelphia April 27, 1917. Bryn Mawr, 1939. She married in Washington, D. C., Feb. 28, 1944, Dr. Thornton Brown (Harvard, A.B., 1936; M.D., 1940), born Nov. 24, 1913, son of Dr. Lloyd Thornton and Marian (Wigglesworth) Brown of Milton, Mass. In World War II he was a Lieutenant Commander in the Medical Corps, United States Naval Reserve. Residence, Milton, Mass.

Children:

513. i. MARIAN WIGGLESWORTH BROWN, b. at Camp Le Jeune, N. C., Dec. 20, 1944.  
 513a. ii. EDWARD MEIGS BROWN, b. July 22, 1946.

476. CAROLINE STOCKER BARCLAY<sup>9</sup> (*Anne Wister<sup>8</sup>, Jones Wister<sup>7</sup>, Sarah L. Fisher<sup>6</sup>, Mary Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of William L. and Anne (Wister) Barclay, was born at Chestnut Hill, Philadelphia, Sept. 12, 1898. She married (1) Oct. 7, 1922, Muscoe Russell Hunter Garnett, son of James Mercer Garnett of Virginia, divorced, 1936; (2) at Chestnut Hill, Penna., March 9, 1939, Lieutenant Colonel George Vaughan Strong, born Dec. 23, 1893, son of George Vaughan and Sally Hall (Smith) Strong of Raleigh, N. C. He participated in both World Wars. In World War II he served from April, 1942, to July, 1945, and was overseas, E.T.O., with Field Artillery. Residence, Chestnut Hill, Philadelphia.

Children, by first marriage:

514. i. ANNE WISTER GARNETT, b. Nov. 27, 1923.  
 515. ii. JAMES MERCER GARRETT, b. June 21, 1925. In World War II he served nearly three years in the United States Marine Corps, mostly in the Pacific area. He was unscathed in the Battle of Iwo Jima, and was subsequently stationed in Japan. Discharged June 3, 1946.  
 516. iii. STEVEN HUNTER GARNETT, b. Jan. 7, 1928.

477. WILLIAM LYTTLETON BARCLAY, JR.<sup>9</sup> (*Anne Wister<sup>8</sup>, Jones Wister<sup>7</sup>, Sarah L. Fisher<sup>6</sup>, Mary Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of William L. and Anne (Wister) Barclay, was born at Chestnut Hill, Philadelphia, Dec. 29, 1899. Princeton, A.B., 1921; M.I.T., B.S. in E.E., 1923. He married in New York City April 28, 1928, Helen Louise Timmerman, born in New York City Dec. 8, 1903, daughter of Louis Felix and Harriet (Losey) Timmerman of New York City. Residence, Scarsdale, N. Y.

Children:

517. i. WILLIAM LYTTLETON BARCLAY, III, b. March 18, 1929.  
 518. ii. BARBARA BARCLAY, b. Jan. 19, 1935.

478. ANNE WISTER BARCLAY<sup>9</sup> (*Anne Wister<sup>8</sup>, Jones Wister<sup>7</sup>, Sarah L. Fisher<sup>6</sup>, Mary Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of William L. and Anne (Wister) Barclay, was born at Chestnut

Hill, Philadelphia, Aug. 30, 1901. She married Oct. 15, 1928, Erskine Hazard, born Feb. 20, 1887, son of Harry Hazard of Richmond, Va. No children. Residence, San Diego, Calif.

479. CHARLES WALTER BARCLAY<sup>9</sup> (*Anne Wister<sup>8</sup>, Jones Wister<sup>7</sup>, Sarah L. Fisher<sup>6</sup>, Mary Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of William L. and Anne (Wister) Barclay, was born at Chestnut Hill, Philadelphia, Dec. 30, 1905. He married (1) Feb. 21, 1931, Mary Jane Hail, born Nov. 24, 1911, died in Santa Monica, Calif., Feb. 17, 1933, daughter of Harry Harrison and Claudia Hail of Los Angeles, Calif.; (2) at Narragansett Pier, R. I., Sept. 1, 1934, Marion Markoe Rivinus, born Nov. 25, 1913, daughter of E. Florens Rivinus of Chestnut Hill, Philadelphia. Residence, Blue Bell, Penna.

Children:

By first marriage:

519. i. CLAUDIA JANE BARCLAY, b. March 14, 1932.

By second marriage:

520. ii. CHARLES MARTIN BARCLAY, b. Feb. 17, 1936.

480. EDWARD FENNO HOFFMAN, III<sup>10</sup> (*Elizabeth R. Wright<sup>9</sup>, Letitia E. Carpenter<sup>8</sup>, Mary R. Fisher<sup>7</sup>, Thomas R. Fisher<sup>6</sup>, Mary Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Edward F. and Elizabeth R. (Wright) Hoffman, was born in Philadelphia Oct. 20, 1916. He married June 8, 1946, Nadine Kalpaschnikoff, born April 23, 1924, daughter of Andre and Celia (Higgins) Kalpaschnikoff of Wayne, Penna. In World War II he was a Captain of Infantry, and saw five years' service. Residence, Wayne, Penna.

481. REDWOOD WRIGHT HOFFMAN<sup>10</sup> (*Elizabeth R. Wright<sup>9</sup>, Letitia E. Carpenter<sup>8</sup>, Mary R. Fisher<sup>7</sup>, Thomas R. Fisher<sup>6</sup>, Mary Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Edward F. and Elizabeth R. (Wright) Hoffman, was born in Philadelphia Jan. 12, 1918. He married Sept. 17, 1944, Celia Kalpaschnikoff, born July 1, 1921, daughter of Andre and Celia (Higgins) Kalpaschnikoff of Wayne, Penna. In World War II he served two years in Panama in the Army Air Force, and two years in the Pacific as p.f.c. in the Third Air Commando Group, receiving three battle stars. Residence, Wayne, Penna.

Daughter:

520a. i. CELIA ELIZABETH HOFFMAN, b. Nov. 12, 1946.

489. NINA COOKE<sup>10</sup> (*Mary F. Glendinning<sup>9</sup>, Elizabeth R. F. Carpenter<sup>8</sup>, Mary R. Fisher<sup>7</sup>, Thomas R. Fisher<sup>6</sup>, Mary Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Jay and Mary F. (Glendinning)

Cooke, was born at Chestnut Hill, Philadelphia, Sept. 3, 1925. She married at Chestnut Hill Dec. 30, 1944, Alan Lukens Emlen, born in Germantown, Penna., April 5, 1920, son of George and Eleanor (Clark) Emlen of Ambler, Penna. Residence, Philadelphia.

Daughter:

521. i. NINA COOKE EMLEN, b. Dec. 20, 1945.

491. PERSIFOR FRAZER, IV<sup>10</sup> (*Ellen Glendinning*<sup>9</sup>, *Elizabeth R. F. Carpenter*<sup>8</sup>, *Mary R. Fisher*<sup>7</sup>, *Thomas R. Fisher*<sup>6</sup>, *Mary Rodman*<sup>5</sup>, *Elizabeth*<sup>4</sup> *Rotch*, *William*<sup>3</sup>, *Joseph*<sup>2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>), son of Persifor and Ellen (Glendinning) Frazer, was born in Philadelphia Aug. 20, 1921. He married Aug. 15, 1942, Mary Vaughn Williams, born April 12, 1924, daughter of David Evans and Maida Wade (Dale) Williams of Bala-Cynwyd, Penna. In World War II he passed five years with the armed forces, serving as bombardier on flying fortresses, fifty missions, in the Fifteenth Air Force in the Italian theater. Residence, Chestnut Hill, Philadelphia.

Children:

522. i. PERSIFOR FRAZER, V, b. Jan. 11, 1946.

522a. ii. DAVID WILLIAMS FRAZER, b. May 19, 1947.

492. ELIZABETH CARPENTER FRAZER<sup>10</sup> (*Ellen Glendinning*<sup>9</sup>, *Elizabeth R. F. Carpenter*<sup>8</sup>, *Mary R. Fisher*<sup>7</sup>, *Thomas R. Fisher*<sup>6</sup>, *Mary Rodman*<sup>5</sup>, *Elizabeth*<sup>4</sup> *Rotch*, *William*<sup>3</sup>, *Joseph*<sup>2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Persifor and Ellen (Glendinning) Frazer, was born in Philadelphia June 4, 1923. She married (1) March 22, 1942, Hugh G. Bayne; divorced, 1946; (2) Oct. 5, 1946, Robert Wade Dale, Jr., born May 18, 1920, son of Robert Wade and Margaret (Harris) Dale of Philadelphia. In World War II Mr. Dale was a Captain in the 28th Division, United States Army, serving two years in France. Residence, Philadelphia.

Daughter, by first marriage:

523. i. GAYLE BAYNE, b. Aug. 20, 1943.

504. MARY STUART DAYTON<sup>10</sup> (*Mary S. Wurts*<sup>9</sup>, *Elizabeth Wister*<sup>8</sup>, *John Wister*<sup>7</sup>, *Sarah L. Fisher*<sup>6</sup>, *Mary Rodman*<sup>5</sup>, *Elizabeth*<sup>4</sup> *Rotch*, *William*<sup>3</sup>, *Joseph*<sup>2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Samuel G. and Mary S. (Wurts) Dayton, was born at Chestnut Hill, Philadelphia, June 23, 1918. She married June 22, 1941, Charles Wilson McNeely, born Oct. 21, 1914, son of Charles Wilson and Frances Carlyle (Jones) McNeely of Malvern, Penna.

Children:

523a. i. CHARLES WILSON MCNEELY, JR., b. July 15, 1942.

523b. ii. PRENTICE JONES MCNEELY, b. March 1, 1946.

505. SAMUEL GREY DAYTON, JR.<sup>10</sup> (*Mary S. Wurts*<sup>9</sup>, *Elizabeth Wis-*

ter<sup>8</sup>, John Wister<sup>7</sup>, Sarah L. Fisher<sup>6</sup>, Mary Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), son of Samuel G. and Mary S. (Wurts) Dayton, was born at Media, Penna., Feb. 3, 1921. Princeton, 1943. He married May 17, 1943, Frances Frazer Imbrie, born April 7, 1923, daughter of Andrew Clerk and Dorothy (Welsh) Imbrie of Princeton, N. J. In World War II he was First Lieutenant of Infantry, Tenth Mountain Division, and was awarded the Bronze Star Medal for action in Italy. Residence, Media, Penna.

Daughter:

524. i. ALICE STUART DAYTON, b. in Princeton, N. J., May 11, 1944.

514. ANNE WISTER GARNETT<sup>10</sup> (Caroline S. Barclay<sup>9</sup>, Anne Wister<sup>8</sup>, Jones Wister<sup>7</sup>, Sarah L. Fisher<sup>6</sup>, Mary Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Muscoe R. H. and Caroline S. (Barclay) Garnett, was born Nov. 27, 1923. She married April 6, 1946, Harry Dickson Smith Boenning, born Nov. 18, 1919 (Princeton, 1942), son of Henry Dorr and Clara Virginia (Smith) Boenning, of Philadelphia. In World War II he was a First Lieutenant in the 701st Tank Destroyer Bat., First Armored Division.

Son:

- 524a. i. DICKSON GARNETT BOENNING, b. Jan. 7, 1947.

### DESCENDANTS OF WILLIAM LOGAN FISHER BY HIS SECOND MARRIAGE

It has seemed desirable to present here an account of the descendants of William Logan Fisher by his second marriage, to Sarah Lindley.

1a. MARY RODMAN FISHER, daughter of William Logan Fisher by his second marriage to Sarah Lindley, was born in Germantown, Penna., Feb. 11, 1822, and died in Philadelphia May 26, 1903. She married June 28, 1849, Samuel Mickle Fox of Philadelphia, born June 29, 1821, died Dec. 25, 1869, son of Joseph M. and Hannah (Emlen) Fox.

Children:

- 2a. i. JOSEPH M. FOX, b. March 6, 1850; d. Jan. 26, 1853.
  - 3a. ii. WILLIAM LOGAN FOX, b. Sept. 27, 1851; d. April 29, 1880; m. Feb. 25, 1879, Rebecca C. Hollingsworth, b. Nov. 13, 1856, d. April 8, 1935, daughter of Samuel L. and Anna C. (Pemberton) Hollingsworth of Philadelphia. No children.
  - 4a. iii. JOSEPHI MICKLE FOX, b. Feb. 4, 1853; d. Sept. 3, 1918.
  - 5a. iv. SARAH LINDLEY FOX, b. March 11, 1855; d. June 20, 1882. Unmarried.
  - 6a. v. HANNAH FOX, b. May 11, 1858; d. Jan. 22, 1933. Unmarried.
- 4a. JOSEPHI MICKLE FOX, son of Samuel M. and Mary Rodman (Fisher)

Fox, was born in Philadelphia Feb. 4, 1853, and died there Sept. 3, 1918. Haverford, 1873. He married May 10, 1883, Emily Ann Read, born Jan. 14, 1858, died June 23, 1942, daughter of Benjamin Huger and Mary Julia (Middleton) Read of Charleston, S. C. Residence, Germantown, Philadelphia.

Children:

- 7a. i. MARY LINDLEY FOX, b. Dec. 12, 1884.
- 8a. ii. EMILY READ FOX, b. June 7, 1887.
- 9a. iii. ELIZA MIDDLETON FOX, b. Feb. 23, 1890.
- 10a. iv. WILLIAM LOGAN FOX, b. Nov. 15, 1892.

7a. MARY LINDLEY FOX, daughter of Joseph M. and Emily A. (Read) Fox, was born Dec. 12, 1884. She married May 19, 1909, Walter Bourchier Devereux, born Dec. 26, 1881, died Aug. 9, 1923, son of Walter Bourchier and Mary Porter (Gregory) Devereux. Residence, Syosset, Long Island, N. Y.

Son:

- 11a. i. WALTER BOURCHIER DEVEREUX, b. March 5, 1910.

8a. EMILY READ FOX, daughter of Joseph M. and Emily A. (Read) Fox, was born June 7, 1887. She married Sept. 16, 1921, Edward Murray Cheston, born Oct. 13, 1882, son of C. Morris and Sally Cheston (Murray) Cheston of West River, Md. Residence, Ambler, Penna. No children.

9a. ELIZA MIDDLETON FOX, daughter of Joseph M. and Emily A. (Read) Fox, was born Feb. 23, 1890. She married June 24, 1916, Benjamin Chew Tilghman, born Jan. 16, 1890, son of Benjamin Chew and Mary (McMichael) Tilghman of Philadelphia; University of Pennsylvania, 1912. Residence, Philadelphia.

Children:

- 12a. i. BENJAMIN CHEW TILGHMAN, JR., b. June 30, 1917.
- 13a. ii. RICHARD ALBERT TILGHMAN, b. March 8, 1920.
- 14a. iii. JOSEPH FOX TILGHMAN, b. April 23, 1922.

10a. WILLIAM LOGAN FOX, son of Joseph M. and Emily A. (Read) Fox, was born Nov. 15, 1892. Harvard, A.B., 1914; University of Pennsylvania, LL.B., 1919. He married (1) May 14, 1925, Mary Borland Thayer, born April 30, 1903, died July 21, 1938, daughter of George Chapman and Gertrude May (Wheeler) Thayer of Villa Nova, Penna.; (2) July 15, 1941, Mrs. Betty (Carson) Tyson, born Dec. 26, 1892, daughter of William Moore and Jean Maclay (Williams) Carson of New York City, and widow of Charles M. Tyson. In World War I he was a Second Lieutenant, SPD.; and in World War II he served as Lieutenant Colonel, C. M. P. in AUS. Residence, Norristown, Penna.

Children, by first marriage, born in Philadelphia:

- 15a. i. JOSEPH MICKLE FOX, b. Sept. 26, 1926. In World War II he was p.f.c. in U. S. M. C. R.  
16a. ii. EMILY READ FOX, b. May 7, 1928; d. June 5, 1942.

11a. WALTER BOURCHIER DEVEREUX, son of Walter B. and Mary L. (Fox) Devereux, was born in New York City March 5, 1910. He was educated at Princeton. He married at Rye, N. Y., Sept. 28, 1940, Zilph Palmer, born Jan. 12, 1912, daughter of Edgar and Zilph (Hayes) Palmer of Princeton, N. J. In World War II he was a Captain of Cavalry, MIS. Residence, Rye, N. Y.

Daughter:

- 17a. i. LINDLEY READ DEVEREUX, b. in Manhattan, Kan., Aug. 15, 1943.

12a. BENJAMIN CHEW TILGHMAN, JR., son of Benjamin C. and Eliza M. (Fox) Tilghman, was born in Philadelphia June 30, 1917. Yale, 1941. He married at Torresdale, Penna., June 12, 1941, Elizabeth Dunderdale Forbes, daughter of Reginald Dunderdale and Christine (Strout) Forbes. In United States Army in World War II. Residence, Dorset, Vt.

Children:

- 18a. i. BENJAMIN CHEW TILGHMAN, III, b. Nov. 13, 1942.  
19a. ii. WILLIAM FORBES TILGHMAN, b. Oct. 3, 1944.  
20a. iii. CHRISTOPHER LIPPITT TILGHMAN, b. Sept. 5, 1946.

13a. RICHARD ALBERT TILGHMAN, son of Benjamin C. and Eliza M. (Fox) Tilghman, was born in Manchester, England, March 8, 1920. Member of class of 1943, Princeton. He married at Chestnut Hill, Philadelphia, Feb. 26, 1944, Diana Disston, daughter of Jacob Steelman, Jr., and Sarah (Myers) Disston of Chestnut Hill. In World War II served in United States Marine Corps. Residence, Oyster Bay, Long Island, N. Y.

Sons:

- 21a. i. RICHARD ALBERT TILGHMAN, JR., b. Jan. 6, 1945.  
22a. ii. EDWARD MIDDLETON TILGHMAN, b. Jan. 9, 1947.

14a. JOSEPH FOX TILGHMAN, son of Benjamin C. and Eliza M. (Fox) Tilghman, was born in Philadelphia April 23, 1922. Yale, 1943. He married Nov. 24, 1945, Marion Twiggs Pepper, daughter of George Wharton, Jr., and Marion (Myers) Pepper of St. Davids, Penna. Served with the United States Marines from 1943 to 1946 in the Southern Pacific at Okinawa and Pelelin. Residence, Philadelphia.

Son:

- 23a. i. JOSEPH FOX TILGHMAN, JR., b. Sept. 7, 1946.

## Descendants of William Rotch Rodman

404. WILLIAM ROTCH RODMAN<sup>5</sup> (*Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Samuel and Elizabeth (Rotch) Rodman, was born in Nantucket April 24, 1786, and died in New Bedford March 26, 1855. He married in Philadelphia Dec. 2, 1813, Rebecca Waln Morgan, born in Philadelphia Aug. 11, 1794, died in New Bedford June 18, 1848, daughter of Thomas and Anne (Waln) Morgan of Philadelphia.

Mr. Rodman was one of the most prominent and successful whaling merchants of New Bedford. For twenty years, 1831-1851, he was the first president of the Mechanics Bank of New Bedford, then a State bank, reorganized as a National bank in 1865, and subsequently merged with the First National Bank. He built a fine stone mansion on County Street, designed by Major Russell Warren, a famous architect, where he entertained many celebrities. This house still stands opposite the easterly end of Hawthorn Street.

Children, born in New Bedford:

525. i. SAMUEL WILLIAM RODMAN, b. Oct. 30, 1814; d. June 1, 1906.
526. ii. ANNA RODMAN, b. April 11, 1817; d. Dec. 30, 1895; m. William R. Robeson (See No. 703).
527. iii. ALFRED RODMAN, b. Oct. 20, 1820; d. June 27, 1853.
528. iv. ELLEN RODMAN, b. June 11, 1824; d. April 16, 1898.

Note: Samuel W. and Alfred Rodman married two Motley sisters, and Ellen Rodman married their brother. John Lothrop Motley, the historian, was a brother of the three Motleys.

525. SAMUEL WILLIAM RODMAN<sup>6</sup> (*William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of William R. and Rebecca W. (Morgan) Rodman, was born in New Bedford Oct. 30, 1814, and died in Lincoln, Mass., June 1, 1906, in his ninety-second year. He married in Boston Oct. 1, 1838, Emma Motley, born in Boston April 1, 1819, died there Oct. 22, 1889, daughter of Thomas and Anna (Lothrop) Motley of Boston and Dedham, Mass.

Children:

529. i. WILLIAM RODMAN, b. Oct. 26, 1839; d. in Paris December, 1860. Unmarried.
  530. ii. ANNA LOTHROP RODMAN, b. March 6, 1841; d. May 26, 1917.
  531. iii. EMMA RODMAN, b. Aug. 3, 1845; d. March 29, 1926. Unmarried.
  532. iv. SAMUEL RODMAN, b. Jan. 24, 1851; d. April 26, 1854.
527. ALFRED RODMAN<sup>6</sup> (*William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, Wil-*

*liam<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of William R. and Rebecca W. (Morgan) Rodman, was born in New Bedford Oct. 20, 1820, and died at Sulphur Springs, Va., June 27, 1853. He married in Dedham, Mass., Sept. 8, 1847, Anna Lothrop Motley, born in Boston Aug. 16, 1825, died there March 15, 1905, daughter of Thomas and Anna (Lothrop) Motley of Boston and Dedham, Mass.

Children:

- 533. i. ALFRED RODMAN, b. July 19, 1848; d. July 4, 1910.
- 534. ii. ELOISE RODMAN, b. Jan. 1, 1850; d. Jan. 14, 1898.
- 535. iii. EDWARD MOTLEY RODMAN, b. Dec. 25, 1850; d. Jan. 28, 1858.

528. ELLEN RODMAN<sup>6</sup> (*William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of William R. and Rebecca W. (Morgan) Rodman, was born in New Bedford June 11, 1824, and died April 16, 1898. She married in New Bedford Sept. 8, 1846, Edward Motley, born in Boston Jan. 27, 1816, died there Jan. 8, 1894, son of Thomas and Anna (Lothrop) Motley of Boston and Dedham, Mass.

Children:

- 536. i. THOMAS MOTLEY, b. June 17, 1847; d. Dec. 7, 1909.
- 537. ii. REBECCA RODMAN MOTLEY, b. June 10, 1849; d. June 3, 1905.
- 538. iii. ELLEN RODMAN MOTLEY, b. Jan. 9, 1854; d. April 19, 1939.
- 539. iv. JESSIE MOTLEY, b. Sept. 14, 1857; d. June 12, 1941.
- 540. v. EDWARD PREBLE MOTLEY, b. May 13, 1860; d. July 3, 1908.

530. ANNA LOTHROP RODMAN<sup>7</sup> (*Samuel W. Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Samuel W. and Emma (Motley) Rodman, was born in New Bedford March 6, 1841, and died in Lincoln, Mass., May 26, 1917. She married in Paris, France, April 15, 1861, [Lamson] Howard Snelling, born in Philadelphia Jan. 27, 1836, died in Lincoln, Mass., May 8, 1879, son of Samuel and Caroline (Tilden) Snelling of Philadelphia.

Children:

- 541. i. EMMA MOTLEY SNELLING, b. Oct. 31, 1862; d. Oct. 6, 1921.
- 542. ii. CAROLINE SNELLING, b. Oct. 10, 1867. Unmarried.
- 543. iii. SAMUEL RODMAN SNELLING, b. Nov. 12, 1868; d. Nov. 13, 1941.
- 544. iv. ANNA LOTHROP SNELLING, b. Sept. 30, 1871; d. Jan. 14, 1873.
- 545. v. HOWARD SNELLING, b. Feb. 7, 1877; d. March 6, 1946.
- 546. vi. WILLIAM ROTCH SNELLING, b. Sept. 12, 1878; d. Aug. 7, 1879.

533. ALFRED RODMAN<sup>7</sup> (*Alfred Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Alfred and Anna L. (Motley) Rodman, was born in Dedham, Mass., July 19, 1848, and died in Dedham July 4, 1910. Harvard, 1870. He married at Fredonia, N. Y., Oct. 31, 1872, Harriet Delia Risley, born March 5, 1850, died in Dedham July

27, 1925, daughter of Hanson Alexander and Harriet (Crosby) Risley, of Dunkirk, N. Y.

Son:

547. i. ALFRED RODMAN, b. April 18, 1874.

534. ELOISE RODMAN<sup>7</sup> (*Alfred Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Alfred and Anna L. (Motley) Rodman, was born in Dedham, Mass., Jan. 1, 1850, and died there Jan. 14, 1898. She married in Dedham June 1, 1869, General Stephen Minot Weld, born in Jamaica Plain, Mass., Jan. 4, 1842, died at Boca Grande, Fla., March 16, 1920, son of Stephen Minot and Sarah Bartlet (Balch) Weld. Harvard, A.B., 1860; A.M., 1863. He married (2) May 26, 1904, S. Edith Waterbury. Served with distinction for four years in the Civil War.

Children:

548. i. STEPHEN MINOT WELD, b. Sept. 2, 1870; d. Sept. 17, 1887.  
 549. ii. ALFRED RODMAN WELD, b. Sept. 2, 1870; d. Aug. 27, 1902.  
 550. iii. EDWARD MOTLEY WELD, b. Sept. 4, 1872; d. Dec. 27, 1929.  
 551. iv. LOTHROP MOTLEY WELD, b. July 26, 1874; d. Aug. 18, 1882.  
 552. v. ELOISE MINOT WELD, b. Jan. 24, 1879; d. in Malmesbury, England, Jan. 4, 1907. Unmarried.  
 553. vi. RUDOLPH WELD, b. Aug. 20, 1883; d. Aug. 27, 1941.  
 554. vii. PHILIP BALCH WELD, b. Jan. 4, 1887.

Note: Stephen M. Weld was a first cousin of Francis M. Weld who married Elizabeth Rodman. (See No. 1016.)

536. THOMAS MOTLEY<sup>7</sup> (*Ellen Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Edward and Ellen (Rodman) Motley, was born in New Bedford June 17, 1847, and died in Boston Dec. 7, 1909. He married in Boston April 9, 1872, Eleanor Warren, born in Boston Dec. 16, 1847, died in Nahant, Mass., Sept. 29, 1942, daughter of J. Mason and Anna (Crowninshield) Warren of Boston.

Children:

555. i. THOMAS MOTLEY, b. Nahant, Mass., Sept. 4, 1874.  
 556. ii. CASPAR MOTLEY, b. Nahant, June 15, 1876; d. Aug. 10, 1947. Unmarried.  
 557. iii. JOHN LOTHROP MOTLEY, b. Boston, Nov. 21, 1879.  
 558. iv. EDWARD MOTLEY, b. Boston Nov. 21, 1879.  
 559. v. WARREN MOTLEY, b. Boston, May 14, 1883.

537. REBECCA RODMAN MOTLEY<sup>7</sup> (*Ellen Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Edward and Ellen (Rodman) Motley, was born in Boston June 10, 1849, and died there June 3, 1905. She married in Boston June 7, 1870, Joseph Story Fay, born in Boston Aug. 10, 1847, died there Feb. 4, 1912, son of Joseph Story and Sarah (Bryant) Fay of Boston.

Children, born in Boston, except the last:

- 560. i. JOSEPH STORY FAY, b. Nov. 2, 1871; d. April 12, 1939.
- 561. ii. EDWARD MOTLEY FAY, b. July 9, 1874; d. Jan. 12, 1876.
- 562. iii. ALAN MOTLEY FAY, b. Oct. 23, 1880; d. April 15, 1909. Unmarried.
- 563. iv. SAMUEL PRESCOTT FAY, b. May 27, 1884.
- 564. v. WILLIAM RODMAN FAY, b. at Woods Hole, Mass., Aug. 20, 1885.

538. ELLEN RODMAN MOTLEY<sup>7</sup> (*Ellen Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Edward and Ellen (Rodman) Motley, was born in New Bedford Jan. 9, 1854, and died in Boston April 19, 1939. She married May 22, 1884, Dudley Leavitt Pickman, born in Salem, Mass., Dec. 31, 1850, died in Boston June 9, 1938, son of William Dudley and Caroline (Silsbee) Pickman of Salem. Harvard, 1873.

Children:

- 565. i. DUDLEY LEAVITT PICKMAN, b. April 25, 1885.
- 566. ii. EDWARD MOTLEY PICKMAN, b. Oct. 13, 1886.

539. JESSIE MOTLEY<sup>7</sup> (*Ellen Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Edward and Ellen (Rodman) Motley, was born in Boston Sept. 14, 1857, and died there June 12, 1941. She married in Boston March 4, 1890, Samuel Eliot Guild, born in Boston Nov. 29, 1850, died there Feb. 27, 1925, son of Samuel Eliot and Elizabeth (Henderson) Guild of Boston.

Children:

- 567. i. ELLEN MOTLEY GUILD, b. in Boston Jan. 11, 1891; d. May 27, 1893.
- 568. ii. SAMUEL ELIOT GUILD, b. in Boston Dec. 30, 1892.
- 569. iii. EDWARD MOTLEY GUILD, b. in Nahant, Mass., July 16, 1894; d. March 10, 1946.
- 570. iv. HENRY RICE GUILD, b. in Boston Feb. 14, 1896.

540. E. PREBLE MOTLEY<sup>7</sup> (*Ellen Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Edward and Ellen (Rodman) Motley, was born in Boston May 13, 1860, and died July 3, 1908. He married in Boston Nov. 7, 1887, Marian Palfrey, born in Boston Nov. 13, 1866, died Nov. 16, 1946, daughter of Francis Winthrop and Louisa (Bartlett) Palfrey of Boston.

Children:

- 571. i. FRANCIS PALFREY MOTLEY, b. Dec. 9, 1890; d. Oct. 4, 1915. Unmarried.
- 572. ii. EDWARD PREBLE MOTLEY, b. March 3, 1895.

541. EMMA MOTLEY SNELLINGS<sup>8</sup> (*Anna L. Rodman<sup>7</sup>, Samuel W. Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Howard and Anna L. (Rodman) Snelling, was born in

Jamaica Plain, Mass., Oct. 31, 1862, and died in Lincoln, Mass., Oct. 6, 1921. She married in South Lincoln, Mass., Oct. 17, 1889, Arthur Stuart Eldredge, born in Roxbury, Mass., Feb. 4, 1860, died in Lincoln, Mass., Nov. 6, 1919, son of James Thomas and Ellen Sophia (Williams) Eldredge of Boston.

Children:

- 573. i. EMMA MARGARET ELDREDGE, b. Oct. 15, 1890; d. Feb. 4, 1927.
- 574. ii. ANNA RODMAN ELDREDGE, b. Sept. 23, 1891.
- 575. iii. ELLEN WILLIAMS ELDREDGE, b. Feb. 14, 1893.
- 576. iv. IDA BIGELOW ELDREDGE, b. Feb. 14, 1893.
- 577. v. ARTHUR STUART ELDREDGE, b. Aug. 13, 1897; d. May 24, 1923.

543. S[AMUEL] RODMAN SNELLING<sup>8</sup> (*Anna L. Rodman<sup>7</sup>, Samuel W. Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Howard and Anna L. (Rodman) Snelling, was born in Boston Nov. 12, 1868, and died Nov. 13, 1941. He married (1) in Boston April 18, 1896, Edith Marian Louise Bamforth, born March 2, 1873, died in Lincoln, Mass., Aug. 21, 1899, daughter of Charles Stansby and Marian Louise (Wood) Bamforth of Lincoln; (2) in Lincoln, Jan. 18, 1902, Marian Louise Bamforth, born Aug. 24, 1867, died March 22, 1944, sister of Edith M. L. Bamforth. Residence, South Lincoln, Mass.

Children, born in Lincoln:

By first marriage:

- 578. i. SAMUEL WILLIAM SNELLING, b. Jan. 26, 1898.
- 579. ii. EDITH CAROLINE SNELLING, b. May 24, 1899.

By second marriage:

- 580. iii. PHILIP RODMAN SNELLING, b. Oct. 27, 1902.
- 581. iv. HOWARD SNELLING, II, b. March 25, 1904.
- 582. v. MARIAN GRACE SNELLING, b. Aug. 5, 1905.
- 583. vi. ANNA ROSEMOND SNELLING, b. Oct. 17, 1906.
- 584. vii. CHARLES AMYAS SNELLING, b. June 15, 1908. Harvard 1931.

545. HOWARD SNELLING<sup>8</sup> (*Anna L. Rodman<sup>7</sup>, Samuel W. Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Howard and Anna L. (Rodman) Snelling, was born in Lincoln, Mass., Feb. 7, 1877, and died in Pittsboro, N. C., March 5, 1946. He attended M. I. T. He married (1) in Concord, Mass., May 2, 1906, Eleanor Greenwood Goodwin, born in Cambridge, Mass., June 24, 1877, died in Asheville, N. C., Nov. 6, 1919, daughter of Frank and Mary Greenwood (Buttrick) Goodwin, of Concord; (2) Sept. 14, 1920, Amy Viola Smith, born Feb. 2, 1900, daughter of William and Sarah (Nelson) Smith of Sherbrooke, Canada. In the Spanish-American War, 1898, he served in Porto Rico with the 101st Volunteer Engineers. In World War I he served in the Q.M.C. Department, Remount, in France.

Children, by first marriage, born in Lincoln, Mass.:

- 585. i. ELEANOR RODMAN SNELLING, b. Jan. 15, 1909.
- 586. ii. HOWARD SNELLING, Jr., b. July 8, 1911. Alabama Polytechnic Institute. In World War II he was Staff Sergeant in the Air Corps, 1943-1946, serving in England and France.
- 587. iii. ROBERT ELIOT SNELLING, b. Sept. 5, 1912. In World War II he was Captain in the Field Artillery, 1941-1946, serving in England, France, and Germany; awarded Bronze Star Medal.

By second marriage, born in Ridgeway, S. C.:

- 588. iv. WILLIAM SNELLING, b. Jan. 3, 1924. In World War II he served three years as Staff Sergeant in the Glider Infantry in France.
- 589. v. JOHN SNELLING, b. June 10, 1930.
- 590. vi. RICHARD HANFIELD SNELLING, b. Sept. 1, 1932.

547. ALFRED RODMAN<sup>8</sup> (*Alfred Rodman<sup>7</sup>, Alfred Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Alfred and Harriet D. (Risley) Rodman, was born in Dedham, Mass., April 18, 1874. Harvard, 1896. He married Nov. 28, 1922, Mrs. Ella Louise (Grell) Schwab, who died Jan. 4, 1946. Residence, Palm Beach, Fla.

549. ALFRED RODMAN WELD<sup>8</sup> (*Eloise Rodman<sup>7</sup>, Alfred Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Stephen M. and Eloise (Rodman) Weld, was born in Dedham, Mass., Sept. 2, 1870, and died Aug. 27, 1902. Harvard, 1891. He married in Milton, Mass., June 2, 1900, Adelaide Watson Ladd, born in Milton Sept. 21, 1870, died in Milton in August, 1942, daughter of William J. and Anna (Watson) Ladd of Milton.

Son:

- 591. i. STEPHEN MINOT WELD, b. in Milton Dec. 19, 1901.

550. EDWARD MOTLEY WELD<sup>8</sup> (*Eloise Rodman<sup>7</sup>, Alfred Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Stephen M. and Eloise (Rodman) Weld, was born in Boston Sept. 4, 1872, and died Dec. 27, 1929. Harvard, 1893. He married in Boston April 22, 1897, Sarah Lothrop King, born in Roxbury, Mass., Feb. 21, 1874, daughter of George Parsons and Sarah Williams (Lothrop) King of Boston.

Children:

- 592. i. LOTHROP MOTLEY WELD, b. Feb. 16, 1898; d. June 6, 1947.
- 593. ii. EDWARD MOTLEY WELD, Jr., b. May 24, 1906.
- 594. iii. ANNE KING WELD, b. April 4, 1910.

553. RUDOLPH WELD<sup>8</sup> (*Eloise Rodman<sup>7</sup>, Alfred Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Stephen M. and Eloise (Rodman) Weld, was born in Dedham, Mass., Aug. 20, 1883,

and died in Brookline, Mass., Aug. 27, 1941. Harvard, 1905. He married in New York City Nov. 7, 1908, Sylvia Caroline Parsons, born Nov. 19, 1885, daughter of William Barclay and Anna DeWitt (Reed) Parsons of New York City. Residence, Brookline, Mass.

Children:

- 595. i. SYLVIA WELD, b. Sept. 16, 1909.
- 596. ii. ELOISE RODMAN WELD, b. April 18, 1911.
- 597. iii. PRISCILLA ALDEN WELD, b. Feb. 22, 1917.

554. PHILIP BALCH WELD<sup>8</sup> (*Eloise Rodman*<sup>7</sup>, *Alfred Rodman*<sup>6</sup>, *William R. Rodman*<sup>5</sup>, *Elizabeth*<sup>4</sup> *Rotch*, *William*<sup>3</sup>, *Joseph*<sup>2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>), son of Stephen M. and Eloise (Rodman) Weld, was born in Dedham, Mass., Jan. 4, 1887. Harvard, 1908. He married in Milton, Mass., Nov. 2, 1912, Katharine Saltonstall, born April 10, 1891, daughter of Philip Leverett and Katharine (Sherwood) Saltonstall of Boston. Served in World War I as First Lieutenant and airplane observer. Residence, Hastings-on-Hudson, N. Y.

Children:

- 598. i. MARY ELIZABETH WELD, b. Sept. 8, 1913.
- 599. ii. PHILIP SALTONSTALL WELD, b. Dec. 11, 1914.
- 600. iii. ROSE WELD, b. Aug. 18, 1917.
- 601. iv. ADELAIDE WELD, b. Nov. 8, 1919.
- 602. v. KATHARINE WELD, b. Nov. 8, 1919.
- 603. vi. FRANCES WELD, b. March 12, 1922.

555. THOMAS MOTLEY<sup>8</sup> (*Thomas Motley*<sup>7</sup>, *Ellen Rodman*<sup>6</sup>, *William R. Rodman*<sup>5</sup>, *Elizabeth*<sup>4</sup> *Rotch*, *William*<sup>3</sup>, *Joseph*<sup>2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>), son of Thomas and Eleanor (Warren) Motley, was born in Nahant, Mass., Sept. 4, 1874. Harvard, 1896. He married in Boston Nov. 12, 1902, Margaret Fay, born in Boston July 5, 1882, daughter of Henry Howard and Elizabeth Elliot (Spooner) Fay of Boston. Residence, Milton, Mass.

Children (adopted):

- 604. i. PHYLLIS MOTLEY, b. Nov. 28, 1916.
- 605. ii. ANNE MOTLEY, b. Aug. 6, 1918.

557. J[OHN] LOTHROP MOTLEY<sup>8</sup> (*Thomas Motley*<sup>7</sup>, *Ellen Rodman*<sup>6</sup>, *William R. Rodman*<sup>5</sup>, *Elizabeth*<sup>4</sup> *Rotch*, *William*<sup>3</sup>, *Joseph*<sup>2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>), son of Thomas and Eleanor (Warren) Motley, was born in Boston Nov. 21, 1879. Harvard, A.B., 1902; Harvard Law School, 1904. He married in Worcester, Mass., Jan. 12, 1918, Nancy Elizabeth Barton, born Sept. 30, 1893, daughter of Charles Sumner and Elizabeth S. (Holbrook) Barton of Worcester. Residence, Boston.

Children, born in Boston:

- 606. i. ELIZABETH MOTLEY, b. Dec. 27, 1918.
- 607. ii. ELEANOR WARREN MOTLEY, b. Feb. 3, 1921.

608. iii. JOHN LOTHROP MOTLEY, Jr., b. Feb. 27, 1924.  
609. iv. NANCY MOTLEY, b. April 4, 1926.

558. EDWARD MOTLEY<sup>8</sup> (*Thomas Motley<sup>7</sup>, Ellen Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Thomas and Eleanor (Warren) Motley, was born in Boston Nov. 21, 1879. Harvard, 1902. He married at Chestnut Hill, Mass., June 14, 1913, Harriet Sayles Jaques, born Nov. 19, 1885, daughter of Herbert and Harriet Sayles (Francis) Jaques of Chestnut Hill. In 1919, at the time of the Boston police strike he served in the Motor Corps, Massachusetts State Guard. Residence, Concord, Mass.

Children:

610. i. EDWARD MOTLEY, JR., b. in Boston, March 22, 1914.  
611. ii. THOMAS MOTLEY, II, b. in Boston, Oct. 2, 1915.  
612. iii. HERBERT JAQUES MOTLEY, b. in Nahant, Mass., Sept. 5, 1917.  
613. iv. JOAN MOTLEY, b. in Boston, May 18, 1921.

559. WARREN MOTLEY<sup>8</sup> (*Thomas Motley<sup>7</sup>, Ellen Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Thomas and Eleanor (Warren) Motley, was born in Boston May 14, 1883. Harvard, A.B., 1904, LL.B., 1906. Served in United States Army in this country and overseas in World War I, May, 1917, to May, 1919, as First Lieutenant and Captain of Infantry. Member of the general staff, A.E.F. Unmarried. Residence, Nahant, Mass.

560. JOSEPH STORY FAY<sup>8</sup> (*Rebecca R. Motley<sup>7</sup>, Ellen Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Joseph S. and Rebecca R. (Motley) Fay, was born in Boston Nov. 2, 1871, and died there April 12, 1939. He married in Boston June 2, 1898, Margaret H. Welch. No children.

563. S[AMUEL] PRESCOTT FAY<sup>8</sup> (*Rebecca R. Motley<sup>7</sup>, Ellen Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Joseph S. and Rebecca R. (Motley) Fay, was born in Boston May 27, 1884. Harvard, 1907. He married in Orange, N. J., Feb. 28, 1922, Hester Millard Davey, born July 7, 1894, daughter of Vernon Llewellyn and Mary Shepherd (Randall) Davey of East Orange, N. J. In World War I he served with an American ambulance on the French front in 1915. Was with the United States forces from August, 1917, to May, 1919, First Lieutenant, Field Artillery. Assigned to Air Service February, 1918. Saw service at the front during the Argonne-Meuse campaign as aerial observer with the 91st Air Squadron. Cited in General Orders of Air Service Headquarters. Residence, Framingham Center, Mass.

Children, born in Boston:

614. i. MARY RANDALL FAY, b. Jan. 16, 1923.

615. ii. SARAH BRYANT FAY, b. Nov. 26, 1924.  
 616. iii. S[AMUEL] PRESCOTT FAY, Jr., b. Oct. 12, 1926. In World War II he was a seaman, first class, United States Naval Reserve.

564. WILLIAM RODMAN FAY<sup>8</sup> (*Rebecca R. Motley*<sup>7</sup>, *Ellen Rodman*<sup>6</sup>, *William R. Rodman*<sup>5</sup>, *Elizabeth*<sup>4</sup> Rotch, *William*<sup>3</sup>, *Joseph*<sup>2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>), son of Joseph S. and Rebecca R. (Motley) Fay, was born at Woods Hole, Mass., Aug. 20, 1885. Harvard, A.B., 1907; LL.B., 1910. He married in New York City June 6, 1916, Gertrude Helen Schirmer, born in Boston Nov. 24, 1888, daughter of Gustave and Grace May (Tilton) Schirmer of New York City. In World War I he was a Captain in the American Red Cross, serving with the A.E.F. in France and Germany, 1918-1919. Residence, New York City.

Children:

617. i. ELISE HELEN FAY, b. in Boston May 18, 1918.  
 618. ii. HOPE FAY, b. in New York April 5, 1925.

565. DUDLEY LEAVITT PICKMAN<sup>8</sup> (*Ellen R. Motley*<sup>7</sup>, *Ellen Rodman*<sup>6</sup>, *William R. Rodman*<sup>5</sup>, *Elizabeth*<sup>4</sup> Rotch, *William*<sup>3</sup>, *Joseph*<sup>2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>), son of Dudley L. and Ellen R. (Motley) Pickman, was born in Geneva, Switzerland, April 25, 1885. Harvard, 1907. He married in Boston, Nov. 18, 1930, Vivian Wessell (Mrs. A. Lynde Cochrane), born Dec. 1, 1894, daughter of Charles Alonzo and Florence (Hervey) Wessell of New York City. Served in World War I as First Lieutenant of infantry, United States Army, Nov. 27, 1917, to Dec. 5, 1918. Residences, Boston and Beverly, Mass.

Children of Mrs. Pickman by her former marriage are: Lucy Douglas Cochrane, married Winston Frederick Churchill Guest, whose father is a first cousin of Winston Churchill, former Prime Minister of Great Britain; Nancy Cochrane, married Alfred Wright, Jr.; Jean Cochrane, married Charles Sumner Bird, III; and Alexander L. Cochrane, married Cynthia Dunn.

566. EDWARD MOTLEY PICKMAN<sup>8</sup> (*Ellen R. Motley*<sup>7</sup>, *Ellen Rodman*<sup>6</sup>, *William R. Rodman*<sup>5</sup>, *Elizabeth*<sup>4</sup> Rotch, *William*<sup>3</sup>, *Joseph*<sup>2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>), son of Dudley L. and Ellen R. (Motley) Pickman, was born in Boston Oct. 13, 1886. Harvard, A.B., 1908; A.M., 1909; LL.B., 1912. He married in Washington, D. C., Jan. 30, 1915, Hester Marion Chanler, born at Tuxedo Park, N. Y., April 25, 1893, daughter of Winthrop Astor and Margaret (Terry) Chanler. Served in the Navy in World War I, for nine months on U.S.S. *Wainwright* at Queenstown, and subsequently in Paris as secretary to Admiral Jackson. Residence, Bedford, Mass.

Children, Nos. i, iii, and vi born in Boston; the others born in Bedford, Mass.:

619. i. ANTHONY PICKMAN, b. March 17, 1916.  
 620. ii. MARGARET ELLEN PICKMAN, b. April 29, 1917.

621. iii. JANE PICKMAN, b. Dec. 20, 1919.  
 622. iv. DAVID PICKMAN, b. May 20, 1921.  
 623. v. MARTHA PICKMAN, b. June 5, 1924.  
 624. vi. DEBORAH PICKMAN, b. March 22, 1933.

568. SAMUEL ELIOT GUILD<sup>8</sup> (*Jessie Motley<sup>7</sup>, Ellen Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Samuel E. and Jessie (Motley) Guild, was born in Boston Dec. 30, 1892. Harvard, 1915. He married in Boston Feb. 26, 1927, Jane Peters, born in Boston June 30, 1896, daughter of William York and Amey Dexter (Sharpe) Peters of Boston. In World War I Lieutenant, (j.g.), United States Naval Reserve, April 5, 1917 to Jan. 22, 1919. Served on U.S.S. *St. Louis* on escort duty across the Atlantic. Residence, Boston.

Children:

625. i. SAMUEL ELIOT GUILD, JR., b. in Lynn, Mass., Sept. 11, 1928.  
 626. ii. ELLEN GUILD, b. in Boston May 24, 1930.

569. EDWARD MOTLEY GUILD<sup>8</sup> (*Jessie Motley<sup>7</sup>, Ellen Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Samuel E. and Jessie (Motley) Guild, was born in Nahant, Mass., July 16, 1894, and died in Boston March 10, 1946. Harvard, 1916. He married in Brookline, Mass., Sept. 22, 1928, Corina Codman Ely, born in Providence, R. I., June 9, 1897, daughter of William and Cora (Codman) Ely. Captain in Yankee Division overseas in World War I, 1917-1918.

Son:

627. i. EDWARD MOTLEY GUILD, JR., b. in Brookline, Jan. 2, 1930.

570. HENRY RICE GUILD<sup>8</sup> (*Jessie Motley<sup>7</sup>, Ellen Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Samuel E. and Jessie (Motley) Guild, was born in Boston Feb. 14, 1896. Harvard, A.B., 1917, LL.B., 1922. He married at Short Hills, N. J., Oct. 1, 1927, Martha Pintard Bayard, born at Short Hills Sept. 15, 1902, daughter of Louis Pintard and Lucy Forbes (Bullard) Bayard of Short Hills (She is a half first cousin of the author.) Lieutenant, (j.g.), United States Navy, in World War I. Residence, Charles River, Mass.

Children, born in Boston:

628. i. HENRY RICE GUILD, JR., b. Oct. 22, 1928.  
 629. ii. SHEILA GUILD, b. Dec. 6, 1930.  
 630. iii. BAYARD GUILD, b. June 5, 1933.

572. E. PREBLE MOTLEY<sup>8</sup> (*E. Preble Motley<sup>7</sup>, Ellen Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of E. Preble and Marian (Palfrey) Motley, was born in Boston March 3, 1895. He married (1) in Bar Harbor, Maine, July 6, 1917, Dorrothy a

Smith, born in Bar Harbor July 6, 1899, daughter of Dr. Frank and Dorothy (Grossman) Fremont Smith of Bar Harbor. Divorced, February, 1937; (2) In Portland, Maine Nov. 9, 1940, Frances Howard (Mrs. Howard Mayhew), born in Bremen, Germany, Feb. 25, 1909, daughter of Troup and Eugenie (Barnes) Howard of Atlanta, Ga. Residence, South Hamilton, Mass.

Children, by first marriage, born in Boston:

- 631. i. MARJORIE MOTLEY, b. March 28, 1918.
- 632. ii. EDWARD PREBLE MOTLEY, JR., b. May 28, 1921.

573. EMMA MARGARET ELDREDGE<sup>9</sup> (*Emma M. Snelling*<sup>8</sup>, *Anna L. Rodman*<sup>7</sup>, *Samuel W. Rodman*<sup>6</sup>, *William R. Rodman*<sup>5</sup>, *Elizabeth*<sup>4</sup> Rotch, *William*<sup>3</sup>, *Joseph*<sup>2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Arthur S. and Emma M. (Snelling) Eldredge, was born in Lincoln, Mass., Oct. 15, 1890, and died in Boston Feb. 4, 1927. She married Sept. 1, 1921, Percival Dudley Shepherd, son of Sumner Whitney and Myra Anne (Dudley) Shepherd of Wellesley Hills, Mass. (See No. 575.) No children. He married (2) Mildred Rogers.

574. ANNA RODMAN ELDREDGE<sup>9</sup> (*Emma M. Snelling*<sup>8</sup>, *Anna L. Rodman*<sup>7</sup>, *Samuel W. Rodman*<sup>6</sup>, *William R. Rodman*<sup>5</sup>, *Elizabeth*<sup>4</sup> Rotch, *William*<sup>3</sup>, *Joseph*<sup>2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Arthur S. and Emma M. (Snelling) Eldredge, was born on Bachelor Peak Ranch, Burnet County, Texas, Sept. 23, 1891. She married in Lincoln, Mass., June 24, 1913, Stephen Norman Bond, born in Plymouth, N. H., April 9, 1861, died Sept. 21, 1940, son of Norman James and Jane (Moody) Bond, of Niantic, Conn. Residence, Niantic, Conn.

Son:

- 633. i. LOUIS H. S. BOND, adopted, b. in Middletown, Conn., Aug. 4, 1931.

575. ELLEN WILLIAMS ELDREDGE<sup>9</sup> (*Emma M. Snelling*<sup>8</sup>, *Anna L. Rodman*<sup>7</sup>, *Samuel W. Rodman*<sup>6</sup>, *William R. Rodman*<sup>5</sup>, *Elizabeth*<sup>4</sup> Rotch, *William*<sup>3</sup>, *Joseph*<sup>2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>), twin daughter of Arthur S. and Emma M. (Snelling) Eldredge, was born on Bachelor Peak Ranch, Burnet County, Texas, Feb. 14, 1893. She married in South Lincoln, Mass., April 26, 1923, Prentiss Shepherd, born July 28, 1891, son of Sumner Whitney and Myra Anne (Dudley) Shepherd, of Wellesley Hills, Mass. (See No. 573.)

Children, born in Boston:

- 634. i. ELLEN WILLIAMS SHEPHERD, b. Oct. 29, 1925; Bryn Mawr, 1947.
- 635. ii. PRENTISS SHEPHERD, JR., b. May 26, 1927; Harvard, 1949.

576. IDA BIGELOW ELDREDGE<sup>9</sup> (*Emma M. Snelling*<sup>8</sup>, *Anna L. Rodman*<sup>7</sup>, *Samuel W. Rodman*<sup>6</sup>, *William R. Rodman*<sup>5</sup>, *Elizabeth*<sup>4</sup> Rotch, *William*<sup>3</sup>, *Joseph*<sup>2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>), twin daughter of Arthur S. and Emma M. (Snelling) Eldredge, was born on Bachelor Peak Ranch, Burnet County, Texas, Feb. 14, 1893. She married Aug. 28, 1918, Rev. John Moran-Coch-

ran Wilson, born in Springhill, Nova Scotia, Nov. 15, 1888, son of Rev. William Charles and Susan (Cochran) Wilson of Springhill. Residence, Liverpool, Nova Scotia.

Children:

636. i. WILLIAM CHARLES WILSON, b. Oct. 22, 1919.
637. ii. ARTHUR STUART ELDREDGE WILSON, b. Oct. 22, 1919; d. in infancy.
638. iii. JOHN MORAN-COCHRAN WILSON, JR., b. Nov. 5, 1924. He was a trooper in the Ontario Regiment, Royal Canadian Tank Corps, in World War II, 1943-1945.

577. ARTHUR STUART ELDREDGE<sup>9</sup> (*Emma M. Snelling*<sup>8</sup>, *Anna L. Rodman*<sup>7</sup>, *Samuel W. Rodman*<sup>6</sup>, *William R. Rodman*<sup>5</sup>, *Elizabeth*<sup>4</sup> *Rotch*, *William*<sup>3</sup>, *Joseph*<sup>2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>), son of Arthur S. and Emma M. (Snelling) Eldredge, was born on Bachelor Peak Ranch, Burnet County, Texas, Aug. 13, 1897, and died in Weston, Mass., May 24, 1923. He married in Brookline, Mass., June 5, 1920, Josephine Sturgis, born in Boston May 11, 1896, daughter of Robert Shaw and Ellen Gardner (Hodges) Sturgis of Boston. Sergeant, Battery C, 101st Field Artillery, 26th Division, in World War I, 1917-1919. She resides in Weston, Mass.

Children, born in Weston:

639. i. JOSEPHINE STURGIS ELDREDGE, b. June 23, 1921; d. Jan. 8, 1923.
640. ii. ARTHUR STUART ELDREDGE, III, b. May 17, 1923. Studies at Harvard, class of 1945, interrupted by military service in World War II. In United States Army in Tenth Mountain Division, February, 1943, to December, 1945. In combat service in Italy. Residence, Weston.

Mrs. Eldredge married (2) Raymond Brewer Bidwell of Weston, Mass.  
Children:

- i. DAVID DUDLEY BIDWELL, b. Aug. 31, 1926.
- ii. JOHN STURGIS BIDWELL, b. Dec. 9, 1928.

578. SAMUEL WILLIAM SNELLING<sup>9</sup> (*Samuel R. Snelling*<sup>8</sup>, *Anna L. Rodman*<sup>7</sup>, *Samuel W. Rodman*<sup>6</sup>, *William R. Rodman*<sup>5</sup>, *Elizabeth*<sup>4</sup> *Rotch*, *William*<sup>3</sup>, *Joseph*<sup>2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>), son of Samuel R. and Edith M. L. (Bamforth) Snelling, was born in Lincoln, Mass., Jan. 26, 1898. At Massachusetts State College two years. He married in Norfolk, Va., Nov. 5, 1925, Beatrice Bamforth, born in Lincoln July 11, 1902, daughter of Charles Henry and Alice Marie (Cousins) Bamforth of Norfolk. In World War I Sergeant in Field Artillery two years, twenty months overseas. Cited by General Pershing, and awarded the Purple Heart Decoration, Silver Star, and Distinguished Service Cross for meritorious service. Residence, Greenfield, Mass.

Children:

641. i. WILLIAM RODMAN SNELLING, b. in Pittsfield, Mass., Feb. 10, 1931.
642. ii. DONALD EVERETT SNELLING, b. in Greenfield, Mass., June 23, 1940.

579. EDITH CAROLINE SNELLING<sup>8</sup> (*Samuel R. Snelling<sup>8</sup>, Anna L. Rodman<sup>7</sup>, Samuel W. Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Samuel R. and Edith M. L. (Bamforth) Snelling, was born in Lincoln, Mass., May 24, 1899. She married in Lincoln June 9, 1917, Edward Mellen Stone, son of John Howard and Mary (Mellen) Stone. Residence, South Lincoln, Mass.

Children:

- 643. i. EDITH LOUISE STONE, b. in Waltham, Mass., Oct. 1, 1921.
- 644. ii. JOHN HOWARD STONE, b. in Waltham July 9, 1928.
- 645. iii. SARAH MELLEN STONE, b. in Waltham July 9, 1928.
- 646. iv. MALCOLM RODMAN STONE, b. in Boston Jan. 9, 1934.
- 647. v. CAROLINE SNELLING STONE, b. in Boston Jan. 9, 1934.

580. PHILIP RODMAN SNELLING<sup>9</sup> (*Samuel R. Snelling<sup>8</sup>, Anna L. Rodman<sup>7</sup>, Samuel W. Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Samuel R. and Marian L. (Bamforth) Snelling, was born in Lincoln, Mass., Oct. 27, 1902. He married in Weymouth, Nova Scotia, Aug. 21, 1928, Dorothy Catherine Rudolf, born at Annapolis Royal, Nova Scotia, April 16, 1901, daughter of Henry Lambeth and Minnie Eliza (Harris) Rudolf of Weymouth. Residence, Lincoln, Mass.

Children, born in Lincoln, Mass.:

- 648. i. JOHN RUDOLF SNELLING, b. Aug. 27, 1934.
- 649. ii. CHARLES WILLIAM SNELLING, b. Aug. 29, 1936.
- 650. iii. DOROTHY HILDRED SNELLING, b. Dec. 8, 1938.

581. HOWARD SNELLING, II<sup>9</sup> (*Samuel R. Snelling<sup>8</sup>, Anna L. Rodman<sup>7</sup>, Samuel W. Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Samuel R. and Marian L. (Bamforth) Snelling, was born in Lincoln, Mass., March 25, 1904. He married in Concord, Mass., June 30, 1934, Elizabeth Bigelow Jackson, born in Livermore, Maine, May 23, 1913, daughter of Francis Turner and Ruth Parsons (Holden) Jackson of Livermore. Residence, South Lincoln, Mass.

Children, born in Concord, Mass.:

- 651. i. MARY ANNE SNELLING, b. Aug. 6, 1935.
- 652. ii. DAVID HOWARD SNELLING, b. June 1, 1937; d. Dec. 13, 1937.
- 653. iii. NORMAN JACKSON SNELLING, b. June 14, 1940.

582. MARIAN GRACE SNELLING<sup>9</sup> (*Samuel R. Snelling<sup>8</sup>, Anna L. Rodman<sup>7</sup>, Samuel W. Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Samuel R. and Marian L. (Bamforth) Snelling, was born in Lincoln, Mass., Aug. 5, 1905. She married in Lincoln Sept. 9, 1932, Burton Wadsworth Jones, born at Redwood Falls, Minn., Oct. 1, 1902, son of Arthur Julius and Ethel Louise (Rounds) Jones

of Swarthmore, Penna., professor at Cornell University. Residence, Ithaca, N. Y.

Children, born in Ithaca, N. Y.:

- 654. i. MARIAN LOUISE JONES, b. Dec. 3, 1934.
- 655. ii. CHRISTOPHER JONES, b. Jan. 3, 1937.
- 656. iii. PHYLIS WADSWORTH JONES, b. April 5, 1940.

591. STEPHEN MINOT WELD<sup>9</sup> (*Alfred R. Weld*<sup>8</sup>, *Eloise Rodman*<sup>7</sup>, *Alfred Rodman*<sup>6</sup>, *William R. Rodman*<sup>5</sup>, *Elizabeth*<sup>4</sup> *Rotch*, *William*<sup>3</sup>, *Joseph*<sup>2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>), son of Alfred R. and Adelaide W. (Ladd) Weld, was born in Milton, Mass., Dec. 19, 1901. Harvard, 1923. He married in Milton Sept. 19, 1945, Elizabeth Stevens Eaton, born Dec. 15, 1908, daughter of Lucien and Eleanor Archibald (Stevens) Eaton of Milton. In World War II he served as Captain of Field Artillery, with thirty-eight months' service in the Southwest Pacific. He received the Presidential Merit Citation, Pacific Asiatic Ribbon, American Defense Ribbon, and two Battle Stars. Residence, Milton, Mass.

592. LOTHROP MOTLEY WELD<sup>9</sup> (*Edward M. Weld*<sup>8</sup>, *Eloise Rodman*<sup>7</sup>, *Alfred Rodman*<sup>6</sup>, *William R. Rodman*<sup>5</sup>, *Elizabeth*<sup>4</sup> *Rotch*, *William*<sup>3</sup>, *Joseph*<sup>2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>), son of Edward M. and Sarah L. (King) Weld, was born in Boston Feb. 16, 1898, and died in New York June 6, 1947. Harvard, 1920. He married (1) in Boston June 20, 1921, Dorothy Livermore Wells, daughter of Bulkley and Grace Daniels (Livermore) Wells of Boston; (2) in New York Jan. 27, 1933, Yosene Balfour Ker, born in London, England, April 16, 1915, daughter of Balfour and Josephine (Phillips) Ker of New York. Ensign and Pilot in United States Naval Flying Corps in World War I.

Children:

By first marriage:

- 657. i. LOTHROP MOTLEY WELD, JR., b. in Boston May 26, 1922.
- 658. ii. THOMAS LIVERMORE WELD, b. in Westbury, L. I., March 12, 1926.

By second marriage:

- 659. iii. SARAH KING WELD, b. in Boston May 27, 1935.
- 660. iv. DAVID BALFOUR WELD, b. in Boston Feb. 6, 1937.

593. EDWARD MOTLEY WELD, JR.<sup>9</sup> (*Edward M. Weld*<sup>8</sup>, *Eloise Rodman*<sup>7</sup>, *Alfred Rodman*<sup>6</sup>, *William R. Rodman*<sup>5</sup>, *Elizabeth*<sup>4</sup> *Rotch*, *William*<sup>3</sup>, *Joseph*<sup>2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>), son of Edward M. and Sarah L. (King) Weld, was born in New York City May 24, 1906. Harvard, A.B., 1927, LL.B., 1930. He married Oct. 21, 1932, Elizabeth Barbara Merriman, born in Warwick, R. I., Aug. 15, 1904, daughter of Edward Bruce and Helen Abbe (Pearce) Merriman of Providence, R. I. In World War II he was commissioned Captain in the Air Corps in 1942 and promoted to Major. Late in 1944 he was as-

signed to civilian duties as assistant director, Aviation Division, Surplus Property Administration. Residence, Tuxedo Park, N. Y.

Children, born in New York City:

- 661. i. BARBARA BRUCE WELD, b. March 4, 1936.
- 662. ii. HELEN MERRIMAN WELD, b. March 28, 1938.

594. ANNE KING WELD<sup>9</sup> (*Edward M. Weld*<sup>8</sup>, *Eloise Rodman*<sup>7</sup>, *Alfred Rodman*<sup>6</sup>, *William R. Rodman*<sup>5</sup>, *Elizabeth*<sup>4</sup> *Rotch*, *William*<sup>3</sup>, *Joseph*<sup>2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Edward M. and Sarah L. (King) Weld, was born in New York City April 4, 1910. She married (1) March 21, 1931, William Crawford, Jr.; divorced; (2) at Tuxedo Park, N. Y., Aug. 28, 1935, Allan McLane, Jr., born in Baltimore, Md., Oct. 26, 1894, son of Allan and Augusta (James) McLane of Garrison, Md. Residence, Tuxedo Park, N. Y.

Children, born in New York City:

By first marriage:

- 663. i. WILLIAM CRAWFORD, III, b. Aug. 18, 1932.

By second marriage:

- 664. ii. NIEL MCCLANE, b. March 13, 1937.

595. SYLVIA WELD<sup>9</sup> (*Rudolph Weld*<sup>8</sup>, *Eloise Rodman*<sup>7</sup>, *Alfred Rodman*<sup>6</sup>, *William R. Rodman*<sup>5</sup>, *Elizabeth*<sup>4</sup> *Rotch*, *William*<sup>3</sup>, *Joseph*<sup>2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Rudolph and Sylvia C. (Parsons) Weld, was born in New York Sept. 16, 1909. She married Sept. 10, 1931, Albert Smith Bigelow, born in Brookline, Mass., May 1, 1906, son of Albert Francis and Gwladys (Williams) Bigelow of Brookline. Residence, Hanover, Mass.

Children, born in Cambridge, Mass.:

- 665. i. LISA BARCLAY BIGELOW, b. Aug. 27, 1932.
- 666. ii. KATE BIGELOW, b. March 29, 1935.
- 666a. iii. MARY DEFORD BIGELOW, b. Sept. 20, 1946.

596. ELOISE RODMAN WELD<sup>9</sup> (*Rudolph Weld*<sup>8</sup>, *Eloise Rodman*<sup>7</sup>, *Alfred Rodman*<sup>6</sup>, *William R. Rodman*<sup>5</sup>, *Elizabeth*<sup>4</sup> *Rotch*, *William*<sup>3</sup>, *Joseph*<sup>2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Rudolph and Sylvia C. (Parsons) Weld, was born in New York City April 18, 1911. She married (1) June 22, 1931, William Lukens Elkins, born May 10, 1911, died Sept. 3, 1933, son of William McIntire and Elizabeth Wolcott (Tuckerman) Elkins of Philadelphia; (2) Jan. 28, 1936, William Thomas Fleming, born in Philadelphia Oct. 10, 1899, son of William Thomas and Bertha (McCristie) Fleming of Philadelphia. Residence, Bryn Mawr, Penna.

Children, by first marriage:

- 667. i. WILLIAM LUKENS ELKINS, b. in Boston Aug. 2, 1932.
- 668. ii. CAROL ELKINS, b. in Philadelphia, Nov. 17, 1933.

597. PRISCILLA ALDEN WELD<sup>9</sup> (*Rudolph Weld<sup>8</sup>, Eloise Rodman<sup>7</sup>, Alfred Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Rudolph and Sylvia C. (Parsons) Weld, was born in Boston Feb. 22, 1917. She married in Boston June 27, 1939, Captain Charles A. Grosjean, born in Brussels, Belgium, May 20, 1912, son of Paul and Mabel (Lahr) Grosjean of Brussels. He was an officer in the First Belgian Armored Car Regiment, British Liberation Army, in World War II, from March, 1942, to September, 1945. Residence, Brussels.

Children, born in New York:

- 669. i. CLAIRE GROSJEAN, b. Nov. 1, 1940.
- 670. ii. MICHELLE GROSJEAN, b. May 1, 1943.
- 670a. iii. DAPHNE GROSJEAN, b. Oct. 2, 1946.

598. MARY ELIZABETH WELD<sup>9</sup> (*Philip B. Weld<sup>8</sup>, Eloise Rodman<sup>7</sup>, Alfred Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Philip B. and Katharine (Saltonstall) Weld, was born Sept. 8, 1913. She married in Wareham, Mass., Sept. 8, 1934, Samuel Huntington Wolcott, Jr., born Aug. 31, 1910, son of Samuel Huntington and Hannah (Stevenson) Wolcott of Milton, Mass. Harvard, 1933. Residence, Milton, Mass.

Children, born in Boston:

- 671. i. SAMUEL HUNTINGTON WOLCOTT, III, b. June 1, 1935.
- 672. ii. PHILIP WELD WOLCOTT, b. Sept. 24, 1936.
- 673. iii. PAMELA WOLCOTT, b. Oct. 1, 1941.
- 674. iv. WILLIAM PRESCOTT WOLCOTT, b. Dec. 10, 1944.

599. PHILIP SALTONSTALL WELD<sup>9</sup> (*Philip B. Weld<sup>8</sup>, Eloise Rodman<sup>7</sup>, Alfred Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Philip B. and Katharine (Saltonstall) Weld, was born Dec. 11, 1914. Harvard, 1936. He married in Boston Feb. 6, 1937, Anne Warren, born April 11, 1912, daughter of Samuel Dennis and Helen (Thomas) Warren of Essex, Mass. He served three years in World War II, being for two years in Burma as Infantry platoon leader and commander Kachin Gueirrala unit. Residence, Essex, Mass.

Children, born in Chicago:

- 675. i. PHILIP SALTONSTALL WELD, JR., b. July 6, 1938.
- 676. ii. ELOISE WELD, b. May 6, 1940.

600. ROSE WELD<sup>9</sup> (*Philip B. Weld<sup>8</sup>, Eloise Rodman<sup>7</sup>, Alfred Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Philip B. and Katharine (Saltonstall) Weld, was born at Tuxedo Park, N. Y., Aug. 18, 1917. She married Sept. 18, 1937, Ian Baldwin, born at Mount Kisco, N. Y., Sept. 21, 1912, son of Joseph Clark and Fanny (Taylor) Baldwin of Mount Kisco. Residence, Mount Kisco, N. Y.

Children, born in New York City:

- 677. i. IAN BALDWIN, JR., b. Dec. 18, 1938.
- 678. ii. MICHAEL BALDWIN, b. Nov. 28, 1940.
- 679. iii. HOWARD LAPSLY BALDWIN, b. May 14, 1942.
- 679a. iv. PHILIP WELD BALDWIN, b. March 24, 1947.

601. ADELAIDE WELD<sup>9</sup> (*Philip B. Weld<sup>8</sup>, Eloise Rodman<sup>7</sup>, Alfred Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Philip B. and Katharine (Saltonstall) Weld, was born at Islip, L. I., Nov. 8, 1919. She married at Wareham, Mass., Sept. 16, 1939, Robert Bacon Whitney, born Dec. 16, 1916, son of George and Martha Beatrice (Bacon) Whitney of Salem, Mass. Harvard, 1939. In World War II he was an Ensign, United States Navy. In active duty, 1941. Residence, Old Westbury, L. I., N. Y.

Children, born in New York City:

- 680. i. HOPE WHITNEY, b. Dec. 13, 1940.
- 681. ii. ROBERT BACON WHITNEY, JR., b. Jan. 12, 1943.
- 682. iii. STEPHEN WELD WHITNEY, b. Sept. 11, 1944.

602. KATHARINE WELD<sup>9</sup> (*Philip B. Weld<sup>8</sup>, Eloise Rodman<sup>7</sup>, Alfred Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Philip B. and Katharine (Saltonstall) Weld, was born at Islip, L. I., Nov. 8, 1919. She married at Hastings, N. Y., March 2, 1940, William Benjamin Bacon, born at Jamaica Plain, Mass., March 15, 1910, son of Hon. Gaspar Griswold and Priscilla (Toland) Bacon of Jamaica Plain. Residence, Boston.

Son:

- 683. i. WILLIAM BENJAMIN BACON, JR., b. Nov. 22, 1940.

603. FRANCES WELD<sup>9</sup> (*Philip B. Weld<sup>8</sup>, Eloise Rodman<sup>7</sup>, Alfred Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Philip B. and Katharine (Saltonstall) Weld, was born March 12, 1922. She married June 7, 1941, Robert Hallowell Gardiner, born at Needham, Mass., Sept. 28, 1914, son of Robert Hallowell and Elizabeth (Denny) Gardiner of Gardiner, Maine. Harvard, 1937. Residence, Gardiner, Maine.

Children:

- 684. i. ALISON GARDINER, b. in New York City Sept. 28, 1942.
- 685. ii. ROBERT HALLOWELL GARDINER, JR., b. in Portsmouth, Va., June 27, 1944.

604. PHYLLIS MOTLEY<sup>9</sup> (*Thomas Motley<sup>8</sup>, Thomas Motley<sup>7</sup>, Ellen Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Thomas and Margaret (Fay) Motley, was born in

New York City Nov. 28, 1916. She married in Boston Aug. 23, 1940, William Lawrence, born in Lawrence, Mass., Jan. 24, 1915, son of Right Rev. William Appleton Lawrence, Episcopal Bishop of Western Massachusetts, and Hannah Wheelwright (Cobb) Lawrence of Springfield, Mass., and grandson of Right Rev. William Lawrence, Episcopal Bishop of Massachusetts. Residence, Wellesley, Mass.

Children:

686. i. MARGARET MOTLEY LAWRENCE, b. May 13, 1941.  
687. ii. SALLY APPLETON LAWRENCE, b. Sept. 16, 1943.  
688. iii. WILLIAM LAWRENCE, JR., b. March 15, 1945.

605. ANNE MOTLEY<sup>9</sup> (*Thomas Motley<sup>8</sup>, Thomas Motley<sup>7</sup>, Ellen Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Thomas and Margaret (Fay) Motley, was born in New York City Aug. 6, 1918. She married in Boston in 1942 Thomas Simpson Risley, born Aug. 7, 1915, son of Edward Hammond and Ada Wilson (Simpson) Risley of Waterville, Maine. Residence, Forest Park, Ill.

Son:

689. i. EDWARD HAMMOND RISLEY, II, b. in Boston Dec. 11, 1943.

606. ELIZABETH MOTLEY<sup>9</sup> (*J. Lothrop Motley<sup>8</sup>, Thomas Motley<sup>7</sup>, Ellen Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of J. Lothrop and Nancy E. (Barton) Motley, was born in Boston Dec. 27, 1918. She married in Boston Dec. 21, 1940, David Ames, born Jan. 26, 1912, son of John Stanley and Nancy McKinley (Filley) Ames of North Easton, Mass., and a grandson of Frederick Lothrop Ames, manufacturer and philanthropist of North Easton. Through Frederick Ames' liberality the Arnold Arboretum (see No. 8) was enabled greatly to extend its usefulness. Residence, North Easton, Mass.

Children, born in Boston:

690. i. DAVID AMES, JR., b. Dec. 19, 1941.  
691. ii. WILLIAM MOTLEY AMES, b. Aug. 10, 1943.

607. ELEANOR WARREN MOTLEY<sup>9</sup> (*J. Lothrop Motley<sup>8</sup>, Thomas Motley<sup>7</sup>, Ellen Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of J. Lothrop and Nancy E. (Barton) Motley, was born in Boston Feb. 3, 1921. She married in Boston Feb. 14, 1942, William Temple Emmet, II, born Sept. 21, 1921, died Feb. 22, 1945, son of Richard Stockton and Helen (Pratt) Emmet of New York City. Harvard, 1942. In World War II Mr. Emmet, as Second Lieutenant in the Eighth Air Force, piloting a B-17, was killed in action over Germany on his fifth bombing mission. Mrs. Emmet resides in New York City.

Daughter:

692. i. KATHLEEN EMMET, b. in Boston Dec. 19, 1942.

608. J[OHN] LOTHROP MOTLEY, JR.<sup>9</sup> (*J. Lothrop Motley<sup>8</sup>, Thomas Motley<sup>7</sup>, Ellen Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of J. Lothrop and Nancy E. (Barton) Motley, was born in Boston Feb. 27, 1924. Studied at Harvard. He married in Dedham, Mass., March 29, 1947, Catherine Royce Hamlen, born in Brookline, Mass., Nov. 13, 1927, daughter of R. Cushing and Catherine (Royce) Hamlen of Dover, Mass. In World War II he was a Sergeant in the United States Marine Corps, 1942-1945.

609. NANCY MOTLEY<sup>9</sup> (*J. Lothrop Motley<sup>8</sup>, Thomas Motley<sup>7</sup>, Ellen Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of J. Lothrop and Nancy E. (Barton) Motley, was born in Boston April 4, 1926. Studied at Radcliffe, Class of 1948. She married in Boston Feb. 1, 1947, John Quincy Adams, born Dec. 24, 1922, son of Arthur and Margery (Lee) Adams of Dover, Mass. Harvard, 1947. He served overseas with the Twentieth Air Force during World War II. Residence, Sherborn, Mass.

610. EDWARD MOTLEY, JR.<sup>9</sup> (*Edward Motley<sup>8</sup>, Thomas Motley<sup>7</sup>, Ellen Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Edward and Harriet S. (Jaques) Motley, was born in Boston March 22, 1914. Harvard A.B., 1936; M.B.A., 1938. He married June 9, 1941, Margaret Mason, born Aug. 24, 1918, daughter of Austen Blake and Margaret (Bliss) Mason of Weston, Mass. Lieutenant Commander, United States Naval Reserve, in World War II, 1941-1945; commanded U.S.S. *Pleiades*. Residence, Nahant, Mass.

Children, born in Boston:

693. i. MARGARET BLISS MOTLEY, b. Feb. 8, 1945.  
693a. ii. HARRIET MOTLEY, b. Feb. 11, 1947.

611. THOMAS MOTLEY, II<sup>9</sup> (*Edward Motley<sup>8</sup>, Thomas Motley<sup>7</sup>, Ellen Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Edward and Harriet S. (Jaques) Motley, was born in Boston Oct. 2, 1915. Harvard, 1938. He married June 3, 1939, Barbara Chandler, born Sept. 28, 1918, daughter of John and Katherine (Fassett) Chandler of Sterling Junction, Mass. Commissioned Ensign, United States Naval Reserve, on graduation from college. In World War II he was on active duty in the United States Navy for five years, retiring as Lieutenant Commander. In 1945 he commanded the destroyer *Carmick*. Residence, Sterling Junction, Mass.

Children:

694. i. THOMAS MOTLEY, III, b. in Boston Feb. 7, 1942.  
695. ii. KATHERINE MOTLEY, b. in Clinton, Mass., Aug. 30, 1943.

612. HERBERT JAQUES MOTLEY<sup>9</sup> (*Edward Motley<sup>8</sup>, Thomas Motley<sup>7</sup>, Ellen Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Edward and Harriet S. (Jaques) Motley, was born in Nahant, Mass., Sept. 5, 1917. Harvard, 1940. He married Dec. 27, 1941, Catharine Little, born Oct. 4, 1919, daughter of Leon M. and Eleanor (Wheeler) Little of Chestnut Hill, Mass. In World War II he served in the United States Army four years and a half. Captain in the Air Service. In European area for two years. Residence, Nahant, Mass.

Children:

696. i. HERBERT JAQUES MOTLEY, JR., b. May 8, 1943.

696a. ii. ELEANOR WHEELER MOTLEY, b. March 5, 1947.

614. MARY RANDALL FAY<sup>9</sup> (*S. Prescott Fay<sup>8</sup>, Rebecca R. Motley<sup>7</sup>, Ellen Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of S. Prescott and Hester M. (Davey) Fay, was born in Boston Jan. 16, 1923. She married in Billings, Mont., July 5, 1947, Jack Hill McCormick.

617. ELISE HELEN FAY<sup>9</sup> (*William R. Fay<sup>8</sup>, Rebecca R. Motley<sup>7</sup>, Ellen Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of William R. and Gertrude H. (Schirmer) Fay, was born in Boston May 18, 1918. Radcliffe, 1942. She married in New York City Oct. 22, 1937, James Lindsay Ware, born in Concord, Mass., May 25, 1908, son of George Long and Charlotte (Lindsay) Ware of Boston. Divorced, 1946.

In World War II she went abroad in April, 1944 and worked with the O.W.I. in London until it was discontinued in August, 1945. Going to Germany with O.M.G. she was stationed in Bad Homburg, and subsequently in Berlin in 1946 and 1947.

619. ANTHONY PICKMAN<sup>9</sup> (*Edward M. Pickman<sup>8</sup>, Ellen R. Motley<sup>7</sup>, Ellen Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Edward M. and Hester M. (Chanler) Pickman, was born in Boston March 17, 1916. Harvard, 1939. He married at Chocorua, N. H., Sept. 27, 1941, Alice Page Loring, born Sept. 27, 1917, daughter of Charles Greely and Katharine (Page) Loring of Concord, Mass. Residence, Bedford, Mass.

Daughter:

697. i. DAISY PAGE PICKMAN, b. Baltimore, Md., June 21, 1945.

620. MARGARET ELLEN PICKMAN<sup>9</sup> (*Edward M. Pickman<sup>8</sup>, Ellen R. Motley<sup>7</sup>, Ellen Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Edward M. and Hester M. (Chanler)

Pickman, was born in Bedford, Mass., April 29, 1917. She married in Bedford June 15, 1946, Gilbert Oakley, Jr., born Oct. 8, 1913, son of Gilbert and Beatrice Louise (Mudget) Oakley of Woods Hole, Mass. Residence, Woods Hole.

621. JANE PICKMAN<sup>9</sup> (*Edward M. Pickman<sup>8</sup>, Ellen R. Motley<sup>7</sup>, Ellen Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Edward M. and Hester M. (Chanler) Pickman, was born in Boston Dec. 20, 1919. She married in Bedford, Mass., April 26, 1941, Joseph Osborne Procter, III, born April 5, 1915, son of Joseph Osborne, Jr., and Dorothy (Worrall) Procter of Milton, Mass. Residence, Bedford, Mass.

Children, born in Boston:

- 698. i. MARY ELIZABETH PROCTER, b. Feb. 5, 1942.
- 699. ii. JOSEPH OSBORNE PROCTER, IV, b. Oct. 6, 1943.
- 699a. iii. JANE PROCTER, b. Oct. 26, 1946.

622. DAVID PICKMAN<sup>9</sup> (*Edward M. Pickman<sup>8</sup>, Ellen R. Motley<sup>7</sup>, Ellen Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Edward M. and Hester M. (Chanler) Pickman, was born in Bedford, Mass., May 20, 1921. Harvard, 1943. He married Jan. 2, 1946, Elizabeth Ann Van Ausdel, born April 26, 1921, daughter of Joseph Charles and Eileen Marguerite (Tatly) Van Ausdel of New York City. Residence, Bedford, Mass.

Daughter:

- 699b. i. MARY SUSAN PICKMAN, b. Oct. 4, 1946.

631. MARJORIE MOTLEY<sup>9</sup> (*E. Preble Motley<sup>8</sup>, E. Preble Motley<sup>7</sup>, Ellen Rodman<sup>6</sup>, William R. Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of E. Preble and Dorrothy (Fremont-Smith) Motley, was born in Boston March 28, 1918. She married in South Hamilton, Mass., July 2, 1938, Herbert Jaques, Jr., born in Norwood, Mass., Sept. 22, 1913, son of Herbert and Mary B. (Townsend) Jaques of Boston. Residence, Wenham, Mass.

Children:

- 700. i. NANCY JAQUES, b. Sept. 24, 1940.
- 701. ii. HERBERT JAQUES, III, b. Jan. 30, 1943.
- 701a. iii. WILLIAM LOVFRING JAQUES, b. Jan. 12, 1947.

## Descendants of Anna (Rodman) Robeson

405. ANNA RODMAN<sup>5</sup> (*Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Samuel and Elizabeth (Rotch) Rodman, was born in Nantucket Nov. 5, 1787, and died in New Bedford June 17, 1848. She married in New Bedford June 2, 1810, Andrew Robeson, born in Roxborough, Philadelphia, Aug. 18, 1787, died in Boston Dec. 8, 1862, son of Peter and Martha (Livezey) Robeson of Philadelphia. He married (2) Sept. 4, 1855, Emily P. Sumner of Brookline, Mass., born in January 1805, died in New Bedford Feb. 6, 1893, daughter of Thomas N. and Elizabeth Sumner.

Andrew Robeson became a prominent merchant and successful manufacturer of New Bedford. He established under many discouragements and difficulties the print works which bore his name at Fall River, Mass., the first established in the state, and made the business very prosperous.

Subsequently he was a whaling merchant in New Bedford. In 1821 he built a mansion of brick on the west side of North Second Street, opposite the stone mansion of his father-in-law, Samuel Rodman. It was surrounded by fine gardens and long was one of the show places of the town. It is still standing, much changed and used as a warehouse.

### Children:

702. i. THOMAS RODMAN ROBESON, b. June 22, 1811; d. Aug. 13, 1848.
703. ii. WILLIAM RODMAN ROBESON, b. July 13, 1814; d. Nov. 7, 1892.
704. iii. ANDREW ROBESON, b. Oct. 14, 1817; d. July 23, 1874.
705. iv. MARTHA ROBESON, b. Oct. 21, 1820; d. Jan. 12, 1852.
706. v. FREDERICK ROBESON, b. Jan. 3, 1823; d. in San Francisco April 11, 1850.  
Unmarried.

702. THOMAS RODMAN ROBESON<sup>6</sup> (*Anna Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Andrew and Anna (Rodman) Robeson, was born in Philadelphia June 22, 1811, and died in New Bedford Aug. 13, 1848. He married June 16, 1836, Sibyl Washburn, born 1814, died at Ventnor, Isle of Wight, Oct. 16, 1876, daughter of Cromwell and Charity (Williams) Washburn of Taberg, N. Y., and Taunton, Mass.

### Children, born in New Bedford:

707. i. ANDREW ROBESON, b. March 11, 1837; d. Jan. 26, 1840.
708. ii. ANNA RODMAN ROBESON, b. March 11, 1837; d. March, 1926.
709. iii. THOMAS RODMAN ROBESON, b. Nov. 7, 1840; d. July 6, 1863, fatally wounded at Gettysburg. Harvard, 1861. Second Lieutenant and Captain, Second Massachusetts Infantry. Wounded at Cedar Mountain, 1862. Unmarried.
710. iv. WILLIAM ROTCH ROBESON, b. May 8, 1843; d. Nov. 21, 1922.
711. v. LOUIS ROBESON, b. Aug. 24, 1844; d. Oct. 19, 1913.

703. WILLIAM RODMAN ROBESON<sup>6</sup> (*Anna Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Andrew and Anna (Rodman) Robeson, was born in Philadelphia July 13, 1814, and died in Boston Nov. 7, 1892. He married June 28, 1838, Anna Rodman, born April 11, 1817, died Dec. 30, 1895, daughter of William R. and Rebecca W. (Morgan) Rodman of New Bedford. (See No. 526.)

Daughter:

712. i. REBECCA ROBESON, b. July 30, 1839; d. Dec. 19, 1840.

704. ANDREW ROBESON<sup>6</sup> (*Anna Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Andrew and Anna (Rodman) Robeson, was born in New Bedford Oct. 14, 1817, and died in Tiverton, R. I., July 23, 1874. He married March 2, 1843, Mary Arnold Allen, born Sept. 9, 1819, died at Islesboro, Maine, July 25, 1903, daughter of Zachariah and Eliza Harriet (Arnold) Allen of Providence, R. I.

Children:

713. i. ANDREW ROBESON, b. Nov. 26, 1843; d. Aug. 18, 1906.  
 714. ii. HARRIET ROBESON, b. Oct. 31, 1845; d. April 5, 1852.  
 715. iii. ALICE ROBESON, b. Sept. 27, 1849; d. May 16, 1919.  
 716. iv. MARY ALLEN ROBESON, b. June 14, 1853; d. Aug. 13, 1919.

705. MARTHA ROBESON<sup>6</sup> (*Anna Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Andrew and Anna (Rodman) Robeson, was born in New Bedford Oct. 21, 1820, and died in Boston Jan. 12, 1852. She married in New Bedford Sept. 21, 1841, Alanson Tucker, born in Boston March 4, 1811, died there Dec. 30, 1881, son of Alanson and Eliza (Thom) Tucker. He married (2) July, 1859, Margaret Grant Chadwick.

Children:

717. i. ANNA TUCKER, b. Jan. 5, 1849; d. April 24, 1925.  
 718. ii. MARTHA TUCKER, b. Jan. 1852; d. in infancy.

708. ANNA RODMAN ROBESON<sup>7</sup> (*Thomas R. Robeson<sup>6</sup>, Anna Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Thomas R. and Sibyl (Washburn) Robeson, was born in New Bedford March 11, 1837, and died in Southsea, England, in March, 1926. She married Jan. 1, 1856, Brigadier General William Dwight, born in Springfield, Mass., July 14, 1831, died in Boston April 21, 1888, son of William and Elizabeth Amelia (White) Dwight. He served with valor in the Civil War, and was subsequently a manufacturer in Boston and Philadelphia.

Son:

719. i. WILLIAM ARTHUR DWIGHT, b. June 3, 1867; d. 1922.

710. WILLIAM ROTCH ROBESON<sup>7</sup> (*Thomas R. Robeson<sup>6</sup>, Anna Rodman<sup>5</sup>*,

*Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Thomas R. and Sibyl (Washburn) Robeson, was born in New Bedford May 8, 1843, and died in Brussels, Belgium, Nov. 21, 1922. Harvard, 1864. He married Sept. 22, 1880, Marie Constance Henriette Jamsino de la Haut of Antwerp, who survived him. No children. For many years Mr. Robeson was connected with the Boston & Albany Railroad. He lived in Brussels for several years before his death.

711. LOUIS ROBESON<sup>7</sup> (*Thomas R. Robeson<sup>6</sup>, Anna Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Thomas R. and Sibyl (Washburn) Robeson, was born in New Bedford Aug. 24, 1844, and died in Brookline, Mass., Oct. 19, 1913. He married June 20, 1881, Lucy Shaw Lewis, born at Roxbury, Mass., Jan. 7, 1854, daughter of Franklin H. and Sarah D. (Durfee) Lewis.

Daughter:

720. i. SIBYL ROBESON, b. May 11, 1892.

713. ANDREW ROBESON<sup>7</sup> (*Andrew Robeson<sup>6</sup>, Anna Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Andrew and Mary A. (Allen) Robeson, was born in Fall River, Mass., Nov. 26, 1843, and died in Boston, Aug. 18, 1906. Harvard, 1863. He married in Providence, R. I., March 9, 1880, Abby Frances Knight, born in Atkinson, N. H., March 22, 1857, died in Boston Dec. 21, 1929, daughter of Leonard and Elizabeth (Johnson) Knight of Atkinson, N. H. Captain First New York Volunteer Engineers in Civil War. Brevetted Major, U.S.A., March, 1865. Member of Massachusetts Militia for twenty-six years, retiring in 1902 with rank of Lieutenant Colonel.

Children:

721. i. ANDREW ROBESON, b. Dec. 26, 1880; d. Aug. 6, 1939.

722. ii. HARRIET ALLEN ROBESON, b. March 19, 1882.

723. iii. RODMAN ROBESON, b. May 11, 1883. Twice married. Residence, Los Angeles, Calif.

715. ALICE ROBESON<sup>7</sup> (*Andrew Robeson<sup>6</sup>, Anna Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Andrew and Mary A. (Allen) Robeson, was born in Newport, R. I., Sept. 27, 1849, and died in Medfield, Mass., May 16, 1919. She married Nov. 2, 1870, Stephen Van Rensselaer Thayer, who died Oct. 10, 1871, son of Nathaniel and Cornelia (Van Rensselaer) Thayer of Boston.

Son:

724. i. STEPHEN VAN RENSSELAER THAYER, b. July 15, 1871; d. June 24, 1907.

716. MARY ALLEN ROBESON<sup>7</sup> (*Andrew Robeson<sup>6</sup>, Anna Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Eliza-*

*beth<sup>4</sup>* Rotch, *William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Andrew and Mary A. (Allen) Robeson, was born in Newport, R. I., June 14, 1853, and died in Brookline, Mass., Aug. 13, 1919. She married Nov. 26, 1873, Professor Charles Sprague Sargent, born in Boston April 24, 1841, died in Brookline March 22, 1927, son of Ignatius and Henrietta (Gray) Sargent. He was the famous head of the Arnold Arboretum for many years.

Children:

- 725. i. HENRIETTA SARGENT, b. Aug. 28, 1874.
- 726. ii. ANDREW ROBESON SARGENT, b. Dec. 2, 1876; d. March 19, 1918.
- 727. iii. MARY SARGENT, b. April 8, 1878.
- 728. iv. CHARLES SPRAGUE SARGENT, b. March 7, 1880.
- 729. v. ALICE ROBESON SARGENT, b. March 12, 1882; d. Feb. 6, 1946. She was president of the Chilton Club. In World War II she was active in Boston Metropolitan Chapter of the Red Cross.

717. ANNA TUCKER<sup>7</sup> (*Martha Robeson<sup>6</sup>, Anna Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Alanson and Martha (Robeson) Tucker, was born in Boston Jan. 15, 1849, and died in Beverly, Mass., April 24, 1925. She married in London, England, Oct. 23, 1875, John Charles Phillips, born in Boston, Oct. 21, 1838, died there March 1, 1885, son of John Charles and Harriet (Welch) Phillips of Boston. Harvard, 1858. He was a grandson of John Phillips, Boston's first Mayor in 1822.

Children:

- 730. i. JOHN CHARLES PHILLIPS, b. Nov. 5, 1876; d. Nov. 14, 1938.
- 731. ii. WILLIAM PHILLIPS, b. May 30, 1878.
- 732. iii. ANNA TUCKER PHILLIPS, b. April 25, 1880.
- 733. iv. MARTHA ROBESON PHILLIPS, b. Feb. 1, 1882.
- 734. v. GEORGE WENDELL PHILLIPS, b. Nov. 22, 1883.

719. WILLIAM ARTHUR DWIGHT<sup>8</sup> (*Anna R. Robeson<sup>7</sup>, Thomas R. Robeson<sup>6</sup>, Anna Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of General William and Anna R. (Robeson) Dwight was born June 3, 1867, and died in England in 1922. He married (1) 1895, Edith Roberts, who died in England Aug. 2, 1913; (2) 1919, Mary Melita Fawkes, who survived him. No children. Clergyman at Frome and Southsea, England.

720. SIBYL ROBESON<sup>8</sup> (*Louis Robeson<sup>7</sup>, Thomas R. Robeson<sup>6</sup>, Anna Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Louis and Lucy S. (Lewis) Robeson, was born in Brookline, Mass., May 11, 1892. She married (1) April 10, 1920, Walter Sanger Crane, Jr., died July 29, 1933, son of Walter Sanger and Sarah Follett (Platt) Crane of Dedham, Mass. A graduate of Annapolis he served in the United States Navy in World War I; (2) October, 1937, Bertrand Stetson Gardner of Hanover, Mass. She operates a dairy farm at East Bridgewater, Mass.

## Children, by first marriage:

735. i. WALTER SANGER CRANE, III, b. Jan. 27, 1923.
736. ii. ANDREW ROBESON CRANE, b. Feb. 14, 1928. Enlisted in United States Marine Corps in August, 1945.
737. iii. WILLIAM PLATT CRANE, b. Aug. 29, 1930. A student at Bristol County (Mass.) Agricultural School.

721. ANDREW ROBESON<sup>8</sup> (*Andrew Robeson<sup>7</sup>, Andrew Robeson<sup>6</sup>, Anna Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Andrew and Abby F. (Knight) Robeson, was born in Fall River, Mass., Dec. 26, 1880, and died in Newport, R. I., Aug. 6, 1939. He married Laura Patterson Swan, daughter of Donnell and Sidney Smith (Turner) Swan of Newport.

## Daughter:

738. i. LAURETTE PATTERSON ROBESON, b. April 12, 1914.

722. HARRIET ALLEN ROBESON<sup>8</sup> (*Andrew Robeson<sup>7</sup>, Andrew Robeson<sup>6</sup>, Anna Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Andrew and Abby F. (Knight) Robeson, was born March 19, 1882. A graduate of the Boston Museum of Fine Arts she is an artist of much excellence. She began social service work as an occupational therapist, and served in the Army for a year in World War I, afterwards becoming assistant director for the United States Bureau of Occupational Therapy. For many years she was chairman of volunteer special services for the Boston Red Cross Chapter, serving through World War II, and resigning early in 1946. Residence, Boston.

724. STEPHEN VAN RENSSELAER THAYER<sup>8</sup> (*Alice Robeson<sup>7</sup>, Andrew Robeson<sup>6</sup>, Anna Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Stephen V. R. and Alice (Robeson) Thayer, was born in Tiverton, R. I., July 15, 1871, and died at Vichy, France, June 24, 1907. He married June 5, 1895, Julia Porter, daughter of Augustus and Julia Granger (Jeffrey) Porter of Niagara Falls, N. Y.

## Children:

739. i. ALICE VAN RENSSELAER THAYER, b. June 11, 1896.
740. ii. JULIA THAYER, b. Dec. 1, 1899; d. March 16, 1944.
741. iii. MARY ALLEN THAYER, b. June 7, 1901.

725. HENRIETTA SARGENT<sup>8</sup> (*Mary A. Robeson<sup>7</sup>, Andrew Robeson<sup>6</sup>, Anna Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Professor Charles S. and Mary A. (Robeson) Sargent, was born in Tiverton, R. I., Aug. 28, 1874. She married in Brookline, Mass., May 17, 1898, Guy Lowell, born in Boston, Aug. 6, 1870, died at Madeira Feb. 4, 1927, son of Edward Jackson and Mary Wolcott (Goodrich) Lowell of Boston.

He was a graduate of Harvard in 1892 and Massachusetts Institute of Technology in 1894, and also studied abroad. He showed great talent in varied fields. Architect, executive, author, painter, composer, and "learned gastronome," he excelled in each branch. In World War I as Chief of the Department of Military Affairs of the American Red Cross in Italy he extended aid to the wounded, and did other relief work on a large scale.

His crowning glory as an architect is Manhattan's twenty-million-dollar hexagonal courthouse, his commission being obtained in competition with a host of leading American architects. This building, begun in 1913, was dedicated a week after the architect's death. No children. Mrs. Lowell resides in Brookline, Mass.

726. ANDREW ROBESON SARGENT<sup>8</sup> (*Mary A. Robeson<sup>7</sup>, Andrew Robeson<sup>6</sup>, Anna Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Professor Charles S. and Mary A. (Robeson) Sargent, was born in Brookline, Mass., Dec. 2, 1876, and died there March 19, 1918. He married Nov. 6, 1909, Marie de Acosta, daughter of Ricardo and Micaela (Hernandez) de Acosta of New York City. He was a landscape architect.

Son:

742. i. IGNATIUS SARGENT, II, b. in Brookline Jan. 30, 1914.

727. MARY SARGENT<sup>8</sup> (*Mary A. Robeson<sup>7</sup>, Andrew Robeson<sup>6</sup>, Anna Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Professor Charles S. and Mary A. (Robeson) Sargent, was born in Brookline, Mass., April 8, 1878. She married Jan. 25, 1908, Dr. Nathaniel Bowditch Potter, born Dec. 25, 1869, died July 5, 1919, son of George Sabine and Mary (Powell) Potter of Boston. Residence, New York City.

Children, born in New York City:

743. i. NATALIE POTTER, b. July 14, 1909.

744. ii. MARY ROBESON POTTER, b. June 1, 1913; d. June 17, 1917.

728. CHARLES SPRAGUE SARGENT<sup>8</sup> (*Mary A. Robeson<sup>7</sup>, Andrew Robeson<sup>6</sup>, Anna Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Professor Charles S. and Mary A. (Robeson) Sargent, was born in Brookline, Mass., March 7, 1880. Harvard, 1902. He married in New York City, May 9, 1912, Dagmar Wetmore, daughter of William and Annette B. (Wetmore) Wetmore. Residence, Cedarhurst, L. I.

Children, born in New York City:

745. i. CHARLES SPRAGUE SARGENT, JR., b. March 22, 1913.

746. ii. WINTHROP SARGENT, b. Jan. 19, 1915.

747. iii. MARY ALLEN SARGENT, b. Jan. 14, 1920.

748. iv. JOHN SARGENT, b. June 26, 1924.

730. JOHN CHARLES PHILLIPS<sup>8</sup> (*Anna Tucker<sup>7</sup>, Martha Robeson<sup>6</sup>, Anna*

*Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of John C. and Anna (Tucker) Phillips, was born in Boston Nov. 5, 1876, and died near Exeter, N. H., Nov. 14, 1938. Harvard, S.B., 1899, M.D., 1904. He married in Boston Jan. 11, 1908, Eleanor Hayden Hyde, born Aug. 6, 1880, daughter of General Thomas Worcester and Annie (Hayden) Hyde of Bath, Maine. She resides in Cambridge, Mass.

Dr. Phillips was an eminent naturalist, and wrote extensively on birds, conservation, and other topics. For a long period he was associate curator of birds in the Museum of Comparative Zoology at Harvard. He was president of the trustees of Peabody Museum, Salem, and a trustee of the Peabody Museum in Cambridge. In November, 1915, he joined the second Harvard Surgical Unit for service overseas in World War I, and was assigned to a British General Hospital in France, and subsequently was Major in command of a field hospital.

Children:

- 749. i. JOHN CHARLES PHILLIPS, JR., b. in Boston Dec. 24, 1908.
- 750. ii. MADELYN HYDE PHILLIPS, b. in Wenham, Mass., Aug. 16, 1912.
- 751. iii. NINA [ELEANOR] PHILLIPS, b. in Wenham Aug. 21, 1914.
- 752. iv. ARTHUR HYDE PHILLIPS, b. in Wenham June 7, 1920.

731. WILLIAM PHILLIPS<sup>8</sup> (*Anna Tucker<sup>7</sup>, Martha Robeson<sup>6</sup>, Anna Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of John C. and Anna (Tucker) Phillips, was born in Beverly, Mass., May 30, 1878. Harvard, A.B., 1900; A.M., 1922. Harvard Law School, two and a half years. He married in London, England, Feb. 2, 1910, when he was First Secretary of the American Embassy at London, Caroline Astor Drayton, born in New York City Oct. 26, 1880, daughter of James Coleman and Charlotte Augusta (Astor) Drayton of New York.

Since 1903 Mr. Phillips has been a career diplomat, holding many positions in the office of Secretary of State and in the diplomatic service. He was twice Under Secretary of State. He was Minister to the Netherlands and Luxemburg, 1920-1922; Ambassador to Belgium, 1924-1927; Minister to Canada, 1927-1929; and Ambassador to Italy, 1936-1941, resigning when Italy entered World War II on the side of the Axis. He was United States delegate to the London Naval Conference in 1935. During World War II he was personal representative of President Roosevelt to Delhi, India, with rank of Ambassador, and was also political adviser to General Dwight D. Eisenhower.

Ambassador Phillips has received the degree of LL.D. from Queens College, Canada; Dalhousie University, Canada; and Bates College, Maine. He resides at North Beverly, Mass.

Children:

- 753. i. MIRIAM DRAYTON PHILLIPS, b. in England Aug. 13, 1912; d. March 12, 1913.
- 754. ii. BEATRICE SCHERMERHORN PHILLIPS, b. in Boston March 5, 1914.
- 755. iii. WILLIAM PHILLIPS, JR., b. in Washington, D. C., March 16, 1916.
- 756. iv. DRAYTON PHILLIPS, b. in Washington, D. C., Dec. 1, 1917.

757. v. CHRISTOPHER HALLOWELL PHILLIPS, b. at the Hague, Netherlands, Dec. 6, 1920.  
 758. vi. ANNE CAROLINE PHILLIPS, b. in North Beverly, Mass., Aug. 16, 1922.

732. ANNA TUCKER PHILLIPS<sup>8</sup> (*Anna Tucker<sup>7</sup>, Martha Robeson<sup>6</sup>, Anna Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of John C. and Anna (Tucker) Phillips, was born in Boston April 25, 1880. She married in North Beverly, Mass., June 27, 1907, Raynal Cawthorne Bolling, born in Louisville, Ky., Sept. 1, 1877, died near Estrees, France, March 26, 1918 (killed in action), son of Sanford Coley and Ada Leonora (Hart) Bolling. Residence, Greenwich, Conn.

Colonel Bolling was graduated from Harvard, cum laude, 1900, and Harvard Law School, 1902. Practicing law in New York City he became general solicitor for the United States Steel Corporation. In World War I he served with distinction in France as Colonel in the Signal Corps, United States Army. Bolling Field, Washington, was named in his honor, and Bolling Redwood Grove in California was given as a memorial by Dr. John C. Phillips. A statue has been erected in his memory in Greenwich, Conn. His biography, "A Business Man in Uniform," by Humphrey Greenleaf Pearson, was published in 1923.

Children:

759. i. ANNE TUCKER BOLLING, b. in New York City March 27, 1908.  
 760. ii. RAYNAL CAWTHORNE BOLLING, b. in New York City April 7, 1910. Bowdoin, 1932.  
 761. iii. CECILIA RAYNAL BOLLING, b. in Greenwich Sept. 18, 1912; d. Nov. 19, 1913.  
 762. iv. DIANA BOLLING, b. in Greenwich, Oct. 9, 1914.  
 763. v. PATRICIA BOLLING, b. in Greenwich Oct. 29, 1916.

733. MARTHA ROBESON PHILLIPS<sup>8</sup> (*Anna Tucker<sup>7</sup>, Martha Robeson<sup>6</sup>, Anna Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of John C. and Anna (Tucker) Phillips, was born in Boston Feb. 1, 1882. She married in Beverly, Mass., June 23, 1910, Andrew James Peters, born in West Roxbury, now Jamaica Plain, Mass., April 3, 1872, died in Jamaica Plain June 26, 1938, son of Andrew James and Mary Richards (Whitney) Peters of Jamaica Plain.

Mr. Peters was graduated from Harvard, 1895; LL.B., 1898. He was a member of both branches of the Massachusetts Legislature, of the 60th-63rd Congresses, and Assistant Secretary of the United States Treasury; was Mayor of Boston 1918-1922; and was a member of the United States Section, International High Commission. Mrs. Peters resides in Jamaica Plain.

Children:

764. i. ANDREW JAMES PETERS, JR., b. April 18, 1911.  
 765. ii. ALANSON TUCKER PETERS, b. Jan. 12, 1913; d. Oct. 15, 1932.  
 766. iii. JOHN PHILLIPS PETERS, b. Oct. 18, 1914; d. Jan. 24, 1934.  
 767. iv. BRADFORD PETERS, b. Sept. 16, 1917; d. Dec. 22, 1938.

768. v. ROBESON PETERS, b. April 5, 1919. Harvard, 1942. In World War II he was a Lieutenant in the United States Navy.
769. vi. DAVID McCCLURE PETERS, b. June 9, 1921. In World War II he was a private in the United States Army.

734. GEORGE WENDELL PHILLIPS<sup>8</sup> (*Anna Tucker<sup>7</sup>, Martha Robeson<sup>6</sup>, Anna Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of John C. and Anna (Tucker) Phillips, was born Nov. 22, 1883. He married in San Francisco June 19, 1912, Loretta Lorey, born Aug. 20, 1893, daughter of Adolph and Marianne (Coleran) Lorey of Boston. Residence, Brookline, Mass.

Son:

770. i. GEORGE PHILLIPS, b. in Boston Sept. 26, 1913.

738. LAURETTE PATTERSON ROBESON<sup>9</sup> (*Andrew Robeson<sup>8</sup>, Andrew Robeson<sup>7</sup>, Andrew Robeson<sup>6</sup>, Anna Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Andrew and Laura P. (Swan) Robeson was born in Paris, France, April 12, 1914. She married in Flagstaff, Ariz., Sept. 12, 1936, Lawrence Warnock Tidrick, born Jan. 23, 1906, son of Robert Abraham and Mary Caroline (Warnock) Tidrick of Winterset, Ohio. Residence, Phoenix, Ariz.

Son:

771. i. RODMAN LAWRENCE TIDRICK, b. in Los Angeles, Calif., Oct. 15, 1937.

739. ALICE VAN RENSSELAER THAYER<sup>9</sup> (*Stephen V. R. Thayer<sup>8</sup>, Alice Robeson<sup>7</sup>, Andrew Robeson<sup>6</sup>, Anna Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Stephen V. R. and Julia (Porter) Thayer, was born in Paris, France, June 11, 1896. She was a bacteriologist at the Paris Faculty of Medicine and the Pasteur Institute, Paris. She married June 11, 1917, Comte Louis de Montgomery, born Oct. 17, 1892, son of Comte Alan and Marthe Double (de St. Lambert) de Montgomery of France. Residence, Greenwich, Conn.

Children:

772. i. ROBERT DE MONTGOMERY, b. July 31, 1918; d. Sept. 14, 1935.
773. ii. PHILIP DE MONTGOMERY, b. in Paris, Feb. 1, 1920. In World War II he fought in the guerrilla warfare of the French Army in France. Captured by Germans he was condemned to death, but escaped to Morocco, where he lived as an Arab. He came to America, and eventually went to China with the United States Navy in the Saco outfit. He received fourteen ribbons.

740. JULIA THAYER<sup>9</sup> (*Stephen V. R. Thayer<sup>8</sup>, Alice Robeson<sup>7</sup>, Andrew Robeson<sup>6</sup>, Anna Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Stephen V. R. and Julia (Porter) Thayer, was born in Boston Dec. 1, 1899, and died in France March 16, 1944. She married June 18,

1925, Comte Jacques Roederer of Paris, France, who survived her. In World War I he volunteered at the age of eighteen, and was seriously wounded in action.

Children, born in Paris:

774. i. PIERRE LOUIS ROEDERER, b. July 4, 1927.  
 775. ii. JEAN STEPHEN ROEDERER, b. Sept. 12, 1937.

741. MARY ALLEN THAYER<sup>9</sup> (*Stephen V. R. Thayer<sup>8</sup>, Alice Robeson<sup>7</sup>, Andrew Robeson<sup>6</sup>, Anna Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Stephen V. R. and Julia (Porter) Thayer, was born in Boston June 7, 1901. She married July 2, 1923, Comte Bertrand de Comminges, born March 8, 1901, son of Comte Aimery and Nahida (de Waldner) Comminges of Paris, France. Residence, Paris.

Comte de Comminges entered the French Army for service in World War II in August, 1939, with rank of Captain. He went through the Dunkirk experience and escaped to England, where he volunteered in the British Army, with which he served in India, 1942-1943, and in Syria, 1943-1944. Returning to the French Army in 1944 he served in the Italian Campaign as liaison officer to the British Army, and subsequently to the American forces. In 1944 he was in the Alsatian Campaign. In February, 1945, he returned as liaison officer to British Headquarters in Paris, serving until the following November. Comte de Comminges received the Bronze Star Medal and Legion of Merit, and the French Croix de Guerre.

Comtesse de Comminges, with her six children, left France for North Africa in December, 1941, and lived for a time in Southern Morocco. In February, 1942, with the help of a friend, she came to America, living first at Niagara Falls, N. Y., until September, 1943, and then in Montreal, Canada, until July, 1945, when she returned to France with her four younger children.

Children:

776. i. MARGUERITE NAHIDA MARIE JULIA DE COMMINGES, b. in Strasbourg June 21, 1924.  
 777. ii. AIMERY GEOFFROY ELIE PAUL DE COMMINGES, b. in St. Mercet, France, Oct. 23, 1925. In World War II he volunteered with the Free French Troops in 1942 and went to England; returned to France in September, 1944; was with the liaison; and was demobilized in November, 1945.  
 778. iii. JULIANNE MARIE THERESE CHARLOTTE ANNE DE COMMINGES, b. in Athens, Greece, May 10, 1928.  
 779. iv. JEANODON STEPHEN RENE DE COMMINGES, b. in Paris Oct. 31, 1929.  
 780. v. ELIE PHILIPPE DE COMMINGES, b. in Paris July 25, 1935.  
 781. vi. NAHIDA MARIE ODETTE FRANCOISE DE COMMINGES, b. in Chateauroux Dec. 1, 1940.

742. IGNATIUS SARGENT<sup>9</sup> (*Andrew R. Sargent<sup>8</sup>, Mary A. Robeson<sup>7</sup>, Andrew Robeson<sup>6</sup>, Anna Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Andrew R. and Marie (de Acosta) Sargent, was born in

Brookline, Mass., Jan. 30, 1914. Harvard, 1933-35. He married in Newton, Mass., June 17, 1935, Frances White Moffat, born in Flushing, N. Y., Jan. 1, 1917, daughter of Alexander W. and Sarah (De Camp) Moffat of Boston. First Lieutenant in National Guard of Pennsylvania; semi-active, 1939, active, 1940-1941. Residence, Lansdale, Penna.

Children:

782. i. SOPHIE SARGENT, b. Nov. 29, 1940.  
782a. ii. MICHAEL SARGENT, b. Sept. 1, 1942.  
782b. iii. WILLIAM ROBESON SARGENT, b. Sept. 5, 1944.

743. NATALIE POTTER<sup>9</sup> (*Mary Sargent<sup>8</sup>, Mary A. Robeson<sup>7</sup>, Andrew Robeson<sup>6</sup>, Anna Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Dr. Nathaniel B. and Mary (Sargent) Potter, was born in New York City July 14, 1909. She married Dec. 4, 1930 William Conkling Ladd, born Oct. 29, 1903, son of Louis Williams and Olivia (Conkling) Ladd of Cleveland, Ohio. Divorced. Residence, Louisville, Ky.

Children, born in New York City:

783. i. MARY SARGENT LADD, b. June 4, 1934.  
784. ii. OLIVIA LADD, b. Sept. 23, 1937.

745. CHARLES SPRAGUE SARGENT, JR.<sup>9</sup> (*Charles S. Sargent<sup>8</sup>, Mary A. Robeson<sup>7</sup>, Andrew Robeson<sup>6</sup>, Anna Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Charles S. and Dagmar (Wetmore) Sargent, was born in New York City March 22, 1913. Harvard, 1935. He married (1) Nov. 8, 1934, Bridget McBurney, born Aug. 14, 1913, died Sept. 6, 1942, daughter of Malcolm and Dorothy (Moran) McBurney of East Islip, Long Island, N. Y.; (2) April 10, 1943, Marjorie Sullivan, daughter of Leonard and Marjorie (Dodd) Sullivan of Cedarhurst, Long Island, N. Y. Residence, New York City.

Children, by first marriage, born in New York City:

785. i. SELDON SARGENT, b. June 22, 1937.  
786. ii. CHARLES SPRAGUE SARGENT, III, b. Aug. 12, 1938.

746. WINTHROP SARGENT<sup>9</sup> (*Charles S. Sargent<sup>8</sup>, Mary A. Robeson<sup>7</sup>, Andrew Robeson<sup>6</sup>, Anna Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Charles S. and Dagmar (Wetmore) Sargent, was born in New York City Jan. 19, 1915. He married in Sheridan, Wyo., June 14, 1938, Elsa Eileen Johnson, born June 8, 1915, daughter of William Victor and Sylvia Jessamine (Spear) Johnson of Kirby, Mont. Residence, Kirby, Mont.

Son:

787. i. WINTHROP SARGENT, JR., b. in Townsend, Mont., Sept. 19, 1939.

747. MARY ALLEN SARGENT<sup>9</sup> (*Charles S. Sargent<sup>8</sup>, Mary A. Robeson<sup>7</sup>,*

*Andrew Robeson<sup>6</sup>, Anna Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Charles S. and Dagmar (Wetmore) Sargent, was born in New York City Jan. 14, 1920. She married Oct. 23, 1943, Henry Mitchell Havemeyer, son of John F. and Mary (Mitchell) Havemeyer of Ardsley-on-Hudson, N. Y. He enlisted in the United States Army before the Pearl Harbor disaster and was sent to O.C.S., being graduated as Lieutenant. Stationed in Washington, D. C., he subsequently served in the Philippines, and was discharged with rank of Major in December, 1945. Residence, New York City.*

Son:

788. i. CRAIG HAVEMEYER, b. in Washington Dec. 23, 1944.

749. JOHN CHARLES PHILLIPS, JR.<sup>9</sup> (*John C. Phillips<sup>8</sup>, Anna Tucker<sup>7</sup>, Martha Robeson<sup>6</sup>, Anna Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), son of John C. and Eleanor H. (Hyde) Phillips, was born in Boston Dec. 24, 1908. Harvard, 1930. He married (1) at Seabright, N. J., September, 1932, Helen Stevens Schroeder; (2) on Long Island, N. Y., July 23, 1936, Elizabeth Cornell Blair, born Aug. 30, 1908, daughter of Charles Hildreth and Margaret E. (Bell) Blair, of New York City. Residence, Wellfleet, Mass.*

Children, by second marriage, born in Boston:

789. i. BLAIR PHILLIPS, b. May 30, 1937.  
790. ii. HAYDEN PHILLIPS, b. Nov. 26, 1940.

750. MADELYN HYDE PHILLIPS<sup>9</sup> (*John C. Phillips<sup>8</sup>, Anna Tucker<sup>7</sup>, Martha Robeson<sup>6</sup>, Anna Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), daughter of John C. and Eleanor H. (Hyde) Phillips, was born in Wenham, Mass., Aug. 16, 1912. Smith College, 1932-34. She married (1) at Harrison, N. Y., November, 1936, Schuyler Watts; (2) in Boston Oct. 31, 1940, Horton O'Neil, born in St. Louis Sept. 20, 1907, son of David and Barbara (Blockman) O'Neil, of St. Louis. His part in World War II was as a shipbuilder in Portland, Me. Residence, Cos Cob, Conn.*

Children:

791. i. JOELLEN O'NEIL, b. in New York City Oct. 9, 1941.  
792. ii. DAVID O'NEIL, b. in Portland, Me., June 9, 1943.

751. NINA PHILLIPS<sup>9</sup> (*John C. Phillips<sup>8</sup>, Anna Tucker<sup>7</sup>, Martha Robeson<sup>6</sup>, Anna Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), daughter of John C. and Eleanor H. (Hyde) Phillips, was born in Wenham, Mass., Aug. 21, 1914. Sarah Lawrence College, 1936. She married Oct. 29, 1937, Stanley Washburn, Jr., born Oct. 6, 1908, son of Colonel Stanley and Alice (Langhorne) Washburn of Lakewood, N. J. In World War II he was a pilot in the A.T.C., 1942-1945. Residence, New York City.*

## Children, born in New York City:

793. i. NANCY LANGHORNE WASHBURN, b. Sept. 13, 1939.  
794. ii. NINA PHILLIPS WASHBURN, b. Oct. 22, 1941.  
794a. iii. STANLEY WASHBURN, III, b. Aug. 7, 1946.

752. ARTHUR HYDE PHILLIPS<sup>9</sup> (*John C. Phillips<sup>8</sup>, Anna Tucker<sup>7</sup>, Martha Robeson<sup>6</sup>, Anna Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of John C. and Eleanor H. (Hyde) Phillips, was born in Wenham, Mass., June 7, 1920. Harvard, 1942. He married Aug. 22, 1943, Elizabeth Elliott Sass, born Sept. 16, 1922, daughter of Herbert Ravenel and Marion (Hutson) Sass of Charleston, S. C. In World War II he was a Lieutenant in Naval Aviation, 1942-1946. Residence, Cambridge, Mass.

## Children, born in Charleston, S. C.:

795. i. MARION RAVENEL PHILLIPS, b. April 29, 1944.  
796. ii. JOHN CHARLES PHILLIPS, II, b. March 5, 1946.

755. WILLIAM PHILLIPS, JR.<sup>9</sup> (*William Phillips<sup>8</sup>, Anna Tucker<sup>7</sup>, Martha Robeson<sup>6</sup>, Anna Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of William and Caroline A. (Drayton) Phillips, was born in Washington, D. C., March 16, 1916. Massachusetts State College, B.S. in Pomology, 1941. He married Oct. 25, 1941, Barbara Holbrook, born March 14, 1920, daughter of Ralph Anthony and Mabel (Brean) Holbrook of Beacon Falls, Conn. Residence, Bridgeton, N. J.

## Children:

797. i. SUSAN HOLBROOK PHILLIPS, b. July 22, 1943.  
797a. ii. CAROLINE ASTOR PHILLIPS, b. Feb. 25, 1946.

756. DRAYTON PHILLIPS<sup>9</sup> (*William Phillips<sup>8</sup>, Anna Tucker<sup>7</sup>, Martha Robeson<sup>6</sup>, Anna Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of William and Caroline A. (Drayton) Phillips, was born in Washington, D. C., Dec. 1, 1917. University of Lausanne, Switzerland, Certificate de Belles Lettres, 1939. He married in Boston Nov. 30, 1940, Evelyn Foster Gardiner, born in Germantown, Penna., Dec. 26, 1915, daughter of Frederic Merrick and Harriet Evelyn (Foster) Gardiner of Boston and Philadelphia. In World War II he served four years and two months in the United States Naval Reserve, with three years overseas duty in various countries, attached to Office of Naval Intelligence. Received Battle Star for participation in North Africa fighting. Discharged as Lieutenant Commander, United States Naval Reserve, January, 1946. Residence, North Beverly, Mass.

## Son:

798. i. DRAYTON PHILLIPS, JR., b. Dec. 21, 1941.

757. CHRISTOPHER HALLOWELL PHILLIPS<sup>9</sup> (*William Phillips<sup>8</sup>, Anna*

*Tucker<sup>7</sup>, Martha Robeson<sup>6</sup>, Anna Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), son of William and Caroline A. (Drayton) Phillips, was born at The Hague, Netherlands, Dec. 6, 1920. Harvard, 1943. He married in Bozeman, Mont., May 11, 1943, Mabel Bernice Olsen, born Sept. 18, 1919, daughter of William Olsen of Bozeman. In World War II he enlisted in the United States Army in November, 1942, and was subsequently promoted to Second Lieutenant. Until July, 1944, he served with the Army Air Force. From July, 1944 to release from service he was with the military government in the Far East, being assigned to headquarters in Tokyo as executive officer of Price Control and Rationing Division.*

Daughter:

799. i. VICTORIA ANNE PHILLIPS, b. in Carmel, Calif., Sept. 30, 1945.

758. ANNE PHILLIPS<sup>9</sup> (*William Phillips<sup>8</sup>, Anna Tucker<sup>7</sup>, Martha Robeson<sup>6</sup>, Anna Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), daughter of William and Caroline A. (Drayton) Phillips, was born in North Beverly, Mass., Aug. 16, 1922. She married in Hamilton, Mass., June 15, 1942, John Winslow Bryant, born May 8, 1914, son of Lincoln and Rose Standish (Bryant) Bryant of Milton, Mass. Residence, Milton.*

Children:

800. i. CYNTHIA PHILLIPS BRYANT, b. July 5, 1943.  
801. ii. ROSE STANDISH BRYANT, b. Oct. 5, 1944.

759. ANNE TUCKER BOLLING<sup>9</sup> (*Anna T. Phillips<sup>8</sup>, Anna Tucker<sup>7</sup>, Martha Robeson<sup>6</sup>, Anna Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Raynal C. and Anna T. (Phillips) Bolling, was born in New York City March 27, 1908. University of Chicago, 1930. She married in Paris, France, July 22, 1933, Dr. Stafford Manchester Wheeler, born in Westport, Mass., July 11, 1910, killed in World War II April 13, 1945, son of Philip Manchester and Sophie Elizabeth (Hall) Wheeler of Westport.*

Dr. Wheeler was graduated from Harvard in 1932 and from Harvard Medical School in 1937. He was commissioned Lieutenant (j.g.) in the United States Naval Medical Corps in 1942. After being stationed at the Naval Medical Center in Bethesda, Md., he went overseas with the American Typhus Commission, serving in Egypt and Yugoslavia. There he was killed by a land mine explosion. He received the Typhus Commission Award from the United States Government, and the Second Class Order of Merit from the Government of Yugoslavia. Mrs. Wheeler resides in Bethesda, Md.

Children:

802. i. SARAH ELIZABETH WHEELER, b. in Baltimore May 28, 1938.  
802a. ii. PHILIP RAYNAL WHEELER, b. in Boston May 4, 1941.

763. PATRICIA BOLLING<sup>9</sup> (*Anna T. Phillips<sup>8</sup>, Anna Tucker<sup>7</sup>, Martha Robeson<sup>6</sup>, Anna Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>),*

daughter of Raynal C. and Anna T. (Phillips) Bolling, was born in Greenwich, Conn., Oct. 29, 1916. Sarah Lawrence College, A.B., 1934; Columbia, M.A., 1938. She married June 2, 1942, Charles Ford Harding, III, born Sept. 14, 1917, son of Charles Ford, II and Helen Swenson Harding of Winnetka, Ill. Residence, Prairie View, Ill.

Children:

803. i. DIANA BARTON HARDING, b. June 17, 1944.  
803a. ii. CHARLES FORD HARDING, IV, b. Jan. 30, 1947.

764. ANDREW JAMES PETERS, JR.<sup>9</sup> (*Martha R. Phillips<sup>8</sup>, Anna Tucker<sup>7</sup>, Martha Robeson<sup>6</sup>, Anna Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Andrew J. and Martha R. (Phillips) Peters, was born in Washington, D. C., April 18, 1911. University of Lausanne, Switzerland, 1929. He married in New York City Jan. 17, 1939, Alyce Loretta Cleary, born in Boston July 25, 1906, daughter of Thomas John and Mary Ann (Dorin) Cleary of Boston. In World War II he was a Lieutenant (j.g.) in the Merchant Marine.

776. MARQUERITE NAHIDA MARIE JULIA DE COMMINGES<sup>10</sup> (*Mary A. Thayer<sup>9</sup>, Stephen v. R. Thayer<sup>8</sup>, Alice Robeson<sup>7</sup>, Andrew Robeson<sup>6</sup>, Anna Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Comte Bertrand and Mary A. (Thayer) de Comminges, was born in Strasbourg June 21, 1924. She married in Paris, France, Nov. 3, 1945, Neville Arland Ussher, born April 17, 1919, son of Commander and Ianthe (Lesneur) Ussher of Herts, England.

In World War II she served at the Free French Delegation in Ottawa, Canada, from December, 1942 to March, 1945. Mr. Ussher was seriously wounded at Dunkirk and taken prisoner; was exchanged in 1944. From September, 1944, to March, 1946, he was aide-de-camp to the Governor General of Canada. Residence, London, England.

Son:

804. i. PATRICK BERTRAND RICHARD USSHER, b. in Helme, Hampstead, England, Dec. 28, 1946.

## Descendants of Lydia (Rodman) Ruggles

406. LYDIA RODMAN<sup>5</sup> (*Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Samuel and Elizabeth (Rotch) Rodman, was born in Nantucket Sept. 15, 1790 and died in Waltham, Mass., April 14, 1869. She married in New Bedford April 10, 1823, Micah Haskell Ruggles, born in Rochester, Mass., May 9, 1791, died in Fall River, Mass., Dec. 19, 1857, son of Elisha and Mary (Clapp) Ruggles of Rochester.

For thirty years and more Mr. Ruggles was a resident of Fall River, where he played a leading part in affairs. He was sent to that city in 1826, by his Father-in-law, Samuel Rodman, president of the Pocasset Manufacturing Company, to be connected with that enterprise, of which he became agent and treasurer in 1837. Erection of the huge Pocasset mill in 1847 in the center of Fall River is said to have been largely due to his initiative. It stood for eighty years, being destroyed in the great fire of 1928, at which time the Granite Block, adjoining, another of his projects, was also burned.

Mr. Ruggles was for many years on the town's board of firewards, and in that capacity in 1829 served on a committee to purchase Fall River's first municipally-owned fire engine and provide an engine house. He was one of the organizers of the Fall River Institution for Savings, and its first president, serving from 1828 to 1857. From 1833 to 1838 he was a member of the Massachusetts Legislature.

On the Samuel Rodman farm was a tract of twelve acres known as Ruggles Grove, which was purchased by the city in 1868. A portion was taken for street extensions and for a site for the Ruggles School, and a section was sold. The remainder, about nine acres, was laid out and dedicated as Ruggles Park.

Mr. Ruggles resided in an attractive mansion on North Main Street, on the site of the present Superior Courthouse. It was destroyed by fire starting from a defective chimney on the night of Jan. 24, 1857. Discovery of the blaze was made about 11.30 o'clock. By three o'clock the next morning the structure was reduced to ashes, the porch and outbuildings alone being saved.

Because of the intense cold, the mercury being at sixteen degrees below zero, and the deficiency of the water supply, all but one of the hand engines were forced to suspend operations. In a small building nearby were discovered several barrels of cider which the firemen appropriated and pumped on the flames, "with gratifying results," says an old account.

The fall of a chimney buried several spectators in the debris, causing the deaths of three men and injury of others.

Mr. Ruggles survived the tragedy less than a year, dying in December

following at the age of sixty-six. Of this able executive it has been said: "He manifested a degree of independence in the formation and expression of his opinions seldom met with." Another authority states: "His many public services won him the title of 'the poor man's best friend.'"

Children:

- 805. i. GEORGE WILLIAM RUGGLES, b. in Rochester Feb. 7, 1824; d. Aug. 23, 1825.
- 806. ii. MARY CLAPP RUGGLES, b. in Rochester, Jan. 17, 1826; d. Jan. 10, 1892.
- 807. iii. ALFRED RUGGLES, b. in Fall River Sept. 18, 1828; d. Sept. 12, 1829.
- 808. iv. ALBERT RUGGLES, b. in Fall River Dec. 1, 1830; d. Dec. 13, 1832.

Micah H. Ruggles married, first, Sophia Tupper Willis, daughter of Hon. Nathan Willis, in Rochester Jan. 24, 1813. She was born Sept. 12, 1791 and died Nov. 15, 1821. Their children were (from Rochester Vital Records):

- i. CHARLES HENRY RUGGLES, b. March 4, 1814; d. young.
- ii. GEORGE RUGGLES, d. Aug. 23, 1815, aet. one year.
- iii. LUCY RUGGLES, b. June 25, 1816; d. Aug. 11, 1816.
- iv. EDWARD RUGGLES, b. Aug. 16, 1818; d. young.
- v. LUCY RUGGLES, b. Dec. 5, 1819; d. Oct. 21, 1821.
- vi. WILLIAM RUGGLES, b. Oct. 9, 1821; d. Oct. 31, 1821.

806. MARY CLAPP RUGGLES<sup>6</sup> (*Lydia Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Micah H. and Lydia (Rodman) Ruggles, was born in Rochester, Mass., Jan. 17, 1826, and died in Waltham, Mass., Jan. 10, 1892. She married Oct. 6, 1847, Rev. Benjamin Worcester, born in Boston Oct. 31, 1824, died in Waltham May 23, 1911, son of Rev. Thomas and Alice (Clark) Worcester.

Rev. Benjamin Worcester was a school principal and a Swedenborgian preacher for over fifty years. His father was a clergyman of that faith.

Children, first two born in Fall River, Mass., others in Waltham:

- 809. i. ALICE WORCESTER, b. Dec. 29, 1848; d. April 8, 1914.
- 810. ii. ELIZABETH WORCESTER, b. April 15, 1850; d. Aug. 20, 1917.
- 811. iii. JAMES WORCESTER, b. Dec. 1, 1851; d. Jan. 8, 1933.
- 812. iv. JOHN WORCESTER, b. Aug. 6, 1853; d. Oct. 15, 1901.
- 813. v. ALFRED WORCESTER, b. June 22, 1855.
- 814. vi. MARY WORCESTER, b. Nov. 14, 1858; d. Sept. 22, 1925.
- 815. vii. JOSEPH RUGGLES WORCESTER, b. May 9, 1860; d. May 9, 1943.
- 816. viii. ANNA WORCESTER, b. April 8, 1862; d. Nov. 11, 1927.
- 817. ix. WINFRED WORCESTER, b. Sept. 12, 1863; d. March 28, 1866.
- 818. x. ARTHUR WORCESTER, b. Nov. 11, 1864; d. Aug. 28, 1912. Unmarried.  
In the Spanish-American War, 1898, he served as a private in the Fifth Massachusetts Infantry Volunteers.
- 819. xi. MIRIAM WORCESTER, b. Aug. 20, 1866; d. Dec. 31, 1870.

809. ALICE WORCESTER<sup>7</sup> (*Mary C. Ruggles<sup>6</sup>, Lydia Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Benjamin and Mary C. (Ruggles) Worcester, was born in Fall River, Mass., Dec. 29, 1848, and died in Waltham, Mass., April 8, 1914. She married in Waltham

Dec. 29, 1870, Lewis Tafel Burnham, born in Henderson, N. Y., March 8, 1844, died in Waltham March 5, 1921, son of Edwin and Elisabeth Keith (Weeks) Burnham of Chicago.

- Children, born in Waltham, except Nos. iv and v, born in Chicago:
- 820. i. ALICE ELIZABETH BURNHAM, b. June 12, 1872; d. Feb. 7, 1947. Unmarried.
  - 821. ii. MARY BURNHAM, b. Oct. 16, 1873.
  - 822. iii. ELINOR BURNHAM, b. Nov. 9, 1876.
  - 823. iv. ALFRED WORCESTER BURNHAM, b. June 26, 1881.
  - 824. v. PHILIP WEEKS BURNHAM, b. April 2, 1887.
  - 825. vi. CLARA WINIFRED BURNHAM, b. Aug. 11, 1889.
  - 826. vii. MARGARET NOBLE BURNHAM, b. May 22, 1892. Unmarried.

810. ELIZABETH WORCESTER<sup>7</sup> (*Mary C. Ruggles<sup>6</sup>, Lydia Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Benjamin and Mary C. (Ruggles) Worcester, was born in Fall River, Mass., April 15, 1850, and died in Hingham, Mass., Aug. 20, 1917. She married in Waltham, Mass., Oct. 8, 1873, Hiram Francis Mills, born in Bangor, Maine, Nov. 1, 1836, died in Hingham Oct. 4, 1921, son of Preserved Brayton and Jane (Lunt) Mills, of Bangor. No children. Mr. Mills was a noted civil engineer.

811. JAMES WORCESTER<sup>7</sup> (*Mary C. Ruggles<sup>6</sup>, Lydia Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Benjamin and Mary C. (Ruggles) Worcester, was born in Waltham, Mass., Dec. 1, 1851, and died there Jan. 8, 1933. He married in New York City Jan. 6, 1876, Margaret Hopkins, born in Jersey City, N. J., Nov. 22, 1852, died in Waltham March 20, 1937, daughter of David Arnold and Margaret Ferrer (Hender-son) Hopkins of Philadelphia.

Son, adopted:

- 827. i. ROBERT WORCESTER, d. Sept. 27, 1937.

813. ALFRED WORCESTER<sup>7</sup> (*Mary C. Ruggles<sup>6</sup>, Lydia Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Benjamin and Mary C. (Ruggles) Worcester, was born in Waltham, Mass., June 22, 1855. He married in Portland, Maine, Oct. 19, 1886, Elizabeth Joy Hill, born Jan. 28, 1854, daughter of Rev. Dr. Thomas and Anne Foster (Bellows) Hill of Portland. Her father was President of Harvard, 1862-1868. No children. Residence, Waltham, Mass.

Dr. Worcester is a Harvard man, A.B., 1878; A.M., 1881; M.D., 1883. For many years he practiced medicine in Waltham, where he has also been active in civic welfare. He was a founder of the Waltham Hospital, Waltham Training School for Nurses, and Waltham Baby Hospital.

In World War I, a Major in the American Red Cross, he served as Deputy Commissioner in Switzerland, and was decorated by King Leopold for his

work among Belgian refugees in that country. From 1925 to 1935 he was professor of hygiene at Harvard University. He is the author of many articles and several books on medical and nursing subjects.

814. MARY WORCESTER<sup>7</sup> (*Mary C. Ruggles<sup>6</sup>, Lydia Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Benjamin and Mary C. (Ruggles) Worcester, was born in Waltham, Mass., Nov. 14, 1858, and died there Sept. 22, 1925. She married in Waltham Nov. 22, 1882, Edward Wellington, born in Waltham Dec. 9, 1855, died there Dec. 7, 1935, son of Benjamin and Mary Elizabeth (Stearns) Wellington of Waltham; Harvard, 1877.

Children, born in Waltham:

828. i. ELIZABETH MARY WELLINGTON, b. Sept. 4, 1883.
829. ii. RICHARD WELLINGTON, b. Oct. 10, 1884.
830. iii. JOSEPH WORCESTER WELLINGTON, b. March 1, 1886.
831. iv. EDWARD WELLINGTON, b. May 6, 1888; d. May 8, 1888.
832. v. CATHARINE JOY WELLINGTON, b. Dec. 18, 1889. Unmarried.
833. vi. MIRIAM WELLINGTON, b. Nov. 21, 1890.
834. vii. BENJAMIN WELLINGTON, b. Aug. 23, 1893.

815. JOSEPH RUGGLES WORCESTER<sup>7</sup> (*Mary C. Ruggles<sup>6</sup>, Lydia Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Benjamin and Mary C. (Ruggles) Worcester, was born in Waltham, Mass., May 9, 1860, and died there May 9, 1943. Harvard, 1882. He married in Waltham Jan. 2, 1889, Alice Jeannette Wheeler, born Jan. 3, 1859, died Nov. 24, 1934, daughter of Asahel and Martha (Moore) Wheeler of Lincoln, Mass.

Mr. Worcester was one of this country's foremost engineers in the design of steel and reinforced structures and foundations. For many years consulting engineer to the Boston Transit Commission, he had designed most of the elevated structures of the Boston Elevated Railway, the steelwork of the subway, and the viaduct across the Charles River Dam. Residence, Waltham, Mass.

Children, born in Waltham:

835. i. ALICE MARTHA WORCESTER, b. Nov. 28, 1889.
836. ii. JOHN DAVID WORCESTER, b. May 24, 1891; d. Jan. 4, 1892.
837. iii. BARBARA WORCESTER, b. April 25, 1893.
838. iv. THOMAS WORCESTER, b. June 8, 1896.
839. v. RUTH HUNT WORCESTER, b. July 2, 1898. Smith, A.B., 1920.

816. ANNA WORCESTER<sup>7</sup> (*Mary C. Ruggles<sup>6</sup>, Lydia Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Benjamin and Mary C. (Ruggles) Worcester, was born in Waltham, Mass., April 8, 1862, and died in Berkeley, Cal., Nov. 11, 1927. She married in Waltham Oct. 17, 1889, Richard Hubert Kidder, born in Lowell, Mass., May 28, 1859, died in Billerica, Mass., May 25, 1940, son of Moses Warren and Frances Maria (Palmer) Kidder of Lincoln, Mass.

Children, born in Waltham:

- 840. i. ANNA RODMAN KIDDER, b. Sept. 15, 1890; d. Sept. 28, 1940.
- 841. ii. HUBERT KIDDER, b. Sept. 5, 1892.
- 842. iii. ARTHUR WORCESTER KIDDER, b. Aug. 22, 1894.

821. MARY BURNHAM<sup>8</sup> (*Alice Worcester<sup>7</sup>, Mary C. Ruggles<sup>6</sup>, Lydia Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Lewis T. and Alice (Worcester) Burnham, was born in Waltham, Mass., Oct. 16, 1873. She married in Waltham June 28, 1887, George Burnham Beaman, born in Cincinnati, Ohio, April 1, 1870, died in Waltham Feb. 12, 1942, son of Rev. Edmund Addison and Sarah Vorhees (Parsons) Beaman of Cincinnati; University of Cincinnati, A.B., 1893; A.M. and Ph.D., Leipzig, 1895. For several years he taught German in the Northeast Manual Training School in Philadelphia, and subsequently was an instructor, mainly in Latin and chemistry, in a private school in Waltham, now the Chapel Hill School. Owing to his health he was obliged to give up teaching many years before his death.

Children:

- 843. i. ALICE WORCESTER BEAMAN, b. in Philadelphia, June 20, 1898. In World War II she passed four years as a registered nurse in various civilian public service camps administered by the American Friends Service Committee for the benefit of conscientious objectors.
- 844. ii. ANNA GILCHRIST BEAMAN, b. in Waltham July 5, 1901; d. Jan. 23, 1921.
- 845. iii. GEORGE BURNHAM BEAMAN, Jr., b. in Waltham Aug. 13, 1905.
- 846. iv. RICHARD BANCROFT BEAMAN, b. in Waltham June 28, 1909.

822. ELINOR BURNHAM<sup>8</sup> (*Alice Worcester<sup>7</sup>, Mary C. Ruggles<sup>6</sup>, Lydia Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Lewis T. and Alice (Worcester) Burnham, was born in Waltham, Mass., Nov. 9, 1876. She married in Waltham Oct. 24, 1911, William Chapman Spelman, born in Manchester, Vt., Aug. 21, 1876, son of William Chapman and Sarah Abigail (Hoyt) Spelman of Brooklyn, N. Y.; Yale, 1899. Residence, Kent, Conn.

Children, born in Waltham:

- 847. i. KATE LORD SPELMAN, b. Sept. 22, 1913.
- 848. ii. JOSEPH WORCESTER SPELMAN, b. April 4, 1918.

823. ALFRED WORCESTER BURNHAM<sup>8</sup> (*Alice Worcester<sup>7</sup>, Mary C. Ruggles<sup>6</sup>, Lydia Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Lewis T. and Alice (Worcester) Burnham, was born in Chicago June 26, 1881. M.I.T., 1904. He married in Waltham, Mass., July 10, 1905, Maryemily Johnson, born in Waltham July 28, 1879, daughter of Horace Irving and Stella Bell (Culver) Johnson of Waltham. Residence, Geneva, N. Y.

## Children:

849. i. ALFRED WORCESTER BURNHAM, JR., b. in Hudson, N. Y., April 2, 1909; d. March 3, 1934.  
 850. ii. MARY ADELAIDE BURNHAM, b. in Southbridge, Mass., Sept. 27, 1913.  
 851. iii. ALICE McCONHI BURNHAM, b. in Southbridge, Mass., March 4, 1915.

824. PHILIP WEEKS BURNHAM<sup>8</sup> (*Alice Worcester<sup>7</sup>, Mary C. Ruggles<sup>6</sup>, Lydia Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Lewis T. and Alice (Worcester) Burnham, was born in Chicago April 1, 1887. He married in Wilkesbarre, Penna., Oct. 23, 1915, Mary Derr Phillips, born in Wilkesbarre June 27, 1887, daughter of Albert H. and Alice (Carpenter) Phillips of Wilkesbarre. M. I. T., 1910. Residence, Wilmington, Del.

## Children:

852. i. BARBARA BURNHAM, b. in New York City July 8, 1916.  
 853. ii. NANCY GARDNER BURNHAM, b. in Summit, N.J., Oct. 17, 1920.  
 854. iii. JANE WORCESTER BURNHAM, b. in Summit, N.J., Jan. 31, 1925.

825. CLARA WINIFRED BURNHAM<sup>8</sup> (*Alice Worcester<sup>7</sup>, Mary C. Ruggles<sup>6</sup>, Lydia Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Lewis T. and Alice (Worcester) Burnham, was born in Waltham, Mass., Aug. 11, 1889. Graduate nurse. University of California, 1929. She married in San Francisco Dec. 1, 1935, Joseph Anthony Marino, born in Visalia, Calif., Dec. 4, 1892, son of Dominic and Rose (Dondero) Marino of San Francisco. No children. In World War I she served in the United States Army Nurse Corps at Camp Devens and in France in 1918 and 1919. Residence, Denver, Col.

828. ELIZABETH MARY WELLINGTON<sup>8</sup> (*Mary Worcester<sup>7</sup>, Mary C. Ruggles<sup>6</sup>, Lydia Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Edward and Mary (Worcester) Wellington, was born in Waltham, Mass., Sept. 4, 1883. She married in Waltham June 20, 1908, Converse Smith, born in Waltham Jan. 16, 1883, son of Charles Frederick and Mary Elizabeth (Burr) Smith of Waltham. Residence, West Haven, Conn.

## Children, born in West Haven, Conn.:

855. i. SYLVIA SMITH, b. July 29, 1910.  
 856. ii. MIRIAM LOUISA SMITH, b. and d. April 26, 1913.  
 857. iii. EVELYN SMITH, b. July 15, 1921.  
 858. iv. CAROL ELLEN SMITH, b. Dec. 9, 1924.

829. RICHARD WELLINGTON<sup>8</sup> (*Mary Worcester<sup>7</sup>, Mary C. Ruggles<sup>6</sup>, Lydia Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Edward and Mary (Worcester) Wellington, was born in Waltham, Mass.,

Oct. 10, 1884. Massachusetts State College, B.S., 1906; Harvard, M.S., 1911. He married in Lexington, Ky., Oct. 10, 1912, Minerva Collins, born in Hindman, Ky., March 1, 1888, daughter of Francis Marion and Ann (Nichols) Collins of Hindman; University of Kentucky, 1911. He is professor of Pomology, New York State Agricultural Experiment Station of Cornell University. Residence, Geneva, N. Y.

Children:

- 859. i. RICHARD WELLINGTON, JR., b. in Geneva, N.Y., Aug. 5, 1913; d. Sept. 10, 1913.
- 860. ii. MARYLIZABETH WELLINGTON, b. in Waltham Sept. 9, 1914.
- 861. iii. JOHN CLARK WELLINGTON, b. in Washington, D.C., Feb. 15, 1920. Rochester University, 1942. In World War II he was a First Lieutenant, United States Army Air Force, Geodetic Control.
  
- 830. JOSEPH WORCESTER WELLINGTON<sup>8</sup> (*Mary Worcester<sup>7</sup>, Mary C. Ruggles<sup>6</sup>, Lydia Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Edward and Mary (Worcester) Wellington, was born in Waltham, Mass., March 1, 1886. Mass. State College, B.S., 1908; University of Maryland, M.S., 1931. He married in Burlington, Vt., Oct. 7, 1911, Ina Pearl Rand, born in Craftsbury, Vt., Sept. 5, 1887, daughter of Sedgwick Agon and Julia (Cochran) Rand of Burlington. Residence, Takoma Park, Md.

Children:

- 862. i. RUTH ELEANOR WELLINGTON, b. in Geneva, N. Y., June 5, 1915.
- 863. ii. ESTHER RAND WELLINGTON, b. in Geneva Nov. 1, 1916.
- 864. iii. LOIS MILLS WELLINGTON, b. in Washington, D. C., Sept. 27, 1924.
  
- 833. MIRIAM WELLINGTON<sup>8</sup> (*Mary Worcester<sup>7</sup>, Mary C. Ruggles<sup>6</sup>, Lydia Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Edward and Mary (Worcester) Wellington, was born in Waltham, Mass., Nov. 21, 1890. She married in Waltham Oct. 25, 1913, Alonzo Hadley Glass, born in Lexington, Mass., Sept. 20, 1888, son of Elbridge Willard and Emma Ellen (Whitaker) Glass of Lexington. Residence, Lexington, Mass.

Children, born in Waltham:

- 865. i. ARTHUR WORCESTER GLASS, b. Sept. 23, 1914.
- 866. ii. EDWARD HADLEY GLASS, b. Feb. 19, 1917.
- 867. iii. CHARLES WELLINGTON GLASS, b. April 24, 1920. In World War II he served in the United States Army for three and a half years, in the American and Asiatic Pacific theatres. He was awarded a bronze campaign star and a good conduct ribbon.
  
- 834. BENJAMIN WELLINGTON<sup>8</sup> (*Mary Worcester<sup>7</sup>, Mary C. Ruggles<sup>6</sup>, Lydia Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Edward and Mary (Worcester) Wellington, was born in Waltham, Mass., Aug. 23, 1893. Massachusetts Agricultural College, 1915. He married in Waltham April 27, 1920, Ida Marion Russell, born in Waltham Feb. 4,

1897, daughter of William Marshall and Mary Anna (Thompson) Russell of Waltham. In World War I he was a Sergeant in the 553rd Engineers, Camp Humphreys, Va. Residence, Waltham, Mass.

Children, born in Waltham:

- 868. i. ROGER RUSSELL WELLINGTON, b. Dec. 1, 1923; d. Nov. 19, 1944. He was inducted into service in March, 1943, as an infantry private for World War II, and was killed in action in Germany.
- 869. ii. VIRGINIA RUTH WELLINGTON, b. Feb. 1, 1926. Jackson College, 1947.
- 870. iii. DAVID WORCESTER WELLINGTON, b. May 7, 1927. Attended M. I. T. Inducted into service in July, 1945.
- 871. iv. PAUL EDWARD WELLINGTON, b. Sept. 4, 1931.
- 872. v. HOWARD WILLIAM WELLINGTON, b. July 27, 1933.

835. ALICE MARTHA WORCESTER<sup>s</sup> (*Joseph R. Worcester<sup>7</sup>, Mary C. Ruggles<sup>6</sup>, Lydia Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Joseph R. and Alice J. (Wheeler) Worcester, was born in Waltham, Mass., Nov. 28, 1889. Smith College, 1912. She married in Waltham Sept. 16, 1916, Clarence Decatur Howe, born in Waltham Jan. 15, 1886, son of William Clarence and Mary Emma (Hastings) Howe of Waltham.

After being graduated from the Massachusetts Institute of Technology with the degree of B.S., in 1907, and following a period as a college instructor, Mr. Howe established himself in civil engineering in Canada, and continued in the practice of his profession there, having large contracts. In 1935 he was elected to the Dominion House of Commons, and became Minister of Railways and Canals, and also Minister of Marine. During World War II, from 1940 to 1944, he was Minister of Munitions and Supply. Subsequently he was Minister of Reconstruction, and in 1946 was appointed to the Privy Council. Several universities have honored him with the degree of Doctor of Laws. Residence, Ottawa, Ontario, Canada.

Children, born in Port Arthur, Ontario:

- 873. i. WILLIAM HASTINGS HOWE, b. Aug. 26, 1922.
- 874. ii. ELISABETH HOWE, b. Nov. 7, 1923.
- 875. iii. JOHN WORCESTER HOWE, b. Sept. 11, 1925.
- 876. iv. BARBARA HOWE, b. May 2, 1927.
- 877. v. MARY JEANNETTE HOWE, b. Sept. 20, 1928.

837. BARBARA WORCESTER<sup>s</sup> (*Joseph R. Worcester<sup>7</sup>, Mary C. Ruggles<sup>6</sup>, Lydia Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Joseph R. and Alice J. (Wheeler) Worcester, was born in Waltham, Mass., April 25, 1893. She married in Waltham April 4, 1916, Dr. Charles Terrell Porter, born in Hackneyville, Ala., Feb. 18, 1889, son of Charles Bartow and Susan Virginia (Bradley) Porter of Sylacauga, Ala.; Alabama Polytechnic, B.S., 1908; Virginia, M.D., 1912. Residence, Waltham, Mass.

Daughter:

- 878. i. TERRELL PORTER, b. in Waltham, Nov. 30, 1922.

838. THOMAS WORCESTER<sup>8</sup> (*Joseph R. Worcester<sup>7</sup>, Mary C. Ruggles<sup>6</sup>, Lydia Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Joseph R. and Alice J. (Wheeler) Worcester, was born in Waltham, Mass., June 8, 1896. Harvard, 1919. He married in Hartford, Conn., April 18, 1928, Elisabeth Bates Lissler, born in Boston Aug. 21, 1899, daughter of Charles and Rebecca Colburn Billings (Thacher) Lissler of Cambridge, Mass.; Smith, A.B., 1920, A.M., 1921. In World War I he was a Second Lieutenant of Infantry in the United States Army, serving with a machine gun company. Residence, Waltham, Mass.

Children, born in Waltham:

- 879. i. REBECCA BILLINGS WORCESTER, b. March 5, 1932.
- 880. ii. MARCIA BATES WORCESTER, b. July 1, 1935.
- 881. iii. JOSEPH RUGGLES WORCESTER, b. July 11, 1944.

840. ANNA RODMAN KIDDER<sup>8</sup> (*Anna Worcester<sup>7</sup>, Mary C. Ruggles<sup>6</sup>, Lydia Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Richard H. and Anna (Worcester) Kidder, was born in Waltham, Mass., Sept. 15, 1890, and died in Berkeley, Calif., Sept. 28, 1940. University of California, B.S., 1912; M.A., 1913. She married in Berkeley July 15, 1914, Sturla Einarsson, born in Skagasjord, Iceland, Dec. 15, 1879, son of Johann and Elin (Benediktscottir) Einarsson of Duluth, Minn. University of Minnesota, A.B., 1905; University of California, Ph.D., 1913. Professor of Astronomy at University of California.

Children, born in Berkeley:

- 882. i. ALFRED WORCESTER EINARSSON, b. April 13, 1915. University of California, A.B., 1937; Ph.D., 1945.
- 883. ii. ELIZABETH EINARSSON, b. July 21, 1917.
- 884. iii. MARGARET EINARSSON, b. Feb. 25, 1920. University of California, 1942.
- 885. iv. JOHN RODMAN EINARSSON, b. Sept. 13, 1921. Attended University of California. Employed by the United States Navy Department during World War II. Drafted soon after V-J Day.

841. HUBERT KIDDER<sup>8</sup> (*Anna Worcester<sup>7</sup>, Mary C. Ruggles<sup>6</sup>, Lydia Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Richard H. and Anna (Worcester) Kidder, was born in Waltham, Mass., Sept. 5, 1892. He married in San Diego, Calif., July 30, 1919, Ruth Talcott Wilder, born in Derby, Vt., Aug. 19, 1898, daughter of Harry Hubbard and Grace Theresa (Robbins) Wilder of San Diego. In World War I he was for nearly four years Electrician's Mate and Ensign in the United States Naval Reserve, serving aboard battleship *Oregon* and a submarine chaser. Residence, Costa Mesa, Calif.

Children:

- 886. i. HARRY WILDER KIDDER, b. in Berkeley, Calif., Oct. 22, 1920.
- 887. ii. GRACE ROBBINS KIDDER, b. in Berkeley, Calif., July 27, 1922.
- 888. iii. ANNA WORCESTER KIDDER, b. in Santa Rosa, Calif., March 16, 1924.

842. ARTHUR WORCESTER KIDDER<sup>8</sup> (*Anna Worcester<sup>7</sup>, Mary C. Ruggles<sup>6</sup>, Lydia Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Richard H. and Anna (Worcester) Kidder, was born in Waltham, Mass., Aug. 22, 1894. University of California, 1918. He married in Berkeley, Calif., May 24, 1920, Irma Delius, born in Alameda, Calif., Feb. 3, 1897, daughter of August Ferdinand Wilhelm and Irma Emma Caroline (Kleinschmidt) Delius, of Alta, Calif.; California, A.B. 1920. Residence, Denver, Colo.

Children, born in Berkeley:

889. i. ROBERT DELIUS KIDDER, b. June 6, 1921. In World War II he served in the A. A. F. as primary flying instructor, 1943 and 1944.
890. ii. ARTHUR WORCESTER KIDDER, JR., b. Sept. 27, 1922. In World War II he served as Captain, fighter pilot, in the A. A. F., Italian and Pacific theatres. He was awarded the Air Medal with nine clusters, Presidential Unit Citation, and Distinguished Flying Cross.
891. iii. MARIAN LOUISE KIDDER, b. Dec. 29, 1923.
892. iv. BARBARA ANNE KIDDER, b. March 2, 1927.

845. GEORGE BURNHAM BEAMAN, JR.<sup>9</sup> (*Mary Burnham<sup>8</sup>, Alice Worcester<sup>7</sup>, Mary C. Ruggles<sup>6</sup>, Lydia Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of George B. and Mary (Burnham) Beaman, was born in Waltham, Mass., Aug. 13, 1905. Harvard, B.S., 1927; M.D., 1933. He married in Cambridge, Mass., May 22, 1928, Elizabeth Worcester, born in Philadelphia May 22, 1903, daughter of William Loring and Ethel (Burnham) Worcester of Cambridge, Mass. In World War II he was commissioned Captain in July 1942 and later promoted to Major. He served as Chief of Psychiatric Service at various regional and convalescent hospitals in the Army Air Force, and was released from active duty in December, 1945. Residence, Noroton, Conn.

Children, born in Boston:

893. i. GEORGE BURNHAM BEAMAN, III, b. April 9, 1929.
894. ii. CONSTANCE BEAMAN, b. April 8, 1931.
895. iii. BARBARA ELIZABETH BEAMAN, b. May 18, 1941.

846. RICHARD BANCROFT BEAMAN<sup>9</sup> (*Mary Burnham<sup>8</sup>, Alice Worcester<sup>7</sup>, Mary C. Ruggles<sup>6</sup>, Lydia Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of George B. and Mary (Burnham) Beaman, was born in Waltham, Mass., June 28, 1909. Harvard, 1932; Union Theological Seminary, Columbia, B.D., 1935. Assistant professor of art, University of Redlands, Calif. He married March 12, 1944, Jeanine Hays, daughter of Joseph Allen and Nora (Shad) Hays, of Berkeley, Calif. Photographic Officer, United States Naval Reserve, four years, in World War II. Residence, Redlands, Calif.

Children:

896. i. PETER HAYS BEAMAN, b. in Oakland, Calif., July 23, 1945.
- 896a. ii. JOANNA BEAMAN, b. in Redlands, Calif., Feb. 3, 1947.

847. KATE LORD SPELMAN<sup>9</sup> (*Elinor Burnham<sup>8</sup>, Alice Worcester<sup>7</sup>, Mary C. Ruggles<sup>6</sup>, Lydia Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of William C. and Elinor (Burnham) Spelman, was born in Waltham, Mass., Sept. 22, 1913. Barnard College, 1935. She married in Brooklyn, N. Y., Oct. 10, 1936, Walter Howard Knapp, born in Cleveland, Ohio, Nov. 2, 1907, son of Alfred James and Amelia (Gush) Knapp of South Euclid, Ohio; Cleveland School of Art, 1934. Residence, Northport, N. Y.

Son:

897. i. RICHARD SPELMAN KNAPP, b. at Prince Bay, N. Y., Sept. 16, 1942.

848. JOSEPH WORCESTER SPELMAN<sup>9</sup> (*Elinor Burnham<sup>8</sup>, Alice Worcester<sup>7</sup>, Mary C. Ruggles<sup>6</sup>, Lydia Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), was born in Waltham, Mass., April 4, 1918. Yale, B.S., 1941; M.D., 1944. He married June 5, 1943, Nancy Burch Trumbull, born March 13, 1917, daughter of John Franklin and Marguarita (Perrse) Trumbull of New Haven, Conn. In World War II he served in the Medical Corps, U.S.A., with rank of First Lieutenant. Residence, Kent, Conn.

Sons:

898. i. WILLIAM CHAPMAN SPELMAN, III, b. in New Haven, Sept. 22, 1944.

898a. ii. JOHN TRUMBULL SPELMAN, b. in Colorado Springs, Colo., Oct. 22, 1946.

849. ALFRED WORCESTER BURNHAM, JR.<sup>9</sup> (*Alfred W. Burnham<sup>8</sup>, Alice Worcester<sup>7</sup>, Mary C. Ruggles<sup>6</sup>, Lydia Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Alfred W. and Maryemily (Johnson) Burnham, was born in Hudson, N. Y., April 2, 1909, and died in Geneva, N. Y., March 3, 1934. He married in Geneva Nov. 11, 1933, Virginia Horton. No children.

850. MARY ADELAIDE BURNHAM<sup>9</sup> (*Alfred W. Burnham<sup>8</sup>, Alice Worcester<sup>7</sup>, Mary C. Ruggles<sup>6</sup>, Lydia Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Alfred W. and Maryemily (Johnson) Burnham, was born in Southbridge, Mass., Sept. 27, 1913. She married in Geneva, N. Y., June 6, 1936, Elbert Lewis Comstock, born in Geneva July 6, 1910, son of Elbert Everett and Emily Augusta (Jardine) Comstock of Geneva. Residence, Geneva, N. Y.

Son:

899. i. LAWRENCE ELBERT COMSTOCK, b. in Geneva, N. Y., Jan. 5, 1943.

852. BARBARA BURNHAM<sup>9</sup> (*Philip W. Burnham<sup>8</sup>, Alice Worcester<sup>7</sup>, Mary C. Ruggles<sup>6</sup>, Lydia Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Philip W. and Mary D. (Phillips) Burnham, was born in New York City July 8, 1916. Lasell Junior College, 1937. She married

in Summit, N. J., Feb. 24, 1940, John Muirhead Rice, born at St. Davids, Penna., Feb. 7, 1915, son of Homer Cake and Jessie Louise (Muirhead) Rice of Wayne, Penna.; Swarthmore, A.B., 1937. Residence, Wilmington, Del.

Children:

900. i. PHILIP BURNHAM RICE, b. in Richmond, Va., April 14, 1941.  
 900a. ii. JOAN MUIRHEAD RICE, b. in Wilmington, Del., May 17, 1946.

853. NANCY GARDNER BURNHAM<sup>9</sup> (*Philip W. Burnham<sup>8</sup>, Alice Worcester<sup>7</sup>, Mary C. Ruggles<sup>6</sup>, Lydia Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Philip W. and Mary D. (Phillips) Burnham, was born in Summit, N. J., Oct. 17, 1920. She married in Wilmington, Del., Feb. 22, 1947, Willard Everett Henderer, born in Wilmington Oct. 16, 1919, son of Howard E. and Adah (Smith) Henderer of Wilmington; Cornell, 1942. Residence, Kennett Square, Penna.

855. SYLVIA SMITH<sup>9</sup> (*Elizabeth M. Wellington<sup>8</sup>, Mary Worcester<sup>7</sup>, Mary C. Ruggles<sup>6</sup>, Lydia Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Converse and Elizabeth M. (Wellington) Smith, was born in West Haven, Conn., July 29, 1910. Simmons College, 1932. She married in West Haven April 18, 1936, John Henry Stockton, born in Welsh, La., July 23, 1910, son of Robert James and Elizabeth Annie (Bates) Stockton; Northeastern University, B.E.E., 1932. Residence, North Adams, Mass.

Children, born in North Adams, Mass.:

901. i. BARBARA LORRAINE STOCKTON, b. Dec. 6, 1938.  
 902. ii. ROBERT BRUCE STOCKTON, b. April 7, 1941.  
 903. iii. THOMAS JOHN STOCKTON, b. Aug. 29, 1942.  
 904. iv. BEVERLY JOAN STOCKTON, b. Aug. 29, 1942.

860. MARYLIZABETH WELLINGTON<sup>9</sup> (*Richard Wellington<sup>8</sup>, Mary Worcester<sup>7</sup>, Mary C. Ruggles<sup>6</sup>, Lydia Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Richard and Minerva (Collins) Wellington, was born in Waltham, Mass., Sept. 9, 1914. Cornell, A.B., 1936, A.M., 1937. Profession, chemist. Served as technician for two years at Mayo's Hospital, Rochester, Minn. Has completed work for doctorate at University of Pennsylvania and was a teacher for several years at Temple University, Philadelphia. She married in Geneva, N. Y., Sept. 12, 1942, Dana Irving Crandall, Ph.D., born in New York City Sept. 4, 1915, son of Irving Bardshar and St. Francis (Woode) Crandall of New York City. He is a professor in the University of Pennsylvania. Residence, Philadelphia.

Son:

905. i. IRVING BARDSHAR CRANDALL, b. in Philadelphia, Jan. 2, 1946.

862. RUTH ELEANOR WELLINGTON<sup>9</sup> (*Joseph W. Wellington<sup>8</sup>, Mary Worcester<sup>7</sup>, Mary C. Ruggles<sup>6</sup>, Lydia Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Joseph W. and Ina P. (Rand) Wellington, was born in Geneva, N. Y., June 5, 1915. University of Maryland, 1936. She married at Takoma Park, Md., Sept. 18, 1938, Joseph Marshall Mathias, born in Frankfort, Ky., Jan. 23, 1914, son of Harry Luke and Catherine (Marshall) Mathias of Washington, D. C.; University of Maryland, 1935. In World War II he was for three years a First Lieutenant in the United States Naval Reserve. Residence, Washington, D. C.

Children:

906. i. MARK WELLINGTON MATHIAS, b. Feb. 25, 1943.  
 907. ii. MARCIA ANN MATHIAS, b. Aug. 16, 1944.

863. ESTHER RAND WELLINGTON<sup>9</sup> (*Joseph W. Wellington<sup>8</sup>, Mary Worcester<sup>7</sup>, Mary C. Ruggles<sup>6</sup>, Lydia Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Joseph W. and Ina P. (Rand) Wellington, was born in Geneva, N. Y., Nov. 1, 1916. University of Maryland, 1938. She married in Taunton, England, Aug. 12, 1944, Lawrence George Monthey, born in Chester, Mont., March 29, 1917, son of Louis and Anna (Frenchick) Monthey of Weyerhauser, Wis. In World War II she served as head dietitian in a hospital in England for three years, holding the rank of First Lieutenant, Army Nursing Corps. He was a Captain in the United States Army. Residence, Madison, Wis.

864. LOIS MILLS WELLINGTON<sup>9</sup> (*Joseph W. Wellington<sup>8</sup>, Mary Worcester<sup>7</sup>, Mary C. Ruggles<sup>6</sup>, Lydia Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Joseph W. and Ina P. (Rand) Wellington, was born in Washington, D. C., Sept. 27, 1924. She married at Takoma Park, Md., Feb. 16, 1945, John Edward McClain, born in Oka, W. Va., Sept. 22, 1917, son of William Preston and Maude (Haverty) McClain of Belington, W. Va. In World War II he was a warrant pharmacist in the Navy Medical Corps; served in the Pacific area for three years. Residence, Hyde Park, Norfolk, Va.

Daughter:

908. i. BARBARA JEAN MCCLAIN,, b. in Norfolk, Va., March 24, 1946.

865. ARTHUR WORCESTER GLASS<sup>9</sup> (*Miriam Wellington<sup>8</sup>, Mary Worcester<sup>7</sup>, Mary C. Ruggles<sup>6</sup>, Lydia Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Alonzo H. and Miriam (Wellington) Glass, was born in Waltham, Mass., Sept. 23, 1914. Northeastern University, B.S., 1937. He married Nov. 15, 1941, Barbara Waitt, born May 5, 1916. Residence, Riverside, Ill.

Son:

909. i. RONALD WORCESTER GLASS, b. in Riverside, Ill., Sept. 10, 1944.

866. EDWARD HADLEY GLASS<sup>9</sup> (*Miriam Wellington<sup>8</sup>, Mary Worcester<sup>7</sup>, Mary C. Ruggles<sup>6</sup>, Lydia Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Alonzo H. and Miriam (Wellington) Glass, was born in Waltham, Mass., Feb. 19, 1917. Massachusetts State College, B.S., 1938; Virginia Polytechnic Institute, M.S., 1940; Ohio State University, Ph.D., 1943. He married March 28, 1942, Nell Wayles Webb, born June 16, 1913, daughter of Louis Presley and Sallie Maria (Robertson) Webb of Boydton, Va. Residence, Stamford, Conn.

Children:

910. i. ANNE WELLINGTON GLASS, b. at Blacksburg, Va., Nov. 13, 1943.  
911. ii. EDWARD HADLEY GLASS, JR., b. at Stamford, Conn., Sept. 17, 1945.

873. WILLIAM HASTINGS HOWE<sup>9</sup> (*Alice M. Worcester<sup>8</sup>, Joseph R. Worcester<sup>7</sup>, Mary C. Ruggles<sup>6</sup>, Lydia Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Clarence D. and Alice M. (Worcester) Howe, was born in Port Arthur, Ont., Aug. 26, 1922. He married Aug. 20, 1944, Susan Anne Kenny, daughter of Robert M. and Jessie (MacLaren) Kenny of Buckingham, Quebec. Lieutenant, Royal Canadian Navy in World War II; began active service in 1940. Residence, Buckingham, Quebec.

Daughter:

912. i. SUSAN ALICE HOWE, b. in Buckingham, Quebec, June 14, 1945.

874. ELISABETH HOWE<sup>9</sup> (*Alice M. Worcester<sup>8</sup>, Joseph R. Worcester<sup>7</sup>, Mary C. Ruggles<sup>6</sup>, Lydia Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Clarence D. and Alice M. (Worcester) Howe, was born in Port Arthur, Ont., Nov. 7, 1923. She married in Ottawa June 8, 1946, Robert William Stedman, born in Ottawa Sept. 24, 1921, son of Ernest Walter and Ethel (Studd) Stedman of Ottawa.

876. BARBARA HOWE<sup>9</sup> (*Alice M. Worcester<sup>8</sup>, Joseph R. Worcester<sup>7</sup>, Mary C. Ruggles<sup>6</sup>, Lydia Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Clarence D. and Alice M. (Worcester) Howe, was born in Port Arthur, Ont., May 2, 1927. She married in Ottawa Dec. 23, 1946, John Marshall Stewart, born March 28, 1924, son of Gordon Wolseley and Mary Estelle (Gallon) Stewart of Francis, Saskatchewan, Canada. Residence, Victoria, B. C.

878. TERRELL PORTER<sup>9</sup> (*Barbara Worcester<sup>8</sup>, Joseph R. Worcester<sup>7</sup>, Mary C. Ruggles<sup>6</sup>, Lydia Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Dr. Charles T. and Barbara (Worcester) Porter, was born in Waltham, Mass., Nov. 30, 1922. Radcliffe, 1944. She married March 11, 1944, Henry Ernest Cooper, III, born Aug. 19, 1922, son of

Wallace McKay and Isabelle Caroline (Baker) Cooper of Hemet, Calif. In World War II he was a Lieutenant (j.g.), United States Naval Reserve. Residence, Waltham, Mass.

Son:

913. i. HENRY ERNEST COOPER, IV, b. May 18, 1945.

883. ELIZABETH EINARSSON<sup>9</sup> (*Anna R. Kidder<sup>8</sup>, Anna Worcester<sup>7</sup>, Mary C. Ruggles<sup>6</sup>, Lydia Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Sturla and Anna R. (Kidder) Einarsson, was born in Berkeley, Calif., July 21, 1917. Attended University of California. She married in Roswell, N. M., May 29, 1944, Maurice Eyerly Cook, born in Stockton, Calif., Dec. 3, 1921, son of Maurice Eyerly and Florence (Stark) Cook of Oakland, Calif. In World War II he was a Lieutenant and pilot in the Army Air Corps for two years. Residence, Berkeley, Calif.

891. MARIAN LOUISE KIDDER<sup>9</sup> (*Arthur W. Kidder<sup>8</sup>, Anna Worcester<sup>7</sup>, Mary C. Ruggles<sup>6</sup>, Lydia Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Arthur W. and Irma (Delius) Kidder, was born in Berkeley, Calif., Dec. 29, 1923. She married Sept. 27, 1945, Glenn Mackey Hawkins, born May 20, 1923, son of Clarence Albert and Rena (Rennick) Hawkins of Los Angeles, Calif. Residence, Berkeley, Calif.

Daughter:

913a. i. CHERYL LOUISE HAWKINS, b. Oct. 13, 1946.

[Great credit is due Mrs. George B. Beaman (No. 821) of Waltham, Mass., for kindly securing information regarding the descendants of Lydia Rodman Ruggles.]

## Descendants of Samuel Rodman, Junior

407. SAMUEL RODMAN<sup>5</sup> (*Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Samuel and Elizabeth (Rotch) Rodman, was born in Nantucket March 24, 1792, and died in New Bedford Aug. 1, 1876. He married Nov. 2, 1819, Hannah Haydock Prior, born in New York Sept. 11, 1794, died in New Bedford Oct. 5, 1876, daughter of Edmund and Mary (Haydock) Prior of Cow Neck, Long Island, N. Y.

Mr. Rodman was a leading merchant of New Bedford. As a birthright member of the Society of Friends he was active in the work of the Meetings. He was an ardent worker in the anti-slavery cause and in the temperance movement. All local charitable and educational movements found in him a warm supporter and friend. He was largely instrumental in the establishment of the Free Public Library, and for sixty-three years was a trustee of the Friends Academy. He was a promoter of the New Bedford Port Society in 1832, and was its first president. For thirty-three years he was a director of the Bedford Commercial Bank, and was an incorporator and original trustee of the New Bedford Institution for Savings.

In 1812 he began a series of valuable meteorological observations and records, carried on by him daily until his death in 1876, and continued by his son, Thomas R. Rodman, until the latter's death in 1905. These records have been of practical use in New Bedford, establishing the peculiar adaptability of local atmospheric conditions to the processes of cotton manufacturing, giving this climate an advantage over other centers. These records were eventually deposited in the meteorological observatory at Blue Hill.

Mr. Rodman was the promoter of the first cotton goods mill in New Bedford, established in a plant owned by him at the foot of Hillman Street. On Feb. 3, 1846, the New Bedford Steam Mill Company was incorporated with Mr. Rodman as president and William R. Rotch as one of the directors. There were 7,500 spindles. In November, 1846, manufacturing began, and continued for about five years. Owing to various adverse conditions it was decided to discontinue the enterprise, the machinery being moved to a similar mill operated by the Shaker colony at Shirley, Mass., and the two corporations were consolidated.

In 1828 Mr. Rodman erected a fine mansion at the corner of County and Spring Streets, occupied by him and members of his family for more than 100 years. The last occupant, a granddaughter, Miss Julia W. Rodman, died in 1937. During World War II the mansion was used as the headquarters of the U. S. O., and has since become the headquarters of most of the charitable institutions of New Bedford.

Because of the attitude the "Old Lights" of the Society of Friends maintained against members of the Rodman family in the Quaker schism of the 1820's, Mrs. Rodman and some of her children became affiliated with the Episcopal denomination. As the gift of the daughter, Miss Susan Emlen Rodman, a portion of the grounds of the Rodman homestead was set apart in 1880 as the site of Grace Church.

From 1821 to 1859 Mr. Rodman kept a diary which was published in 1927. Its descriptions of the life, manners and people of an old era contribute valuable material to New Bedford's history.

Children, born in New Bedford:

- 914. i. MARY RODMAN, b. Dec. 10, 1820; d. Aug. 13, 1821.
- 915. ii. MARY RODMAN, b. Jan. 18, 1824; d. May 2, 1847.
- 916. iii. EDMUND RODMAN, b. Jan. 18, 1824; d. May 7, 1902. Unmarried.
- 917. iv. THOMAS ROTCH RODMAN, b. Sept. 27, 1825; d. Dec. 18, 1905.
- 918. v. FRANCIS RODMAN, b. July 27, 1827; d. Aug. 8, 1914.
- 919. vi. SUSAN EMLEN RODMAN, b. Aug. 19, 1829; d. March 17, 1880. Unmarried.
- 920. vii. CHARLES RODMAN, b. Aug. 5, 1831; d. Nov. 18, 1834.
- 921. viii. ELLEN RODMAN, b. Oct. 16, 1833; d. Jan. 27, 1924.

917. THOMAS ROTCH RODMAN<sup>6</sup> (*Samuel Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Samuel and Hannah H. (Prior) Rodman, was born in New Bedford Sept. 27, 1825, and died there Dec. 18, 1905. Harvard, 1846. Captain in Civil War, 1862-1865. He married in New Bedford Oct. 4, 1853, Anne Miles, born 1830, died in New Bedford April 3, 1892, daughter of John Miles of Philadelphia, counsellor-at-law. They were divorced in 1865. She married (2) George Swayne Buckley, whom she survived.

Children, born in New Bedford:

- 922. i. JULIA WAGER RODMAN, b. Jan. 23, 1855; d. Dec. 14, 1937. Unmarried.
- 923. ii. EFFIE [JOSEPHINE] RODMAN, b. April 4, 1858; d. Dec. 31, 1941.
- 924. iii. SAMUEL RODMAN, b. Jan. 26, 1860; d. Jan. 16, 1924.

918. FRANCIS RODMAN<sup>6</sup> (*Samuel Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Samuel and Hannah H. (Prior) Rodman, was born in New Bedford July 27, 1827, and died in Concord, Mass., Aug. 8, 1914. He married in New Bedford Sept. 15, 1853, Elizabeth Bowne Hussey, born in New York City Jan. 21, 1831, died in Concord Oct. 16, 1906, daughter of George and Hetty (Howland) Hussey of New Bedford. She was a sister of George Hussey (See No. 967).

Children:

- 925. i. MARY RODMAN, b. July 11, 1854; d. Nov. 14, 1919. Unmarried.
- 926. ii. FANNY RODMAN, b. Sept. 23, 1858; d. Jan. 19, 1918.
- 927. iii. ELIZABETH RODMAN, b. April 1, 1869; d. Jan. 12, 1879.

921. ELLEN RODMAN<sup>6</sup> (*Samuel Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Samuel and Hannah H. (Prior) Rodman,

was born in New Bedford Oct. 16, 1833, and died there Jan. 27, 1924, in her ninety-first year. She married June 14, 1859, Horatio Hathaway, born in New Bedford May 19, 1831, died there March 25, 1898, son of Nathaniel and Anna (Shoemaker) Hathaway of New Bedford. Harvard, 1850.

Children, born in New Bedford:

928. i. SAMUEL RODMAN HATHAWAY, b. April 27, 1860; d. October, 1863.
929. ii. ELLEN RODMAN HATHAWAY, b. July 3, 1862; d. Nov. 10, 1936. Unmarried.
930. iii. ELIZABETH HATHAWAY, b. Aug. 22, 1864; d. May 15, 1913.
931. iv. THOMAS SCHUYLER HATHAWAY, b. Dec. 5, 1866; d. May 12, 1924. Unmarried. Harvard, 1889.
932. v. HORATIO HATHAWAY, b. Sept. 12, 1870; d. April 2, 1934.

923. EFFIE RODMAN<sup>7</sup> (*Thomas R. Rodman<sup>6</sup>, Samuel Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Thomas R. and Anne (Miles) Rodman, was born in New Bedford April 4, 1858, and died in Wellesley, Mass., Dec. 31, 1941. She married Dec. 3, 1884, George Washington Goethals, Lieutenant, subsequently Major General, U. S. A., born in Brooklyn June 29, 1858, died in New York City Jan. 21, 1928, son of John Louis and Marie (LeBarron) Goethals.

Major General Goethals gained fame as the builder of the Panama Canal after two others had failed in the task. He was appointed chief engineer by President Theodore Roosevelt in 1907; and in six years had completed the work, having overcome all the gigantic problems to be met. He continued as Governor of the Canal Zone until the latter part of 1916. During 1915 he was made a Major General, and received the thanks of Congress for his great achievement.

General Goethals was graduated from West Point in 1880, and his subsequent service in the Engineer Corps, U. S. A., took him through the grades from Second Lieutenant to Colonel before attaining the Generalship.

Following his services in the Canal Zone he was engaged in various important duties for the Government, voluntarily going on the retired list in March, 1919. For the remainder of his life he engaged in the practice of his profession as an engineer, with offices in New York. He maintained a summer home at Vineyard Haven, Mass. Many honors were accorded General Goethals by the American and foreign Governments.

Children:

933. i. GEORGE RODMAN GOETHALS, b. at West Point, N. Y., March 4, 1886.
934. ii. THOMAS RODMAN GOETIALS, b. in New Bedford Dec. 14, 1890.

924. SAMUEL RODMAN<sup>7</sup> (*Thomas R. Rodman<sup>6</sup>, Samuel Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Thomas R. and Anne (Miles) Rodman, was born in New Bedford Jan. 26, 1860, and died in Tucson, Ariz., Jan. 16, 1924. He was graduated from West Point in 1882 and became an officer in the United States Army. Eventually resigning his

commission he entered business. He married June 22, 1882, Martha Evans Redfield. No children.

926. FANNY RODMAN<sup>7</sup> (*Francis Rodman<sup>6</sup>, Samuel Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Francis and Elizabeth B. (Hussey) Rodman, was born in New Bedford Sept. 23, 1858, and died in Concord, Mass., Jan. 19, 1918. She married in New Bedford, Mass., April 10, 1883, Dr. George Eugene Titcomb, long a practicing physician of Concord, born July 28, 1854, died Dec. 9, 1922, son of George Alfred and Mary Lemist (Lancaster) Titcomb of Exeter, N. H.

Children:

- 935. i. FRANCIS RODMAN TITCOMB, b. Sept. 25, 1886.
- 936. ii. GEORGE LANCASTER TITCOMB, b. Sept. 25, 1886; d. April 4, 1887.
- 937. iii. MARGARET TITCOMB, b. July 23, 1889.
- 938. iv. JOHN TITCOMB, b. May 20, 1892.

930. ELIZABETH HATHAWAY<sup>7</sup> (*Ellen Rodman<sup>6</sup>, Samuel Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Horatio and Ellen (Rodman) Hathaway, was born in New Bedford Aug. 22, 1864, and died there May 15, 1913. She married in New Bedford Dec. 7, 1899, Charles Osmyn Brewster of New York, born in Philadelphia Oct. 4, 1856, died in South Dartmouth, Mass., June 26, 1912, son of Charles Osmyn and Mary Draper (Lewis) Brewster.

Children, born in New York City:

- 939. i. HORATIO HATHAWAY BREWSTER, b. Dec. 1, 1900.
- 940. ii. ELIZABETH BREWSTER, b. Nov. 29, 1903.

932. HORATIO HATHAWAY<sup>7</sup> (*Ellen Rodman<sup>6</sup>, Samuel Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Horatio and Ellen (Rodman) Hathaway, was born in New Bedford Sept. 12, 1870 and died in Boston April 2, 1934. Harvard, 1893. He married Jan. 15, 1898, Mabel Lovering of Taunton, Mass., born May 15, 1870, daughter of Henry Morton and Isabel Francelia (Morse) Lovering.

Son:

- 941. i. LOVERING HATHAWAY, b. Nov. 8, 1898.

933. GEORGE RODMAN GOETHALS<sup>8</sup> (*Effie Rodman<sup>7</sup>, Thomas R. Rodman<sup>6</sup>, Samuel Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Major General George W. and Effie (Rodman) Goethals, was born at West Point, N. Y., March 4, 1886. Was graduated from West Point Military Academy, 1908. He married at Watertown, N. Y., Oct. 11, 1910, Priscilla Jewett Howes, born in Lockport, N. Y., Nov. 7, 1885, daughter of Willis Holmes and Ella (Jewett) Howes of Watertown, N. Y.

In World War I he was Colonel in the Corps of Engineers, U. S. A., serving as engineer officer, Army Artillery, First Army, and commanding

316th Engineers, 91st Division. He received the Purple Heart award. In World War II he was recalled from retired to active duty Oct. 14, 1940, and returned to the retired list March 18, 1946. For two years he was District Engineer, Buffalo, N. Y., and for the balance of the period was Director of Civil Works, office of Chief of Engineers, Washington, D. C. In 1946 he received the Distinguished Service Medal. Residence, Vineyard Haven, Mass.

Son:

942. i. GEORGE WASHINGTON GOETHALS, II, b. in Boston Aug. 19, 1920.

934. THOMAS RODMAN GOETHALS<sup>8</sup> (*Effie Rodman*<sup>7</sup>, *Thomas R. Rodman*<sup>6</sup>, *Samuel Rodman*<sup>5</sup>, *Elizabeth*<sup>4</sup> *Rotch*, *William*<sup>3</sup>, *Joseph*<sup>2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>), son of Major General George W. and Effie (Rodman) Goethals, was born in New Bedford Dec. 14, 1890. Harvard, A.B., 1912; M.D., 1916. Practicing physician in Brookline, Mass. He married in Washington, D. C., June 3, 1919, Mary Addison Webb, born in Washington Sept. 4, 1892, daughter of Henry Randall and Maria (Ingle) Webb of Washington.

In World War I he was First Lieutenant in the United States Army Medical Corps, May 7, 1917, to Jan. 18, 1919. From June 25, 1925, to June 30, 1941, he was successively Major, Lieutenant Colonel and Colonel in the United States Medical Reserve Corps. In World War II he was a Colonel in the Medical Corps, July 1, 1941, to March 28, 1946. He served as Assistant Surgeon, First Army, July 1, 1941, to March 5, 1942; as commanding officer, Sixth General Hospital, at Camp Blanding, Fla., also in the North African and Mediterranean theaters of operations, from May 15, 1942, to March 19, 1945. From April 19, 1945, to Dec. 15, 1945, he was commanding officer at Lovell General Hospital, Fort Devens, Mass. In January, 1946, he was awarded the Legion of Merit and Army Commendation Ribbon for his services during the war.

Children, born in Boston:

943. i. THOMAS RODMAN GOETHALS, JR., b. May 24, 1920. Of the Class of 1943, Harvard, he entered service for World War II in 1943 through the R. O. T. C., and was commissioned Second Lieutenant, F. A., in the 99th Infantry Division. Volunteering for immediate overseas service in December he was sent abroad in January, 1944, serving with the United States forces in the European theatre. He was awarded the Bronze Star. He retired from the service in December, 1945, with the rank of Captain, F. A.
944. ii. HENRY WEBB GOETHALS, b. March 16, 1922. Of the Class of 1944, Harvard, he entered service for World War II in 1943 through the Enlisted Reserve Corps. Subsequently he was commissioned Second Lieutenant and in 1945 First Lieutenant, Transportation Corps. He returned to Harvard after the war.
945. iii. PETER RANDALL GOETHALS, b. May 16, 1926. He served in World War II, entering the United States Navy through selective service in November, 1944. After a training period he was sent to the Philippines in July, 1945, where he became a fireman, first class.

935. FRANCIS RODMAN TITCOMB<sup>8</sup> (*Fanny Rodman<sup>7</sup>, Francis Rodman<sup>6</sup>, Samuel Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Dr. George E. and Fanny (Rodman) Titcomb, was born in Concord, Mass., Sept. 25, 1886. Harvard, 1911. He married in Tacoma, Wash., July 11, 1917, Elizabeth Lucy Weyerhaeuser, born at Rock Island, Ill., Sept. 8, 1892, daughter of John and Nellie (Anderson) Weyerhaeuser of Tacoma. Officer in Aviation Section, U.S.A., in World War I. Residence, Tacoma, Wash.

Children:

946. i. EDWARD RODMAN TITCOMB, b. in Tacoma March 4, 1919.

947. ii. JOHN WEYERHAEUSER TITCOMB, b. at Snoqualmie Falls, Wash., July 28, 1921. In World War II he was instructor in the Air Service at Chico, Calif., for three and a half years.

937. MARGARET TITCOMB<sup>8</sup> (*Fanny Rodman<sup>7</sup>, Francis Rodman<sup>6</sup>, Samuel Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Dr. George E. and Fanny (Rodman) Titcomb, was born in Concord, Mass., July 23, 1889. She married in Concord Aug. 15, 1921, John Alexander Urquhart, born in Hudson, Mass., Feb. 7, 1889, son of Alexander and Barbara (Chapman) Urquhart of Concord. Residence, Manchester, N. H.

Daughter:

948. i. MARY RODMAN URQUHART, b. Nov. 16, 1922.

938. JOHN TITCOMB<sup>8</sup> (*Fanny Rodman<sup>7</sup>, Francis Rodman<sup>6</sup>, Samuel Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Dr. George E. and Fanny (Rodman) Titcomb, was born in Concord, Mass., May 20, 1892. He married Aug. 9, 1917, Frances Mary Smith, of Rochester, N. Y. Residence, Geneva, N. Y.

Children, born in Geneva, N. Y.:

949. i. JOHN TITCOMB, JR., b. June 3, 1924.

950. ii. NORMAN ARTHUR TITCOMB, b. Sept. 19, 1929.

939. HORATIO HATHAWAY BREWSTER<sup>8</sup> (*Elizabeth Hathaway<sup>7</sup>, Ellen Rodman<sup>6</sup>, Samuel Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Charles O. and Elizabeth (Hathaway) Brewster, was born in New York City Dec. 1, 1900. University of Virginia, 1922-1925. He married in Marlboro, Mass., Dec. 3, 1937, Annette Hollis, born Jan. 7, 1911, daughter of James Edward and Marion (Hall) Hollis of Boston. Residence, South Dartmouth, Mass.

Children:

951. i. MARION BREWSTER, b. in Boston July 16, 1940.

952. ii. HORATIO HATHAWAY BREWSTER, JR., b. in New Bedford April 4, 1943.

953. iii. JAMES HOLLIS BREWSTER, b. in New Bedford April 27, 1944.

940. ELIZABETH BREWSTER<sup>8</sup> (*Elizabeth Hathaway<sup>7</sup>, Ellen Rodman<sup>6</sup>, Samuel Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter

of Charles O. and Elizabeth (Hathaway) Brewster, was born in New York City Nov. 29, 1903. She married (1) Aug. 25, 1928, Rev. Nelson Davis Gifford, Jr., born in Westport, Mass., April 19, 1900, died in Boston Dec. 3, 1930, son of Nelson Davis and Mary Ila (Gifford) Gifford of Westport; (2) Feb. 11, 1935, Right Rev. Oliver Leland Loring, D.D., born in Newtonville, Mass., Jan. 5, 1904, son of Rev. Richard Tuttle and Mary Amory (Leland) Loring of Newtonville. Residence, Portland, Maine.

Rev. Nelson D. Gifford, Jr., Princeton, 1921, was a student in Alexandria Theological Seminary. He was a missionary in China, and curate at Grace Church, New Bedford.

Right Rev. Oliver L. Loring. Harvard, 1926. Episcopal Theological School, Harvard, 1930. He was successively curate at Grace Church, New Bedford; rector, Church of the Epiphany, Dorchester, Mass., and rector, Grace Church, New Bedford. He was elected and consecrated Bishop of the Episcopal Diocese of Maine in 1941.

Children, by second marriage:

- 954. i. ELIZABETH LORING, b. in Boston April 29, 1936.
- 955. ii. OLIVER LELAND LORING, Jr., b. in Fall River, Mass., Oct. 27, 1938.
- 956. iii. STEPHEN HATHAWAY LORING, b. in Boston July 9, 1946.

941. LOVERING HATHAWAY<sup>8</sup> (*Horatio Hathaway<sup>7</sup>, Ellen Rodman<sup>6</sup>, Samuel Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Horatio and Mabel (Lovering) Hathaway, was born in New Bedford Nov. 8, 1898. Harvard, 1924. He married in Bermuda April 11, 1931, Elizabeth Hooton Elfreth, born in Germantown, Philadelphia, July 21, 1911, daughter of William Henry and Emily (Allen) Elfreth of Pocono Manor, Penna. Residence, Dedham, Mass.

Children, born in Boston:

- 957. i. ELIZABETH ELFRETH HATHAWAY, b. Oct. 10, 1933; d. Dec. 7, 1937.
- 958. ii. HORATIO HATHAWAY, b. July 24, 1936; d. Nov. 3, 1936.
- 959. iii. LOVERING HATHAWAY, JR., b. Dec. 31, 1937.
- 960. iv. EMILY ALLEN HATHAWAY, b. Nov. 29, 1939.
- 961. v. THOMAS SCHUYLER HATHAWAY, b. April 6, 1944.
- 961a. vi. MARGARET HATHAWAY, b. May 11, 1946.

942. GEORGE WASHINGTON GOETHALS, II<sup>9</sup> (*George R. Goethals<sup>8</sup>, Effie Rodman<sup>7</sup>, Thomas R. Rodman<sup>6</sup>, Samuel Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Colonel George R. and Priscilla J. (Howes) Goethals, was born in Boston Aug. 19, 1920. He left Harvard at end of junior year for duty in World War II in the Fifth Air Force Service Command, and returned to Harvard after the war. He married at Riverdale, N. Y., Jan. 9, 1943, Helen Barbara Barry, born July 4, 1923, daughter of Rev. Gerald Van Osten and Ella Du Mont (deBirmingham) Barry of New York City, and a descendant of Count Henri Raoul deBirmingham of France. Residence, Roxbury, Mass.

## Children:

962. i. KAREN MARIER GOETHALS, b. in Los Angeles, Calif., Dec. 9, 1943.  
963. ii. GEORGE RODMAN GOETHALS, II, b. in New York City Dec. 23, 1944.

946. EDWARD RODMAN TITCOMB<sup>9</sup> (*Francis R. Titcomb*<sup>8</sup>, *Fanny Rodman*<sup>7</sup>, *Francis Rodman*<sup>6</sup>, *Samuel Rodman*<sup>5</sup>, *Elizabeth*<sup>4</sup> *Rotch*, *William*<sup>3</sup>, *Joseph*<sup>2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>), son of Francis R. and Elizabeth L. (Weyerhaeuser) Titcomb, was born in Tacoma, Wash., March 4, 1919. He married in Spokane, Wash., Sept. 11, 1946, Julie Elizabeth Crommelin, born Sept. 2, 1923, daughter of Henri and Elizabeth Matilda (Schimmel) Crommelin of Spokane. In World War II he saw three years' service, two years in the European theater with the 434th Troop Carrier Squadron, Air Corps. He received the Air Medal, with four citations, and six Battle Stars on Theater Ribbon. Residence, Roseburg, Ore.

948. MARY R. URQUHART<sup>9</sup> (*Margaret Titcomb*<sup>8</sup>, *Fanny Rodman*<sup>7</sup>, *Francis Rodman*<sup>6</sup>, *Samuel Rodman*<sup>5</sup>, *Elizabeth*<sup>4</sup> *Rotch*, *William*<sup>3</sup>, *Joseph*<sup>2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>), daughter of John A. and Margaret (Titcomb) Urquhart, was born Nov. 16, 1922. She married Aug. 7, 1944, Roger Arthur Thomas, born Aug. 5, 1922, son of Herbert W. and Teresa H. (Fitzpatrick) Thomas.

## Descendants of Sarah (Rodman) Morgan

### EXCEPT THE DESCENDANTS OF WILLIAM J. ROTCH

408. SARAH RODMAN<sup>5</sup> (*Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Samuel and Elizabeth (Rotch) Rodman, was born in Nantucket Oct. 31, 1793, and died in New Bedford Sept. 26, 1888, in her ninety-fifth year. She married in New Bedford June 3, 1819, Charles Waln Morgan, born in Philadelphia Sept. 14, 1796, died in New Bedford April 7, 1861, son of Thomas and Anne (Waln) Morgan of Philadelphia.

Mr. Morgan came to New Bedford as a young man, and soon was connected with the Rotch firm of whaling merchants. Subsequently he formed the firm of Pope and Morgan, which engaged in whaling and operated a candle works. One of his ships was the Charles W. Morgan which became the last survivor of the whaling fleet of more than a century ago. Mr. Morgan also invested in other ventures, including the Duncannon Iron Works in Pennsylvania, a blast furnace in Bloomsburg in that state, and an iron foundry in Wareham, Mass.

He took a prominent place in the community, being president of the Bedford Commercial Bank; an incorporator and a trustee of the New Bedford Institution for Savings; one of the founders of the Friends Academy; an early trustee of the New Bedford Free Public Library; and a Presidential Elector in 1836. To the Library he bequeathed a trust fund, and also made a legacy to the City of New Bedford for the benefit of the poor.

Although Mr. Morgan and his wife were birthright Quakers they became Unitarians at the time of the schism in the Society of Friends in the 1820's. For many years he kept a daily journal, never published, which paints a vivid picture of life in New Bedford during the period covered. His attractive mansion on County Street, at the head of William Street, stood on a historic spot. There was the home of Joseph Russell, "the father of New Bedford." Today the site is occupied by the New Bedford High School.

(See under No. 20 for Morgan Family.)

Children, born in New Bedford:

- 964. i. EMILY MORGAN, b. Dec. 13, 1821; d. June 13, 1861; m. William J. Rotch. (See No. 20.)
- 965. ii. SAMUEL RODMAN MORGAN, b. Aug. 18, 1824; d. Nov. 21, 1891.
- 966. iii. ISABEL MORGAN, b. Oct. 21, 1829; d. May 28, 1847. Unmarried.
- 967. iv. ELIZABETH RODMAN MORGAN, b. Feb. 20, 1833; d. Sept. 14, 1923.
- 968. v. CLARA MORGAN, b. Dec. 1, 1836; d. Aug. 24, 1919; m. William J. Rotch. (See No. 20.)

- 965. SAMUEL RODMAN MORGAN<sup>6</sup> (*Sarah Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch,*

*William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Charles W. and Sarah (Rodman) Morgan, was born in New Bedford Aug. 18, 1824, and died in London Nov. 21, 1891. He married in Philadelphia June 17, 1854, Josephine Wharton Craig, who died in Philadelphia Feb. 7, 1897, daughter of William and Sarah Redwood (Wharton) Craig. No children.

967. ELIZABETH RODMAN MORGAN<sup>6</sup> (*Sarah Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Charles W. and Sarah (Rodman) Morgan, was born in New Bedford Feb. 20, 1833, and died there Sept. 14, 1923, in her ninety-first year. She married in New Bedford Nov. 5, 1855, George Hussey, born in New York Nov. 24, 1828, died in Lakeville, Mass., May 23, 1872, son of George and Hetty (Howland) Hussey of New Bedford. He was a brother of Mrs. Francis Rodman (Elizabeth B. Hussey). (See No. 918.)

Children, born in New Bedford:

- 969. i. CHARLES MORGAN HUSSEY, b. Nov. 7, 1856; d. Aug. 21, 1940.
- 970. ii. GEORGE HUSSEY, b. March 5, 1858; d. April 27, 1858.
- 971. iii. EDITH HUSSEY, b. May 19, 1859; d. July 29, 1860.
- 972. iv. EMILY MORGAN HUSSEY, b. Jan. 17, 1862; d. Oct. 27, 1937. Unmarried.
- 973. v. ALICE HUSSEY, b. Jan. 31, 1863; d. Dec. 28, 1936.
- 974. vi. ALFRED RODMAN HUSSEY, b. March 22, 1869; d. Aug. 10, 1947.

969. CHARLES MORGAN HUSSEY<sup>7</sup> (*Elizabeth R. Morgan<sup>6</sup>, Sarah Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of George and Elizabeth R. (Morgan) Hussey, was born in New Bedford, Nov. 7, 1856, and died there Aug. 21, 1940. He married in New Bedford June 3, 1885, Clara Almy Wing, born in New Bedford May 14, 1860, died there April 7, 1933, daughter of William Ricketson and Rebecca Wing (Howland) Wing.

After completing his education at the Friends Academy, New Bedford, he engaged in business, and was for a long period connected with the New Bedford Safe Deposit & Trust Company. Subsequently he became manager of the business of J. & W. R. Wing & Company, for the estate of William R. Wing.

Children, born in New Bedford:

- 975. i. REBECCA WING HUSSEY, b. Oct. 27, 1886.
- 976. ii. ELIZABETH MORGAN HUSSEY, b. Jan. 22, 1888.
- 977. iii. GEORGE HUSSEY, b. Sept. 1, 1891.
- 978. iv. CHARLES MORGAN HUSSEY, JR., b. April 5, 1898; d. Nov. 15, 1908. He and his grandfather, William R. Wing, were killed in a grade crossing accident in New Bedford.

973. ALICE HUSSEY<sup>7</sup> (*Elizabeth R. Morgan<sup>6</sup>, Sarah Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of George and Elizabeth R. (Morgan) Hussey, was born in New Bedford Jan. 31, 1863, and died in Jamaica Plain, Mass., Dec. 28, 1936. She married in New Bedford

Sept. 12, 1888, Henry Merrihew Plummer, born in New Bedford Oct. 10, 1865, died in Boston May 7, 1928, son of Leander Allen and Elizabeth (Merrihew) Plummer of New Bedford. Harvard, 1888.

Children:

- 979. i. CHARLES WARNER PLUMMER, b. in New Bedford May 25, 1890; d. Aug. 11, 1918. Harvard, 1914. In World War I he served in the Light Artillery and Aviation Corps. Killed in action in France. Unmarried.
- 980. ii. HENRY MERRIHEW PLUMMER, JR., b. in Dartmouth, Mass., June 25, 1892.
- 981. iii. MORGAN HUSSEY PLUMMER, b. in Dartmouth March 2, 1894.
- 982. iv. THOMAS RODMAN PLUMMER, b. in Sharon, Mass., Oct. 11, 1900; d. in New Orleans Dec. 11, 1923. Unmarried.

974. REV. ALFRED RODMAN HUSSEY<sup>7</sup> (*Elizabeth R. Morgan<sup>6</sup>, Sarah Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of George and Elizabeth R. (Morgan) Hussey, was born in New Bedford March 22, 1869, and died in Plymouth, Mass., Aug. 10, 1947. Harvard, A.B., 1892; Harvard Divinity School, 1895. He married Jan. 18, 1899, Mary Lincoln Warren, born in Dedham, Mass., Jan. 14, 1873, daughter of Hon. Winslow and Mary Lincoln (Tinkham) Warren of Dedham. Ordained to ministry, 1895. Minister of Unitarian churches in West Roxbury, Mass., 1895-1899; Taunton, Mass., 1899-1902; Baltimore, Md., 1902-1916; Lowell, Mass., 1916-1920; Plymouth, Mass., 1922-1939. Minister emeritus at Plymouth, 1939-1947.

Children:

- 983. i. MARGARET WARREN HUSSEY, b. in Taunton, Mass., Sept. 27, 1900.
- 984. ii. ALFRED RODMAN HUSSEY, JR., b. in Taunton, Feb. 1, 1902.
- 985. iii. MARY ELIZABETH HUSSEY, b. in Baltimore, Md., Nov. 15, 1905.
- 986. iv. EMILY MORGAN HUSSEY, b. in Baltimore Dec. 13, 1908.

975. REBECCA WING HUSSEY<sup>8</sup> (*Charles M. Hussey<sup>7</sup>, Elizabeth R. Morgan<sup>6</sup>, Sarah Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Charles M. and Clara A. (Wing) Hussey, was born in New Bedford Oct. 27, 1886. She married in New Bedford Dec. 1, 1910, Frederick Rudolf Brown, born in Boston, Oct. 15, 1882, son of Frederick W. and Alice E. (Williams) Brown of Boston. Residence, Wilmington, Del.

Children, first three born in New Bedford:

- 986a. i. REBECCA HUSSEY BROWN, b. Nov. 19, 1911; d. Feb. 28, 1912.
- 987. ii. ELIZABETH HUSSEY BROWN, b. July 17, 1913.
- 988. iii. PRISCILLA HUGHES BROWN, b. Nov. 12, 1916.
- 989. iv. FREDERICK RUDOLF BROWN, JR., b. in Orange, N. J., Jan. 4, 1924. In World War II he was a Sergeant in the United States Marine Corps, stationed in the Pacific area.

977. GEORGE HUSSEY<sup>8</sup> (*Charles M. Hussey<sup>7</sup>, Elizabeth R. Morgan<sup>6</sup>, Sarah Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of

Charles M. and Clara A. (Wing) Hussey, was born in New Bedford Sept. 1, 1891. Studied at Wesleyan University. He married in Fairhaven, Mass., April 25, 1917, Pauline Hawes, born in New Bedford Nov. 13, 1896, daughter of William Chase and Edna Chaney (Lawton) Hawes. In World War I he was a Captain in the Quartermaster's Corps, U.S.A. Residence, Bronxville, N. Y.

Children, born in New York City:

- 990. i. GEORGE HUSSEY, JR., b. March 11, 1920.
- 991. ii. CHARLES MORGAN HUSSEY, b. Dec. 13, 1925. In World War II he served in the United States Naval Reserve. Stationed at Yale and graduating in February, 1946 as electrical engineer and commissioned Ensign.

980. HENRY MERRIHEW PLUMMER, JR.<sup>8</sup> (*Alice Hussey<sup>7</sup>, Elizabeth R. Morgan<sup>6</sup>, Sarah Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Henry M. and Alice (Hussey) Plummer, was born in New Bedford, June 25, 1892. He married in Sharon, Mass., Sept. 14, 1920, Evelyn Owen Shaw, born in Auburn, Maine, April 11, 1893, daughter of Elmer Bartlett and Maude (Owen) Shaw of Sharon. Served in French and United States Armies in World War I, 1917-1919; First Lieutenant, Q.M.C. In World War II he was an ordnance machinist at Boston Navy Yard. Residence, Sharon, Mass.

Children:

- 992. i. CHARLES WARNER PLUMMER, b. in Paris, France, April 20, 1921. A Lieutenant (j. g.), United States Navy, in World War II, attached to a mine sweeper in the Pacific area.
- 993. ii. EVELYN SHAW PLUMMER, b. in Melrose, Mass., Jan. 4, 1923.
- 994. iii. MARION ELIZABETH PLUMMER, b. in Cambridge, Mass., Dec. 30, 1925.
- 995. iv. HENRY MERRIHEW PLUMMER, b. in Cambridge, Nov. 19, 1928.

981. MORGAN HUSSEY PLUMMER<sup>8</sup> (*Alice Hussey<sup>7</sup>, Elizabeth R. Morgan<sup>6</sup>, Sarah Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Henry M. and Alice (Hussey) Plummer, was born in Dartmouth, Mass., March 2, 1894. He married (1) in Mattapoisett, Mass., Oct. 4, 1919, Susan Lawrence Parsons, born July 28, 1895, daughter of Theophilus and Mary Mason (Oliver) Parsons of Boston; divorced; (2) in St. Paul, Minn., Oct. 23, 1934, Alice Gregory Lyon, born in Hanover, Va., Nov. 18, 1899, daughter of Heber Newton and Mary Cole (Gregory) Lyon of St. Paul. By a previous marriage she had a son, Peter Macdonald. Two years in Canadian Expeditionary Force in World War I. Residence, South Dartmouth, Mass.

Children, by first marriage:

- 996. i. SUSAN LAWRENCE PLUMMER, b. in Boston Aug. 17, 1920.
  - 997. ii. ALICE MARY PLUMMER, b. in Boston July 14, 1922.
  - 998. iii. MORGAN HUSSEY PLUMMER, JR., b. in Boston Aug. 28, 1923.
  - 999. iv. THOMAS PARSONS PLUMMER, b. in Beverly, Mass., Oct. 24, 1930.
983. MARGARET WARREN HUSSEY<sup>8</sup> (*Alfred R. Hussey<sup>7</sup>, Elizabeth R.*

Morgan<sup>6</sup>, Sarah Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Rev. Alfred R. and Mary L. (Warren) Hussey, was born in Taunton, Mass., Sept. 27, 1900. She married Jan. 1, 1935, Charles Allen Smart, born Nov. 30, 1904, son of George and Lucy (Allen) Smart of Forest Hills, Long Island, N. Y. No children. Residence, Chillicothe, Ohio.

984. ALFRED RODMAN HUSSEY, JR.<sup>8</sup> (Alfred R. Hussey<sup>7</sup>, Elizabeth R. Morgan<sup>6</sup>, Sarah Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), son of Rev. Alfred R. and Mary L. (Warren) Hussey, was born in Taunton, Mass., Feb. 1, 1902. Harvard, B.S., 1925; University of Virginia, LL.B., 1929. He married Jan. 1, 1935, Jane Strickland, born Feb. 16, 1906, daughter of Sidney Talbot and Elsie (Rutan) Strickland of Brookline, Mass. In World War II he was commissioned Lieutenant, D-V(S), U.S.N.R., Aug. 15, 1942. Attached to Communications School, Amphibious Training Command, Pacific Fleet from November, 1942 to June, 1944; Beach Battalions, June-September, 1944. Naval School Military Government, Princeton University, October-December, 1944. Promoted to Lieutenant Commander, Oct. 17, 1944. Promoted to Commander, U.S.N.R., Dec. 13, 1945.

In August, 1945, he was appointed a member of General MacArthur's staff, assigned to the Military Government Section, Chief of the Internal Affairs Unit, and subsequently Chief of the Governmental Powers Branch. This service won for him the decoration of Legion of Merit. He was credited with "outstanding professional competence and resourcefulness in furthering the attainment of occupational objectives." According to the citation with his decoration, "His sound legal approach to and knowledge of Japanese government problems, his participation in the conferences resulting in the proposed new constitution for Japan, his keen perception of the inter-relationship of the intricate problems involved in governmental reorganization and democratization coincident with economic adjustments, together with untiring energy and seasoned judgment, were of invaluable service in the formulation and initiation of action of great political significance to the future of Japan."

With two others he was author of a new constitution for Japan, and travelled through the country explaining the document to the people. Was still in Japan in summer of 1947.

Children, born in Plymouth:

1000. i. CHRISTOPHER HUSSEY, b. Jan. 4, 1936.
1001. ii. CHARLES RODMAN HUSSEY, b. July 18, 1939.

985. MARY ELIZABETH HUSSEY<sup>8</sup> (Alfred R. Hussey<sup>7</sup>, Elizabeth R. Morgan<sup>6</sup>, Sarah Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Rev. Alfred R. and Mary L. (Warren) Hussey, was born in Baltimore, Md., Nov. 15, 1905. She married in Barnstable, Mass., Aug. 2, 1929, Donald Burt Mandell, born March 11, 1908, son of George Ellis and Isabel Walker (Jones) Mandell of New Bedford. Residence, Plymouth, Mass.

## Children:

1002. i. MARY ELIZABETH MANDELL, b. in Plymouth, Mass., Aug. 3, 1930.  
 1003. ii. ELLEN MANDELL, b. in New Bedford Feb. 8, 1932.  
 1004. iii. SARAH RODMAN MANDELL, b. in New Bedford May 14, 1934.

986. EMILY MORGAN HUSSEY<sup>8</sup> (*Alfred R. Hussey<sup>7</sup>, Elizabeth R. Morgan<sup>6</sup>, Sarah Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Rev. Alfred R. and Mary L. (Warren) Hussey, was born in Baltimore, Md., Dec. 13, 1908. Brown, A.B., 1932. She married July 30, 1932, Henry Carvill Haskell, born in Brunswick, Maine, Dec. 28, 1897, son of Dr. Alaric Weston and Ada Lois (Carvill) Haskell of Brunswick. Bowdoin, 1918. Residence, Moosup, Conn.

## Children, born in Providence, R. I.:

1005. i. MERCY WARREN HASKELL, b. Dec. 19, 1933.  
 1006. ii. HENRY MORGAN HASKELL, b. Dec. 19, 1933.  
 1007. iii. PETER CARVILL HASKELL, b. Feb. 9, 1939.

987. ELIZABETH HUSSEY BROWN<sup>9</sup> (*Rebecca W. Hussey<sup>8</sup>, Charles M. Hussey<sup>7</sup>, Elizabeth R. Morgan<sup>6</sup>, Sarah Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Frederick R. and Rebecca W. (Hussey) Brown, was born in New Bedford July 17, 1913. Smith, A.B., 1934. She married June 27, 1936, Francis Stratton Knox, Jr., born May 5, 1912, son of Francis Stratton and Ruth Louise (Davis) Knox of Glastonbury, Conn. Residence, Wilmington, Del.

## Children, born in Wilmington:

1008. i. FRANCIS STRATTON KNOX, III, b. Jan. 28, 1941.  
 1009. ii. REBECCA HOWLAND KNOX, b. May 5, 1943.

988. PRISCILLA HUGHES BROWN<sup>9</sup> (*Rebecca W. Hussey<sup>8</sup>, Charles M. Hussey<sup>7</sup>, Elizabeth R. Morgan<sup>6</sup>, Sarah Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Frederick R. and Rebecca W. (Hussey) Brown, was born in New Bedford Nov. 12, 1916. She married April 15, 1939, John Warner Field, born Sept. 15, 1914, son of John and Margaret Lucetta (Warner) Field of Fairfield, Conn. Residence, New York City.

## Children:

1010. i. MARGARET WARNER FIELD, b. Dec. 14, 1941.  
 1011. ii. JOHN WARNER FIELD, JR., b. July 30, 1944.

990. GEORGE HUSSEY, JR.<sup>9</sup> (*George Hussey<sup>8</sup>, Charles M. Hussey<sup>7</sup>, Elizabeth R. Morgan<sup>6</sup>, Sarah Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of George and Pauline (Hawes) Hussey, was born in New York City March 11, 1920. Williams, 1942. He married at Warrenton, Va., June 25, 1943, Jean Gebhard, born Aug. 16, 1922, daughter of Dr.

Karl and Hildegard (Jones) Gebhard of Mount Vernon, N. Y. In World War II he served in the Army Signal Corps for three years, including twenty-six months in the European theater. Awarded Bronze Star. Residence, Bronxville, N. Y.

993. EVELYN SHAW PLUMMER<sup>9</sup> (*Henry M. Plummer, Jr.<sup>8</sup>, Alice Hussey<sup>7</sup>, Elizabeth R. Morgan<sup>6</sup>, Sarah Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Henry M. and Evelyn O. (Shaw) Plummer, was born in Melrose, Mass., Jan. 24, 1923. She married Oct. 20, 1945, Norman James Morrison, Jr., born April 3, 1919, son of Norman James and Mary (McCrommen) Morrison of Chevy Chase, Md. During World War II she was employed for two years as radio technician by M. I. T. Radiation Laboratory, which was engaged in development of radar for the United States armed forces. Mr. Morrison, a graduate of Georgia Tech, was also connected with M. I. T. Laboratory, and was engaged in installation of radar for the army in Europe. Residence, Baltimore, Md.

996. SUSAN LAWRENCE PLUMMER<sup>9</sup> (*Morgan H. Plummer<sup>8</sup>, Alice Hussey<sup>7</sup>, Elizabeth R. Morgan<sup>6</sup>, Sarah Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Morgan H. and Susan L. (Parsons) Plummer, was born in Boston Aug. 17, 1920. She married in Boston Dec. 7, 1940, George Watson Hall Smith, Jr., born June 26, 1919, son of George Watson Hall and Prudence (Sterry) Smith of Providence. Residence, Brookline, Mass.

Children:

1012. i. GEORGE WATSON HALL SMITH, III, b. Dec. 9, 1943.
1013. ii. SUSAN LAWRENCE SMITH, b. Jan. 25, 1946.

997. ALICE MARY PLUMMER<sup>9</sup> (*Morgan H. Plummer<sup>8</sup>, Alice Hussey<sup>7</sup>, Elizabeth R. Morgan<sup>6</sup>, Sarah Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Morgan H. and Susan L. (Parsons) Plummer, was born in Boston July 14, 1922. She married in Boston Aug. 21, 1941, Fellowes Davis (Harvard, 1942), born Jan. 11, 1920, son of Dudley and Alice Mason (Grosvenor) Davis of New York City. In World War II he served four years in the United States Naval Reserve, being discharged as Lieutenant (j.g.). He was attached to a motor torpedo boat squadron in the Pacific area. Residence, Boston.

Children:

1014. i. MORGAN FELLOWES DAVIS, b. Feb. 3, 1943.
1015. ii. ROSE GROSVENOR DAVIS, b. Aug. 15, 1945.
- 1015a. iii. SUSANNAH LAWRENCE DAVIS, b. Nov. 5, 1946.

998. MORGAN HUSSEY PLUMMER, JR.<sup>9</sup> (*Morgan H. Plummer<sup>8</sup>, Alice*

*Hussey<sup>7</sup>, Elizabeth R. Morgan<sup>6</sup>, Sarah Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), son of Morgan H. and Susan L. (Parsons) Plummer, was born in Boston Aug. 28, 1923. He married Jan. 18, 1947, Jean MacHale, daughter of Richard Lockhart and Jeanette (Rueter) MacHale of Hingham, Mass. In World War II he was for three years in the United States Naval Reserve, serving aboard destroyer escort as radar operator, in convoy work in Atlantic, Mediterranean and Pacific areas. Residence, Dedham, Mass.*

## Descendants of Benjamin Rodman

409. BENJAMIN RODMAN<sup>5</sup> (*Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Samuel and Elizabeth (Rotch) Rodman, was born in Nantucket Nov. 25, 1794, and died in New Bedford Sept. 28, 1876. He married April 6, 1820, Susan Waln Morgan, born Sept. 5, 1802, died in New Bedford Nov. 11, 1871, daughter of Thomas and Anne (Waln) Morgan of Philadelphia.

Mr. Rodman was a prominent merchant and leading citizen of New Bedford. As a birthright member of the Society of Friends he was in youth a volunteer teacher in the Friends School in Providence, serving without compensation. A man of strong convictions he at one time allowed himself to be imprisoned in jail for debt. He wrote a pamphlet, "A Voice from the Prison," which resulted in the alleviation of the rigor of the laws against debtors.

During the rift in the Society of Friends in the 1820's Mr. Rodman was one of the "New Lights," and aired his views extensively in meetings. In October, 1823, he attended Fifth Day Meeting at Lynn. "While he was speaking some of the head devils laid hold of him and dragged him out of the house. About thirty persons left the meeting in disgust," is a statement in the diary of Joseph R. Anthony. Eventually Mr. Rodman and his wife and members of his family joined the Unitarian Church.

He served on the Executive Council of Massachusetts and in the State Senate. In 1825 he was an incorporator and became a trustee of the New Bedford Institution for Savings, and the same year was an incorporator and director of the Fall River Bank, now the Fall River National Bank.

Mr. Rodman lived for a time in the granite mansion of his father on North Second Street. Later he resided in the so-called Tyson house on South Street. Subsequently he purchased a large estate on Linden Street, in the north part of the city, where he had an attractive villa, surrounded by beautiful grounds. Weld Street, which was laid out through this estate, took its name from Mr. Rodman's daughter, Mrs. Weld.

Children, born in New Bedford:

1016. i. ELIZABETH RODMAN, b. Feb. 24, 1821; d. Feb. 28, 1897.
1017. ii. WILLIAM LOGAN RODMAN, b. March 7, 1822; d. May 27, 1863.
1018. iii. SUSAN RODMAN, b. Oct. 20, 1841; d. July 10, 1904.

1016. ELIZABETH RODMAN<sup>6</sup> (*Benjamin Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Benjamin and Susan W. (Morgan) Rodman, was born in New Bedford Feb. 24, 1821, and died in Jamaica

Plain, Mass., Feb. 28, 1897. She married Oct. 1, 1841, Francis Minot Weld, born in 1814, died in 1886, son of William G. and Hannah (Minot) Weld.

Children:

- 1019. i. BENJAMIN RODMAN WELD, b. July 2, 1842; d. Nov. 1909. Unmarried.
- 1020. ii. GERTRUDE WELD, b. Jan. 29, 1844; d. June, 1904.
- 1021. iii. CORA WELD, b. Jan. 4, 1848; d. Sept. 5, 1914.
- 1022. iv. FRANCIS MINOT WELD, b. July 21, 1851; d. March 18, 1882. Unmarried.
- 1023. v. CHRISTOPHER MINOT WELD, b. Oct. 2, 1858; d. Aug. 27, 1918.
- 1024. vi. ROBERT WELD, b. March 30, 1861; d. April 21, 1861.

Note: Francis M. Weld was a first cousin of Stephen M. Weld, who married Eloise Rodman. (See No. 534.)

1017. WILLIAM LOGAN RODMAN<sup>6</sup> (*Benjamin Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Benjamin and Susan W. (Morgan) Rodman, was born in New Bedford March 7, 1822. He was graduated from Harvard University, 1842; in 1849 went to India and Europe by way of California; member of the City Council of New Bedford, 1852; member of Massachusetts Infantry, Aug. 19, 1862; Lieutenant Colonel, Dec. 4, 1862; killed at Port Hudson, La., May 27, 1863. Post One of the Grand Army of the Republic of Massachusetts was named for him, William Logan Rodman Post of New Bedford. In 1898 the harbor defense fort at New Bedford was officially renamed Fort Rodman in his honor. Unmarried.

1018. SUSAN RODMAN<sup>6</sup> (*Benjamin Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Benjamin and Susan W. (Morgan) Rodman, was born in New Bedford Oct. 20, 1841, and died at Carlsbad, Germany, July 10, 1904. She married in London Oct. 8, 1885, Fabio G. Caccia of Florence, Italy, where the couple made their home in a villa once the dwelling of Andrea del Sarto. There were no children. By a former marriage Mr. Caccia had three sons.

1020. GERTRUDE WELD<sup>7</sup> (*Elizabeth Rodman<sup>6</sup>, Benjamin Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Francis M. and Elizabeth (Rodman) Weld, was born Jan. 29, 1844, and died in June, 1904. She married June 1, 1881, John Parkinson, son of John and Anne Outram (Davis) Parkinson of Boston.

Son:

- 1025. i. JOHN PARKINSON, b. Oct. 20, 1883.

1021. CORA WELD<sup>7</sup> (*Elizabeth Rodman<sup>6</sup>, Benjamin Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Francis M. and Elizabeth (Rodman) Weld, was born in Jamaica Plain, Mass., Jan. 4, 1848, and died at Northeast Harbor, Maine, Sept. 5, 1914. She married June 11, 1872, Rev. Dr. Francis Greenwood Peabody, born in Boston Dec. 4, 1847,

died in Cambridge Dec. 28, 1935, son of Rev. Dr. Ephraim and Mary Jane (Derby) Peabody of Boston. The father was previously minister of the Unitarian Church of New Bedford.

Children:

- 1026. i. WILLIAM RODMAN PEABODY, b. March 3, 1874; d. Jan. 12, 1941.
- 1027. ii. GERTRUDE PEABODY, b. Nov. 4, 1877; d. Dec. 3, 1938. Unmarried.
- 1028. iii. FRANCIS WELD PEABODY, b. Nov. 24, 1881; d. Oct. 13, 1927.
- 1029. iv. JOHN DERBY PEABODY, b. Nov. 19, 1885; d. in Florence, Italy, May 27, 1899.

1023. CHRISTOPHER MINOT WELD<sup>7</sup> (*Elizabeth Rodman<sup>6</sup>, Benjamin Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Francis M. and Elizabeth (Rodman) Weld, was born Oct. 2, 1858, and died in Milton, Mass., Aug. 27, 1918. Harvard, 1880. He married in Boston April 24, 1889, Marian Linzee, born in Boston May 11, 1862, daughter of Thomas Amory Coffin and Sarah Parker (Torrey) Linzee of Boston. She resides in Milton, Mass.

Children, born in Milton, Mass.:

- 1030. i. MARIAN LINZEE WELD, b. May 17, 1890.
- 1031. ii. ELIZABETH RODMAN WELD, b. July 26, 1892.
- 1032. iii. MARGARET WELD, b. Oct. 12, 1893.
- 1033. iv. FRANCIS MINOT WELD, b. July 5, 1895.
- 1034. v. JOHN LINZEE WELD, b. Nov. 10, 1896.

1025. JOHN PARKINSON<sup>8</sup> (*Gertrude Weld<sup>7</sup>, Elizabeth Rodman<sup>6</sup>, Benjamin Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of John and Gertrude (Weld) Parkinson, was born in Boston Oct. 20, 1883. Harvard, 1906. He married June 26, 1905, Mary Emmons, born in Boston Nov. 11, 1887, daughter of Nathaniel Henry and Eleanor Gassett (Bacon) Emmons of Boston. Residence, Bourne, Mass.

Children, first three born in Boston:

- 1035. i. JOHN PARKINSON, JR., b. June 4, 1906.
- 1036. ii. NATHANIEL EMMONS PARKINSON, b. Nov. 29, 1907.
- 1037. iii. MARY PARKINSON, b. April 16, 1911.
- 1038. iv. ROBERT PARKINSON, b. in Dover, Mass., July 13, 1915; m. May, 1939, Dorothea Dean. Divorced. In World War II he served four years in the United States Navy. Residence, Bourne, Mass.

1026. WILLIAM RODMAN PEABODY<sup>8</sup> (*Cora Weld<sup>7</sup>, Elizabeth Rodman<sup>6</sup>, Benjamin Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Rev. Dr. Francis Greenwood and Cora (Weld) Peabody, was born in Boston March 3, 1874, and died in Milton, Mass., Jan. 12, 1941. Harvard, A.B., 1895; LL.B., 1898. He married in Boston Oct. 8, 1908, Katharine Putnam Peabody, born in Brookline, Mass., Jan. 3, 1877, daughter of Robert Swain and Annie (Putnam) Peabody of Boston, and granddaughter of Rev. Dr. Ephraim and Mary Jane (Derby) Peabody.

He was a lawyer in Boston; member of the Legislature; lecturer at Harvard Law School; director in many corporations. Mrs. Peabody and unmarried daughters reside in Milton, Mass.

Children:

- 1039. i. GERTRUDE PEABODY, b. in Cambridge, Mass., Sept. 4, 1910.
- 1040. ii. ANNE PUTNAM PEABODY, b. in Marblehead, Mass., Aug. 25, 1912.
- 1041. iii. KATHARINE PEABODY, b. in Milton, Mass., Nov. 17, 1913.
- 1042. iv. CORA WELD PEABODY, b. in Milton, Mass., Feb. 23, 1917.

1028. FRANCIS WELD PEABODY<sup>8</sup> (*Cora Weld<sup>7</sup>, Elizabeth Rodman<sup>6</sup>, Benjamin Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Rev. Dr. Francis Greenwood and Cora (Weld) Peabody, was born in Boston Nov. 24, 1881, and died there Oct. 13, 1927. Harvard, A.B., 1903; M.D., 1907. He married in Boston Dec. 18, 1919, Virginia Grigsby Chandler, born April 22, 1886, daughter of Reuben Grigsby and Virginia (Hamilton) Chandler of Chicago. She married (2) Dr. George Cheever Shattuck of Brookline, Mass.

Dr. Peabody was a member of China Medical Board of the Rockefeller Foundation; member Red Cross Commission to Roumania, 1917; Major, United States Army Medical Corps, 1918; Professor of Medicine, Harvard Medical School, 1921-1927; Visiting Professor of Medicine, Peking Union Medical College, 1921-1922; director of Thorndike Memorial Laboratory, visiting physician and Chief of The Fourth Medical Service, Boston City Hospital, 1922-1927; consulting physician, Peter Bent Brigham Hospital, 1922-1927; member Board of Scientific Directors of the Rockefeller Institute, 1926-1927.

Children, born in Boston:

- 1043. i. FRANCIS WELD PEABODY, b. April 22, 1924. Attended Harvard. In World War II he was an Ensign, United States Naval Reserve, and saw active service on U.S.S. *Fanshaw Bay*.
- 1044. ii. GRIGSBY CHANDLER PEABODY, b. Dec. 16, 1925. Member of class of 1948 at Harvard.

1030. MARIAN LINZEE WELD<sup>8</sup> (*Christopher M. Weld<sup>7</sup>, Elizabeth Rodman<sup>6</sup>, Benjamin Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Christopher M. and Marian (Linzee) Weld, was born in Milton, Mass., May 17, 1890. She married in Milton June 29, 1915, Dr. George Richards Minot, born in Boston Dec. 2, 1885, son of James Jackson and Elizabeth (Whitney) Minot of Boston. Residence, Brookline, Mass.

Children, born in Boston:

- 1045. i. MARIAN LINZEE MINOT, b. Oct. 6, 1918.
- 1046. ii. ELIZABETH WHITNEY MINOT, b. Dec. 4, 1920.
- 1047. iii. CHARLES SEDGWICK MINOT, b. March 18, 1930.

- 1032. MARGARET WELD<sup>8</sup> (*Christopher M. Weld<sup>7</sup>, Elizabeth Rod-*

*man<sup>6</sup>, Benjamin Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Christopher M. and Marian (Linzee) Weld, was born in Milton, Mass., Oct. 12, 1893. She married in Boston Dec. 17, 1925, Dr. Francis Tennery Hunter, born in Amherst, Ohio, Oct. 22, 1896, son of William and Dora (Tennery) Hunter of Tampa, Fla. Dr. Hunter served four years in World War II as a surgeon in the United States Naval Reserve, entering with rank of Lieutenant Commander, and being promoted to Commander and Captain. His service was at Newport Training Station, New Zealand, New Hebrides, Chelsea Naval Hospital and Naval Receiving Station, South Boston. Residence, Chestnut Hill, Mass.

Children, born in Boston:

1048. i. MARGARET HUNTER, b. Oct. 25, 1929.  
1049. ii. JOHN BARRINGTON HUNTER, b. April 28, 1931.

1033. FRANCIS MINOT WELD<sup>8</sup> (*Christopher M. Weld<sup>7</sup>, Elizabeth Rodman<sup>6</sup>, Benjamin Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Christopher M. and Marian (Linzee) Weld, was born in Milton, Mass., July 5, 1895. Harvard, 1917. He married in Dedham, Mass., May 26, 1928, Elizabeth Burgess, born May 26, 1896, daughter of Theodore Phillips and Elizabeth (Slade) Burgess of Dedham. Served as First Lieutenant in United States Army in World War I, 1917-1919. Residence, Dedham, Mass.

Children, born in Boston:

1050. i. PATRICIA WELD, b. April 29, 1929.  
1051. ii. CHRISTOPHER MINOT WELD, b. July 20, 1932.

1034. JOHN LINZEE WELD<sup>8</sup> (*Christopher M. Weld<sup>7</sup>, Elizabeth Rodman<sup>6</sup>, Benjamin Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Christopher M. and Marian (Linzee) Weld, was born in Milton, Mass., Nov. 10, 1896. Harvard, A.B., 1918; M.B.A., 1920. He married in Dedham, Mass., Oct. 31, 1925, Barbara Foster, born in Marblehead, Mass., June 19, 1900, daughter of Charles Henry Wheelwright and Mabel Chase (Hill) Foster of Charles River, Mass. First Lieutenant, Field Artillery, in World War I, 1917-1918. President, treasurer and general manager, Suncook Mills, Suncook, N. H. Residence, Charles River, Mass.

Children, born in Boston:

1052. i. BARBARA WELD, b. Oct. 9, 1927.  
1053. ii. JANE WELD, b. Jan. 23, 1932.

1035. JOHN PARKINSON, JR.<sup>9</sup> (*John Parkinson<sup>8</sup>, Gertrude Weld<sup>7</sup>, Elizabeth Rodman<sup>6</sup>, Benjamin Rodman<sup>5</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rotch, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of John and Mary (Emmons) Parkinson, was born in Boston June 4, 1906. Harvard, 1929. He married in Westbury, Long Island, N. Y., Dec. 18, 1932, Elizabeth Addison Bliss, born Sept. 25, 1907, daughter

of Cornelius Newton and Zaidee C. (Cobb) Bliss of Westbury. Her grandfather, Cornelius Newton Bliss, was Secretary of the Interior in the Cabinet of President McKinley. In World War II Mr. Parkinson served as Lieutenant Commander, United States Navy, Atlantic and Pacific areas, 1942-1946. Residence, Westbury, Long Island, N. Y.

Children, born in New York City:

1054. i. JOHN PARKINSON, III, b. Aug. 8, 1934.  
 1055. ii. ZAIDEE COBB PARKINSON, b. July 2, 1936.

1036. NATHANIEL EMMONS PARKINSON<sup>9</sup> (*John Parkinson*<sup>8</sup>, *Gertrude Weld*<sup>7</sup>, *Elizabeth Rodman*<sup>6</sup>, *Benjamin Rodman*<sup>5</sup>, *Elizabeth*<sup>4</sup> *Rotch*, *William*<sup>3</sup>, *Joseph*<sup>2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>), son of John and Mary (Emmons) Parkinson, was born in Boston Nov. 29, 1907. Harvard, 1931. He married at Beverly Farms, Mass., July 28, 1941, Ellen (Lovering) Child, born Aug. 5, 1904, daughter of Charles Taylor and Ellen (Lyman) Lovering. She had children by a former marriage. Residence, Dover, Mass.

1037. MARY PARKINSON<sup>9</sup> (*John Parkinson*<sup>8</sup>, *Gertrude Weld*<sup>7</sup>, *Elizabeth Rodman*<sup>6</sup>, *Benjamin Rodman*<sup>5</sup>, *Elizabeth*<sup>4</sup> *Rotch*, *William*<sup>3</sup>, *Joseph*<sup>2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>), daughter of John and Mary (Emmons) Parkinson, was born in Boston April 16, 1911. She married in Dover, Mass., Jan. 26, 1935, John Grew, born in Dover June 23, 1907, son of Edward Wigglesworth and Ruth (Dexter) Grew of Dover. In World War II he served in the United States Army, Remount Service, 1943-1945. Residence, Dover, Mass.

Children, born in Boston:

1056. i. JOHN GREW, JR., b. Feb. 6, 1936.  
 1057. ii. NATHANIEL GREW, b. Sept. 22, 1937.

1040. ANNE PUTNAM PEABODY<sup>9</sup> (*William R. Peabody*<sup>8</sup>, *Cora Weld*<sup>7</sup>, *Elizabeth Rodman*<sup>6</sup>, *Benjamin Rodman*<sup>5</sup>, *Elizabeth*<sup>4</sup> *Rotch*, *William*<sup>3</sup>, *Joseph*<sup>2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>), daughter of William R. and Katharine P. (Peabody) Peabody, was born in Marblehead, Mass., Aug. 25, 1912. She married Sept. 22, 1945, Frederick E. Donaldson, Jr., born Oct. 12, 1911, son of Frederick E. and Marie (Winkhaus) Donaldson of New York. Residence, New York City.

1041. KATHARINE PEABODY<sup>9</sup> (*William R. Peabody*<sup>8</sup>, *Cora Weld*<sup>7</sup>, *Elizabeth Rodman*<sup>6</sup>, *Benjamin Rodman*<sup>5</sup>, *Elizabeth*<sup>4</sup> *Rotch*, *William*<sup>3</sup>, *Joseph*<sup>2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>), daughter of William R. and Katharine P. (Peabody) Peabody, was born in Milton, Mass., Nov. 17, 1913. She married June 23, 1939, Dr. Henry Hodge Brewster, born in Boston Oct. 20, 1912, son of Dr. George Washington Wales and Ellen McKenzie (Hodge) Brewster of Boston. In World War II he served four years as Major in the Medical Corps, United

States Army, most of the time overseas with the Fifth General Hospital (Harvard Medical School) Unit. Residence, Milton, Mass.

Children:

1058. i. RODMAN PEABODY BREWSTER, adopted, b. Aug. 15, 1942.  
1059. ii. ELLEN HODGE BREWSTER, adopted, b. Aug. 16, 1946.

## Early Generations of the Rotch Family and Descendants

1200. WILLIAM<sup>2</sup> ROTCH (*William<sup>1</sup>*), son of William and Hannah (Potter) Rotch, was born in Salem, Mass., Aug. 12, 1692. He is found at Truro on Cape Cod in 1718, when his mother deeded him land in Salem. He was then called a tanner. In 1723 he was called a whale fisherman. He may have been a resident of Bristol, R. I., with his first wife in 1715, before settling on the Cape. His last place of abode was Provincetown, Mass., where he was an innholder, and it is said his death occurred in Boston. On April 4, 1746, his widow was appointed administratrix of his estate. He married (1) Dinah ? —; (2) Sept. 1, 1740, Mary Kingman of Bridgewater, Mass., daughter of John and Desire Kingman, who was born April 7, 1692, and surviving him married (2) June 28, 1748, Rev. John Avery of Truro. William Rotch was a subscriber to "Prince's Chronology" in 1728. It is presumed he had several children, but the only record found is of a son by the first marriage, Samuel Rotch, born 1722, who died at the age of fourteen.

1204. BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup> ROTCH (*William<sup>1</sup>*), son of William and Hannah (Potter) Rotch, was born probably in Salem, Mass., about 1702. He was a mariner, and resided for a time in Provincetown on Cape Cod, removing in 1744 to Boston, where he died in 1758. William Rotch of Rochester, Mass., shipwright, was appointed administrator of his estate and filed his bond May 26, 1758. He left a widow, Martha (Paine?) Rotch, and three sons. On Feb. 1, 1760, Joseph Rotch of Boston, mariner, took administration on the estate of Martha Rotch, Boston.

### Children:

- 1250. i. WILLIAM ROTCH, b. Oct. 23, 1729; d. July 2, 1809.
- 1250a. ii. PRINCE ROTCH, b. Nov. 20, 1731. No details.
- 1400. iii. JOSEPH ROTCH, b. Nov. 13, 1733; d. April 17, 1809.
- 1401. iv. BENJAMIN ROTCH, b. Nov. 4, 1735. No details.
- 1402. v. SAMUEL ROTCH, b. c. 1737.

## Descendants of William Rotch of Martha's Vineyard

1250. WILLIAM<sup>3</sup> ROTCH (*Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Benjamin and Martha Rotch of Provincetown and Boston, was born Oct. 23, 1729, and died July 2, 1809. He was a shipwright. From Boston he removed to Mattapoisett (Rochester), Mass., where he married Nov. 17, 1754, Anne Barlow, born May 24, 1737, probably daughter of Joseph and Abigail Barlow. In 1767 he removed to Tisbury, Mass., on Martha's Vineyard, settling at Lambert's Cove. He married (2) about 1768 Mrs. Eunice (Norton) Lambert, widow of Elisha Lambert, born 1733, died Oct. 9, 1813. He served in the Louisburg Expedition in 1745 in the company commanded by Captain Edward Coles.

Children:

By first marriage:

1251. i. BENJAMIN ROTCH, b. Oct. 20, 1755.
1252. ii. ISRAEL ROTCH, b. May 8, 1757. Removed to Vermont.
1253. iii. JOSEPH ROTCH, b. April 10, 1759. Resided in Nantucket.
1254. iv. OLIVE ROTCH, b. May 21, 1761; m. (1) Whitten Hillman; (2) Abijah Hammett.
1255. v. BETTY ROTCH, b. Oct. 10, 1763.
1256. vi. ANNA ROTCH, b. May 9, 1766; m. —— Daniels.

By second marriage:

1257. vii. EUNICE ROTCH, b. 1769.
1258. viii. WILLIAM ROTCH, b. Jan. 24, 1771; m. Polly Norton. Resided in Farmington, Maine.
1259. ix. FRANCIS ROTCH, b. 1776; d. Sept. 17, 1848.
1260. x. MARIA V. ROTCH, b. 1778; m. Tristram Luce.

1259. FRANCIS<sup>4</sup> ROTCH (*William<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of William and Eunice (Norton) Rotch, was born in Tisbury, Mass., in 1776, and died in Chilmark, Mass., Sept. 17, 1848. He was a mariner, and resided at Tisbury and Chilmark. He married about 1806 Rebecca Davis, who was born May 26, 1788, and was living in 1850.

Children:

1261. i. JOHN DAVIS ROTCH, b. Jan. 7, 1807; d. June 9, 1882.
1262. ii. NANCY ROTCH, b. April 10, 1809; m. Thomas Smith.
1263. iii. HARRIET ROTCH, b. 1810; d. young.
1264. iv. MARY O. ROTCH, b. 1815; d. young.
1265. v. FRANCIS ORMOND ROTCH, b. Aug. 14, 1817; d. Sept. 21, 1885.

1266. vi. CALEB L. ROTCH, b. 1819; d. Jan. 24, 1850 in California, where he had gone in the "gold rush".

Foregoing accounts of the first four generations, and also of Numbers 1261 and 1270 are from "History of Martha's Vineyard," by Colonel Charles E. Banks, M.D.

1261. JOHN DAVIS<sup>5</sup> ROTCH (*Francis<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Francis and Rebecca (Davis) Rotch, was born in Tisbury, Mass., Jan. 7, 1807, and died there June 9, 1882. He was a woolen manufacturer, and resided in Tisbury. He married Oct. 28, 1828, Sarah Tilton, born June 4, 1809, died Nov. 17, 1889.

Children:

- 1267. i. MARY O. ROTCH, b. Sept. 5, 1829; m. Simon M. Vincent.
- 1268. ii. REBECCA ROTCH, b. March 17, 1834.
- 1269. iii. ELLEN M. ROTCH, b. Nov. 3, 1837; m. (1) George G. Gifford; (2) William C. Adams.
- 1270. iv. WILLIAM JOSEPH ROTCH, b. Jan. 14, 1847; d. April 12, 1930.
- 1271. v. JOHN ELMORE ROTCH, b. Sept., 1849; d. Nov. 8, 1884; m. Rebecca N. Luce. A mariner. Residence, Tisbury.

1265. FRANCIS ORMOND<sup>5</sup> ROTCH (*Francis<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Francis and Rebecca (Davis) Rotch, was born in Chilmark, Mass., Aug. 14, 1817, and died there Sept. 21, 1885. He married July 20, 1845, Eliza C. Wilkins, born Dec. 18, 1825, died Jan. 22, 1911. He was a captain of whaling vessels, and sailed out of New Bedford for many years, his voyages being mostly to the Pacific Ocean. He lived in Chilmark.

Children:

- 1272. i. ABBY ORMOND ROTCH, b. May 9, 1846; d. Oct. 8, 1897; m. Jan. 1, 1871, Nahum F. Norton.
- 1273. ii. NANCY N. ROTCH, b. July 28, 1850; d. 1923; m. Oct. 20, 1873, William W. Allen of Cuttyhunk, Mass.
- 1274. iii. REV. CALEB LAMB ROTCH, b. June 10, 1855; d. Sept. 26, 1935; married, no children. First a Methodist he began preaching on Martha's Vineyard, Mass., when seventeen. He also filled pastorates in Stoughton, Mass., and in the west, eventually joining the Congregationalist denomination. After his retirement he lived in North Easton, Mass.
- 1275. iv. ISABEL F. ROTCH, b. April 27, 1861; d. Feb. 19, 1909; m. James Hasey.
- 1276. v. RUSSELL WILKINS ROTCH, b. Feb. 3, 1863.
- 1277. vi. LUCINDA MAYHEW ROTCH, b. May 28, 1867; d. in New Bedford Jan. 28, 1934. Lived in Boston. Unmarried.

1270. WILLIAM JOSEPH<sup>6</sup> ROTCH (*John D.<sup>5</sup>, Francis<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of John D. and Sarah (Tilton) Rotch, was born in Tisbury, Mass., Jan. 14, 1847, and died at Vineyard Haven, Mass., April 12, 1930. He married April 16, 1873, Lydia E. Smith of Edgartown, Mass., whom he survived. He was long successfully engaged in business in Tisbury and West Tisbury. In his "History of Martha's Vineyard" (1925) Colonel Charles E. Banks paid the following tribute to Mr. Rotch:

"A long and active life has been employed by him in promoting the material interests of the Vineyard at all times. He may well be called the Father of West Tisbury, which his persistence and diplomacy fashioned out of the older Tisbury in 1892, and a prosperous township has been the result of his wise leadership."

For thirty-eight years he was chairman of the Board of West Tisbury Selectmen. He was also an officer in the West Tisbury Free Public Library Association, the Dukes County Agricultural Society, and the Dukes County Historical Society. His will contained a number of public bequests.

Children:

1278. i. ALBERT ROTCH, b. Aug. 26, 1875.  
1279. ii. EDNA W. ROTCH, b. April 18, 1881; m. Mr. Antons. Residence, San Mateo, Calif.

1276. RUSSELL WILKINS<sup>6</sup> ROTCH (*Francis O.*<sup>5</sup>, *Francis*<sup>4</sup>, *William*<sup>3</sup>, *Benjamin*<sup>2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>), son of Francis O. and Eliza C. (Wilkins) Rotch, was born in Chilmark, Mass., Feb. 3, 1863. He married May 4, 1891, Carrie Chase Allen, born June 21, 1869, died Aug. 2, 1939, daughter of Charles C. and Anna (Smith) Allen of Dartmouth, Mass. He followed the career of a fisherman from fifteen to twenty-seven years of age, interrupted by a Pacific whaling voyage for fifteen months in 1882 and 1883. Removing to Cuttyhunk, Mass., he was a member of the crew of the United States life saving station there for seventeen years, and for seventeen years was a licensed pilot, retiring in 1920.

In World War I he served as a boatswain on the converted yacht *Owera*, detailed for patrol of Long Island Sound, and for participation in manoeuvres with submarines out of New London, Conn. Since 1912 he has lived in New Bedford.

Daughter:

1280. i. ANNA WILKINS ROTCH, b. July 28, 1895; m. Jan. 17, 1942, Arthur F. Sullivan. Residence, New Bedford.

1278. ALBERT<sup>7</sup> ROTCH (*William J.*<sup>6</sup>, *John D.*<sup>5</sup>, *Francis*<sup>4</sup>, *William*<sup>3</sup>, *Benjamin*<sup>2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>), son of William J. and Lydia E. (Smith) Rotch, was born Aug. 26, 1875. He married Feb. 3, 1898, Annie May Leman, born Jan. 1, 1875, daughter of William Henry and Annie Eliza (Sparks) Leman of Providence, Rhode Island. Residence, Barrington, Rhode Island, where he has been a town official for a number of years. No children.

## Captain Joseph<sup>3</sup> Rotch of New Bedford and Boston

1400. CAPTAIN JOSEPH<sup>3</sup> ROTCH (*Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Benjamin and Martha Rotch of Provincetown, Mass., and Boston, and nephew of Joseph<sup>2</sup> Rotch of New Bedford, was born in Provincetown, Nov. 13, 1733, and died in New Bedford April 17, 1809. He married in Boston June 11, 1765, Jane Alline, who died in New Bedford Oct. 29, 1815, daughter of Henry Alline of Boston.

He came to New Bedford from Boston in 1767, and built a gambrel-roofed house on the west side of Water Street, south of the present William Street, where he lived until it was burned in the British raid of 1778. Evidently he did not rebuild. In 1803 he transferred the lot to William Rotch, Jr., in exchange for a lot on the east side of the present South Water Street, subsequently occupied by William A. Robinson for his oil business. Captain Rotch sailed as master of his uncle Joseph Rotch's ships for many years.

It is thought he had several children. Elisha C. Leonard, a New Bedford genealogist, conjectured there were sons Benjamin and Joseph. In 1837 two daughters, only surviving heirs-at-law and next of kin of Captain Joseph Rotch, sold the above mentioned future Robinson property. The daughters were:

1400a. i. MARY ROTCH, b. 1772; d. in New Bedford March 19, 1837. Unmarried. She lived in the house, still standing, at the northeast corner of Walnut and Sixth Streets, in the northern portion, her married sister Nancy Rotch and husband occupying the Walnut Street side.

The diary of Elizabeth Dorr, a teacher in the Friends Academy, has the following account of Miss Rotch's funeral: "Tuesday, March 21, 1837. Mary Rotch was buried this afternoon, and it being the first Quaker funeral I ever witnessed there was a degree of curiosity to see their management, which after all seemed very like that of other sects, save that the hearse was drab coloured, the top arched lowly, and the coffin plain."

1400b. ii. NANCY ROTCH, b. Oct. 26, 1776; d. in New Bedford April 23, 1867, in her ninety-first year; m. Dec. 21, 1815, her father's cousin, Francis<sup>3</sup> Rotch, (See No. 5), son of Joseph<sup>2</sup> Rotch.

## Descendants of Samuel<sup>3</sup> Rotch of Boston

1402. SAMUEL<sup>3</sup> ROTCH (*Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Benjamin and Martha Rotch of Provincetown, Mass., and Boston, was born probably about 1737, and probably died by 1794, when his son Samuel was married without the designation of Junior. He married in Boston Aug. 20, 1761, Lucy Atwood, apparently making his home in Boston from childhood. The name of only one son has been ascertained, as follows:

1403. i. SAMUEL ROTCH, b. in January, 1764; d. 1811 or 1812.

1403. SAMUEL<sup>4</sup> ROTCH (*Samuel<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Samuel and Lucy (Atwood) Rotch, was born in Boston in January, 1764, and died in 1811 or 1812. He left home early in life, and followed the sea for some years. Returning to Boston he worked first as a rope maker and afterward engaged in trade. He married Aug. 19, 1794, Susannah Johnson, born 1770, died 1853.

Information establishing the identities of Samuel<sup>3</sup> and Samuel<sup>4</sup> Rotch came from William Rotch, Jr., of New Bedford, in statements made in 1838 to John D. Rotch, father of William J. Rotch of Martha's Vineyard, and recorded in the Leonard Papers in the New Bedford Public Library.

### Children:

1404. i. WILLIAM ROTCH, b. 1800; d. 1849; m. Sylvia Leach. A merchant in Boston.
1405. ii. ELIZABETH ROTCH, b. 1802; d. 1865; m. James Averill.
1406. iii. MATTHEW GRIFFIN ROTCH, b. 1806; d. 1878.
1407. iv. ALBERT ATWOOD ROTCH, b. 1810; d. 1883; m. (1) Rhoda Keith; (2) Sarah Spare. Residence, Easton, Mass.
1408. v. MARY ANNE ROTCH, b. 1810; m. George W. Allan of Boston.
1409. vi. SAMUEL ROTCH, died at sea.
1410. vii. THOMAS ROTCH, died at sea.
1411. viii. JOSEPH ROTCH, died at sea.
1412. ix. Son, d. in infancy.

1406. MATTHEW GRIFFIN<sup>5</sup> ROTCH (*Samuel<sup>4</sup>, Samuel<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Samuel and Susannah (Johnson) Rotch, was born in Boston in 1806 and died in 1878. He was long a respected citizen of Mont Vernon, N. H. He married Tamesin Hale Fuller, b. 1804, daughter of Nathan Fuller of Amherst, N. H.

### Children:

1413. i. MARIA ADELAIDE ROTCH, b. Jan. 25, 1837; d. Jan. 2, 1877. She was of good intellectual endowment and fine education. She taught school

in various sections of Vermont and Massachusetts until her health failed.

1414. ii. ALBERT ATWOOD ROTCH, b. May 5, 1840; d. Dec. 10, 1892.

1414. ALBERT ATWOOD<sup>6</sup> ROTCH (*Matthew G.<sup>5</sup>, Samuel<sup>4</sup>, Samuel<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Matthew G. and Tamesin H. (Fuller) Rotch, was born at Mont Vernon, N. H., May 5, 1840, and died Dec. 10, 1892. For many years he was a resident of Amherst, N. H. He married Helen Reade Boylston, daughter of Edward D. Boylston, with whom he was long associated in the newspaper (*Farmers' Cabinet*) and printing business. In addition he carried on a stock brokerage business. For several years he was Town Clerk of Amherst and represented the town in the General Court of New Hampshire.

Son:

1415. i. WILLIAM BOYLSTON ROTCH, b. June 6, 1859; d. December, 1934.

1415. WILLIAM BOYLSTON<sup>7</sup> ROTCH (*Albert A.<sup>6</sup>, Matthew G.<sup>5</sup>, Samuel<sup>4</sup>, Samuel<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Albert A. and Helen R. (Boylston) Rotch, was born in Amherst, N. H., June 6, 1859, and died in Milford, N. H., in December, 1934. He married Oct. 17, 1882, Grace Marston Burrell, born March 10, 1864, died in April, 1942, daughter of Joseph W. and Susan C. Burrell of Weymouth, Mass. He engaged with his father and grandfather in printing and publishing business which he moved to Milford, N. H., in 1892, and in 1895 he changed his residence to Milford. Member of New Hampshire Legislature, 1893-1894. Served in various state and town offices, and on staff of Governor George A. Ramsdell, 1898-1899, with rank of Colonel.

Son:

1416. i. ARTHUR BOYLSTON ROTCH, b. March 24, 1887.

1416. ARTHUR BOYLSTON<sup>8</sup> ROTCH (*William B.<sup>7</sup>, Albert A.<sup>6</sup>, Matthew G.<sup>5</sup>, Samuel<sup>4</sup>, Samuel<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of William B. and Grace M. (Burrell) Rotch, was born in Amherst, N. H., March 24, 1887. Dartmouth, 1908. He married April 9, 1910, Serena Hoffman Elliman, born in New Brighton, N. Y., June 25, 1887, daughter of Arthur Benbow and Mary Stuart (Gilman) Elliman of Staten Island, N. Y. For a time in the real estate business in New York City Mr. Rotch in 1910 became associated with his father in the printing and publishing business, and subsequently was a partner with his son William B. Rotch in The Cabinet Press, newspaper publishers and printers. He also operates an insurance business. He is president of Souhegan National Bank; associate justice of Municipal Court at Milford, N. H.; has been trustee of State Normal Schools; and Major, aide-de-camp, on staff of Governor Charles W. Tobey, 1929-1930. Residence, Milford, N. H.

## Children, born in Milford:

1417. i. WILLIAM BOYLSTON ROTCH, II, b. March 28, 1916.  
1418. ii. HELEN GILMAN ROTCH, b. Jan. 1, 1921.

1417. WILLIAM BOYLSTON<sup>9</sup> ROTCH, II (*Arthur B.<sup>8</sup>, William B.<sup>7</sup>, Albert A.<sup>6</sup>, Matthew G.<sup>5</sup>, Samuel<sup>4</sup>, Samuel<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), son of Arthur B. and Serena H. (Elliman) Rotch, was born in Milford, N. H., March 28, 1916. Dartmouth, 1937. He married Sept. 7, 1940, Martha McLane, born July 4, 1915, daughter of Clinton A. and Dorothy (Ellingwood) McLane of Concord, N. H. In World War II he served for two years in the United States Naval Reserve, with ranks of Ensign and Lieutenant (j.g.). Residence, Milford, N. H.

## Children, born in Manchester, N. H.:

1419. i. PETER BOYLSTON ROTCH, b. June 6, 1941.  
1420. ii. MARTHA ROTCH, b. Dec. 12, 1942.  
1421. iii. ELIZABETH ROTCH, b. Nov. 4, 1946.

1418. HELEN GILMAN<sup>9</sup> ROTCH (*Arthur B.<sup>8</sup>, William B.<sup>7</sup>, Albert A.<sup>6</sup>, Matthew G.<sup>5</sup>, Samuel<sup>4</sup>, Samuel<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*), daughter of Arthur B. and Serena H. (Elliman) Rotch, was born in Milford, N. H., Jan. 1, 1921. She attended Middlebury College. She married Oct. 4, 1941, William Ferguson, III, born April 12, 1919, son of William, Jr., and Grace (Arnzen) Ferguson, of Fall River, Mass. He served in the Navy in World War II, with rank of Lieutenant (j.g.). Residence, Milford, N. H.

## Sons:

1422. i. WILLIAM ROTCH FERGUSON, b. Feb. 14, 1943.  
1423. ii. JOHN BENBOW FERGUSON, b. Aug. 15, 1947.



## Index of Names

References are to page numbers. Insertion of names is restricted to those used in a genealogical sense, or having an explicit bearing on the stories and writings of members of the Rotch family. Women are indexed under their maiden names, except in the few instances where such are unknown. Figures in parentheses indicate year of birth.

- Adams, Amos, 421.  
Arthur, 490.  
Elizabeth, 421.  
John Quincy, 490.  
William C., 548.  
Alden, John, 422.  
Alldis, Amy, 426.  
Alexander, Henry M., 437.  
Katherine, 437.  
Allan, George W., 551.  
Allen, Carrie C., 549.  
Charles C., 549.  
Emily, 529.  
Louise B., 440.  
Lucy, 535.  
Mary A., 494.  
William W., 548.  
Zachariah, 494.  
Alline, Henry, 550.  
Jane, 16, 25, 68, 76, 408, 550.  
Almy, Audrey, 28.  
"Bunny," 168.  
Harker, 168.  
Susan, 28.  
Susan G., 437.  
Sylvia A., 437.  
William, 437.  
William (1900), 437.  
William, III, 437.  
Ames, David (1912), 489.  
David (1941), 489.  
Frederick L., 489.  
John S., 489.  
William M., 489.  
Anderson, Edward C., 418.  
Margaret R., 418.  
Nellie, 528.
- Andre, Major John, 180.  
Angier, John, 413.  
Joseph, 80, 103, 109, 413.  
Josephine, 413, 416, 417.  
Rebecca, 413.  
William R., 413, 416.  
Anne Monica, Sister, 151, 152, 446.  
See Anne R. Hudson.  
Anthony, Joseph R., 410, 539.  
William R., 410.  
Antons, Mr., 549.  
Arnold, Anna, 103.  
Aunt, 386.  
Eliza H., 494.  
Elizabeth R., 129, 366, 410, 412.  
James, 18, 38, 74, 78, 80, 81, 101,  
106, 109, 110, 362, 364, 365, 376,  
378, 409, 410, 412, 421.  
Mary, 429.  
Thomas, 376, 409.  
Arnzen, Grace, 553.  
Ashley, A. Davis, 439.  
Clifford W., 439.  
Jane R., 28, 439.  
Mary E., 436.  
Pauline C., 28, 439.  
Phoebe W., 28, 439.  
Astor, Charlotte A., 499.  
Atwood, Lucy, 551.  
Austin, Joseph, 20.  
Averill, James, 551.  
Ayres, Mary, 462.
- Bacon, Eleanor G., 541.  
Gaspar G., 488.  
Martha B., 488.  
William B. (1910), 488.

- Bacon (*continued*)  
     William B. (1940), 488.
- Baird, Samuel B. D., 441.  
     William J., 441.  
     William J. (1899), 441.  
     William J. (1924), 441.
- Baker, Isabelle C., 522.  
     Sir Robert, 54.
- Balch, Sarah B., 474.
- Baldwin, Howard L., 488.  
     Ian (1912), 487.  
     Ian (1938), 488.
- Joseph C., 487.  
     Michael, 488.  
     Philip W., 488.
- Bamforth, Beatrice, 483.  
     Charles H., 483.  
     Charles S., 476.  
     Edith M. L., 476.  
     Marian L., 476.
- Barclay, A. Charles, 459.  
     Anne W., 459, 466, 467.  
     Barbara, 466.  
     Caroline S., 459, 466.  
     Charles M., 467.  
     Charles W., 459, 467.  
     Claudia J., 467.  
     Robert, 189.  
     William L. (1868), 459.  
     William L. (1899), 459, 466.  
     William L. (1929), 466.
- Barker, Diana J., 449.  
     Elizabeth, 33, 84, 111-124, 126,  
         130, 133, 138, 139, 140-150, 152,  
         193, 194, 230, 256, 264, 314, 316-  
         318, 323, 326, 329, 330-346, 348,  
         349, 350, 352, 443.
- Geoffrey C., 449.
- Josiah, 33, 112, 207, 443.
- Lydia, 112.
- Mary, 112.
- Barlow, Abigail, 547.  
     Anne, 12, 547.  
     Joseph, 547.
- Barnes, Eugenie, 482.
- Barney, Benjamin, 30, 408.  
     Elizabeth, 13, 30, 38, 39, 72, 84,  
         112, 121, 141, 193, 199, 314,  
         331, 332, 353, 354, 360, 408, 441.
- Barrell, Olive, 412.
- Barrett, Ada, 448.
- Barry, Gerald V. O., 529.  
     Helen B., 529.
- Bartlett, Louisa, 475.
- Barton, Charles S., 478.  
     John Rhea, 26, 411, 412.  
     Nancy E., 478.
- Bates, Alfred E., 429.  
     Eliza M., 429.  
     Elizabeth A., 519.  
     Margaret, 455.
- Bayard, Alice H., 423.  
     Louis P., 423, 481.  
     Louis P., Jr., 423.  
     Martha P., 423, 481.
- Bayne, Gayle, 468.  
     Hugh G., 468.
- Beaman, Alice W., 512.  
     Anna G., 512.  
     Barbara E., 517.  
     Constance, 517.  
     Edmund A., 512.  
     George B. (1870), 512.  
     George B. (1905), 512, 517.  
     George B. (1929), 517.  
     Mrs. George B. See Burnham, Mary.  
     Joanna, 517.  
     Peter H., 517.  
     Richard B., 512, 517.
- Bedford, Duke of, 12.
- Behney, Ada, 462.
- Bell, Margaret E., 504.
- Bellows, Anne F., 510.
- Bement, Gertrude, 437.
- Benediktscottir, Elin, 516.
- Benson, Nina L., 461.
- Beverley, Mary, 459.
- Biddle, Clement, 16, 22, 407, 408.  
     Francis, 22, 408.
- Bidwell, David D., 483.  
     John S., 483.  
     Raymond B., 483.
- Bigelow, Albert F., 486.  
     Albert S., 428, 486.  
     Kate, 486.  
     Katharine, 150, 413.  
     Lisa B., 486.  
     Mary DeF., 486.
- Bignette, Grace, 421.
- Binney, Horace, 416.  
     William, 416, 417.
- Bird, Charles Sumner, III, 480.

- Black, Eliza I., 456.  
 Samuel W., 456.  
 Blain, Daniel (1898), 465.  
 Daniel (1938), 465.  
 John M., 465.  
 Blair, Charles H., 504.  
 Elizabeth C., 504.  
 Blake, Gerald, 434.  
 Patricia, 434.  
 Bliss, Cornelius N., 544.  
 Elizabeth A., 543, 544.  
 Margaret, 490.  
 Blockman, Barbara, 504.  
 Boas, Daniel D., 455.  
 Sarah T., 455.  
 Boenning, Harry D. S., 469.  
 Henry D., 469.  
 Dickson G., 469.  
 Bolling, Anne T., 500.  
 Cecilia R., 500.  
 Diana, 500.  
 Patricia, 500, 506, 507.  
 Raynal C. (1877), 500.  
 Raynal C. (1910), 500.  
 Sanford C., 500.  
 Bond, Mrs. George, 126.  
 Louis H. S., 482.  
 Norman J., 482.  
 Stephen N., 482.  
 Borden, Mary, 36, 74, 82, 84, 85, 450.  
 Boswell, Dennis, 447.  
 Gerald, 447.  
 Julia, 449.  
 Lennox, 166.  
 Lennox A. K., 447, 448, 449.  
 William, 449.  
 William A., 447.  
 Bowne, John, 146.  
 Bowden, Helen, 460.  
 Boyce, Mrs. Helen, 448.  
 Helen S., 156, 157.  
 Boyer, John St. A., 440.  
 Richard G., 440.  
 Boykin, Katharine W., 461 .  
 Thomas W., 461.  
 Boylston, Edward D., 552.  
 Helen R., 552.  
 Bradley, Helen, 426.  
 Richards M., 426.  
 Susan V., 515.  
 Brayton, Lincoln D., 436.  
 Stephen K., 436.  
 William L. S., 436.  
 Brean, Mabel, 505.  
 Brewer, Ellen, 417.  
 Brewster, Charles O., 526.  
 Charles O. (1856), 526.  
 Elizabeth, 526, 528, 529.  
 Ellen H., 545.  
 George W. W., 544.  
 Henry H., 544, 545.  
 Horatio H. (1900), 28, 526, 528.  
 Horatio H. (1943), 28, 528.  
 James H., 28, 528.  
 Marion, 28, 528.  
 Rodman P., 545.  
 Brigham, Lincoln F., 422.  
 Lucy F., 422.  
 Brock, Frances L., 418.  
 Brown, Edward M., 466.  
 Elizabeth H., 533, 536.  
 Frederick R. (1882), 533.  
 Frederick R. (1924), 533.  
 Frederick W., 533.  
 Lloyd T., 466.  
 Marian W., 466.  
 Mary, 409.  
 Priscilla H., 533, 536.  
 Rebecca H., 533.  
 Thornton, 466.  
 Browning, Ellen M., 430.  
 Mary R., 459.  
 Bryant, Cynthia P., 506.  
 John W., 506.  
 Lincoln, 506.  
 Rose S., 506.  
 Rose S. (1944), 506.  
 Sarah, 474.  
 Buckley, George S., 524.  
 Margaret S., 464.  
 Budington, Ethel H., 435.  
 Bullard Family, 421-423.  
 Bullard, Anna, 421.  
 Benjamin (c. 1630), 421.  
 Charles A., 422.  
 Emily, 421, 431.  
 George, 421.  
 Helen R., 421, 430.  
 Henry, 421.  
 Henry A., 422.  
 John, 421.  
 John (1678), 421.

- Bullard (*continued*)  
 John (1756), 421.  
 John (1784), 421, 422.  
 John C., 28, 168, 170, 430, 439,  
 440.  
 John K., 440.  
 John L., 420, 422, 423.  
 John M., 28, 68, 79, 96, 97, 105,  
 107, 140, 146, 151, 152, 154-157,  
 169, 170, 421, 429, 430, 481.  
 John P., 422.  
 John T., 27, 110, 420, 421, 422.  
 Lucy F., 423, 481.  
 Lydia G., 421, 431.  
 Lyman G., 431.  
 Peter, 431.  
 Robert (c. 1600), 421.  
 Royal, 422.  
 Sally, 168-172, 430.  
 Sarah, 168-172, 430.  
 Sarah S., 422.  
 William (c. 1562), 421.  
 William R. (1893), 421, 430, 431.  
 William R. (1926), 431.  
 Buller, Henry, 421.  
 John, 421.  
 John, Jr., 421.  
 Margaret, 421.  
 William, 421.  
 Burgess, Elizabeth, 543.  
 Theodore P., 543.  
 Burnham, Alfred W. (1881), 510, 512,  
 513.  
 Alfred W. (1909), 513, 518.  
 Alice McC., 513.  
 Alice E., 510.  
 Barbara, 513, 518, 519.  
 Clara W., 510, 513.  
 Edwin, 510.  
 Elinor, 510, 512.  
 Ethel, 517.  
 Jane W., 513.  
 Lewis T., 510.  
 Margaret N., 510.  
 Mary, 510, 512.  
 Mary A., 513, 518.  
 Nancy G., 513, 519.  
 Philip W., 510, 513.  
 Burr, Mary E., 513.  
 Burrell, Grace M., 552.  
 Joseph W., 552.
- Susan C., 552.  
 Butcher, Alice, 465.  
 Ellen E., 457.  
 Butler, Elizabeth, 436.  
 Morgan, 436.  
 Pierce, 457.  
 Sarah, 457.  
 William M., 436.  
 Buttrick, Mary G., 476.  
 Buxton, Anthony M., 435.  
 Charles L., 435.  
 Edward R., 435.  
 Edward T., 435.  
 Katherine L., 435.  
 Timothy L., 435.  
 Caccia, Fabio G., 540.  
 Campbell, Abbie M., 438.  
 Carpenter, Alice, 513.  
 Elizabeth R. F., 454, 457.  
 George W., 454.  
 George W., Jr., 454.  
 Letitia E., 454, 456, 457.  
 Carson, Betty, 470.  
 William M., 470.  
 Carvill, Ada L., 536.  
 Catherine, Sister. See Catherine Maria  
 Rotch.  
 Cavendish, George S. G., 464.  
 Henry F. C., 464.  
 Cawdor, Lady, 118, 146, 147, 341.  
 Cawdor, Lord, 118, 119, 146, 147,  
 148, 155, 324, 326, 341, 342.  
 Chadwick, Margaret G., 494.  
 Chandler, Barbara, 490.  
 John, 490.  
 Reuben G., 542.  
 Virginia G., 542.  
 Chanler, Hester M., 480.  
 Winthrop A., 480.  
 Channing, Mary R., 454.  
 William Ellery, 454.  
 Chapman, Barbara, 528.  
 Charlotte, Queen, 144.  
 Chatfield-Taylor, Adelaide C., 434.  
 Cheston, C. Morris, 470.  
 Edward M., 470.  
 Chichester, Arthur M., 459.  
 Arthur M. (1867), 459.  
 Child, Mrs. Ellen L., 544.  
 Church, Muriel V., 433.

- Churchill, Winston, 480.  
 Claghorn, George, 219, 221, 241, 255,  
     260.  
 Clapp, Mary, 508.  
 Clark, Abraham, 439.  
     Alice, 509.  
     Eleanor, 468.  
     Francis J., 439.  
     Harriet, 416.  
 Clay, Edith, 439.  
 Cleary, Alyce L., 507.  
     Thomas J., 507.  
 Clifford, John H., 109, 422.  
 Clinton, Sir Henry, 17, 179, 180.  
 Cobb, Ambrose, 445.  
     Charles K., 431.  
     Sir Cyril, 445, 446, 447.  
     Emily M., 431.  
     Ernest, 445, 446.  
     Hannah W., 489.  
     James F., 445.  
     Lydia B., 431, 440.  
     Robert C. (1893), 431.  
     Robert C. (1926), 431.  
     Zaidee C., 544.  
 Cochran, Julia, 514.  
     Susan, 483.  
 Cochrane, Mrs. A. Lynde, 480.  
     Alexander L., 480.  
     Jean, 480.  
     Lucy D., 480.  
     Nancy, 480.  
 Codman, Cora, 481.  
 Coffin, Deborah, 7, 407.  
     George, 348.  
     Tristram, 30.  
 Collier, Sir George, 179, 180.  
 Collins, Minerva, 514.  
     Francis M., 514.  
 Coleran, Marianne, 501.  
 Colt, George DeW., 417.  
     Lisette DeW., 417.  
 Comstock, Elbert E., 518.  
     Elbert L., 518.  
     Lawrence E., 518.  
 Conkling, Olivia, 503.  
 Cook, Maurice E., 522.  
     Maurice E. (1921), 522.  
 Cooke, Jay, 461.  
     Jay (1897), 461.  
     John, 9, 10.
- Mary Ellen, 461.  
 Nina, 461, 467, 468.  
 Cooper, Henry E. (1922), 521, 522.  
     Henry E. (1945), 522.  
     Wallace M., 522.  
 Corbett, Geraldine W., 438.  
     Joseph B., 438.  
 Cornell, Gideon, Sr., 16, 407.  
     Gideon (1740), 407.  
     Mrs. Rebecca, 16, 21, 22, 61, 407.  
     Rebecca (1755), 16, 22, 41, 219,  
     407.  
 Cousins, Alice M., 483.  
 Cox, Elizabeth, 417.  
 Craig, Josephine W., 532.  
     William, 532.  
 Crandall, Dana I., 519.  
     Irving B., 519.  
     Irving B. (1946), 519.  
 Crane, Andrew R., 497.  
     Walter S., 496.  
     Walter S., Jr., 496.  
     Walter S., III, 497.  
     William P., 497.  
 Crapo, Catherine, 107, 155-157, 170,  
     430.  
     Henry H. (1804), 18, 19.  
     Henry H. (1862), 10, 106, 107,  
     168.  
     Stanford T., 106, 107, 430.  
     William W., 18, 19, 106.  
 Crawford, William, Jr., 486.  
     William, III, 486.  
 Crommelin, Henri, 530.  
     Julie E., 530.  
 Crooks, Anne, 440.  
 Crosby, Harriet, 474.  
 Crowell, Frances Maree, 156, 448.  
     John R., 448.  
 Crowninshield, Anna, 474.  
 Cuffee, Captain Paul, 37.  
 Culver, Stella B., 512.  
 Cummings, Emily A., 432.  
 Curtis, Ralph, 417.
- Dale, Maida W., 468.  
     Robert W., 468.  
     Robert W. (1920), 468.  
 Daniels, ———, 547.  
 Darling, Daniel, 5, 407.  
 Dasburg, Andrew M., 461.

- Dasburg (*continued*)  
 Michel, 461.  
 Davern, Elizabeth, 433.  
 Davey, Hester M., 479.  
     Vernon L., 479.  
 Davis, Anne O., 540.  
     Caroline, 433.  
     Caroline H., 424, 432, 433.  
     Caspar W., 433.  
     Dudley, 537.  
     Elizabeth J., 433, 442.  
     Fellowes, 537.  
     Kate F. J., 433, 442.  
     Mary H., 432, 441.  
     Michael H., 441.  
     Morgan F., 537.  
     Priscilla, 432, 441.  
     Rebecca, 547.  
     Robert H., 424, 433.  
     Rose G., 537.  
     Ruth L., 536.  
     Samuel Boyer, 424.  
     Samuel Boyer (1875), 424, 432.  
     Samuel Boyer (1913), 432, 441.  
     Samuel Boyer (1941), 441.  
     Susannah L., 537.  
     Sussex D. (1838), 423, 424.  
     Sussex D. (1881), 424.  
 Dawson, Captain, 177, 178.  
 Dayton, Alice S., 469.  
     Mary S., 464, 468.  
     Samuel Grey (1892), 464.  
     Samuel Grey (1921), 464, 468,  
     469.  
     William C., 464.  
 de Acosta, Marie, 498.  
     Ricardo, 498.  
 Dean, Dorothea, 541.  
     John, 450.  
     Rebecca, 450.  
     William, 31, 250, 252, 360, 450.  
 de Birmingham, Ella DuM., 529.  
     Count Henri, 529.  
 DeCamp, Sarah, 503.  
 de Comminges, Comte Aimery, 502.  
     Aimery G. E. P., 502.  
     Comte Bertrand, 502.  
     Elie P., 502.  
     Jeanodon S. R., 502.  
     Julianne M. T. C. A., 502.  
     Marguerite N. M. J., 502, 507.  
 Nahida M. O. F., 502.  
 de la Haut, Marie C. H. J., 495.  
 Delano, Charles H. L., 422.  
 de Montgomery, Comte Alan, 501.  
     Comte Louis, 501.  
     Philip, 501.  
     Robert, 501.  
 Denney, Elizabeth, 488.  
 Derby, Mary J., 541.  
 de St. Lambert, Marthe D., 501.  
 Devereaux, Lindley R., 471.  
     Walter B., 470.  
     Walter B. (1881), 470.  
     Walter B. (1910), 470, 471.  
 de Waldner, Nahida, 502.  
 Dickason, Thomas, 50, 72, 216, 222,  
     236, 237, 256, 342.  
 Digby, Admiral, 183, 184, 186.  
 d'Invilliers, Sabine, 455.  
 Disston, Diana, 471.  
     Jacob S., 471.  
 Dodd, Marjorie, 503.  
 Donaldson, Frederick E., 544.  
     Frederick E. (1911), 544.  
 Dondero, Rose, 513.  
 Dorin, Mary A., 507.  
 Drayton, Caroline A., 499.  
     James C., 499.  
 Drinker, John, 415.  
     Annie M., 415.  
     John H., 387, 415.  
     “Sister,” 270.  
 Driver, Frederick J. D., 447, 448.  
     Maria S. E., 119, 447, 448.  
 Dudley, Myra A., 482.  
 Duff, Mark M., 79, 96.  
 Dumaine, Ann, 122, 123, 150, 279.  
 Dunn, Anna C. R., 416.  
     Charles H., 416.  
     Cynthia, 480.  
     Robert S., 416, 424.  
     Theophilus C., 416.  
     Thomas, 416.  
 Durfee, Sarah D., 495.  
 Dutcher, Katharine S., 436.  
     Pierpont E., 436.  
 Dwight, William, 494.  
     William (1831), 494.  
     William A., 494, 496.  
 Eaton, Elizabeth S., 485.

- Eaton (*continued*)  
   Lucien, 485.  
 Einarsson, Alfred W., 516.  
   Elizabeth, 516, 522.  
   Johann, 516.  
   John R., 516.  
   Margaret, 516.  
   Sturla, 516.
- Eisenhauer, Alta D., 462.  
   Elmer, 462.
- Eldredge, Anna R., 476, 482.  
   Arthur S. (1860), 476.  
   Arthur S., (1897), 476, 483.  
   Arthur S. (1923), 483.  
   Ellen W., 476, 482.  
   Emma M., 476, 482.  
   Ida B., 476, 482, 483.  
   James T., 476.  
   Josephine S., 483.  
   Maria, 424.
- Elfreth, Elizabeth H., 529.  
   William H., 529.
- Eliot, Hannah D., 417.  
   Mary, R., 418.  
   Thomas Dawes, 96, 97, 418.  
   Mrs. Thomas Dawes, 96.
- Elkins, Carol, 486.  
   William L., 486.  
   William L. (1932), 486.  
   William M., 486.
- Ellicott, Jonathan, 453.  
   Letitia H., 453.
- Elliman, Arthur B., 552.  
   Serena H., 552.
- Ellingwood, Dorothy, 553.
- Ely, Corina C., 481.  
   William, 481.
- Emerson, George, 379.  
   George B., 80, 410, 412.  
   Lucy, 381.  
   Ralph Waldo, 92, 94, 95, 96, 149.
- Emmet, Kathleen, 489.  
   Richard S., 489.  
   William T., 489.
- Emmons, Mary, 541.  
   Nathaniel H., 541.
- Eustis, Frederick A., 454.  
   Mary R., 454.
- Fair, Virginia G., 433, 434.
- Farnsworth, Charles, 439.  
   Charles W., 439.  
   Edith E., 439.  
   Ronald C., 439.
- Farrar, Gussie, 448.  
   John, 27, 92, 121, 123, 126, 127,  
   129, 130, 133, 149, 345-351, 444.  
   Samuel, 444.
- Fassett, Katherine, 490.
- Fawkes, Mary M., 496.
- Fay, Alan M., 475.  
   Edward M., 475.  
   Elise H., 480, 491.  
   Henry H., 478.  
   Hope, 480.  
   Joseph S., 474.  
   Joseph S. (1847), 474, 475.  
   Joseph S. (1871), 475, 479.  
   Margaret, 478.  
   Mary R., 480, 491.  
   S[amuel] Prescott (1884), 575,  
   479, 480.  
   S[amuel] Prescott (1926), 480.  
   Sarah B., 480.  
   William R., 475, 480.
- Febiger, Katharine, 465.
- Ferguson, John B., 553.  
   William, 553.
- Field, John, 536.  
   John W. (1914), 536.  
   John W. (1944), 536.  
   Margaret W., 536.  
   Mary, 411.
- Filley, Nancy M., 489.
- Fingal, Earl of, 446.
- Fisher, Bernice, 436.  
   Charles W., 453.  
   Elizabeth R., 453.
- Ellicott, 454.
- George L., 453.
- Harvey F., 454.
- Lindley, 453.
- Mary R. (1822), 453, 469.

- Fisher (*continued*)  
 Mary R. (1838), 454.  
 S. R., 360.  
 Sarah E., 453.  
 Sarah L., 453.  
 Sarah L. (1806), 453, 454.  
 Thomas, 453.  
 Thomas R., 453, 454.  
 William L. (1781), 453, 469.  
 William L. (1832), 453.
- Fitch, Emilie C., 464.
- Fitzpatrick, Teresa H., 530.
- Fleming, William T., 486.  
 William T. (1899), 486.
- Fleeming, Caroline, 412, 415, 416.
- Deborah, 53, 54, 408.  
 John W. C., 39, 54, 65-68, 161,  
 412.
- Foote, Arthur D., 429.  
 Elizabeth T., 429.  
 Mary Hallock, 429.
- Forbes, Alexander, 435.  
 Elizabeth D., 471.  
 Janet, 435.  
 Reginald D., 471.
- Foster, Barbara, 543.  
 Charles H. W., 543.  
 Harriet E., 505.  
 William, 377.
- Fox, Eliza M. (1890), 470.  
 Emily R. (1887), 470.  
 Emily R. (1928), 471.  
 Hannah, 469.  
 Joseph M., 469.  
 Joseph M. (1850), 469.  
 Joseph M. (1853), 469, 470.  
 Joseph M. (1926), 471.  
 Mary L., 470.  
 Samuel M., 469.  
 Sarah L., 469.  
 William L. (1851), 469.  
 William L. (1892), 470, 471.
- Francis, Harriet S., 479.
- Frazer, David W., 468.  
 Elizabeth C., 461, 468.  
 Persifor, 461.  
 Persifor (1900), 461.  
 Persifor (1921), 461, 468.  
 Persifor (1946), 468.
- Fremont-Smith, Dorrothy, 481, 482.  
 Frank, 482.
- French, Annah C., 442.  
 Margaret, 432.
- Frenchick, Anna, 520.
- Frothingham, Channing, 426.  
 Channing (1881), 170, 426.  
 Channing (1907), 426, 434.  
 Channing (1939), 434.  
 Joseph R. (1910), 28, 426, 435.  
 Joseph R. (1942), 28, 435.  
 Martha, 28, 435.  
 Mary E., 426, 434.  
 Thomas E., 426.  
 Timothy G., 426.  
 Virginia, 426, 435.  
 William R., 426.
- Fry, Joseph, 142.
- Fuller, Margaret, 95, 96, 130, 149.  
 Nathan, 551.  
 Tamesin H., 551.
- Furnald, Henry N., 435.  
 Henry N., Jr., 435, 436.  
 Lindsey L., 436.  
 Rodman A., 436.
- Furness, Caroline, 433.  
 Horace H., 433.
- Gallon, Mary E., 521.
- Gardiner, Alison, 488.  
 Evelyn F., 505.  
 Frederic M., 505.  
 Robert H., 488.  
 Robert H. (1914), 488.  
 Robert H. (1944), 488.
- Gardner, Bertrand S., 496.  
 Edmund, 422.  
 Lydia H., 422.
- Garland, Jerome B., 153, 446.  
 Mary, 92, 97, 153, 390, 403, 404,  
 446.
- Garnett, Anne W., 466, 469.  
 James M., 466.  
 James M. (1925), 466.  
 Muscoe R. H., 466.  
 Steven H., 466.
- Gatchell, Mrs. Mary T., 454.
- Gebhard, Jean, 536.  
 Karl, 537.
- Gedney, Mary, 4, 407.
- Gellatly, Adelaide, 448.
- George III, King, 144, 145.
- Gerhard, Albert P., 464.

- Gerhard (*continued*)  
 Barbara, 464.  
 Gerrish, Elizabeth, 426.  
 Gifford, George G., 548.  
 Mary, 92, 93, 94, 96.  
 Mary I., 529.  
 Nelson D., 529.  
 Nelson D. (1900), 529.  
 Warren, 93.  
 Gilbert, Catherine W., 153, 445.  
 Samuel C., 445.  
 Gilman, Mary S., 552.  
 Glass, Alonzo H., 514.  
 Anne W., 521.  
 Arthur W., 514, 520.  
 Charles W., 514.  
 Edward H. (1917), 514, 521.  
 Edward H. (1945), 521.  
 Elbridge W., 514.  
 Ronald W., 520.  
 Glendinning, Elizabeth C. (1897), 457.  
 Elizabeth C. (1930), 461.  
 Ellen, 457, 461.  
 Katharine W. (1937), 461.  
 Mary F., 457, 460, 461.  
 Robert, 457.  
 Robert (1867), 457.  
 Robert (1903), 457, 461.  
 Glyn, William E., 416.  
 Goddard, Charlotte H., 417.  
 Clara J., 462.  
 Herbert, 462.  
 Goethals, George R. (1886), 525, 526, 527.  
 George R. (1944), 530.  
 George W. (1858), 525.  
 George W. (1920), 527, 529, 530.  
 Henry W., 527.  
 John L., 525.  
 Karen M., 530.  
 Peter R., 527.  
 Thomas R. (1890), 525, 527.  
 Thomas R. (1920), 527.  
 Gold, Katharine, 436.  
 Goodrich, Mary W., 497.  
 Goodwin, Eleanor G., 476.  
 Frank, 476.  
 Grant, Flora, 430.  
 Gray, Francis C., 430.  
 Francis C., Jr., 430.
- Henrietta, 496.  
 John B., 430.  
 Morris, 430.  
 Morris (1921), 430, 440.  
 Morris (1946), 440.  
 Green, Hetty, 411.  
 Greene, Caleb, 262.  
 Greenleaf, Hilda, 430.  
 Lyman B., 430.  
 Greenough, Lawrence R., 426.  
 Malcolm S., 425.  
 Malcolm W., 425.  
 Malcolm W., Jr., 426.  
 Gregory, Mary C., 534.  
 Mary P., 470.  
 Grell, Ella L., 477.  
 Greville, Sir Charles, 111, 115, 120, 146, 147, 321, 322, 324, 327, 334, 338, 340, 341, 342.  
 Grew, Edward W., 544.  
 John (1907), 544.  
 John (1936), 544.  
 Nathaniel, 544.  
 Grey, Julia R., 464.  
 Grier, Claudia, 465.  
 Griffitts, Hannah, 388, 415, 446.  
 Grinnell, Alexandra, 437.  
 Barbara, 428, 437.  
 Charlotte I., 435.  
 Edmund, 429.  
 Elizabeth S., 437.  
 Emily M., 428.  
 Frederick, 428.  
 Joseph G., 419.  
 Josephine G., 107, 419.  
 Lawrence (1885), 428.  
 Lawrence (1909), 428, 436, 437.  
 Lawrence (1939), 437.  
 Moses, 422.  
 Peter S. (1912), 428, 437.  
 Peter S. (1937), 437.  
 Richard, 437.  
 Sarah H., 422.  
 Susan W., 428, 429.  
 Sylvia, 28, 428, 437.  
 Grosjean, Charles A., 487.  
 Claire, 487.  
 Daphne, 487.  
 Michelle, 487.  
 Paul, 487.  
 Grossman, Dorothy, 482.

- Grosvenor, Alice M., 537.  
 Guest, Winston F. C., 480.  
 Guild, Bayard, 481.  
   Edward M. (1894), 475, 481.  
   Edward M. (1930), 481.  
   Ellen (1930), 481.  
   Ellen M. (1891), 475.  
   Henry R. (1896), 421, 423, 475,  
     481.  
   Henry R. (1928), 481.  
   Samuel E., 475.  
   Samuel E. (1850), 475.  
   Samuel E. (1892), 475, 481.  
   Samuel E. (1928), 481.  
   Sheila, 481.  
 Guldenstolpe, Count August Ferron,  
   446.  
 Gurney, Elizabeth, 142.  
 Gush, Amelia, 518.
- Hail, Claudia, 467.  
   Harry H., 467.  
   Mary J., 467.
- Haines, Caspar W., 458, 462.  
   Diedrich J. (1871), 458.  
   Diedrich J. (1911), 458. 463.  
   Elizabeth L., 463.  
   John W., 458, 463, 464.  
   Laura W., 463.  
   Mary W., 463.  
   Robert B., 458.  
   Virginia E., 463.  
   William W. (1908), 458, 463.  
   William W. (1937), 463.
- Haley, George, 70.  
   John, 53-58.  
   Mme. Wilkes S., 53-58, 60, 61, 220.  
   Miss, 54, 56.
- Hall, Joannah C., 442.  
   Mary F. H., 433, 441.  
   Mattie S., 438.  
   Peter P.-G., 433.  
   Sophie E., 506.  
   William P.-G. (1873), 433.  
   William P.-G. (1908), 433, 442.
- Hallock, Mary A., 429.
- Hamilton, Lady Emma, 111, 120,  
   147, 148, 324-327, 340, 342.  
   Virginia, 542.
- Sir William, 117, 120, 146, 147,  
   321, 324-326, 334, 339-341.
- Hamlen, Catherine R., 490.  
   R. Cushing, 490.  
 Hammett, Abijah, 547.  
 Hampden, Sarah, 444.  
 Harding, Charles F., 507.  
   Charles F. (1917), 507.  
   Charles F. (1947), 507.  
   Diana B., 507.  
   Edgar, 432.  
   Ruth, 432.
- Hare, Caroline, 68.  
   Harriet, 416, 424.  
   Mary F., 416, 423.  
   Robert, 416.  
   Robert H., 416.
- Harrington, Ruth, 435.
- Harris, Margaret, 468.  
   Minnie E., 484.
- Hart, Ada L., 500.
- Harter, Katherine, 437.
- Harvey, Elizabeth, 454.  
   Sarah, 454.
- Hasey, James, 548.
- Haskell, Alaric W., 536.  
   Charlotte, 423.  
   Elisha, 423.  
   Henry C., 536.  
   Henry M., 536.  
   Mercy W., 536.  
   Peter C., 536.
- Hastings, Mary E., 515.
- Hathaway, Alice, 423.  
   Caroline, 37, 415.  
   Elizabeth, 423.  
   Elizabeth (1864), 525, 526.  
   Elizabeth E., 529.
- Ellen R., 525.  
   Emily A., 529.  
   Francis, 37.  
   Horatio (1831), 37, 79, 415, 425.  
   Horatio (1870), 525, 526.  
   Horatio (1936), 529.  
   Lovering (1898), 526, 529.  
   Lovering (1937), 529.  
   Margaret, 529.  
   Nathaniel, 37, 525.  
   Mrs. Nathaniel, 129.  
   Samuel R., 525.
- Thomas S. (1866), 525.  
   Thomas S. (1944), 529.
- Havemeyer, Craig, 504.

- Havemeyer (*continued*)  
 Henry M., 504.  
 John F., 504.  
 Haverty, Maude, 520.  
 Hawes, Pauline, 534.  
 William C., 534.  
 Hawkins, Cheryl L., 522.  
 Clarence A., 522.  
 Glenn M., 522.  
 Hawksbury, Lord, 190-192, 199.  
 Hayden, Annie, 499.  
 Haydock, George G., 435.  
 Mary, 523.  
 Robert, 435.  
 Hayes, Zilph, 471.  
 Hays, Jeanne, 517.  
 Joseph A., 517.  
 Hazard, Erskine, 467.  
 Harry, 467.  
 Henderer, Howard E., 519.  
 Willard E., 519.  
 Henderson, Elizabeth, 475.  
 Margaret F., 510.  
 Hendrickson, Maria U., 441.  
 Hernandez, Micaela, 498.  
 Hervey, Florence, 480.  
 Higgins, Celia, 467.  
 Higginson, Elizabeth B., 434.  
 Thomas Wentworth, 130.  
 Hill, Elizabeth J., 510.  
 Mabel C., 543.  
 Thomas, 510.  
 Hillman, Whitten, 547.  
 Hintz, Charles A., 463.  
 Elizabeth L., 463.  
 Hoar, Mary, 444.  
 Hodges, Ellen G., 483.  
 Hoffman, Celia E., 467.  
 Edward F., 460.  
 Edward F. (1888), 460.  
 Edward F. (1916), 460, 467.  
 Redwood W., 460.  
 Holbrook, Barbara, 505.  
 Elizabeth S., 478.  
 Ralph A., 505.  
 Holcomb, Clark W., 436.  
 Henry C., 436.  
 Holden, Ruth P., 484.  
 Hollingsworth, Rebecca C., 469.  
 Samuel L., 469.  
 Holly, Eliza, 445.  
 Maria T., 445.  
 Hopkins, Margaret, 510.  
 David A., 510.  
 Horton, Virginia, 518.  
 Howard, Frances, 482.  
 Troup, 482.  
 Howe, Barbara, 515, 521.  
 Clarence D., 515.  
 Elisabeth, 515, 521.  
 John W., 515.  
 Mary J., 515.  
 Susan A., 521.  
 William C., 515.  
 William H., 515, 521.  
 Howes, Priscilla J., 526.  
 Willis H., 526.  
 Howland, Elizabeth, 146.  
 Hetty, 524, 532.  
 Rebecca W., 532.  
 Sylvia Ann, 411.  
 William Penn, 167.  
 Hoyt, Sarah A., 512.  
 Hudson, Anne R., (Sister Anne Monica), 125, 151, 152, 155, 415, 445, 446.  
 Francis R., 151, 445.  
 Henry, 445.  
 Radcliff, 151, 445.  
 Hunter, Anna F., 413.  
 Caroline S., 413.  
 Charles, 413.  
 Francis T., 543.  
 John B., 543.  
 Kate, 413, 416.  
 Margaret, 543.  
 Mary R., 413, 416.  
 William, 413.  
 William, 543.  
 Hussey, Alfred R. (1869), 102, 140, 414, 415, 532, 533.  
 Alfred R. (1902), 533, 535.  
 Alice, 532, 533.  
 Charles M. (1856), 532.  
 Charles M. (1898), 532.  
 Charles M. (1925), 534.  
 Charles R., 535.  
 Christopher, 535.  
 Edith, 532.  
 Elizabeth, 112, 443.  
 Elizabeth B., 524, 532.  
 Elizabeth M., 532.

- Hussey (*continued*)  
 Emily M. (1862), 532.  
 Emily M. (1908), 533, 536.  
 George (1791), 532.  
 George (1828), 524, 532.  
 George (1858), 532.  
 George (1891), 532, 533, 534.  
 George (1920), 534, 536, 537.  
 Joseph, 217, 219, 222.  
 Margaret W., 533, 534, 535.  
 Mary E., 533, 535, 536.  
 Patty, 34.  
 Rebecca W., 532, 533.  
 Hutson, Marion, 505.  
 Hyde, Eleanor H., 499.  
 Thomas W., 499.
- Imbrie, Andrew C., 469.  
 Frances F., 469.  
 Ingle, Maria, 527.  
 Irwin, Eliza A., 456.  
 Keturah G., 440.  
 Robert F., Jr., 440.
- Jackson, Charles, 434.  
 Charles (1910), 434.  
 Deborah, 434.  
 Donald E., 434.  
 Elizabeth B., 484.  
 Francis T., 484.  
 Harriet D., 434.  
 Lydia, 95.  
 Mary E., 434.  
 Nathaniel, 407.  
 Rebecca, 434.  
 Sarah A., 434.
- Jaffrey, Mr. 57, 58, 60.  
 Mme., See Haley, Mme. Wilkes S.
- James, Augusta, 486.
- Jaques, Harriet S., 479.  
 Herbert, 479.  
 Herbert, 492.  
 Herbert (1913), 492.  
 Herbert (1943), 492.  
 Nancy, 492.  
 William L., 492.
- Jardine, Emily A., 518.
- Jarvis, Charles, 42, 53, 60, 61.  
 Leonard, 19, 20, 41, 42, 52, 53,  
 70.  
 Samuel G., 42, 53.
- Jayne, Horace, 433.  
 Kate F., 433.
- Jefferson, Thomas, 231.
- Jeffrey, Julia G., 497.
- Jenkins, Marshall, 182.  
 Thomas, 177, 180, 181, 182, 183,  
 206-208.
- Jewett, Ella, 526.
- Jobson, Ada, 438.
- Johnson, Elizabeth, 495.  
 Horace I., 512.
- Maryemily, 512.
- Seymour, 416.
- Susannah, 551.
- Jones, Amelia, 79, 166.  
 Arthur J., 484, 485.  
 Burton W., 484, 485.
- Christopher, 485.  
 Edward C., 79, 109.  
 Frances J., 468.  
 Hildegard, 537.  
 Isabel W., 535.  
 John Paul, 17.  
 Marian L., 485.  
 Phyllis W., 485.  
 Sally B., 424.
- Judd, Isabelle A., 119, 121, 122, 132,  
 133, 135-137, 149, 264, 275, 278-  
 282, 285, 347, 349-351, 444.
- Kalpaschnikoff, Andre, 467.  
 Celia, 467.  
 Nadine, 467.
- Kane, Caroline H., 416, 424.  
 Delancy, 416.  
 Helen D., 416.  
 Walter L., 416.
- Kavanaugh, Martha, 439.
- Keith, Rhoda, 551.
- Kemble, Fanny, 457.
- Kenny, Robert M., 521.  
 Susan A., 521.
- Ker, Balfour, 485.  
 Yosene B., 485.
- Kidder, Anna R., 512, 516.  
 Anna W., 516.
- Arthur W. (1894), 512, 517.  
 Arthur W. (1922), 517.  
 Barbara A., 517.  
 Dorothy L. M., 465.  
 Grace R., 516.

- Kidder (*continued*)  
    Harry W., 516.  
    Hubert, 512, 516.  
    Marian L., 517, 522.  
    Moses W., 511.  
    Richard H., 511.  
    Robert D., 517.  
    Kilburn, Clarence E., 439, 440.  
        Katharine, 439, 440.  
    King, Ethel M., 447.  
        George P., 477.  
        Sarah L., 477.  
        William T., 447.  
    Kingman, Desire, 546.  
        John, 546.  
        Mary, 546.  
    Knapp, Alfred J., 518.  
        Richard S., 518.  
        Walter H., 518.  
    Knight, Abby F., 495.  
        Leonard, 495.  
    Knowles, David D., 436.  
        Josephine G., 27, 428, 436.  
        Louise, 27, 428, 436.  
        Sidney W., 428.  
        Sidney W. (1913), 428, 436.  
        Thomas C. (1881), 27, 428.  
        Thomas C. (1942), 436.  
    Knox, Francis S., 536.  
        Francis S. (1912), 536.  
        Francis S. (1941), 536.  
        Rebecca H., 536.  
    Ladd, Adelaide W., 477.  
        Louis W., 503.  
        Mary S., 503.  
        Olivia, 503.  
        William C., 503.  
        William J., 477.  
    Lafayette, Marquis, 231, 232, 346.  
    Lahr, Mabel, 487.  
    Lamb, Aimee, 417.  
        Annie L., 417.  
        Benjamin R., 417.  
        Charles, 144.  
        Edith D., 417.  
        Horatio A., 417.  
        Mary, 144.  
        Rosamond, 417.  
        Thomas, 417.  
        Thomas (1892), 417, 425.  
    Thomas (1928), 425.  
    Lambert, Elisha, 547.  
        Mrs. Eunice N., 547.  
    Langdon, Louisa, 416.  
    Langhorne, Alice, 504.  
    Langston, Gertrude, 122, 444, 445.  
        Herbert W. D., 444.  
        Maria, 122, 264, 275, 279, 281,  
            349, 350, 444, 445.  
        Minny, 350.  
        Stephen F., 122, 149, 349, 444.  
    Lawrence, Abbott, 80, 150, 413.  
        Annie B., 80, 413.  
        Margaret M., 489.  
        Sally A., 489.  
        William (1850), 92, 489.  
        William (1915), 489.  
        William (1945), 489.  
        William A., 489.  
    Lawton, Edna C., 534.  
    Leach, Sylvia, 551.  
    Le Barron, Marie, 525.  
    Lee, Lucinda, 435.  
        Margery, 490.  
    Leland, Abigail, 421.  
        Florence K., 463.  
        Mary A., 529.  
    Leman, Annie M., 549.  
        William H., 549.  
    Lesneur, Ianthe, 507.  
    Lewis, Franklin H., 495.  
        Lucy S., 495.  
        Mary D., 526.  
    Liddon, Edward, 448.  
        Edward M., 448.  
        Henry J., 448.  
        John H. C., 448.  
    Liffler, Charles, 516.  
        Elisabeth B., 516.  
    Lincoln, General, 186.  
    Lindley, Jacob, 453.  
        Sarah, 453, 469.  
    Lindsay, Charlotte, 491.  
    Linzee, Marian, 541.  
        Thomas A. C., 541.  
    Little, Catharine, 491.  
        Leon M., 491.  
    Livermore, Grace D., 485.  
    Livezey, Martha, 493.  
    Lopez, Aaron, 50, 51, 53, 70.  
    Lorey, Adolph, 501.

- Lorey (*continued*)  
 Loretta, 501.  
 Loring, Alice P., 491.  
 Charles G., 491.  
 Elizabeth, 529.  
 Oliver L. (1904), 529.  
 Oliver L. (1938), 529.  
 Richard T., 529.  
 Stephen H., 529.  
 Losey, Harriet, 466.  
 Lothrop, Anna, 472, 473.  
 Sarah W., 477.  
 Louis XVI, King, 113, 114, 192, 199,  
 240.  
 Lovering, Charles T., 544.  
 Ellen, 544.  
 Henry M., 526.  
 Mabel, 526.  
 Lowden, John, 11, 14, 15, 24.  
 Lowel, Ebenezer, 5.  
 John, 5.  
 Lowell, Edward J., 497.  
 Guy, 497, 498.  
 Luce, Rebecca N., 548.  
 Tristram, 547.  
 Ludington, Charles H., 426.  
 Helen G., 426.  
 Lunt, Jane, 510.  
 Lyman, Ellen, 544.  
 Lynch, Dorothy, 449.  
 General, 449.  
 Lyon, Alice G., 534.  
 Heber N., 534.  
 Macdonald, Peter, 534.  
 MacHale, Jean, 538.  
 Richard L., 538.  
 Maclarens, Jessie, 521.  
 MacLeod, Lily, 461.  
 Macy, Abraham, 8.  
 Deborah C., 7.  
 Francis, 234.  
 Love, 7, 12, 41, 45, 108, 407.  
 Robert, 260.  
 Thomas (Pioneer), 108.  
 Thomas, 7, 407.  
 Madison, James, 186.  
 Malone, Edna, 434.  
 Mandell, Donald B., 535.  
 George E., 535.  
 Ellen, 536.  
 Mary E., 536.  
 Sarah R., 536.  
 Marie Antoinette, Queen, 240, 320.  
 Marino, Dominic, 513.  
 Joseph A., 513.  
 Marshall, Catherine, 520.  
 Mason, Austen B., 490.  
 Margaret, 490.  
 Massasoit, 9.  
 Mathias, Harry L., 520.  
 Joseph M., 520.  
 Marcia A., 520.  
 Mark W., 520.  
 Mayhew, Mrs. Howard, 482.  
 Maynard, Henry, 445.  
 Henry L., 445, 447.  
 Joyce C., 447, 448.  
 Marjorie F. G., 447.  
 McBurney, Bridget, 503.  
 Malcolm, 503.  
 McCall, Elizabeth, 460.  
 McCauley, Lilia, 463.  
 McClain, Barbara J., 520.  
 John E., 520.  
 William P., 520.  
 McClellan, George, 424.  
 General George B., 424.  
 John H. B., 424.  
 McCorkle, Caroline E., 429.  
 McCormick, Jack H., 491.  
 McCristie, Bertha, 486.  
 McCrommen, Mary, 537.  
 McKaig, Annah C., 442.  
 Edgar S., 442.  
 McLane, Allan, 486.  
 Allan (1894), 486.  
 Clinton A., 553.  
 Martha, 553.  
 Niel, 486.  
 McMichael, Mary, 470.  
 McNeely, Charles W., 468.  
 Charles W. (1914), 468.  
 Charles W. (1942), 468.  
 Prentice J., 468.  
 Megargee, James C., 441.  
 Meigs, Anne L., 465.  
 Arthur V., 459.  
 Arthur V. (1912), 459.  
 Edward B., 459.  
 John W., 459, 465.  
 Mary R., 459.

- Meigs (*continued*)  
 Patience W., 465.  
 Sarah T., 459, 465, 466.
- Mellen, Mary, 484.
- Melville, Herman, 166.
- Mencke, Hugo, 446.
- Merrihew, Elizabeth, 533.
- Merriman, Edvard B., 485.  
 Elizabeth B., 485.
- Middleton, Mary J., 470.
- Mikell, Thomas P., 441.
- William E., 441.
- Miles, Anne, 524.  
 John, 524.
- Miller, Caroline F. R., 432.  
 Caspar W., 433.
- Constance, 433.
- Hannah, 453.
- John R., 432.
- Mattie, 429.
- Nathan L., 433.
- Virginia P., 433.
- Mills, Hiram F., 510.  
 Preserved B., 510.
- Minot, Charles S., 542.  
 Elizabeth W., 542.
- George R., 542.
- Hannah, 540.
- James J., 542.
- Marian L., 542.
- Mirabeau, Count de, 33, 195, 203-205.
- Mitchell, Eliza, 96.  
 Frances K., 462.  
 J. Kearsley, 462.  
 Mary, 504.
- Mixsell, Amelia, 433.
- Moffatt, Alexander W., 503.  
 Frances W., 503.
- Monthey, Lawrence G., 520.  
 Louis, 520.
- Moody, Jane, 482.
- Mooers, Captain William, 35, 36, 119, 188, 193, 255, 353.
- Moore, Martha, 511.
- Moran, Dorothy, 503.
- Morgan Family, 414, 415.
- Morgan, Abel, 414.  
 Anne W., 25, 96, 111, 122, 124, 125, 135, 136, 148, 151, 152, 264-286, 353, 355-358, 387-389, 415, 443, 531, 539.
- Charles W. (1796), 10, 74, 79, 81, 100, 110, 124, 125, 148, 152, 355-359, 362, 363, 387-389, 414, 415, 443, 446, 453, 531.
- Charles W. (1825), 125, 152, 415, 416.
- Clara, 105-107, 110, 414, 415, 531.
- Eliza, 270, 356, 415.
- Elizabeth R., 387, 531, 532.
- Emily, 104, 106, 110, 373, 379-384, 387, 389, 414, 415, 423, 531.
- Helen, 26, 124, 415.
- Henry, 415.
- Isabel, 387, 531.
- John 362.
- Mary, 446.
- Rebecca W., 74, 272, 415, 472, 494.
- Robert W., 415.
- S. Griffitts, 415.
- Samuel R., 531, 532.
- Susan W., 74, 124, 374, 389, 415, 539.
- Thomas, 414, 415, 443, 472, 531, 539.
- Thomas W., 124, 125, 415, 446.
- Waln, 415.
- Morley, Emma C., 430.
- Morris, Catharine A., 424.  
 Catharine W., 460.  
 Harrison S., 460.
- Morrison, Norman J., 537.  
 Norman J. (1919), 537.
- Morrow, Gertrude M., 459.  
 Judge, 459.
- Morse, Caroline, 439.  
 Isabel F., 526.
- Motley, Anna L., 74, 473.  
 Anne, 478, 489.  
 Caspar, 474.
- E. Preble (1860), 475.
- E. Preble (1895), 475, 481, 482.
- E. Preble (1921), 482.
- Edward (1816), 74, 472, 473.
- Edward (1879), 474, 479.
- Edward (1914), 479, 490.
- Eleanor W. (1921), 478, 489.
- Eleanor W. (1947), 491.
- Elizabeth, 478, 489.

- Motley (*continued*)  
 Ellen R., 473, 475.  
 Emma, 74, 472.  
 Francis P., 475.  
 Harriet, 490.  
 Herbert J. (1917), 479, 491.  
 Herbert J. (1943), 491.  
 Jessie, 473, 475.  
 Joan, 479.  
 John Lothrop (1814), 472.  
 J. Lothrop (1879), 474, 478, 479.  
 J. Lothrop (1924), 479, 490.  
 Katherine, 490.  
 Margaret B., 490.  
 Marjorie, 482, 492.  
 Nancy, 479, 490.  
 Phyllis, 478, 488, 489.  
 Rebecca R., 473, 474, 475.  
 Thomas, 472, 473.  
 Thomas (1847), 473, 474.  
 Thomas (1874), 474, 478.  
 Thomas (1915), 479, 490.  
 Thomas (1942), 490.  
 Warren, 474, 479.  
 Mr., 264, 265, 267, 270, 274.  
 Mott, Anna, 82.  
 Mudget, Beatrice L., 492.  
 Muirhead, Jessie L., 519.  
 Mullins, Priscilla, 422.  
 Murphy, Clara B., 436.  
 Murray, Lindley, 338.  
 Sally C., 470.  
 Myers, Sarah, 471.  
 Nelson, Lord Horatio, 111, 118, 120,  
   147, 148, 324-327, 342.  
 Lady Frances, 324.  
 Sarah, 476.  
 Nichols, Ann, 514.  
   Harriet, 446.  
 Nicholson, Eleanor, 442.  
 Norris, Maria P., 461.  
 Norton, Eunice, 547.  
   Nahum F., 548.  
   Polly, 547.  
 Noyes, Josephine L., 426.  
 Oakley, Gilbert, 492.  
   Gilbert (1913), 492.  
 Oat, Gertrude L., 442.  
 Oliver, Mary M., 534.
- Olsen, Mabel, 506.  
   William, 506.  
 O'Neil, David, 504.  
   David (1943), 504.  
   Horton, 504.  
   Joellen, 504.  
 Orhvald, Margarethe, 461.  
 Osborn, Harriet C., 464.  
 Osborne, Helen, 425.  
   John T., 425.  
 Osgood, Samuel, 186, 257.  
 Ossoli, Countess. See Fuller, Margaret.  
 Owen, Maude, 534.
- Page, Katharine, 491.  
   Mary B., 428.  
 Palfrey, Francis W., 475.  
   Marian, 475.  
 Palmer, Edgar, 471.  
   Frances M., 511.  
   Zilph, 471.  
 Parker, Mary I., 448.  
   Sarah, 422.  
 Parkinson, Henry, Jr., 418.  
   John, 540.  
   John, Jr., 540.  
   John (1883), 540, 541.  
   John (1906), 541, 543, 544.  
   John (1934), 544.  
   Mary, 541, 544.  
   Nathaniel E., 541, 544.  
   Robert, 541.  
   Zaidee C., 544.  
 Parkman, Henry, Jr., 418.  
 Parsons, Sarah V., 512.  
   Susan L., 534.  
   Sylvia C., 478.  
   Theophilus, 534.  
   William B., 478.  
 Paxson, Anne, 38.  
 Peabody, Anne P., 542, 544.  
   Cora W., 542.  
   Ephraim, 541.  
   Francis G., 540, 541.  
   Francis W. (1881), 541, 542.  
   Francis W. (1924), 542.  
   Gertrude (1877), 541.  
   Gertrude (1910), 542.  
   Grigsby C., 542.  
   John D., 541.  
   Katharine (1913), 542, 544, 545.

- Peabody (*continued*)  
 Katharine P., 541.  
 Robert S., 541.  
 William R., 541, 542.  
 Pearce, Helen A., 485.  
 Pemberton, Anna C., 469.  
 Penn, William, 198, 243.  
 Perkins, John A. (1919), 440.  
 John A. (1946), 440.  
 Ralph C., 440.  
 Perrse, Marguarita, 518.  
 Perry, Eliza N., 420.  
 Peters, Alanson T., 500.  
 Andrew J., 500.  
 Andrew J. (1872), 500, 501.  
 Andrew J. (1911), 500, 507  
 Bradford, 500.  
 David McC., 501.  
 Jane, 481.  
 John P., 500.  
 Robeson, 501.  
 William Y., 481.  
 Petri, Camillo F., 437.  
 Frederick G., 437.  
 G. Hector, 437.  
 Mark S., 437.  
 Phelps, Caroline K., 434.  
 Edgar M., 424.  
 Henry D. (1902), 425, 433, 434.  
 Henry D. (1945), 434.  
 Richard S., 433.  
 Robert N., 425.  
 Walter K. (1901), 425, 433.  
 Walter K. (1941), 433.  
 Philip, King, 9, 10.  
 Phillips, Albert H., 513.  
 Anna T., 496, 500.  
 Anne C., 500, 506.  
 Arthur H., 499, 505.  
 Beatrice S., 499.  
 Blair, 504.  
 Caroline A., 505.  
 Christopher H., 500, 505, 506.  
 Drayton (1917), 499, 505.  
 Drayton (1941), 505.  
 George, 501.  
 George W., 496, 501.  
 Hayden, 504.  
 James, 188.  
 John, 496.  
 John C., 496.
- John C. (1838), 496.  
 John C. (1876), 496, 498, 499, 500.  
 John C. (1908), 499, 504.  
 John C. (1946), 505.  
 Josephine, 485.  
 Madelyn H., 499, 504.  
 Marion R., 505.  
 Martha R., 496, 500, 501.  
 Mary D., 513.  
 Miriam D., 499.  
 Nina, 499, 504, 505.  
 Susan H., 505.  
 Victoria A., 506.  
 William (1878), 496, 499, 500.  
 William (1916), 499, 505.  
 Pickman, Anthony, 480, 491.  
 Daisy P., 491.  
 David, 481, 492.  
 Deborah, 481.  
 Dudley L. (1850), 475.  
 Dudley L. (1885), 475, 480.  
 Edward M. (1886), 475, 480, 481.  
 Jane, 481, 492.  
 Margaret E., 480, 491, 492.  
 Martha, 481.  
 Mary S., 492.  
 William D., 475.  
 Pierce, Elsie, 16, 437.  
 Pitt, William, 189, 193, 329.  
 Platt, Sarah F., 496.  
 Plummer, Alice M., 534, 537.  
 Charles W. (1890), 533.  
 Charles W. (1921), 534.  
 Evelyn S., 534, 537.  
 Henry M. (1865), 533.  
 Henry M. (1892), 533, 534.  
 Henry M. (1928), 534.  
 Leander A., 109, 533.  
 Marion E., 534.  
 Morgan H. (1894), 28, 533, 534.  
 Morgan H. (1923), 534, 537, 538.  
 Susan L., 534, 537.  
 Thomas P., 534.  
 Thomas R., 533.  
 Plunkett, Francis, 446.  
 Helen M., 446.  
 Nelly, 446.  
 Norah, 446.  
 Pond, Jemima, 421.  
 Poole, Frances, 447.  
 Porter, Augustus, 497.

- Porter (*continued*)  
 Charles B., 515.  
 Charles T., 515.  
 Julia, 497.  
 Terrell, 515, 521, 522.
- Potter, Elizabeth, 416.  
 George S., 498.  
 Hannah, 3-6, 407, 546.  
 Mary R., 498.  
 Natalie, 498, 503.  
 Nathaniel B., 498.  
 Nicholas, 4, 407.  
 Powell, Mary, 498.  
 Pratt, Helen, 489.  
 Preece, Alec A., 439.  
 Ambrose D., 439.  
 Presbury, Lydia W., 419.  
 Prescott, General, 177, 178, 179, 182.  
 Preston, Virginia, 433.  
 Price, Henriette H., 456.  
 Prior, Edmund, 255, 257, 259, 523.  
 Hannah H., 78, 102-104, 373, 374,  
     377, 523, 524.  
 Procter, Jane, 492.  
 Joseph O., 492.  
 Joseph O. (1915), 492.  
 Joseph O. (1943), 492.  
 Mary E., 492.  
 Putnam, Annie, 541.
- Rand, Ina P., 514.  
 Sedgwick A., 514.  
 Randall, Mary S., 479.  
 Randolph, Jane, 455.  
 Jane M., 418.  
 Read, Benjamin H., 470.  
 Emily A., 470.  
 Redfield, Martha E., 526.  
 Reed, Anna DeW., 478.  
 Reveira, Abraham, 451.  
 Rice, Homer C., 519.  
 Joan M., 519.  
 John M., 519.  
 Philip B., 519.  
 Richardson, Caroline M., 425.  
 Ridgway, Anne, 375, 411.  
 Susan, 26, 360, 365, 368, 411, 412.  
 Uncle, 364.
- Riggs, Camilla K., 465.  
 Lawrason, 465.  
 Risley, Edward H., 489.
- Edward H. (1943), 489.  
 Hanson A., 474.  
 Harriet D., 473, 474.  
 Thomas S., 489.  
 Rivinus, E. F., 467.  
 Marion M., 467.  
 Robbins, Grace T., 516.  
 Roberts, Brinton P., 465.  
 Edith, 496.  
 George B., 465.  
 Robertson, Sallie M., 521.  
 Robeson, Alice, 494, 495.  
 Andrew (1787), 64, 81, 101, 366,  
     374, 451, 493.  
 Andrew (1817), 493, 494.  
 Andrew (1837), 493.  
 Andrew (1843), 494, 495.  
 Andrew (1880), 495, 497.  
 Anna R., 493, 494.  
 Frederick, 493.  
 Harriet, 494.  
 Harriet A., 495, 497.  
 Laurette P., 497, 501.  
 Louis, 493, 495.  
 Martha, 374, 493, 494.  
 Mary A., 494, 495, 496.  
 Peter, 493.  
 Rebecca, 494.  
 Rodman, 495.  
 Sibyl, 495, 496, 497.  
 Thomas, 374.  
 Thomas R. (1811), 493.  
 Thomas R. (1840), 493.  
 William, 374, 379, 381.  
 William R. (1814), 472, 493, 494.  
 William R. (1843), 493, 494, 495.  
 Robespierre, 114, 195, 318, 319, 320,  
     332.  
 Robinson, Mary, 413.  
 Sarah, 432.  
 Rochefoucauld, Duke de la, 34.  
 Rodman, Alfred (1820), 74, 472, 473.  
 Alfred (1848), 473, 474.  
 Alfred (1874), 474, 477.  
 Anna (1787), 373-375, 377, 452,  
     493.  
 Anna (1817), 379, 472, 494.  
 Anna L. (1841), 472, 473.  
 Benjamin, 74, 98, 99, 101, 124,  
     363, 374, 378, 387, 389, 415,  
     452, 539.

Rodman (*continued*)

Charity, 25, 31, 71, 74, 82-91, 233, 245, 246, 250, 252, 360, 373, 376-378, 450.  
 Charles R., 524.  
 Edmund, 524.  
 Edward M., 473.  
 Effie, 524, 525.  
 Eliza, 146, 373, 452.  
 Elizabeth (1759), 23, 74-76, 84, 109, 223, 252, 362, 363, 376, 377, 409.  
 Elizabeth (1821), 474, 539, 540.  
 Elizabeth (1869), 524.  
 Ellen (1824), 74, 472, 473.  
 Ellen (1833), 415, 524, 525.  
 Eloise, 473, 474, 540.  
 Emma, 472.  
 Fanny, 524, 526.  
 Francis, 524.  
 Julia W., 31, 96, 523, 524.  
 Lydia, 362, 373, 374, 378, 450, 452, 508, 522.  
 Martha, 373, 374.  
 Mary (1781), 452, 453.  
 Mary (1820), 370, 373, 377, 524.  
 Mary (1824), 524.  
 Mary (1854), 524.  
 Molly, 82.  
 Samuel (1753), 30, 31, 34, 37, 38, 44, 61, 72-75, 78, 81, 84, 85, 98, 100, 102, 125, 167, 193, 209-244, 245, 246, 248, 249, 251, 349, 373, 450, 451, 452, 493, 508.  
 Samuel (1792), 38, 39, 48, 54, 62, 66, 67, 77-79, 93, 94, 98, 99, 102, 104, 126, 129, 161, 162, 167, 370, 373, 444, 452, 523, 524.  
 Samuel (1851), 472.  
 Samuel (1860), 524-526.  
 Samuel W. (1814), 81, 472.  
 Sarah, 74, 82, 124, 363, 389, 414, 415, 443, 446, 452, 531.  
 Susan, 539, 540.  
 Susan E., 68, 524.  
 Thomas, 74, 84, 409, 450, 451.  
 Thomas (1784), 78, 98, 99, 452.  
 Thomas R., 523, 524.  
 William, 355.  
 William (1839), 472.  
 William Logan, 539, 540.

William R. (1786), 74, 79, 81, 97-99, 116, 145, 337, 338, 415, 452, 472, 494.  
 Roederer, Comte Jacques, 502.  
 Jean S., 502.  
 Pierre L., 502.  
 Rogers, Mildred, 482.  
 Rolls, Mrs. J. M., 119.  
 Roosevelt, Franklin D., 22, 408.  
 Ross, Mary L., 429.  
 William J., 429.  
 Rotch, Abbott L. (1861), 414, 418.  
 Abbott L. (1939), 425.  
 Abby O., 548.  
 Aimee, 414, 417.  
 Albert (1875), 549.  
 Albert A. (1810), 551.  
 Albert A. (1840), 552.  
 Anna (1766), 547.  
 Anna M. (1844), 415.  
 Anna S. (1861), 106, 107, 110, 414, 423.  
 Anna W., 549.  
 Anne, 66, 67, 68.  
 Anne S. (1937), 425.  
 Annie L., 26, 414, 417.  
 Arthur (1850), 414, 417.  
 Arthur (1899), 418, 425.  
 Arthur B. (1887), 552, 553.  
 Arthur G. (1880), 27, 420, 426, 427.  
 Benjamin (c. 1702), 5, 7, 8, 12, 25, 107, 108, 407, 546.  
 Benjamin (1735), 546.  
 Benjamin (1755), 8, 547.  
 Benjamin (1764), 20, 25, 27, 30, 33, 36, 38, 50, 61, 72, 74, 84, 102, 111, 112-124, 126, 131, 136, 138, 140-150, 155, 156, 188, 191, 193-198, 220, 222, 224, 228, 230-232, 236, 237, 243, 245, 251, 255, 264, 281, 314, 315, 318-346, 348-354, 373, 388, 389, 408, 443.  
 Mrs. Benjamin (1764). See Barker, Elizabeth.  
 Benjamin (1793), 114, 119, 120, 122, 123, 131-137, 145, 148, 149, 264, 274-277, 279-282, 285, 340, 343-353, 443, 444.  
 Benjamin S. (1817), 26, 80, 98,

- Rotch (*continued*)  
 101, 104, 105, 109, 150, 366-368,  
 369, 372, 379-383, 385, 386, 411,  
 413, 414.
- Mrs. Benjamin S. (1820). See Lawrence, Annie B.
- Betty, 547.
- Caleb L. (1819), 548.
- Caleb L. (1855), 548.
- Caroline (1804), 118, 443.
- Catherine E., 444.
- Catherine Maria (Sister Catherine), 444.
- Charles M. (1823), 125, 151, 443.
- Charles M. (1843), 105, 106, 110, 414.
- Charles M. (1878), 419, 426.
- Clara M., 419, 426.
- Claude D., 446, 448.
- Mrs. Dinah, 546.
- Edith (1847), 414.
- Edith E. (1874), 419.
- Edith E. (1928), 426.
- Edmund, 409.
- Edna W., 549.
- Edward C. (1941), 425.
- Eliza (1791), 27, 62, 63, 92, 93, 95, 111, 113, 115, 117, 119-123, 126-131, 133, 135, 138, 140, 144, 145, 147-149, 155, 287-313, 314-328, 329-351, 353, 379, 380, 383, 443, 444.
- Eliza S. (1878), 444.
- Elizabeth (1697), 7, 407.
- Elizabeth (1757), 23, 30, 74, 76, 84, 144-146, 167, 223, 236, 239, 240, 244, 251, 408, 451, 452.
- Elizabeth (1802), 551.
- Elizabeth (1815), 103, 104, 109, 365, 411, 413.
- Elizabeth (1895), 418.
- Elizabeth (1946), 553.
- Ellen M., 548.
- Emily M. (1860), 27, 28, 106, 107, 110, 414, 420, 421, 422.
- Emily M. (1882), 27, 79, 420, 423.
- Emily W., 349, 444.
- Eunice, 547.
- Florence H., 445, 447.
- Francis (1750), 13, 14, 16, 17, 20-22, 25, 31, 36, 41, 42, 45-71, 75, 76, 108, 121, 217, 219, 228, 252, 262, 263, 373, 374, 407, 408, 412, 550.
- Francis (1776), 547, 548.
- Francis (1788), 25, 45, 66, 67, 84, 96, 97, 112, 120, 121, 122, 124, 125, 131, 135, 136, 138, 139, 141, 145, 148, 151, 157, 193, 194, 247, 264-266, 268-271, 275, 278, 279, 281, 283-285, 318, 331, 335, 342, 344, 345, 347, 353, 355-359, 377, 388, 415, 443.
- Francis Morgan (1822), 122, 125, 136, 148, 151-153, 157, 264-271, 274, 275, 278-286, 443, 445.
- Francis (1863), 151-154, 156, 387, 388, 445, 446.
- Francis (1874), 446.
- Francis (1885), 26, 119, 151-158, 329, 446, 448.
- Francis O. (1817), 27, 547, 548.
- Garland, 26, 119, 151, 153-156, 158, 390-404, 446, 448.
- Hannah, 407.
- Harriet, 547.
- Helen, 106, 110, 125, 414, 415, 423.
- Helen A., 426.
- Helen G., 553.
- Helen M., 428, 435.
- Horatio S., 26, 411.
- Isabel F., 548.
- Isabel M., 106, 107, 110, 414, 420.
- Israel, 547.
- James S., 411.
- Joanna, 80, 104, 109, 379-383, 386, 411.
- John D., 547, 548, 551.
- John E., 548.
- Joseph (1704), 3-24, 25, 27, 29, 31, 41-46, 50, 52, 53, 59, 71, 74-77, 98, 102, 107, 108, 166, 167, 333, 407, 550.
- Captain Joseph (1733), 8, 15, 16, 25, 33, 42, 52, 63, 64, 68, 77, 119, 408, 546, 550.
- Joseph (1743), 13-15, 17, 20, 25, 41-45, 50, 52, 108, 188, 407, 408.
- Joseph (1759), 547.
- Joseph (1790), 26, 71, 78, 80, 98-104, 109, 362-372, 376, 379-

- Rotch (*continued*)  
 383, 409-411.
- Mrs. Joseph (1795). See Smith,  
 Anne.
- Joseph (c. 1816), 551.
- Josephine N., 428.
- Julian, 446.
- Katharine, 414.
- Katherine L. (1906), 418, 425.
- Katherine L. (1913), 428.
- Lucinda M., 548.
- Lydia, 30, 31, 78, 84, 141, 193,  
 236, 246, 250-253, 256, 331, 337,  
 360, 361, 408, 450.
- Lydia W., 428.
- Margaret R., 418, 425.
- Maria (1797), 116, 122, 132, 135,  
 149, 341, 344, 443, 444.
- Maria (1826), 125, 151, 264, 266,  
 268-276, 278, 280-286, 389, 415,  
 443, 445.
- Maria A., 552.
- Maria V., 547.
- Mrs. Martha (d. 1760), 546.
- Martha (1797), 409.
- Martha (1942), 553.
- Mary (1699), 407.
- Mary (1772), 16, 77, 550.
- Mary (1777), 27, 30, 34, 38, 48,  
 62, 84, 92-97, 121, 126, 129,  
 139, 141, 149, 193, 250-252,  
 331, 337, 356, 360, 361, 363,  
 377, 381-383, 408, 444.
- Mary (1793), 54, 68, 409, 412.
- Mary Anne, 551.
- Mary E., 419.
- Mary O. (1815), 547.
- Mary O. (1829), 548.
- Mary R., 105-107, 110, 414.
- Mary S., 411, 413.
- Matthew G., 551, 552.
- Morgan, 25, 27, 80, 106, 110, 414,  
 419, 420.
- Nancy (1776), 14, 16, 25, 63-65,  
 77, 408, 550.
- Nancy (1809), 547.
- Nancy N. (1850), 548.
- Olive, 547.
- Peter B., 553.
- Phoebe R., 428, 435, 436.
- Prince, 546.
- Rebecca, 548.
- Rodman, 26, 27, 80, 101, 103, 104,  
 109, 124, 353, 369, 371, 379,  
 382, 383, 387, 411, 415.
- Mrs. Rodman. See Morgan, Helen.
- Russell W., 27, 548, 549.
- Samuel (1722), 546.
- Samuel (c. 1737), 546, 551.
- Samuel (1764), 551.
- Samuel (c. 1812), 551.
- Sarah (1786), 18, 71, 72, 74, 77,  
 80, 109, 364, 376-378, 409, 410.
- Sarah R. (1854), 106, 110, 414,  
 420.
- Susanna, 30, 408.
- Sydney F. S., 118, 119, 445, 447,  
 448.
- Thomas (1767), 25, 30, 31, 38, 71,  
 74, 79, 82, 84-91, 99, 233, 236,  
 245-254, 357, 360, 363-366, 370,  
 372, 374, 376, 377, 408, 450.
- Mrs. Thomas (1766). See Rodman,  
 Charity.
- Thomas (1791), 84, 450.
- Thomas (1792), 26, 51, 99, 100,  
 360, 409, 411, 412.
- Mrs. Thomas (1797). See Ridg-  
 way, Susan.
- Thomas (c. 1814), 551.
- Thomas Dickason, 50, 118, 122,  
 123, 134-136, 149, 150, 264,  
 275, 279, 280, 344, 349, 350,  
 352, 443, 444.
- Thomas Morgan (1849), 27, 107,  
 110, 123, 414, 415, 423.
- Thomas Morgan (1878), 423.
- William (c. 1650), 3-7, 107, 407.
- William (1692), 4, 5, 407, 546.
- William (1729), 8, 12, 52, 53, 546,  
 547.
- William (1734), 6, 13, 16-22, 25,  
 27, 29-40, 41, 44, 45, 48, 50,  
 52, 59, 61, 62, 69-75, 84, 85,  
 92, 98, 99, 102, 104, 108, 112,  
 115, 121, 123, 125, 126, 131,  
 138, 139, 141, 149, 166, 167,  
 200, 206-252, 255, 256, 263, 314,  
 329-333, 348, 352-357, 360, 362,  
 365, 373, 377, 387, 407, 408,  
 412, 451.
- Mrs. William (1735). See Barney,

- Rotch (*continued*)  
 Elizabeth.  
 William (1755), 30, 72, 408.  
 William (1759), 20, 23, 25, 26, 30,  
   31, 34, 44, 54, 61, 62, 71-85, 96,  
   98, 99-102, 104, 106, 106-109,  
   166, 167, 199, 209-229, 233, 236,  
   240, 245, 246, 248, 249, 251,  
   252, 255-263, 330, 356, 362, 364,  
   366, 376, 377, 408-410, 421, 423,  
   451, 550, 551.  
 Mrs. William, Jr. (1759 and 1782).  
   See Rodman, Elizabeth, and  
   Scott, Lydia.  
 William (1771), 547.  
 William (178-), 443.  
 William (1800), 551.  
 William (1844), 27, 106, 110, 414,  
   418, 419.  
 William (1858), 414.  
 William (1869), 445.  
 William (1876), 419.  
 William (1929), 426.  
 William B. (1802), 26, 116, 121,  
   122, 124, 135, 138, 139, 344,  
   345, 359, 443.  
 William B. (1859), 552.  
 William B. (1916), 552, 553.  
 William D. (1840), 444-446.  
 William J. (1819), 26-28, 79, 80,  
   98, 102, 104-110, 130, 367, 371,  
   376, 379-388, 409, 411, 413-415,  
   531.  
 Mrs. William J. See Morgan, Em-  
   ily, and Morgan, Clara.  
 William J. (1847), 548, 549, 551.  
 William R. (1788), 26, 38, 71, 100,  
   370, 409-411, 523.  
 Mrs. William R. See Stockton, Car-  
   oline.  
 Rounds, Ethel L., 484.  
 Rowell, Lydia, 450.  
   Philip, 450.  
 Royce, Catherine, 490.  
 Rudolf, Dorothy C., 484.  
   Henry L., 484.  
 Rueter, Jeanette, 538.  
 Ruggles, Albert, 509.  
   Alfred, 509.  
 Charles H., 509.  
 Edward, 509.  
 Elisha, 508.  
 George, 509.  
 George W., 509.  
 Lucy, 509.  
 Mary C., 450, 509.  
 Micah H., 78, 81, 373, 374, 378,  
   450, 508, 509.  
 Sophia, 374.  
 William, 509.  
 Ruggles Park, 451.  
 Russell, Mrs. Abraham, 37.  
   Barnabas, 16.  
   Eliza, 38.  
   Gilbert, 410.  
   Ida M., 514, 515.  
   Martha, 411.  
   Joseph (1650), 10.  
   Joseph (1719), 10-12, 15, 24, 108,  
    531.  
   William M., 515.  
 Rutan, Elsie, 535.  
 Ryall, Frances M., 436.  
   Lucius C., 436, 437.  
 Saltonstall, Katharine, 478.  
   Philip L., 478.  
 Samson, Charles W., 448.  
   Helen, 448.  
 Sandys, Charles, 445.  
   Florence M., 445.  
 Sargent, Alice R., 496.  
   Andrew R., 496, 498.  
   Charles S. (1841), 496.  
   Charles S. (1880), 496, 498.  
   Charles S. (1913), 498, 503.  
   Charles S. (1938), 503.  
   Henrietta, 496, 497, 498.  
   Ignatius, 496.  
   Ignatius (1914), 498, 502, 503.  
   John, 498.  
   Mary, 496, 498.  
   Mary A. (1920), 498, 503, 504.  
   Michael, 503.  
   Seldon, 503.  
   Sophie, 503.  
   William R., 503.  
   Winthrop, 417.  
   Winthrop (1915), 498, 503.  
   Winthrop (1939), 503.  
 Sass, Elizabeth E., 505.  
   Herbert R., 505.

- Savage, Henrietta C., 459.  
 Schwab, Mrs. Ella L., 477.  
 Schimmel, Elizabeth M., 530.  
 Schirmer, Gertrude H., 480.  
     Gustave, 480.  
 Schroeder, Helen S., 504.  
 Scott, Job  
     Lydia, 77, 78, 79, 409.  
 Seudder, Helen R., 429, 438, 439.  
     Sarah R., 28, 429, 439.  
     William M., 429.  
     William M., Jr., 429.  
 Severance, Emily M., 28, 420, 428.  
     Isabel P., 429, 438.  
     Peter G. (1919), 429, 438.  
     Peter G. (1944), 438.  
     Pierre C., 110, 420.  
     Rachel L., 429, 437, 438.  
     Susan, 438.  
     Theodosic C., 420.  
     William C., 438.  
     William R. (1886), 420, 428, 429.  
     William R. (1913), 429, 438.  
 Seymour, Caroline M., 420.  
 Shad, Nora, 517.  
 Sharpe, Amey D., 481.  
 Shattuck, George C., 542.  
 Shaw, Elmer B., 534.  
     Evelyn O., 534.  
 Shepherd, Ellen W., 482.  
     Percival D., 482.  
     Prentiss (1891), 482.  
     Prentiss (1927), 482.  
     Sumner W., 482.  
 Sherwood, Katharine, 478.  
 Shoemaker, Anna, 37, 525.  
 Silsbee, Caroline, 475.  
 Simpson, Ada W., 489.  
 Slade, Elizabeth, 543.  
 Smart, Charles A., 535.  
     George, 535.  
 Smith, Adah, 519.  
     Amy V., 476.  
     Anna, 549.  
     Anna W., 460.  
     Anne, 38, 101-104, 109, 362-372,  
     385, 386, 411.  
     C. W., 366.  
     Carol E., 513.  
     Charles F., 513.  
     Clara V., 469.
- Converse, 513.  
 Evelyn, 513.  
 Frances M., 528.  
 George W. H., 537.  
 George W. H. (1919), 537.  
 George W. H. (1943), 537.  
 J. R., 366.  
 James, 363, 364, 368, 369, 371,  
     372, 375, 411.  
 John, 38.  
 Lydia E., 548.  
 Mary Jane, 416.  
 Miriam L., 513.  
 Rachel, 434.  
 Robert, 416.  
 Sally H., 466.  
 Susan L., 537.  
 Sylvia, 513, 519.  
 William, 476.  
 Smucker, Keturah T., 440.  
 Snelling, Anna L., 473, 476.  
     Anna R., 476.  
     Caroline, 473.  
     Charles A., 476.  
     Charles W., 484.  
     David H., 484.  
     Donald E., 483.  
     Dorothy H., 484.  
     Edith C., 476, 484.  
     Eleanor R., 477.  
     Emma M., 473, 475, 476.  
     Howard (1836), 473.  
     Howard (1877), 473, 476, 477.  
     Howard (1904), 476, 484.  
     Howard (1911), 477.  
     John, 477.  
     John R., 484.  
     Marian G., 476, 484, 485.  
     Mary A., 484.  
     Norman J., 484.  
     Philip R., 476, 484.  
     Richard H., 477.  
     Robert E., 477.  
     Samuel, 473.  
     Samuel R. (1868), 473, 476.  
     Samuel W. (1898), 476, 483.  
     William, 477.  
     William R. (1878), 473.  
     William R. (1931), 483.  
 Spahr, Boyd L., 465.  
     Boyd L. (1910), 465.

- Spahr (*continued*)  
 Boyd L. (1940), 465.  
 Charles S. W., 465.
- Spare, Sarah, 551.
- Sparks, Annie E. 549.
- Spelman, John T., 518.  
 Joseph W., 512, 518.  
 Kate L., 512, 518.  
 William C., 512.  
 William C. (1876) 512.  
 William C. (1944), 518.
- Spicer, Mary A., 440.
- Spooner, Elizabeth E., 478.  
 Paul, 422.  
 Sarah W., 420, 422.  
 Sophia B., 422.  
 Walter, 181, 261, 422.  
 Walter S., 422.
- Sprague, Alathea, 422.  
 Mrs. Louise, 426.
- Staples, Harry R., 438.  
 Virginia M., 438.
- Starbuck, Lydia, 30, 408.  
 Samuel, 177, 178, 183, 185, 186,  
 206-208, 334, 335.
- Stark, Florence, 522.
- Starr, James, 458.  
 James (1870), 458.  
 Sarah L., 458, 465.
- Stavers, Howard B., 442.  
 Josephine B., 442.  
 Robert H., 442.  
 William A. (1917), 442.  
 William A. (1941), 442.
- Stearns, Mary E., 511.
- Stedman, Ernest W., 521.  
 Robert W., 521.
- Sterry, Prudence, 537.
- Stetson, Edward M., 96.  
 Eliot D., 432.  
 Mrs. Eliot D., 97.  
 Emily C., 437.  
 Lydia A., 432.
- Stevens, Eleanor A., 485.
- Stevenson, Hannah, 487.  
 Jessie, 448.
- Stewart, Gordon W., 521.  
 John M., 521.
- Stocker, Anthony E., 455.  
 Caroline de T., 455.
- Stockton, Barbara L., 519.
- Beverly J. 519.  
 Caroline, 26, 370, 381, 411.  
 John H., 519.  
 Richard, 411.  
 Robert B., 519.  
 Robert J., 519.  
 Thomas J., 519.
- Stokes, John W., 462.  
 Mary C., 462.  
 Thomas P. C., 462.  
 Walter, 462.
- Stone, Barbara E., 432, 440, 441.  
 Caroline S., 484.  
 Edith L., 484.  
 Edward M., 484.  
 Emily A., 432.  
 Francis H. (1856), 110, 423.  
 Francis H. (1888), 423, 432.  
 Henry B., 432.  
 John H., 484.  
 John H. (1928), 484.  
 Joshua C., 423.  
 Mrs. Joshua C., 37.  
 Lydia H., 432.  
 Malcolm R., 484.  
 Sarah M. 484.
- Stork, Samuel, 54.
- Storrow, Alice G., 425.  
 Edward C., 425.  
 Gerald B., 434.  
 James J., 425.  
 James J. (1893), 425.  
 James J. (1917), 425, 434.  
 Peter, 434.
- Stotesbury, Frances B., 462.
- Strauss, Lillian W., 425.
- Strickland, Alice M., 436, 437.  
 Jane, 535.  
 Sidney T., 535.
- Strong, George V., 466.  
 George V. (1893), 466.
- Strout, Christine, 471.
- Stryker, Myrtle R., 448.  
 William H., 448.
- Studd, Ethel, 521.
- Stull, George R., 442.  
 John N., 442.
- Sturgis, Josephine, 483.  
 Robert S., 483.
- Sullings, Georgianna P., 428.
- Sullivan, Arthur F., 549.

- Sullivan (*continued*)  
 Leonard, 503.  
 Marjorie, 503.  
 Sumner, Emily P., 493.  
 Thomas N., 493.  
 Elizabeth, 493.  
 Swain, William W., 79.  
 Swan, Donnell, 497.  
 Laura P., 497.  
 Swenson, Helen, 507.  
 Swift, Agnes, 429.  
 Caroline W., 429, 439.  
 Frederick, 110, 420.  
 Frederick R., 420, 429.  
 Helen R., 420, 429.  
 Jenny G., 429.  
 Rodman (1880), 420, 429.  
 Rodman M., 429.  
 Sarah R., 429.  
 William C. N., 420.  
 Symonds, Mary, 5.  
 Symonds, Samuel, 5, 407.
- Talleyrand, Prince, 195.  
 Tatley, Eileen M., 492.  
 Taylor, Fanny, 487.  
 Tennery, Dora, 543.  
 Terry, Margaret, 480.  
 Tevis, Eloise, 446.  
 Thacher, Rebecca C. B., 516.  
 Thayer, Alice V. R., 497, 501.  
 George C., 470.  
 Julia, 497, 501, 502.  
 Mary A., 497, 502.  
 Mary B., 470, 471.  
 Nathaniel, 495.  
 Stephen V. R., 495.  
 Stephen V. R. (1871), 495, 497.  
 Thom, Eliza, 494.  
 Thomas, Helen, 487.  
 Herbert W., 530.  
 Roger A., 530.  
 Thompson, Mary A., 515.  
 Thornton, John R., 422.  
 Walter, 422.  
 Thorpe, Elizabeth, 421.  
 Tidrick, Lawrence W., 501.  
 Robert A., 501.  
 Rodman L., 501.  
 Tiers, Joseph, 456.  
 Mary, 456.
- Tilden, Caroline, 473.  
 George T., 417.  
 Tilghman, Benjamin C., 470.  
 Benjamin C. (1890), 470.  
 Benjamin C. (1917), 470, 471.  
 Benjamin C. (1942), 471.  
 Christopher L., 471.  
 Edward M., 471.  
 Joseph F. (1922), 470, 471.  
 Joseph F. (1946), 471.  
 Richard A. (1920), 470, 471.  
 Richard A. (1945), 471.  
 William F., 471.
- Tilton, Grace M., 480.  
 Sarah, 548.
- Timmerman, Helen L., 466.  
 Louis F., 466.
- Tinkham, Mary L., 533.
- Titcomb, Edward R., 528, 530.  
 Francis R., 526, 528.  
 George A., 526.  
 George E., 526.  
 George L., 526.  
 John (1892), 526, 528.  
 John (1924), 528.  
 John W., 528.  
 Margaret, 526, 528.  
 Norman A., 528.
- Toland, Priscilla, 488.
- Torrey, Sarah P., 541.
- Trumbull, John F., 518.  
 Nancy B., 518.
- Tucker, Alanson, 494.  
 Alanson (1811), 494.  
 Anna, 494, 496.  
 Martha, 494.
- Tuckerman, Bayard, 169.  
 Elizabeth W., 486.  
 Frances, 463.  
 Wolcott, 463.
- Turner, Sidney S., 497.
- Tuttle, Charles M., 412.  
 Elizabeth, 412.  
 Horatio, 412.
- Twells, Hannah C., 456.
- Tyson, Mrs. Betty, 470.  
 Charles M., 470.
- Urquhart, Alexander, 528.  
 John A., 528.  
 Mary R., 528, 530.

- Usher, Commander, 507.  
 Neville A., 507.  
 Patrick B. R. U., 507.
- Van Ausdel, Elizabeth A., 492.  
 Joseph C., 492.
- Vanderbilt, Muriel, 433, 434.  
 William K., II, 433, 434.
- Van Rensselaer, Cornelia, 495.
- Vaughan, Daniel, 407.  
 Rebecca (1715), 16, 21, 22, 407.  
 Rebecca, 407.
- Vincent, Simon M., 548.
- Waitt, Barbara, 520.
- Walcott, Anstiss, 431.
- Wales, Mrs. Horatio, 31, 84, 86.
- Walker, Eleanor, 446.  
 Rev. F. I., 446.
- Wall, William A., 34, 166, 167.
- Waln, Ann, 414, 415, 443, 472.  
 Nicholas, 415.
- Wamsutta, 9.
- Ward, General, 181, 182.
- Ware, George L., 491.  
 James L., 491.
- Warner, Margaret L., 536.
- Warnock, Mary C., 501.
- Warren, Anne, 487.  
 Eleanor, 474.
- J. Mason, 474.
- Mary L., 533.
- Richard, 422.
- Samuel D., 487.
- Winslow, 533.
- Washburn, Cromwell, 493.  
 Nancy, 505.
- Nina, 505.
- Sibyl, 493.
- Stanley, 504.
- Stanley (1908), 504.
- Stanley (1946), 505.
- Wason, Catherine E., 122, 134, 135,  
 264, 274, 275, 279, 280, 349, 350,  
 444.
- Mrs. Sarah H., 444.
- Mr., 274, 280.
- Waterbury, S. Edith, 474.
- Watson, Anna, 477.
- Watts, Schuyler, 504.
- Webb, David, 407.
- Elizabeth, 5.
- Henry R., 527.
- Louis P., 521.
- Mary A., 527.
- Nell W., 521.
- Webster, Daniel, 150.
- Weeks, Elisabeth K., 510.
- Weightman, Mrs. William, 455
- Welch, Harriet, 496.  
 Margaret H., 479.
- Weld, Adelaide, 478, 488.  
 Alfred R., 474, 477.
- Anne K., 477, 486.
- Barbara, 543.
- Barbara B., 486.
- Benjamin R., 540.
- Christopher M. (1858), 540, 541.
- Christpher M. (1932), 543.
- Cora, 540, 541.
- David B., 485.
- Edward M. (1872), 474, 477.
- Edward M. (1906), 477, 485, 486.
- Elizabeth R., 541.
- Eloise, 487.
- Eloise M., 474.
- Eloise R., 478, 486.
- Frances, 478, 488.
- Francis M. (1814), 474, 540.
- Francis M. (1851), 540.
- Francis M. (1895), 541, 543.
- Gertrude, 540.
- Helen M., 486.
- Jane, 543.
- John L., 541, 543.
- Katharine, 478, 488.
- Lothrop M. (1874), 474.
- Lothrop M. (1898), 477, 485
- Lothrop M. (1922), 485.
- Margaret, 541, 542, 543.
- Marian L., 541, 542.
- Mary E., 478, 487.
- Patricia, 543.
- Philip B., 474, 478.
- Philip S. (1914), 478, 487.
- Philip S. (1938), 487.
- Priscilla A., 478, 487.
- Robert, 540.
- Rose, 478, 487, 488.
- Rudolph, 474, 477, 478.
- Sarah K., 485.
- Stephen M. 474.

- Weld (*continued*)  
 General Stephen M. (1842), 474,  
 540.  
 Stephen M. (1870), 474.  
 Stephen M. (1901), 477, 485.  
 Sylvia, 478, 486.  
 Thomas L., 485.  
 William G., 540.
- Wellington, Benjamin, 511.  
 Benjamin (1893), 511, 514, 515.  
 Catharine J., 511.  
 David W., 515.  
 Edward (1855), 511.  
 Edward (1888), 511.  
 Elizabeth M., 511, 513.  
 Esther R., 514, 520.  
 Howard W., 515.  
 John C., 514.  
 Joseph W., 511, 514.  
 Lois M., 514, 520.  
 Marylizabeth, 514, 519.  
 Miriam, 511, 514.  
 Paul E., 515.  
 Richard (1884), 511, 513, 514.  
 Richard (1913), 514.  
 Roger R., 515.  
 Ruth E., 519, 520.  
 Virginia R., 515.
- Wells, Bulkley, 485.  
 Dorothy L., 485.
- Welsh, Dorothy, 469.  
 Ellen, 462.  
 Mary, 461.
- Wesbrook, Donald M. 441.  
 Janet, 441.
- Wessell, Charles A., 480.  
 Vivian, 480.
- West, Benjamin, 144, 145.
- Weston, Carol, 431.  
 Charles 431.  
 Emily, 431.  
 Lydia, 431.  
 Robert D., 431.
- Wetmore, Annette B., 498.  
 Dagmar, 498.  
 William, 498.
- Weyerhaeuser, Elizabeth Z., 528.  
 John, 528.
- Wharton, Anna, 460.  
 Sarah R., 532.
- Wheatley, Phyllis, 43, 44.
- Wheeler, Alice J., 511.  
 Asahel, 511.  
 Eleanor, 491.  
 Gertrude M., 470.  
 Philip M., 506.  
 Philip R., 506.  
 Sarah E., 506.  
 Stafford M., 506.
- Wheelwright, Susan, 431.
- Whelen, Violett, 425.
- Whitaker, Emma E., 514.
- White, Courtland Y., 441.  
 Courtland Y., Jr., 441.  
 Elizabeth A., 494.  
 Gulielma G. H., 441.
- Whitman, Hendricks H., 434.  
 Rose F., 434.
- Whitmore, Mrs. Rosamond B., 425.
- Whitney, Elizabeth, 542.  
 George, 488.  
 Hope, 488.  
 Mary R., 500.  
 Robert B. (1916), 488.  
 Robert B. (1943), 488.  
 Stephen W., 488.
- Whitt, James L., 438.  
 Jesse O., 438.  
 John W., 438.  
 Joseph J., 438.  
 Katherine M., 438.  
 Malcolm L., 438.  
 Malcolm O., 438.  
 William J., 438.
- Wigglesworth, Marian, 466.
- Wilbank, Annabella, 454.
- Wilder, Harry H., 516.  
 Ruth T., 516.
- Wilkes, John, 55, 56.
- Wilkins, Eliza C., 548.
- Williams, Alice E., 533.  
 Charity, 493.  
 David E., 468.  
 Ellen S., 476.  
 Gwladys, 486.  
 Helen M., 318.  
 Jean M., 470.  
 Mary V., 468.
- Willis, Nathan, 509.  
 Sophia T., 509.
- Wilson, Arthur S. E., 483.  
 John M-C. (1888), 482, 483.

- Wilson (*continued*)  
 John M-C (1924), 483.  
 William C., 483.  
 William C. (1919), 483.  
 Wing, Clara A., 532.  
 William R., 532.  
 Winslow, Edith, 439.  
 Jeremiah, 97.  
 Wistar, Margaret V., 458.  
 Wister, Alice L., 456.  
 Anne, 456, 459.  
 Charles K. B., 457, 462.  
 Elizabeth, 455, 458.  
 Elizabeth H., 454.  
 Ella E., 455, 458.  
 Ella M. M., 456.  
 Emily B., 456.  
 Ethel L., 456, 459.  
 Frances Ann, 455.  
 Frances K., 457, 462.  
 Frances S., 462.  
 Francis, 454, 456.  
 Harvey L., 454.  
 Jane B., 455.  
 John, 454.  
 John (1829), 454, 455.  
 John C. (1887), 455.  
 Jones, 454, 455, 456.  
 Langhorne, 454, 455.  
 Langhorne H., 456, 459.  
 Margaret, 455, 458, 459.  
 Mary C. (1870), 455, 457.  
 Mary C. (1899), 457, 461.  
 Owen (1860), 457.  
 Owen J., 457.  
 Owen J. (1901), 457.  
 Rodman, 454, 456.  
 Rodman M., 456, 459, 460.  
 Sarah B., 457.  
 Sarah L., 455, 458.  
 William (1803), 454.  
 William (1871), 455.  
 William R. (1827), 454, 455.  
 William R. (1904), 457, 462.  
 William R. (1933), 462.  
 Wolcott, Pamela, 487.  
 Philip W., 487.  
 Samuel H., 487.  
 Samuel H. (1910), 487.  
 Samuel H. (1935), 487.  
 William P., 487.
- Wood, Benjamin S., 460.  
 Benjamin S. (1932), 460.  
 Henry A., 460.  
 Letitia E., 460.  
 Mariah, 476.  
 Minnie S., 458.  
 Thomas R., 460.  
 Woode, St. Francis, 519.  
 Worcester, Alfred, 509, 510.  
 Alice, 509, 510.  
 Alice M., 511, 515.  
 Anna, 509, 511, 512.  
 Arthur, 509.  
 Barbara, 511, 515.  
 Benjamin, 450, 509.  
 Elizabeth (1850), 509, 510.  
 Elizabeth (1903), 517.  
 James, 509, 510.  
 John, 509.  
 John D., 511.  
 Joseph R. (1800), 509, 511.  
 Joseph R. (1944), 516.  
 Marcia B., 516.  
 Mary, 509, 511.  
 Miriam, 509.  
 Noah, 450.  
 Rebecca B., 516  
 Robert, 510.  
 Ruth H., 511.  
 Thomas, 450, 509.  
 Thomas (1896), 511, 516.  
 William L., 517.  
 Winfred, 509.  
 Worrall, Dorothy, 492.  
 Wright, Alfred, Jr., 480.  
 Anna W., 460.  
 Annette N., 457, 460.  
 Elizabeth R., 456, 460.  
 Ellicott, 460.  
 Hannah P., 456.  
 Harrison M., 460.  
 Letitia E., 456.  
 Mary F., 456.  
 Redwood, 457.  
 Robert K., 456.  
 Sydney L., 457, 460.  
 William L. F., 456.  
 William R. (1846), 456.  
 William R. (1927), 460.  
 Wurts, Charles S., 458.  
 Charles S. (1869), 458.

Wurts (*continued*)

- Charles S. (1901), 458, 464.  
Clarence Z., 464.  
Elizabeth F., 458, 465.  
John W. (1907), 458, 464.
- John W. (1936), 464.  
Mary S., 458, 464.  
Zantzinger, Clarence C., 464.  
Mary-Vaux B., 464.

## ABOUT THE AUTHOR

JOHN MORGAN BULLARD, author and compiler of "The Rotches," is a native of New Bedford, the son of Emily Morgan Rotch and the late Dr. John T. Bullard. On his mother's side he is a direct descendant of the pioneer Rotches whose whaling business brought fame and riches to Nantucket and New Bedford.

Always interested in the history of his city and the part his forebears played in its development, Mr. Bullard undertook more than 20 years ago to prepare the copy for an historical and genealogical book principally about his branch of the Rotch family. Besides his own large collection of letters and documents Mr. Bullard had access to the records in the Old Dartmouth Historical Society, of which he was president; and from widely scattered members of the original family he secured many more letters and papers. As might be expected, the selection and editing of so much material developed far more of a task than was originally contemplated.

In recent years Mr. Bullard has had the assistance of Mr. William M. Emery of New Bedford, a genealogist and historian, in assembling information about more than 2700 members of the original family. Mr. Emery is a graduate of Bowdoin College with many years' experience in newspaper editing and historical research, and is the author of a number of important books and genealogical papers.

In 1947 Mr. Bullard decided that the time had arrived to print his book, though additions of desirable material appear to be endless. At his own expense he has had printed an edition limited to 600 copies. As printer of the book he selected William B. Rotch, ninth generation descendant of the first William Rotch, and the sixth generation to carry on the printing and publishing business in Milford, N. H., established in 1802.

Readers who have enjoyed the letters and stories in the preceding pages, and especially the members of the family of Joseph Rotch who in 1725 went to Nantucket, are grateful to Mr. Bullard and Mr. Emery for collecting and preserving in permanent form the information and documents and letters included in "The Rotches."

November 1947

ARTHUR BOYLSTON ROTCH.

*Copies of the book may be obtained from John M. Bullard, care of Crapo, Clifford, Prescott and Bullard, 558 Pleasant Street, New Bedford, Mass., postpaid, at \$6.00.*



SOUTHEASTERN MASSACHUSETTS UNIVERSITY  
SPECIAL COLL CS71.R829 1947  
The Rotches



3 2922 00049 210 5

312855

SPECIAL COLL CS71 .R829 1947  
Bullard, John Morgan, 1890-  
The Rotches

180

